



THE
HISTORIE
AND LIVES, OF
THE KINGS OF
ENGLAND:

From WILLIAM the Con-
queror, vnto the end of the
Raigne of King HENRY
the EIGHTH.

With other vsefull Observations.

By WILLIAM MARTYN Esquire,
Recorder of the Honourable Citie
of EXETER.

Frustra sis per plura, quod fieri potest per pauciora.

LONDON,
Printed for JAMES BOLER. *sc*

M.DC.XXVIII.







TO
THE GENTRIE OF
ENGLAND.



Orthie Gentlemen,
(omitting all elaborated Eloquence,
which oftentimes is used as a varnish,
to cover unprofitable labours; As cunning
Goldsmithes doe enrich their basest Sil-
uer, when they Gilt it with their purest Gold) I
purpose to render to you an accompt of two rea-
sons, which induced mee to take this pain, and to
publish this worke.

1. It is common among Physitians; That
though profound Learning, and frequent Expe-
rience, haue furnished them with abundant skill,
in their Honourable profession: yet they doe still

(a) 2

strive

Richard Chamberlaine
This Book - 1693

Epiſtle Dedicatorie.

ſtrive to make their knowledge more perfect, in the diſcoverie of the imperfections of other mens bodies, than of their owne: In like ſort it is the common cuſtome of our times; that many hopefull Gentlemen (whom Nature and Arts haue beautified, with the rich treaſures of their bountie) doe endeavour to bee more exact and refined in knowing the Religion, Lawes, Gouvernment, Maners, Strength, and Sites of forraigne Countries, than of that Kingdome wherein themſelves were borne.

But as that man is wiſe in vaine, who is not wiſe vnto himſelfe; So is it a ſimple grace (nay to ſpeake plainly, it is a foule diſgrace) to a Gentleman (eſpecially to ſuch a one, as hath, or doth intend to ſpend much time abroad to know the faſhions of forraigne Nations) to bee ignorant in the State of his owne Countrey at home. The Hiſtorie of which, affordeth as much varietie and profitable inſtruction, to captivate the Readers delight in the peruſall, as the faireſt Pictures doe contentment, when with their artificiall beauties, they doe allure mens eyes to looke and to gaze vpon them.

To this end therefore, that henceforth ſuch worthie Gentlemen as are purpoſed, in long travelling, to enlarge their experience, by the view of
forraigne

Epistle Dedicatorie.

forraigne Countries, may first be furnished with a conuenient knowledge of their owne ; I undertooke this labour, and doe present it vnto you, with this my first reason which induced me thereunto.

2. The second reason of my so doing, springeth out of mine owne conceit ; which (as I coniecture) deceiues mee not. For, in regard that the Histories of this Kingdome, are frequently interrupted, yea blemished, by too too many interuening Occurrences, and by a multitude of extravagant Observations (which doe much differ from the true Method and Nature of a well digested and composed Chronicle ; and thereby doe extend it into a needlesse and an vnprofitable length) I am resolved that the Readers capacitie (to obserue and to remember) is much weakned thereby : And that many yong Gentlemen, who doe eagerly strue to attaine to much knowledge in a short time, doe rather bend their Studies and their Courses, to reade ouer the more narrowly contracted Histories of other Countries, than the voluminous Discourses of their owne.

Wherefore to inlighten their knowledge much, by reading this little ; I haue thrust forth into the World this short Historie, of the Reignes, Deedes, and Actions, of twentie of our English Kings ; which I will neyther praise, lest I
wrong

Epistle Dedicatorie.

wrong it by mine owne commendation; nor dis-
praise, lest you (beleeuing me on my word) should
thinke your time ill spent, to reade what I haue
written.

I know that such as are worthily descended, or
who by learning are made worthy, will not onely
winke at some imperfections, because some know-
ledge is to be gained by the rest: but will also take
in good part the presentment of a small gift; if it
be deliuered with a friendly hand. To such onely,
and to none other (which are you) doe I dedicate
these my labours: Being confidently assured, that
they cannot want their expected reward, which is
nothing, but your kinde acceptance, and grace-
full loue.

Fare you well. From my house in Exeter
the twentieth day of Ianuarie, 1615.

Your louing friend,

WILLIAM MARTIN.

TO MY MOST DEARE
 Father WILLIAM MARTYN
Esquire.

THough my vnpractis'd Muse might well concale
 Her selfe from th'eye-reach of a publique view;
 Yet my devoted heart, stir'd on with zeale,
 And duty (which are owing both to you)
 Feares not the spleene of Criticks, but shall beare
 Their heauiest censures; *True loue overcome feare.*

I will not speake of your vnwearied paine
 In gathering, and disposing: 'tis a treasure
 Well worth the Readers paines, when he may gaine,
 With little reading, profit mixt with pleasure,
 These ruder lines, your labors little neede,
 To winne the Readers liking: Let him reade.

NICHOLAS MARTYN.

To my most loued and dearest Father

WILLIAM MARTYN ESQUIRE.

I Could (deare Sir) haue spoke, with farre more ease,
 In copious Prose, than in strict Verse, your praise;
 But that I knew your fame would farre out-goe
 All *foot-lesse* Prose; my Verse (not full so slow
 Hauing the helpe of *feets*) serues thus farre forth,
 Though not to Viher, yet r'attend your worth,
 You neede not either, to inlarge your fame;
 The Booke it selfe doth *Chronicle* the same.

WILLIAM MARTYN.

To my most dearly loued Father

WILLIAM MARTYN

Esquire.

WHil't others send you Lines trickt out with Art,
 My Infant yeares shall onely send mine heart:
 Looke for no greater gift, from so small store;
He that giues all he has, can giue no more.

EDWARD MARTYN.

TO MY DEARLY HO-
NOR'D FATHER-IN-

Law

WILLIAM MARTYN
Esquire.

A Publique good must quell your priuate feare,
The profit of a Writers industry,
Should be imparted to a generall Eare;
For *good is better'd by communis.*
Nor may *detraction*, or the injurie
Of some mens censures, dash what he doth write:
If, but what only pleaseth all mens sight,
No worke should come to light, no worke should come to light.

What though you gatherd haue the seuerall flowr's
Of other Bookes, into this Historie?
Distill'd to Spirit by you, they're wholly yours:
So honie, suckt from the varietie
Of flowr's, is yet the honie of the Bee.
And though in these dayes, *Miracles* are fled,
Yet this shall of your *Chronicle* be read,
It brings back Time that's past, and gines life to the Dead.

Peter Benys.



THE SVMMARIES
OR ABBREVIATES, OF
THE REIGNES OF THE
twentie Kings, mentioned (more
largely) in this Discourse.

King WILLIAM the Conqueror.

AFTER the death of king Edward, Harold (contrarie to his promise & oath) refuseth to give the possession of the Crowne and kingdom of England, to William, the seventh Duke of the Normans: wherefore (to prevent the effusion of much blood) the Duke challenged him to a single combat, which he refused: whereupon the Duke landeth, and (being assisted by the Natives of this Countrey) he obtaineth the victorie,* and claimed this Crowne by conquest. Pag. 2.

He is in danger, as he traueleth towards Douer, and makes his peace. 3.

His policies to suppress the English Nation, and his cruelties towards them. 3, 4, 5, 6.

He taxeth them beyond measure: they rebell twice, and are twice subdued. 6.

He plucks downe Churches, Religious houses, and Townes, (for his pleasure in hunting) to make the New Forest; and enacteth tyrannicall Lawes, for the preserving of his Game. 5.

His eldest sonne Robert Curthois rebelleth, and puts him to the worst in Normandie, but is reconciled. 7.

He warreth in France successfully. 7.

He falleth sick, and repenteth of his crueltie to the English Nation, and dyeth, but his body can hardly obtaine a place to bee buried in. pag. 8.

* 1066

The Contents.

King WILLIAM RUFVS.

<p>His crueltie to the English Nation. 10.</p> <p>He flattereth them in his distresse; but requiseth them vnthankfully, when his turne is serued. 10, 11.</p> <p>They wellshemen doe rebel. 11, 12.</p> <p>His valour. 13.</p> <p>Hee pilleteth and pooleth the Church. 14, 15.</p>	<p>He yeeldeth, when the Pope peremptorily commandeth. 15.</p> <p>He is fortunate in his warres in Normandie. 15.</p> <p>In the New-Forrest, which his Father had made, by the raine of many Churches, Religious houses, and Townes. 5.</p> <p>Hee was slaine, being mistaken for a Deere, as he hunted. 16.</p>
--	--

King HENRY the First.

<p>His policies and Lawes. 18</p> <p>He yeeldeth to the Pope, and restoreth Church linings, dignities, and liberties; not for conscience sake, but because Robert his eldest brother, troubled him for his Crowne. 18.</p> <p>He invadeth Normandie, and preuaileth; and plucketh out his brothers eyes. 20, 21.</p> <p>He curbeth and ransacketh the</p>	<p>Church & Church-men, & makes them pay for enioying of wines, whether they haue wines or no. 20.</p> <p>Anselme and Thurstone appeale against him to the Pope, and he yeeldeth. 20, 23.</p> <p>He is patient and very thankfull. 24.</p> <p>He is lasciuious, he surfeiseth, and then dyeth. 24.</p>
--	--

King STEPHEN.

<p>Hee vsurpeth the Right of Mawld the Empreffe, and breaketh his oath. 27.</p> <p>He is very liberall. 28.</p> <p>He refuseth and releaseth the paiement of Dane-gilt, and of all other taxes: he honoreth the Clergie, and giues vnto them large restitution, and exempteth all</p>	<p>Clergie men from the authoritie of the Temporall Magistrate. 28.</p> <p>Mawld the Empreffe invadeth and taketh him prisoner: he is enlarged for the Duke of Gloucester. The Empreffe is besieged in Oxford, and escapeth by a policie in the snow. 29.</p> <p>He</p>
--	---

The Contents.

Hee is againe innaded by Henrie Short-Mantell, the Sonne of Mawld the Emperesse: Prince Eustace his sonne is drowned. They two compound, and King Stephen dyeth. 30. 31.

King HENRY the Second.

His great courage. 34.
He refinesh the Lawes, and demisseth the Circuss, in which Nisiprius, and other law-casos are decided. 34.
He destroyeth Castles and prauent Rebellions. 35.
He refinesh things giuen by his Predecessors. 35.
He exerciseth his people in martiall Discipline in times of Peace. 35.

Hee Conquereth Ireland. 36.
His children are rebellious, and punished by God. 36.
His Riches. 37.
His amorous affections to Rosamond. 37.
He is vexed by Thomas Becket, who is slaine. 37.
He is accused. 40.
He doth penance; He is whipt; And dyeth. 42.

1174

King RICHARD the First.

For his valour, hee is termed Cueur de Lyon. 44.
His pittie and compassion to his Mother, and to distressed prisoners. 44.
His bonnie. 45.
He warreth gloriously in the holy Land. 45.
He winneth Cyprus. pag. 46. 47.
Warres arise betwixt him, and the French King, and Leopold Archduke of Austria, whereupon they depart, and doe leave him. 46. 47.
He is styled King of Ierusalem. 47.

By swimming he saueh his life, but is taken Prisoner: Ransometh himselfe, and returneth into Normandie from the holy Land: Hee warreth successfully against the French King in his owne Countrey, and returneth into England. 48.
To pay his Ransome, and to relieue his wants, he satisfieth Religious houses, and refinesh such things as formerly he sold, getteth many. 49.
He bessegeth the Castle of Chalus, and is reuengefully wounded to death: He recueth the Castle, Pardons the offender, slaieth all the rest, and then he dyeth. 49.

The Contents.

King I O H N.

PHILIP the French King raiseth against him Arthur Plantagenet, who demands the crown. 51

The King goeth twice into Normandie, and puts the Frenchmen to flight. 52, 53.

He looseth Normandie. 53.

His quarrell and unspeakable troubles with the Pope. 53.

Hee forbiddeth all appeales to Rome. 54.

Four of his owne Bishops doe interdict him, and he seiseth upon their lands, and goods: Hee is accursed, and his kingdome is by the Pope giuen to Philip the French King: He taketh an Oath of Allegiance of his Subiects. He innadeth the Scots, and they do submit themselves. 55, 56.

Philip of France prouideth so innade him, but looseth three hundred ships. 56.

King Iohn without the know-

ledge of his Nobilitie or Councell, submitteth himselfe on his knees to Pandulphus, the Popes Legate, and resigneth to him (to the Popes use) his kingdome and his Crown, and after a few daies receiues it as a gift. 56.

His people doe despise and forsake him. 57.

Lewis the Dolphin fin his Fathers Right, by reason of the Popes donation innadeth England. The Pope accurseth him, and his father, and protesteth king Iohn, and his kingdome: Hee also accurseth such of the Nobilitie of England, as sided with the French, by reason whereof the Commons robbe, rife, and forage, both their goods and lands. Miserie makes them to submit themselves. 57.

The Dolphin is expelled. 58.

The king hath peace, and is poisoned by a Monke. 59.

King H E N R Y the third.

LEWIS the Dolphin disturbs Iohn in England: The French attempt to innade, but are overthrown at Sea. 63.

They are accursed, absolved, and doe leaue his kingdome: The king restoreth the ancient Lawes. 63.

He warreth in Angou, and elsewhere. 63.

And concludeth a Truce. 64.

His Barons and he doe iarre, but are reconciled. 64.

The league with France is broken. 64.

King Henric hath the worst of the new warres. 65, 66.

He warreth with his Barons. 66.

Infantum Parliamentum. 66.

The commission of the twelve Peeres. 66.

They exercise their Authoritie. 67.

The Contents.

It is confirmed, wherefore the
king sayeth into France. 67.

* He releaseth his Title and his
Right in Normandie, and is con-
firmed Duke of Guyan. 68

He procureth two Bulls from the
Pope; The Lord chiefe Justice is
displaced. 68.

He publisheth the Popes Bulls a-
gainst the twelve Peeres; and the
Londoners take an Oath to assist
him. 69.

The Barons raise an Armie,
and doe write vnto the king, and
he answereth them. 69.

The Barons Armie is ioyfully
receiued into London. 70.

The controuersie is referred to
the French king, who is accused to
be partiall. 70, 71.

The Barons fight with the Prince,
and doe overthrow him. 71.

Richard king of the Romans
(being wronged) is angry. 71.

* The battaile of Lewis, in which
the Barons tooke the two kings,
and Prince Edward prisoners, and
more than twentie thousand men
were slaine. 73.

An agreement is made, and

the Prince is one of the Hostages:

The commission given to the 12.
Peeres is confirmed, and the Ho-
tages are enlarged. 73.

*A discord betwixt the Earles.
of Leicester and Gloucester, 73.*

Occasioned the overthrow of the
Barons in the battaile of Euer-
sham. 74.

* * The Barons are excused.

The Commission of the twelve Peeres, is by Parliament dissolved.

And the king (for reuenge) re-
solved to haue burnt the Citie of
London. 74.

But it is redeemed by sure, and
by money. 75.

*The Earle of Gloucester, with the
base off-skum of London, do much
mischiefe. But by the Prince his
entreatie all is pardoned. 76.*

The Earle of Glocester is by the
king furnished to goe a warfare
in the holy land. He gives it over:
And Prince Edward undertakes
it: he is treacherously wounded, but
recouereth: The king dyeth, and
he returneth with much honor in-
to England.

* 1258

★★ 1263

* 1263

King EDWARD the First.

THe French king feareth his
valour, and therefore inui-
seth Lluellen to rebell against
him in wales. 79.

By promises, that he shall marrie
with the Ladie Eleanor, the ba-
nished daughter of the banished

Earle of Leiceſter; who for ſuccour
was his gueſt. 80.

The king taketh her in her pas-
sage towards wales: the king mar-
cheth towards Lluellens Armie,
He submitteth himselfe, sweareth
to be loyall, and uiniwed. 80.

b 3

He

The Contents.

Herebelleth againe, and he and his brother are both beheaded.

81.

King Edward is chosen (as sovereign Lord) to decide the controversy and debate, touching the Right to the Crowne of Scotland, which many Competitors do strine for.

81.

That kingdome is surrendred into his hand; and he decides the doubt, and conferres the kingdom upon Iohn Bayliol.

83.

Hee strippeth the Church and Church-men, and is disliked of them, especially for enacting of the Statute against Mortmaine.

82.

Iohn Bayliol (being ungratefull) innadeth England. But King Edward winnes from him the Castle and Towne of Barwicke, and slayeth 25000 of his Men.

83.

He surrendreth Scotland, and king Edward governes it by a Lieutenant; & placeth all Officers of state therein.

84.

The Scots rebell againe, and are subdued.

84.

They rebell once more: Thirtie and two thousand of them are slaine.

85.

They doe homage and fealtie to king Edward.

85.

Iohn Bayliol (as the Popes request) is set at libertie: his subjects doe againe rebell against England: The king entreth into Scotland, and the Castle of Easterwinnie (in which the Scottis Nobilitie, for their safeguard inclosed themselves) being summoned, is yeelded to king Edward.

85.

Hee sweareth them to his obedience, and (for a monument of his victories) he bringeth from thence the Chaire in which their kings were usually Crowned.

86.

He enquireth of the extortions done by his Officers, and correcteth them.

86.

Prince Edward is committed to prison, and his unchristie Companion Pierce Gaueston, is banished.

86.

Wales and Cornwall are giuen to the Prince.

86.

The Pope claymeth the sovereignty of Scotland, but king Edward reiecteth and scorneth his claime. Robert le Bruze usurpeth in Scotland, so that king Edward, the fourth time, goeth in his owne person into Scotland. The Usurper flieth into Norway, and king Edward dyeth.

86, 87.

King EDWARD the second.

HE breakes his Vow, and recalls Gaueston. Hee doateth on Gaueston: Makes him Earle of Cornwall, and he doth all in all: whereat the Nobles are displeased.

89, 90.

The king (through Gauestons wicked counsell) liurth lewdly, and forsaketh the Companie of the Queene.

90.

Gaueston

The Contents.

Gaueſton hath the cuſtodie of the kings Jewels, and conueies many of them into Ireland. 90

The people murther at Gaueſtons authoritie and wicked courſes. The King receiues good counſell. Yet at laſt Gaueſton is baniſhed into Ireland. The king comforts him, and ſends him money and Jewels. 91

The king is ſo ſad for his departure, that at the requeſt of the Nobilitie (in hope of amendment) he is recalled. 92

By reaſon of his inſolencie hee is againe baniſhed into Flanders, but is recalled, and waxeth more ſcornfull than he was before. 92

The Lords (deſpairing of redreſſe) doe ſtrike off his head. 92

The king (ſo deſpiſht by his Nobilitie) entertaineth the two Spencers, who are worſe than Gaueſton, and doe perſwade him to more lewd and vngratious courſes. 92

The king and his Nobles doe not agree. Robert le Bruze (taking aduantage by the kings euill government) uſurpeth in Scotland. He is againe crowned king, and overthroweth king Edward. 93

Iohn Poydras is diſcouered to be a counterſeit, and is put to death. 93

Barwicke is betrayed to the Scots. 93

The Scots doe overthrow king Edward the ſecond time. 94

The king (being intreated) will not put the Spencers from him. 94

The Nobles in the Parliament doe ſtand on their Guard. 95

The Spencers are baniſhed for euer. 95

The Nobles complaine for the younger Spencers Piracies: but the king maketh ſport at it, and recalls them from their exile. They ſcorn the Barons, who fight, but are overthrowen. 96

Twentie and two Barons are beheaded. 97

The elder Spencer is made Earle of Wincheſter: and Sir Andrew Harkley (by whoſe principall ſeruite the Barons were overthrowen, and who was made Earle of Carlile) conſorting with the Scots, who had almoſt taken the king, and enforced him to ſlie, loſt his head. 98

The Queene (being oppreſſed by the Spencers) goeth into France, and carrieth the Prince with her. Shee is well entertained by the French king her brother. But he is bribed by the Spencers, and ſo is the Pope, who conſpire her deliuerie to king Edward. And ſhee with her ſonne doe ſlie into Arthoys. 99

The Queene and Prince doe land in England. The Nobles repaire to her with an Armie, and the king is ſtrangely taken priſoner. The Earles of Arundel and Wincheſter are beheaded. 100

And Hugh Spencer, the younger, being carried to London, is diſgraced, and cruelly executed as a Traitor. 100

The King is committed, & depoſed,

The Contents.

sed, his sonne is crowned and the
old King is murdered by the pra-
clise of Sir Roger Mortimer,
who was too familiar with the

Queene. For which offence shee
was honourably imprisoned thirty
yeares and more before shee died.

105

King EDWARD the third.

HE goeth with an Armie into
Scotland, to correct them
for their insolencie in his fathers
daies. The Natives flee into the
woods, and the King returneth.

103

He concludeth a dishonourable
peace with Scotland, by the coun-
sell of Sir Roger Mortimer,
whom he createth Earle of March,
and marieth his sister Iane to the
King of Scots sonne, named Da-
uid. He releaseth the Tenure, So-
ueraintie, homage, and the fealties
of Scotland, and deliuereth up
the great Charter called Ragman,
which testified their tenure of the
Kings of England.

104

The Earle of March procureth
the Kings vncle the Earle of Kent
to be beheaded, and is himselfe ex-
ecuted as a Traitor.

104, 105

The King and the French king
doe iarre about the kings homage
for the Duchie of Guyan.

105

The Kings title to the King-
dome of France was now first
breached.

105

He recouereth Barwicke from
the Scots, and maketh Edward
Bayliol King.

106

In his owne person he setteth
the government of Scotland.

106

The King seekes aid of forraine
Princes for his French wars. 107
And is (by fauour) made Vi-
car Generall of the Empire, and is
thereby enabled to winne Iaques
Dartuwell, with the Flemings, and
the Princes of Germanie, to ioinc
with him.

108

He filleth his coffers.

108

The French King staith his
Armie from going to the Holy
Land, to fight with England.

108

King Edward transporteth his
Armie into Flanders, and ioining
with his consorts, he marcheth in-
to France with 27000 men. The
French king takes the field.

108.

Iane Countesse of Henault
(mother to the Queene of Eng-
land, and sister to the French
King) parts the fray without
blowes.

109

* King Edward quartereth the
Armes of France, and coines his
mony with the like stampe.

109

He taxeth his people, and bor-
roweth much money.

109

As hee passed towards Sluce
with his Armie, he met with and
ouerthrew the French Nanie.

110

He with his associates doe be-
siege Tournay. But the saide
Countesse

Countesse

1326

* 1339

The Contents.

Countesse procures a Truce. 111	King Edward besiegeth Calice and the French K. with 200000. men could not releene it. The king winnes it, and peoplesh it with his owne Nation. 123	1346
The Scots doe rebell. The king marcheth against them. A truce is made, but they doe breake it. They doe innade, and burne Durham. 111	The Scots innade England in the kings absence, and king Da- uid is taken prisoner. 123	
The valiant exploit of Sir Wil- liam Montague. The Castle of Ronsborough is besieged. The king marcheth against the Scots, and they fle. 112	The king himselfe surpriseth the Frenchmen, who came to re- ceiue Calice. 124	
He concludes a truce with them. He returnes, proclaimes a Feust, and martiall exercises and sports. 113	The Calicians take Guyens. 125	
Subsidies are granted, but Com- missioners are made to receive and satisfie them. 114	The Black Prince winneth the bataile of Poytiers, and brings king Iohn and his younger sonne prisoners into England. 126	1355
He denfeth the noble Order of the Garter. 114	The whole English Armie is made rich. 128	*1344
Jaques Dartnell is murdered because he would haue disherited the Earle of Flanders to preserve the Blacke Prince. 114	The Dolphin allowes not his fathers agreements with king Edward. 128	
By his death King Edward lost the Flemish aide. But hee is the more resolu'd in his attempts. 116	It is enforced to crave peace, which is granted upon conditions. 129	
The French king besiegeth A- guillon with 100000 men. The king takes Harflew, Louiers, Cane, and many other things, and barraveth and burneth in Nor- mandie at his pleasure. 117	The king relinquisheth the French title and rights. 129	1359
He passeth with his Armie over the River of Some. 118	and taxe levied by the Blacke Prince, and the not paying of his Souldiers, occasioned his great los- se in Guyan, Aquitaine, &c. 130, 131	
The battaile of Cressley. 119	wherein a civil diffantion must be advised. 132	
The numbers of slain men and prisoners. 121	The Earle of Pembroke is sa- ken at Sea. 132	
	The kings enill Officers. 133	
	The Blacke Prince dieth. 134	*1345
	The king dieth. 134	
	King	

The Contents.

King RICHARD the second.

H e summarie of his euill government. 135	King Richard makes incredible preparations to confront him. 146
Wat Tilars Rebellion. 137	The French Armie vanishest, and comes to naught. 147
Their insolencie and madnesse. 137	The petition of Nobilitie is denied by the King. wherefore they doe raise an Armie. 147
Their entertainment in London. 138	The King cannot get an Armie out of London. 148
They doe burne, rife, and commit Sacriledge. 138	On the Kings faire promises, the Armie is dismissed. He performs nothing: so that a new Armie is leued, and received into London. 149
Their behanior at the Tower, and at Mile-end-greene. 139	The Duke of Ireland sleeth, and is flaine by a Bore, and is buried like a King. 149
Their Captaine is slaine. They prepare for reuenge, but doe flie. 140, 141	The Kings fine euill Counsellors and some Iudges are condemned as Traitors. 149
Fifteene hundred of them are executed. 141	John of Gaunts iourney, valour, and fortunate success in Spaine. 150
The Kings euill Counsellors. 142	The King marieth the French Kings sister, and deliuereth up Brest, for which his Knele the Duke of Gloucestre repaunteth him: but he is discomfited, and he is murdered. 151
Fifteenes in a Parliament are denied. 142	The flattering Speaker of the parliament grossly disiecteth the King. 151
The Lower House will depart except the King in person will come to them. 142	A strange Commission. 152
Michael de la Pole is displaced from his Chancellorship. 144	The King (in his wander) will be slaine by one of Cheshire. 152
Commissioners are appointed to order the Kings Officers, and the King sweareth to observe it. 144	The Duke of Norfolke secretly informeth the king against his cousin Henrie Bollingbroke Duke of Hartford, for which he is challenged. 152
The Commissioners are reputed to be Traitors. 145	
The Scots and French doe make a bad voyage into wales, and in the meane time the King with 6000. men spoileth Scotland. 145	
The Frenchmen well rewarded by the Scots. 145	
The French King prepares an Armie of 1200. Ships to invade and to conquer England, and	

The Contents.

lenged to a single combat. 153. 154

They are both banished. 154

John of Gaunt dieth, and his son Henrie Bollingbroke (now Duke of Lancaster) in the kings absence in Ireland, landeth in England, and raiseth an Armie. The king returneth, and leuieth his forces. 155

But his people daily shrinke and scale away from him: by meanes

whereof he submitteth himselfe to the Duke. 155

Articles are proposed against him for his euill gouernment, which are by him confessed vnder his hand in the Parliament. He resigneth his kingdome, and is deposed. Henrie of Bollingbroke is Crowned king. And king Richard (valiantly resisting) is wickedly murdered. 160

King HENRY the Fourth.

JOHN Bishop of Carlile stoutly reproveth king Henries doing openly in the Parliament house

163

The Crowne is entailed. 164

Treason at Oxford. 164

The Traitors flie, and are executed. 165

Owen Glendor rebelleth. 166

And taketh Roger Mortimer (the rightful heire apparant to the Crowne) prisoner, and the King refuseth to ransom him. 166

The Scots rebelling, are overthrowne by Henrie Hotspurre, who will not deliuer his prisoners to the king. 167. 168

The Frenchmen doe aide the Welsh Rebels in shew, but doe flie to their ships when the king cometh. 167, 168

The Percies doe ransom Roger Mortimer, and ioining with Owen Glendor, they intend to make him king. 169

They leue an Armie, and doe

publish Articles against K. Henry.

The Scots do aide them, but are all overthrowne. And in that battaile the King himselfe slew six and thirtiemen. 171

Dowglas is enlarged without ranfome. 171

Glendor is forsaken of his companions, and is famished in the woods. 172

The Duke of Orleanse his challenge is stoutly refused by king Henrie. 172

And disgraced. 173

The Duke of Britaine is commanded by the French king to abandon the siege of Calice. 173

Diuers Lords doe practise a Treason, which is discovered, and most of them are put to death. 173

The king warreth againe prosperously in Scotland. 173

He was in danger to be taken on the Thames by French Pirates. 174

Sir Ralphe Roksbie, Sheriffe of

The Contents.

<p>of Northumberland, valiantly overthroweth the Northern Rebels, and chops off their heads before the Kings coming thither. 174</p> <p>He createth his younger sonnes Dukes, and prepareth to warre in</p>	<p>the Holy Land, but falleth dangerously sicke. 174</p> <p>Hu speech to the Prince his son when he seised on the Crowne. 174</p> <p>He dieth. 175</p>
---	--

King HENRY the Fifth.

<p>THis king was unmeasurably wilde in his fathers daies, and was imprisoned and disgraced for striking the Lord Chiefe Justice on the eare. 177</p> <p>But being king, he enriched his loose companions, but banished them perpetually from his Court. 177.</p> <p>He chose the grauest, wisest, and best experienced men to be of his Counsell of Estate. 177</p> <p>Hereformeth the Clergie, and the Lay people, and erecteth Castles to curbe the Scots. 178</p> <p>A motion was made in Parliament to dissolve religious houses: But the Clergie ruining the kings title to the kingdome of France, and being bountifully liberall, doe turne the streame into that channel. 178</p> <p>The king demandeth that Crowne, but is scoffed by the Dolphin, whom he girdeth by a replie. 179</p> <p>The king leuieth an Armie. The French King desireth peace. The king yeeldeth on cert aine conditions, which are denied. 180</p> <p>The Queene is made Regent.</p>	<p>And as the king is ready to depart, his destruction is conspired: But the Treacherie was reuealed, and the Traitors were put to death 180</p> <p>The king landeth in Normandie, and taketh Harflew. Hu Armie (being but 15000. men) falleth sicke, and is oppressed with many wants. Yet the king resolneth to march by land unto Calice 181</p> <p>* He winneth the most famous and the most memorable Battaille of Agencourt. 182</p> <p>The French prisoners were (unwillingly, yet miserably) slaine. 185</p> <p>He giveth God publike thanks. 186</p> <p>And returneth into England with his great prisoners. 186, 187</p> <p>The new Constable of France is overthrowne. 187</p> <p>The French doe besiege Harflew, and their Nauie of 500. ships is overthrowne. And Iohn Duke of Bedford raiseth the siege. 188</p> <p>Ciwill dissention among the French Nobilitie doth further the succeffe of K. Henries war. 189</p> <p style="text-align: right;">Great</p>
--	---

The Contents.

Great summes of money, are
cheerfully given to the King, to
maintayne his invasion. 189

Nine Carricks of Gewon, and
Tonque, and Cane, are taken by the
English. 191

Most Townes in Normandie
doe become English. 192

Roan is besieged by the king. 192

A proud Roanist darerth him;
he replies, and takes the Citie. 197

The French Nobles are outward-
ly reconciled, but not in heart. 198

* Normandie is wonne by King
Henric. 198

He marieth the Lady Katherine
sister to the French King, and is
made Regent of France, & is pro-
claymed Heire apparant to that
Crown. 199, 200, 201, 202,

203, 204.

The Kings brother the Duke of
Clarence, Regent of Normandie,
and France, is betrayed, and slain
in the battaile of Blangy. 205, 206

The Earle of Mortaigne succee-
deth in his charge. 207

The King warreth againe in
France. 207

The Dolpin raiseth his siege
from Chartiers, and flyeth feare-
fully from place to place. 208

The King falleth grievously sick,
exhorteth his Nobles to unite,
and concord; and to bee especially
careful to retain the friendship &
loue of Philip, Duke of Burgoine. 209

Has commends unto them his
young Infant, and their King, Di-
rects them for their proceedings
in France: and then dieth.

b 1420

* 1416

1419

King HENRY the Sixth.

France contemneth the infancy
of King Henry. 211

John Duke of Bedford is made
Regent of France; and Humphrey,
Duke of Gloucester, is made Prose-
cutor of the kings person, and of the
Realme of England. 212

The Regent winneth Townes
daily. 212

The Parisians are trecherous. 213

* The battaile of Veruiole. 215

The Earle of Salisburys valour
and name is feared. 216

A strange overthrow of the
French. 216

They doe bragge and runne a-
way. 217

Townes and victories are daily
wonne by the English. 218, 219

Orleance is besieged, and offered
to Philip Duke of Burgoine; but
the Regent will not consent there-
to, & for that cause the said Duke
reneweth to the France king. 221

The battaile of Hering's. 221

The siege of Orleance is abando-
ned. 222

The Duke of Alanson quer-
throweth the English; slayeth the
Earle of Salisbury; & taketh pri-
soners, the Earle of Suffolke, and
the

1427

* 1424

A

The Contents.

	<i>the Lords Talbot, Scales, and Hungerford, and many others.</i>	222	<i>the French part.</i>	235
	<i>Charles causeth himself to be crowned King of France, and is summoned to a battaile by the Regent: hee flyeth cowardly; and is hunted from place to place, but all in vaine.</i>	223	<i>Much is gotten daily, and much is daily lost beyond the Sea.</i>	235
	<i>Diners Nobles of France doe revolt from King Henrie.</i>	224	<i>A truce with France for eigh- teene moneths.</i>	237
	<i>The French king assaules Paris, and is well beaten.</i>	224	<i>An unworthy marriage conclu- ded for the king, by the Duke of Suffolke, without Commission.</i>	237
* 1466	<i>The Parisians do flatter, but are trecherous.</i>	225	<i>which was the Dukes overthrow</i>	246
1431	<i>King Henrie is crowned king of France in Paris.</i>	225	<i>He will have his Aids and Coun- sels registered in Parliament.</i>	238
	<i>England is wondred at for her puiissance.</i>	225	<i>The cause of the losses of France, * Normandie, Aquitaine, &c.</i>	238
	<i>Treason discovered.</i>	226	<i>The descriptions of the king and Queene.</i>	239
	<i>A Rebellion in Normandie.</i>	226	<i>The good Duke of Gloucester is re- moved by the Queen from the Pro- tectorship, and is murdered.</i>	240
	<i>The noble Regent dieth.</i>	228	<i>The French wars are neglected, and the Truce is broken on both parts.</i>	240
	<i>And from the time of his death, the English gaine little, but doe lose much both in Normandie, and in France. Richard, Duke of Yorke, is made Regent.</i>	229	<i>Townes are lost, Roan yeeldeth to the French King.</i>	241
	<i>Paris revolteth.</i>	229	<i>The English are overthrowen in field.</i>	242
1435	<i>Calice is besieged by the Duke of Burgoine.</i>	229	<i>Cane is yeilded to the French king.</i>	243
	<i>But he flyeth in the night.</i>	230	<i>The Duke of Suffolke is accused of treason, and banished.</i>	244
	<i>The Earle of Warwicke is made Regent.</i>	231	<i>But is taken at Sea and behea- ded.</i>	246
	<i>The French king flyeth in the night.</i>	233	<i>The policies of the Duke of York, to attaine unto the Crowne. Inck Cade the Rebell flyeth, and is pro- scribed and slaine.</i>	247
	<i>Ponthois is taken by the English.</i>	234	<i>A pacification, but fained, be- twixt the king, and the Duke of Torke.</i>	248
	<i>A parley for peace.</i>	234	<i>The Duke is accused, & impriso- ned for treason, but is enlarged.</i>	248
	<i>The Articles proposed, are dis- ked.</i>	235		
	<i>A cruell Armie and a huge, on</i>			

The Contents.

<i>Guyan and Aquitaine are yeelded to king Henric, but are regained by the French.</i>	249	<i>and the king is taken prisoner.</i>	257	
<i>The warres betwixt the king, and the Yorkists.</i>	249	<i>The Duke of Yorks proceedings in Parliament against King Henric.</i>	258	
<i>The king is overthrowne, and taken prisoner in the battaile of *S. Albons, and in Parliament the Duke of Torke is made Protector.</i>	250	<i>The Crowne is seiled by Parliament. The Scots overthrow, and doe slay the Duke of Torke in the battaile of Wakefield.</i>	259	*1454 b 1460
<i>Merchant strangers are rifled in London.</i>	251	<i>The young Duke of York winneth the field of Queene Margret.</i>	260	
<i>A policie against the Yorkists, but it is discovered.</i>	252	<i>He is by the Queen overthrowne, and the King is enlarged.</i>	260	
<i>The King labours for peace, but each part dissembleth.</i>	252	<i>The Dukes new Armie consisting of 49000. men: the Queenes new Armie consisting of 60000. men, The^e Queen is overthrowne in the battaile of Tonstoun.</i>	260	*1460
<i>New Armies are raised.</i>	254	<i>The king to winne favour with the king of Scots, delivereth to him the Castle, and the Towne of Barwicke: and the Duke of Torke is crowned king.</i>	261	*1459
<i>The Lords doe slee in the night, and are proclaimed traitors.</i>	255			
<i>The kings ships, twice taken out of Sandwich by Iohn Dynham, and the Yorkists.</i>	256			
<i>The battaile of^e Northampton, in which the Queen is overthrowne</i>				

King EDWARD the Fourth.

<i>IN Parliament hee repealeth all former Actes which attainted him, and his friends of high treason.</i>	263	<i>him, in the choice of his wife.</i>	267	
<i>He is troubled by wars, raised against him by Queene Margret, in which he prevaiileth.</i>	265	<i>George, Duke of Clarence, taketh part with warwick against his brother King Edward.</i>	268	
<i>He taketh especiall^e care for the Common-weale.</i>	266	<i>The^e Yorkshire-men doe rebell.</i>	269	*1467
<i>King Henry is taken prisoner.</i>	266	<i>King Edward is taken prisoner and escapeth.</i>	271	*1462
<i>The Earle of warwick becomes his Enemie, because he wronged</i>		<i>The discommodities of Warre.</i>	272	
		<i>A new^e Rebellion, in which the Rebels were overthrowne.</i>	273	b 1468
		<i>warwick and Clarence flee to Calice,</i>		
		A 2		

The Contents.

	lice, and finde bad entertainment.	274	goine breaks promise with him.	285
	Prince Edward (sonne to King Henrie the sixth) marieth the second daughter of the Earle of Warwick.	275	A peace for nine yeares is concluded, for which the Duke of Burgoyne is angrie with the king, who cares not for it.	286
	Clarence (secretly) revolteth to King Edward his brother.	275	The bountie of the French king to the English Armie.	288
	Warwick landeth in England, where his forces doe so encrease, that king Edward flieth.	277	Henrie Earle of Richmond is by the Duke of Brittain delivered to king Edwards Ambassadour: but Peter Landoyes freeth him.	289
	King Henrie is enlarged, and by Parliament, the crowne is intailed to him.	277	The Duke of Clarence (being a prisoner) is murdered.	290
	King Edward landeth in England, and breaketh his oath, made to the cittizens of Torke.	278	King Edward changeth the forme of his government; and (by executing of penall statutes) be enrictheth himselfe, but looseth his peoples loue.	290
	Hee, and his Armie are ioyfully receiued into the citie of London.	280	He hath new warres with Scotland, but (on certaine conditions) he graunts him peace.	291
1470	He triumpheth victoriously at Barnet field.	280	The French King breaks all his Articles, annexed to the last concluded peace; wherefore king Edward leuieth a new Armie, but falleth sick, and dyeth.	292
	The Queene Margaret leuieth another Armie, and is ouerthrowne in the battaile of Tewkesbury.	282	The Description of king Edward.	297
1470	King Henrie (being murdered) is brought open faced into S. Pauls Church.	283		
	King Edward hath new wars in France; and the Duke of Bur-			

King EDWARD the Fifth.

H E was a child when his father dyed.	297	the Queene Mothers kindred.	300
His Vncle, Richard, Duke of Gloucester, aimeth to haue his crowne.	299	He betrayeth them, and berea- ueth them of their lines.	301,
He pratlizeth mischief against		The Queene Mother with her children	307

The Contents.

<p>children taketh Sanctuary. 302</p> <p>The Duke of Gloucester is made Protector. 302</p> <p>By subtiltie he getteth the young Duke of Yorke out of prison, and sends the King, and him, to the Tower, under pretence of greater safetie. 302</p> <p>He with the Duke of Buckingham practiseth their destruc-</p>	<p>tion. 304, 305</p> <p>His villany at the Tower. 306</p> <p>His friend the Lord Hastings is beheaded, because hee will not consent to that murder. 307</p> <p>Doctor Shawes flattering sermon. 308</p> <p>Richard Duke of Gloucester is made king. 309</p>
--	--

King RICHARD the Third.

<p>King Richard (by base flatterie) endeouureth to make a bad master good. 311</p> <p>Doctor Morton, Bishop of Ely, is committed to the custodie of the Duke of Buckingham. 311</p> <p>King Richard is despised by the French king. 312</p> <p>The two young Princes (by the villanous procurement of king Richard) are murdered. 312</p> <p>The reasons, which might haue dissuaded him from that wickednesse, are examined. 313</p> <p>His onely sonne by death is taken from him. 315</p> <p>Doctor Morton (by flatterie) insinuateth himselfe into the inward love and familiaritie of the Duke of Buckingham, and hauing with him resolved on the destruction of king Richard, hee escapeth, and flyeth into Flanders, from whence hee gives good intelligence of all king Richards pro-</p>	<p>ceedings, to Henrie Earle of Richmond. 315</p> <p>He moueth him to marrie the Lady Elizabeth, eldest daughter to king Edward the Fourth, which hee protesteth to doe. 317</p> <p>King Richard had almost gotten into his hands the Earle of Richmond, but Peter Landoy's freeth him. 317</p> <p>The Duke of Buckingham and the king doe leuie two strong armies, but the fight is deferred by a sodain flood: The wisshemen forsake the Duke he flyeth: he is proscribed: he is betrayed by his owne servant, and loseth his head. 318</p> <p>Peter Landoy's would haue betrayed the Earle of Richmond to king Richard, but hee, and his, doe escape hardly into France, where they are comforted and aided. 320</p> <p>King Richard by flatterie and bribes</p>
--	---

The Contents.

bribes gett king Edward the fourth his children into his owne possession: and maketh loue to his owne Neece, the said Lady Elizabeth.	322	field.	323
His owne wife sodainly dyeth, and he remiueth his incestuous sute to his said Neece, who wittily protracteth that businesse.	323	King Richards people cleane not to him.	324
False newes from France, makes him secure.	323	He is desperate in fight: but is slaine by the Earle himself, and his body is vsed with great despight by the common people.	324, 325
The Earle of Richmond landeth in England, and the king, and he are with their armies in Bosworth		Henrie, Earle of Richmond, is proclaimed, and crowned king by the souldiers, in the open field, where his Enemy lay dead: And in the same place, He, with his whole Armie doe thanke GOD.	325

King HENRY the Seuenth.

K ing Henry the Seuenth (as he had sworne) visiteth the two diuided houses of Lancaster & Torke, by his mariaga with the Lady Elizabeth, king Edward the fourth his eldest daughter.	327	(levying of a Tax) is slaine by the people.	333, 334
He canseth the Crowne to be imaged.	328	The Rebels sue, and are punished.	334
He maketh Yeomen of his Guard, and is thankful to his friends.	327	Maximilian (being aided by king Henrie the Seuenth) comes not forth, yet king Henrie alone warreth against the French king.	335
He repaieth the French king, & the Duke of Britaigne.	328	The king demands a Beneuolence.	335
He repealeth Actes of Attainders, makes good lawes, and granteth a generall Pardon.	328	He besiegeth Bullein, and granteth a peace.	336
He suppresseth Rebels.	329	Perkin Warbeck, the counterfaised Duke of Torke, vexeth king Henrie.	337
Lambert, the counterfaised Earle of warwick, by force and policie is taken.	329, 330, 331	He is supported.	337, 338, 339
King Henrie the Seuenth, takes part with the Duke of Britaigne, against the French king.	332, 333	The king wisely discouers their intentions.	339, 340
The Earle of Northumberland		The Mart is remoued to Calice	340
		Sir William Stanley is behaaded, and Warbeck is discomforted	

The Contents.

<i>sed in Kent.</i>	342	<i>sword.</i>	348
<i>The Scots (under pretence to aid him) vexe England.</i>	343	<i>The Rebells flie.</i>	349
<i>The Cornish Rebells are overthrowne.</i>	343, 344	<i>Perkin Warbeck, and the young Earle of Warwick (son to George Duke of Clarence, the brother of king Edward the fourth) seeking to escape, are prevented, & beheaded.</i>	350
<i>And many of them are executed.</i>	345	<i>Two mariages with France and Scotland.</i>	350
<i>The Scots invade, and are wassled.</i>	346	<i>Empson and Dudley, doe execute penall lawes.</i>	351
<i>The Mart is restored to the Flemings.</i>	346	<i>The king (in his death bed) doth repent it: and lends mony freely to his Merchants, and dieth.</i>	359
<i>Exeter is besieged, and defended valiantly.</i>	347		
<i>King Henrie commeth to that Citie, and giues vnto it his</i>			

King H E N R Y the Eighth.

H e executeth Empson and Dudley.	355	<i>Cardinall Wolfseys deedes and actions, from pag. 364. vnto pag.</i>	388
<i>And marieth his brothers wife.</i>	355	<i>The Clergie feare the Premunire, and therefore are liberall.</i>	388
<i>He sideth with the Pope against France.</i>	356	<i>The king is acknowledged supreme head of the Church.</i>	388,
<i>His Father-in-law Ferdinando, vsesh him ill.</i>	357		403
<i>And trecherously surpriseth the kingdome of Nauarre.</i>	357	<i>He marieth Anne of Bulleyn.</i>	389
<i>Edward Howard, Lord Admirall, is drowned.</i>	359	<i>And beheadeth her.</i>	403
<i>King Henric hath three armies in France.</i>	360	<i>Enill May-day.</i>	390
<i>Maximilian the Emperour serueth him in those warres.</i>	361	<i>Tournay is deliuered upon conditions.</i>	390
<i>Tyrwin and Tournay are wonne.</i>	361	<i>which (by the French) were broken.</i>	393
<i>James the Fourth king of Scots is slaine in Flodden field.</i>	361. 362	<i>The Duke of Buckingham is attainted and executed.</i>	392
<i>Peace is concluded with France.</i>	364	<i>The king writes a booke against Martin Luther.</i>	393
		<i>He maketh warres in France.</i>	394, 395, 396, 397.
			<i>Prinie</i>

The Contents.

<i>Prinseales being granted, are released by Parliament.</i>	395	<i>ding a mariage for the king with Anne of Cleue, which the king disliked.</i>	408, 409
<i>Englisch souldiers doe returne unlicenced out of France.</i>	397	<i>That mariage is pronounced to be void.</i>	409
<i>The Emperor, the Scotts, and the French doe craue peace.</i>	398, 399	<i>The king marrieth the Lady Katherine Howard,</i>	409
<i>The King is in danger to bee drowned.</i>	400	<i>And beheaded her.</i>	410
<i>He hath warres with the Emperour.</i>	401	<i>He is made king of Ireland.</i>	410
<i>He curbeth the Popes authority.</i>	401	<i>The Scotts invade and are miserably overthrowne.</i>	413
<i>Fisher and Moore doe lose their heads.</i>	402	<i>A mariage being motioned by the Scotts,</i>	413
<i>Petis Religious houses are suppressed.</i>	403	<i>Is concluded, but they breake their oaths, & the match too.</i>	415
<i>All the rest are likewise suppressed.</i>	407	<i>Scotland is wasted.</i>	415
<i>The holy maid of Kent.</i>	402	<i>The king sendeth two Armies into France.</i>	415
<i>The Lancashire-men doe rebell.</i>	404	<i>Bullein is wonne.</i>	417
<i>The King is passing stout.</i>	404	<i>The king hath a Beneuolence.</i>	417
<i>Rebellion by the holy Pilgrimes, miraculously appeased.</i>	405	<i>The Frenchmen are overthrowne</i>	418
<i>An other Rebellion is suppressed.</i>	406	<i>The Scotts invade and are vanquished.</i>	419
<i>Cromwell is aduanced highly,</i>	406	<i>The famous and renowned Earle of Surry is beheaded: And the king dyeth.</i>	
<i>But is overthrowne by conclu-</i>			

THE



THE
HISTORIE OF
KING WILLIAM THE
CONQUEROVR.



AFTER the death of King *Edward* (who was the sonne of *Egredredus*, and of *Goditha* his wife) *Harold* her brother, and second sonne to the Earle *Godwin*, vsurped this kingdome, and caused himselfe to bee crowned King, the Crowne being formerly giuen by King *Edward* vnto *William* the seuenth Duke of the Normans, and base sonne to *Robert* their first Duke.

To whose vse and behoofe, *Harold* had formerly sworne to keepe the same. Whereof, when Duke *William* was certainly enformed, Hee charged him (by his Letters and by Messengers) with his promise, confirmed by his oath, and required him (in friendly sort, and without blowes) to possesse him of his Crowne. But proud Ambition (arising him with a resolution to remaine a King in despite of threats or fortune) made him, rather to coine dishonourable excuses, than to giue satisfaction, as hee had sworne: And for answer, to returne, That promises and vowes rashly made, and by compulsion, as his was, especially for a kingdome, whereunto the State had giuen no free consent, were not (at all) to be regarded. And therefore (seeing the Dukes Rule and Dominions were as ample,

B

and

and as large elsewhere, as Nature and Art had enabled him to manage, and to command) hee wished him to bee contented with his owne, and not aduenture to claspe more within his hand, than he was well able to hold fast, nor to couet that which he should not enioy.

As this answer bred Discontent : so Rage began to resolute on Armes : For the Duke, assisted by his martiall friends, leuied a strong Armie, and furnished it with all abilliments and necessities for the Warre ; with which (through the assistance of some native Nobles, who adhered to his part) hee safely landed in Suffex : where (hauing prouidently sheltred himselfe, against all suddaine stormes) he challenged HAROLD to a single combate ; thereby to decide the strife, without much blood. But HAROLD entertayned not the challenge ; but sent him word, That to gaine or keepe a Kingdome, it required more blowes than two could giue. So that (within few dayes after) a fierce and cruell Battaille (of the continuance of one whole day) without intermission or breathing, was fought betwixt them. But in the Euening HAROLD, being deadly wounded with an Arrow, left both his Kingdome and his life : And Duke William, almost with equall losse of his men, became Victor in the field.

October 14
1066.

*The Saxons
reigne ended*

And thus ended the Saxons reigne ; which (from the first yeare of *Hengistus*, in the yeare of our Lord God foure hundred seuentie and five, vntill the time of this Conquest in the yeare of our Lord God one thousand threescore and sixe) had continued (sauiug that now and then it was interrupted by the Danes) the space of five hundred fourescore and eleuen yeares. The Duke hauing thus slaine *Harold*, and gained his kingdome, began to reigne as King : And on Christmas day then next following hee was crowned by *Aldredus* Archbishop of Yorke, by the enforced consents of the English Nobles : who (with an outward applause, but with an inward grieve and sorrow) submitted themselues to be his subiects, the Kentish men excepted. By whom, as hee travelled to possesse himselfe of the strong Castle of Douer, he was preuented in his iourney, and compassed round about by valiant men of war, who (carrying greene boughs in their hands, and resembling a moouing wood) enuironed the King and all his followers ere they were aware therof ; and protested manfully to dye, rather than they would (by seruite basenesse) be deprivied of those ancient Lawes and Customes, whereby their Country was then ruled. The King (perceiuing his owne danger, and

and their resolution) hearkned to their demands ; and not onely granted their requests, but (for their bold and valorous attempt) hee honoured them with this preheminence ; That euer afterwards, the Kentish inhabitants should make the Vauntgard of the Field.

Thus gained he that Countrie, and became sole Lord and Soueraigne of each whole Kingdome : and ruled it as a Conquerour, with more Policie than by profitable Lawes ; and with more severitie than did become the Gracious disposition of a favourable King.

For first of all (because he presumed, that such as were conquered, did rather feare than love, and would no longer obey, than the yoke lay heauie ouer their neckes) by receiuing Hostages of the best and dearest esteeme, hee secured the fidelities of such as were either honourable, or potent, and sent them into Normandy, because suddaine force and strength should not deprive him of so sure a meane of his safety.

Then (to deprive the English of all command, and to make them feeble, and his Normans strong) hee seized their chiefeft Offices, both of honour, and of profit, into his owne hands, and conferred them vpon strangers : Whereat the English grieved much, but found no remedy : for Weaknesse was enforced to yeeld to Power, and vsurping Policie tyrantized ouer the Oppressed, and bereaued them of their Right.

And (because in those daies the Clergie was had in great reuerence among the people ; in regard that their authoritie was not confined within the bounds of their Spirituall Iurisdiccions) hee resolved to clip their wings, because they should no longer soare so high ; and did ordaine, That from thenceforth they should not command with any Temporall Authoritie whatsoever.

Hee was not ignorant, that the hope of Libertie did oftentimes incite such as vnwillingly were made seruite, to watch for oportunitie to procure their Freedome : and therefore (to prevent such dangers as might otherwise ensue) he vterly disarmed and dis-weaponed all the Natiues of the Land, turning their Hopes into Despaire ; and preventing their expectations for Releasement, with the present Extremitie of their Bondage. Thus weakened he such as were truly valiant, and thus made he them to suffer much, who (if they had beene at libertie) would haue been able to repell great force.

And (because the concourse of much people might giue them some occasion, both to conferre of the estate which they were in,

The Conquerors Policies.

1

2

3

3

4

5

and also to consult of the meanes of their deliuerance from their Thraldome) he debarred the English from frequent and common meetings, especially in the night : which to preuent, hee caused a Bell in euery Village, Towne, and Citie, to be rung at eight of the clocke in the euening ; vpon the sound whereof, all English men were enioyned to couer their fire, and to keepe themselves within their doors. And this ceremonie was, and is yet called, *Couer le feu*, or the raking vp of the Fire.

To diminish the Nobilitie, hee vled to transport them for his Warres beyond the Seas : and if they returned backe againe, then might they well perceiue, that hee rather meant their destruction, than regarded their seruice : for no reward was giuen to them, though they were valiant, nor any shew at all was made, that their forwardnesse was accepted by the King.

And thus dealt he likewise with the vulgar sort ; by whose manhood he fought his sharpest battailes in Normandy and in France : thereby lessening their numbers, and making his owne power more eminent among such, as hee enforced to lament their owne misfortunes, and in vaine to meditate vpon their present woe.

He also erected strong Forts and Castles in sundry places of this Realme, which were commanded by his followers ; whose bitterness was such against the English Nation, as that they dared not to make shew, that they repined at any thing, which wickedly they did amisse.

As long as the English abounded in Riches, and in Wealth, he knew they were not altogether heartlesse ; and therefore he depriued them of those comforts. And (to encrease his owne store) he practised subtiler trickes on both estates : for, he robbed the Clergie of all their best and richest Plate and Ornaments (which had been consecrated to holy vses) alledging, That Theeues and Traiterous Rebels had hid them there, to deceiue him of his forfeitures, and secretly to support themselves therewith, to his great hurt.

He also enacted and established strait and seuerall Lawes, and published them in his owne language ; by meanes whereof, many (who were of great estate, and of much worth) through ignorance did transgresse, and their smallest offences were great enough to entitle the Conquerour to the Lands and Riches which they did possesse. All which hee seized on, and tooke from them, without remorse.

Then hee disallowed the Patents, and the Grants of former Kings, and published them to be meerly voyde, and hauing sequestred them into his owne hands, hee sold them againe to the true owners

owners for great summes of money, if they could pay them : but otherwise he gaue them to his Normans, and to the French.

He procured a generall view to bee taken of his subiects Lands, and caused them to be iustly measured, and their cattell to be numbered, and thereby hee taxed them, according to such proportions as he pleased ; and (by such vndue Exactions) he scraped and scratched together the Treasure of this Realme, little regarding the wants and pouertie of his conquered people, if (by any meanes) he could augment his owne store.

Hee erected sundry Courts for the administration of his new Lawes, and of Iustice ; and lest his Iudges should beare too great a sway, by reason of his absence, hee caused them all to follow his Court vpon all remoues : Whereby he not only curbed their dispositions, which incited them to bee great, but also tyred out the English Nation with extraordinarie troubles, and excessiue charges in the prosecution of their Suites in Law.

To open a wide door, and to giue the more free access vnto the French and Normans (if the English should happen to rebel) hee ruined all Churches, Chappels, Villages, and Townes, which stood within the compasse of many miles in Hampshire, and made the New Forest there vtterly dispeopling those places where God was formerly serued, and frugall husbandry maintained ; making them an habitation for wilde and saluage Beasts : which act and deed he coloured with the pretence of finesse, and conueniencie for his recreation in Hunting, when great affaires and important businesse would giue him leaue. But God reuenged his own cause by the untimely death of *Rufus* his sonne, and successor, who (as he hunted) was slaine with an arrow in the same Forest.

Above all other pleasures he placed his chiefeft delight in Hunting : and for the furtherance thereof, when he had seized into his owne hands all the Chases and Forests of this kingdome, then (to preserve his Game from disturbance, and from spoyle) he made and executed most sharpe and bitter Lawes against such, as, vnlicensed, presumed to hunt in them ; as the losse of eyes, limbes, and such like : But they were afterwards made more milde and gentle ; by such as by succession wore his Crowne.

He gaue large territories and spacious fields vnto his favourites ; who did diuide them into Farmes, for their particular vses and necessities, and the residue of them they granted or leased to their slaues and seruants, thereby creating Manors, and entailing themselves the Lords of them. The King also vpon those his gifts proportioned those grounds, diuiding them into Hydes of Land, every Hyde

12

13

14

15

16

Hyde containing twentie acres, and eight Hydes making a whole Knights fee. The Tenures which he reserved, were Knights service *in capite*: by meanes whereof, his Tenants were enioyned to doe him many necessarie and honourable Services, either in his Wars, or to his Royall person. For the performance whereof, hee tooke their Oathes in publike Courts, both of Homage and of Fealtie. And by reason of this kinde of Tenure, he disposed of the bodies of their Heires in marriage as he listed, and retained in his custodie and wardship, to his own vse, their whole inheritance, vntill they accomplished their age of one and twentie yeares. Which Tenures are continued at this day. And, by his example, others of great possessions did the like.

And thus may we plainely see (as in a Mappe) the perfect Modell and Description of his rigorous and sharpe Gouvernment; wherein hee rather practised the licentious power of an insolent Conqueror, than the gracious kindnesse of an annointed king. By meanes whereof, many feared, few did loue him, and such as pleased him best, were many times in great hazard (vpon small occasions) to be frowned on.

ANNO 3.

*Taxes caused
Rebellions.*

In the second yeare of his reigne, by reason of his Taxes, which exceeded beyond measure, the inhabitants of Northumberland, & of Deuon, did rebell. But such was his valour and expedition, that (ere they were aware therof) his forces (like a loftie Sea, or a whirlwinde) rushed violently vpon them, and easily subdued them, to their paine.

ANNO 3.

*The Danes
invaded and
are put to
flight.*

And not long after, *Swamus* then king of the Danes (being animated and set on edge by the daily perswasions and enticements of such English Nobles, as to prevent their own ruine and destruction were fled to him for succour) arrived with a strong Armie in the North: where the inhabitants (endeuoring the enioyment of their former libertie) with bold courage assisted them in their inuasion. But the King almost no sooner saw them, than he compelled them (vpon the losing hand) to flye vnto their ships. And (to reuenge the infidelitie of the English) hee vterly spoyled and harrowed their best and most fruitfull Lands, lying betwixt Yorke and Durham. So that by reason thereof (for the space of nine yeares after) those grounds lay waste, and vnmanured; and great numbers of people, of all ages, died miserably, with famine, and with want.

*The English
are plagued.*

ANNO 4.

The next yeare after hee summoned a generall Conuocation of his Clergie. In which (with much asperitie and bitterness) he accused diuers and sundry graue and learned Bishops, Abbots, Priors, and Religious Prelates, of many surmises, faults, and offences:

for

for which he vtterly depofed and depriued them both of their Dignities, Goods, and Liuinges : all which hee conferred vpon fuch as eyther through his fauour, or for great fummef of money, were able to procure them.

Thefe fearful prefidents of infufferable cruelties, prouoked *Marcus*, and *Edwyn*, then Earles of Northumberland, and of Mercia, together with *Egilwynus*, then Bifhop of Durham, to rebell. But the King (like a Lion encountring weaker forces) draue *Edwyn* into Scotland ; where trecheroufly he was murdered. He tooke *Marcus*, and imprifoned him in the Tower of London : where many yeares after he remained, with little hope of his deliuerance. And the Bifhop, being a prifoner in the Abbey of Abbingdon, was cruelly famifhed to death.

At this time great strife touching the Primacie, arofe betwixt the Archbifhops of Canterburie and of Yorke : which continued almoft two yeares. But at length *Thomas* was adiudged to be fubordinate to *Lanfrank*, then Archbifhop of Canterburie, & the other fubmitted himfelfe accordingly.

In the twelfth yeare of this kings reigne (at a great Synod holden at Pauls Church in London) fome Bifhopricks were translated from one place to another : as Selwy vnto Chichefter, Kyrton vnto Exeter, Wells vnto Bath, Shirborne vnto Salifbury, Dorchefter vnto Lincolne, and Lichfield vnto Chefter.

Oswald, Bifhop of Salifbury, was a moft deuoute and religious man : he deuifed a certaine forme of prayers to be daily vfed in his Church : which was fo generally liked by the Clergie, that they were published in bookes, and vfed in other Churches. Whence proceeded the common faying of *Secundum vsum Sarum*.

In the fifteenth yeare of this Kings reigne (by the infigation and with the afiftance of *Philip* the French King) *Robert*, his eldeft fonne, rebelled in Normandie : which occafioned his father to go thither with an Army. But hee was fo ftiffely encountred in the field, that by his fonne he was vnhorfed, and in great perill of his life. But hee refcued him againe, reconciled himfelfe, receiued pardon, and the King (with much loffe) returned againe into England.

And within few yeares after, to be reuenged of many iniuries and wrongs to him done by the faid *Philip*, from Normandie hee carried a puiffant Armie into France ; where (with fortunate fucceffe, and with abundance of crueltie) he flew, burnt, fpoyled, and ransacked his People, Townes and Countrey. But fo much was he trauelled in thofe affaires, and fo extreemely did he heate himfelfe in

Another Rebellion.

ANNO 7.
The Primacy
of Canterbury.

ANNO 9.

ANNO 12.
Bifhopricks
translated.

ANNO 13.
Secundum
vsum Sarum.

ANNO 15

Rebellion
in Normandie.

ANNO 20

The Conqueror
inuaides
France

*The Conquerour
falleth
sicke, and dyeth.*

*This dead dog
could not bite.*

*The descrip-
tion of the
Conquerour.*

in those eager conflicts, that presently he fell sicke, and within few dayes after he dyed, after he had much sorrowed and lamented for the tyrannies which he had exercised on the English Nation: and at last he was buried at Cane in Normandie, in the Abbey of *S. Stephen*, which himselfe had builded. But his Funerals were interrupted by a Norman Gentleman, who would not permit him to be interred there, vntill a satisfactorie recompence was vnto him giuen for that soyle, which the Conquerour had vniustly taken from him.

Thus this victorious Conquerour, whose minde was not to bee confined with one kingdome whilest he liued, could, being dead, hardly obtaine a place to be buried in.

Hee left behinde him one daughter, named *Adela*, and three sonnes: *Robert*, to whom he gaue his Duchie of Normandie: *William*, surnamed *Rufus*, because his complexion was verie redde; and *Henry*: both which successiuelly were kings.

He was of an indifferent stature, strongly composd in his limbs, and comely in his behauiour; sterne of countenance, and of an vndaunted spirit: resolute in all his actions; quicke in his expeditions; wise discreet, and politicke in the managing of his affaires and businesse. Hee banqueted and hunted verie much; coueted

all; oppressed such as hee subdued (to keepe them low) and alwayes held his deereft friends in an awfull regard of his loue.

THE



THE
HISTORIE OF
KING WILLIAM
RUFUS.



WHEN *William* the Conqueror died, *Robert* his eldest sonne (being in Germanie) accommodated himselfe (with great sufficiency) to those affaires and busineses wherewith his Father had intrusted him : so that by meanes of his absence, the Conquerors last Will and Testament, the furtherance by *Lanfrank*, then Archbishop of Canterburie (who, by reason of his great learning, and singular vertues, was very deare and reuerend in the peoples eyes) and by many costly gifts, enlarged with vnaccustomed bountie, *William* (his younger brother) was crowned King.

But not long after, Duke *Robert* (repining, that his right, by force and iniustice, should bee made a prey to him that did vsurpe ; and purposing to regaine by his presence that which by his absence he had lost) came into England, guarded with a braue Army of vnconquered Normans, and many French, whom *Philip* their King had waged for his ayde : But such was the Dukes milde and flexible disposition (though he were passing valorous, and bold) that he rather enclined himselfe to a peaceable composition, which was gently craved by his brother, than (by the effusion of much bloud) to possesse himselfe of this Crowne : so that (in the end) being fairly

C

promised,

9 Septemb.
1087.

ANNO 2.
Duke *Robert*
warreth in
England.

A composi-
tion betwixt
the two bro-
thers.

promised, That if he suruiued, he should succcede ; and accepting the grant of three thousand markes by the year, he tooke a friendly leaue, and returned, well pleased, and safely vnto his owne Duchie.

*The King
oppresseth the
English Na-
tion by Taxes
and other
cruelties.*

The King (by these meanes) more strongly fixing his foote in the possession of this kingdome, and being better assured of his establishment than hee was before, began forthwith to tread in his fathers steppes, and (with like oppressions and seueritie) to humble the haughtie courage of the English : and finding by the Rules of Policie, That plentie puffeth vp, and that Penurie robbeth such as are hardy of the chiefeſt Requisites which might enable them to resist, imposed on them many vnusual Payments, and intolerable Taxes ; which by his greedy ministers and sawcie officers were leuiued with such despight and crueltie, that thereby they might well perceiue, that he meant nothing more than to cut the nerues and finewes of their strength.

*An old Bi-
shop made a
young Earle.*

About the same time, *Odo* his vnckle, being Bishop of Bayon, repaired into England ; where (by reason of the Kings regardfull affection towards him) hee found such welcome and friendly entertainment, that he was created Earle of Kent.

The old Bishop, and young Earle, presuming too much on his Nephewes lone, and mounting his conceits above the height of a conuenient pitch, rooke vpon him more authoritie to rule, than either a stranger, or a subiect, in wisdome should affect : which altered the pleasantnesse of the Kings countenance into frownes, and made him much lesse esteemed, than otherwise hee would haue been.

*The Kings
vnckle rebel-
leth.*

The Bishop (whose heart was haughry, and whose minde aspired to more than ordinarie greatnesse) so inwardly grudged, that the Line of Soueraigne Maiestie should rye him short, that openly hee did rebell ; and in such sort (by the helpe of the English Normans) distempered the foundaesse of the Common-weales Peace, with many turbulent and dangerous mutinies, in sundry places of the Land, that the King (contrary to his naturall disposition, and contrary to the former Rules of his Policie) was compelled to strengthen his owne part by the English Nation ; whom (with better vsage, fairer speeches, releasement of iniurious Taxes, and great gifts) hee made so firme and faithfull to him, that (by their assistance) hee more than well hoped to preuaile. And such was his new courtesie and kindnesse to many of the reuolted Lords, that (leauing the Bishop and his associates) they adhered firmly vnto the King.

*The King
through ne-
cessitie flat-
tereth the
English.*

These

These factions and these disorders in the publike State begot new conceits in *Malcolyne* king of Scots: who on the suddaine raising a faire Armie of aduenturous men of warre, invaded the Northren parts of this kingdome. The newes whereof appalled not the king, but rather it aspired him with a spirit of such invincible courage, that marching first against the Bishop and his complices, with an high hand he obtained a quicke victorie, and enforced the vnwise Bishop, his vnkle, to abiure the Land.

The Scots rebell.

The Bishop is overthrown.

And forthwith (being mounted aloft, vpon the wings of Furie, and scorning to be checked by resistance) he rushed with such manlike violence vpon the hardie Scots, that the greatest numbers of them were quickly slaine in the field; and *Malcolyne* was not onely compelled to acknowledge his subiection, by renewing of his former Oath, but willingly he became a Pensioner to the king.

ANNO 3.
The Scots overthrown.

The Scots subiect.

In the sixt yeare of his Reigne his prosperitie was interrupted by the obstinate Rebellion of *Rees*, the last king of the Welchmen: who so infested him with broken warres, that, for many moneths together, being vrged to fight with Mountaines (to which vpon all enforcements they fled) in stead of combating with men, he could finde no rest. But such was his resolution, his valour, and vndaunted courage, to withstand the strongest push of all extremities, that in the end he slew their king, and, by a glorious victory, he better secured the subiection of the Welchmen, than any of his predecessors had done before.

ANNO 6.
The Welchmen rebell, and are subdued.

Not long afterwards, *Malcolyne* the king of Scots (being vnkindly and disgracefully denied access to the English Court, where he intended a friendly conference vpon many matters of great weight and consequence) returned into Scotland; and being infected with a million of discontents, the disease of his passions published it selfe, with much danger, to the Northren parts: which he invaded with a strong Armie; spoyling, robbing, burning, wounding, and killing, without controlment, in all places, as he listed: vntill he besieged a strong Castle; which for many daies was valiantly defended by *Robert Mowbray*, then Earle of Northumberland: who at length seeming to yeeld to the frowardnes of his disastrous fortune, and coming out of his Castle gate well mounted, with the keyes thereof fastened vnto his launce, and making low obeysance to the king in token of his submission, and dashing his spurs into his horse, he ranne vpon the king, and with his launce (in stead of tendering him the keyes) he pierced out his eye, and slew him on the place: Which hauing done, he escaped, flying like the winde, leauing the dismaied Scots behinde him, to lament their irreparable

The Scots rebell againe.

The Kings of Scots slaine.

nable losse, and with much sorrow to returne into Scotland with their breathlesse king.

As on the Sea-shore one waue succedes another : so in humane affaires there is no end of troubles. No sooner was this businesse concluded, but another did begin. For, *Roberts* Duke of Normandy (conceiuing himselfe to bee much wronged, by a supposed breach of the kings former promises) resolved to transport a faire Armie into England, for the regaining of his Righs: but the king (purposing rather to aduenture offensive Warres abroad, than with assured losse to defend himselfe at home) gathered a strong power of able and willing men of war, with which he sailed into Normandy. But *Philip* of France so friendly backed the Duke in those employments, that the English forces found themselves too weake to doe him any harme. So this vnexpected resistance compelled the king to cast his plot into a new mould, and by sleight and policie to effect that, which by open violence he could not doe. Wherefore (not making himselfe ouer-much beholding to long deliberation) he sent many of his chiefeſt Cōmanders into England; who (with more than ordinarie diligence and speede) in short time waged a strong Armie of twentie thousand men: who (being ready to bee embarked) were vnexpectedly greeted with this faire offer, That such of them as would ſeuerally giue tenne shillings to the king, towards his leuying of new forces in Normandie, should be dismissed from that iourney. This demand (in regard of each particular giuer) was not great: but the entire value thereof, when it was collected, amounted to a good summe; because their were few, or none, who by this payment procured not their discharge. And the French king (being secretly corrupted with the gift of the greater part of this money) made present choyce rather to shrinke from his kinde friend, than to assist him at his neede: so that the good Duke (being left alone, and yet accompanied with the sensible apprehension of his owne defects, and making a vertue of his necessities) contented himselfe to subscribe to the command of his aduerſe fortune. For, making an enforced Peace with his brother, and pawning to him his Duchie of Normandie for tenne thousand pounds; himselfe in person, with other Christian Princes, waged wars in the Holy Land.

As soone as the king was returned into England, the Rebels in Wales summoned him to a new Warre; which he vndertook with great celeritie, and with much valour. But the craggie mountaines, the streepie hils, the thicke woods, and the watry marishes (vnto which the Welchmen vsed continually to flye vpon euery feare of danger)

A good Policie.

The French strengthen Roberts Duke of Normandy against the King.

A policie and a pleasing Taxe.

Quid non Regina Pecunia?

A composition.

The Welch-men rebell.

danger) so toyled and tyred the English forces, that the king (to encrease his strength, and to furnish himselfe with more fitting means to subdue those Rebels) was compelled, without honour, to returne.

But those his new preparations were interrupted by another Rebellion in the North: which was occasioned and conducted by *Robert Mowbray*, Earle of Northumberland, who madly expressed the malecontentednesse of his disordered passions, because the king (as hee conceived) had not requited his seruice done vpon *Malcolme*, the king of Scots, with any worthy or condigne reward. But such was the haughtie spirit and courage of the king, that those v unexpected troubles, which benumbed the senses of the vulgar, did set an edge vpon his valour, making him to scorne feare, and to entertaine hope; and animating him, with a settled resolution, to dare fortune to doe her worst. For hee no sooner saw his reuolted subjects of the North, but he loaded them in such sort with blows and wounds, that such as fled not hee made a prey vnto death, or made them miserable examples to their friends; who might be-moane them, but could not release them, of their losse of Eares, Eyes, Hands, Noses, or Feete. Thus did the King beate downe their pride, and tooke the Earle as he fledde, and sent him to the Castle of Windfour, where hee was committed to a strong Prison.

Then did the king (with new strength) march againe into Wales: but his former mishaps were presidents to his later successe. For albeit that Furie made him more aduenturous than Reason gaue him warrant, in regard that his magnanimous spirit could not digest the counter-checkes of such a scattered Rabble: yet (when he had weakened his strength, and impaired his Armie, by the losse of many valiant men, vpon the vaste and desolate Mountaines, which afforded him nothing but Repentance) hee was enforced (farre against his will) the second time to return, leauing the Welch Rebels vncorrected; and therefore exceedingly emboldened in their sinne. Whose insolencies bred in the King such a strong resolution to reuenge, that foure yeares after (when they suspected not any approaching danger) hee sent against them the two Earles of Shrewsburie, and of Chester, with a strong power: who finding them rioting in the Isle of Anglesey, set vpon them, slew diuers, wounded more, suffered few to escape; and such as were taken prisoners, were either executed with many Torments, or dismembred, with such Deprivements, as happened to the Rebels in the North.

Now

The Earle of Northumberland rebelleth,

A courageous King.

The Rebels subdued.

The King could not subdue the Welchmen in two Expeditions.

The Welchmen suddenly invaded are overthrown.

ANNO 10

*An ungrate-
full King.**The English
Nation is mi-
serably op-
pressed,**Extreme co-
munionnesse.
in a King.**The Archbi-
shop of Can-
terbury rob-
bed, & rifled.**Appeale to
Rome.**The King
likely to haue
been excom-
municated.**The Emperor
Henry the
fourth was
the first ex-
communicat-
ed Christian
Prince.*

Now when the king, by the helpe of the English Nation, had obtained many memorable victories against the Scots, Welchmen, and the Northren Rebels; and (by their assistance) had in such sort established his affaires, that all feare of future perils was quite banished; imitating the example of some vnhankefull Mariners: who (by the goodnesse of a sound Ship) hauing escaped the boisterous rage of an hideous Tempest, will leaue her in the Roade, subiect to the furie of the windes, and to the violence of the waters: He not onely forgot his honourable atchieuements by their meanes, but vnthankfully he requited them, who had freed him from many vspeakeable dangers. For, as in former times, so now againe he disheartened them, by many intolerable exactions, new impossi-
sions, and mercilesse oppressions: turning their longings after Lib-
ertie into a seruite Bondage; their expectations for fauour, into Despaire; and their Plentie into such Pouertie: that though those Times gaue them leaue sorrowfully to bewaile their griefes; yet Hope administred to them no comfort for Reliefe. Yea, such was his impietie, and such was his conetous desire, by all vniust meanes to enrich himselfe; that impiously he sold for money the greatest and the best Promotions, both in Church, and in common weale: and did prohibite *Anselme*, then Archbishop of Canterburie, to as-
semble any Conuocations, or Synods, for the well ordering of the Clergie, or for the correcting of such as did offend; without his leaue and licence: by meanes whereof, he secretly filled his coffers with much Treasure.

These indignities, and these irreligious practices, were sharply reprehended by *Anselme*: yet found hee no reformation of those monstrous abuses. Wherefore (becing vnable any longer to sup-
port so ponderous a burden, both to his Conscience, and also to his Estate) he resolved to forsake the Realme, and appeale to Pope *Vrbane* the third; though by the king he was prohibited so to doe. But in the beginning of his iourney, as he passed towards Douer; himselfe, and all his followers (by the kings vncharitable appoint-
ment) were euilly entreated, and robbed of their chiefest wealth. Yet went he forth, and at Rome complained to the Pope: who forthwith would haue excommunicated the king; had he not for-
merly pronounced that Sentence against the Emperour *Henry* the fourth (who was the first Christian Prince Soueraign that euer was excommunicated by any Bishop of Rome:) and by his Clergie he was aduised to see the end and effect of that sentence; and should not heate any more yrons, before he saw how the former would be quenched.

Many

Many Letters and fundric Messengers were sent vnto the king, admonishing him not to intermeddle any more with the inuesting of Bishops; by giuing to them the Crosse, Ring, and Pastorall Staffe: nor with the Temporalties of any Ecclesiasticall Promotions, either when they were vacant, or otherwise. Nor should prohibite the assembling of any Conuocations or Synods, touching the Churches affaires and businesse: Nor should prohibite the execution of any Canons; albeit they were not by Regall authoritie confirmed.

Commands from Pope Urban the third.

But the king little respected those Commands, and stoutly answered, That, touching them all, hee would still doe as hee pleased; and would not lose so faire a flower belonging vnto his Crowne.

The King regards not the Popes commands.

But whilst these businesses were thus acted, the king was oftentimes sharply rebuked by *Ralph*, the Bishop of Chichester, for those vniust grievances and wrongs which were offered to the Archbishop, and his followers, at the time of their departure towards Rome. But, like as a man, the deeper he is wounded, the more impatient he is to be soundly searched: so the king (knowing his offence to be impious and vngodly) refused to be admonished: and, in stead of reforming of those things which had been done amisse, he heaped many disgraceful wrongs vpon the good Bishop, and his Diocese; within which (of his own wilfull obstinacie, and because hee would proclaime his will to be a Law) hee suspended many Churches, and conuerted their Reuenues to his own vse.

The King is reprov'd, and is the worse.

But his later meditations better informing him than his former neglect, and vnaduised passions: he not onely receiued the Bishop into his extraordinary grace and fauour; but enriched him and his See with many honourable Priuiledges and Princely gifts: Yet afterwards he banished him out of his kingdome.

The King repenseth.

It happened, that (as he hunted in the New-Forest) he was informed, that the French-men had compassed the Citie of Constancia in Normandie with a Siege, which was both strong, and dangerous. Whereupon leauing his Sports, his Nobles, and all his Company) with great expedition he posted towards the Sea: and, without any preparations fitting for such a iourney, he leapt into a Barke; and commanded the Mariners to weigh their Anchor, and to hoysse their Sayles. But such was the furious violence of a boysterous storme, that (not daring to doe what they were commanded) they refused to obey: Whereat the king was much enraged, and did enforce them to yeeld to his resolu'd humour; affirming, That they had neuer heard, that a king was drowned by the distemper of

Wonderfull courage.

*Fortunate
success,*

ANNO 13,

*The King
slaine as he
hunted,*

of any winde. And such was his fortunate passage in a time so dangerous, and so much were the Frenchmen daunted with the vnexpected newes of his suddaine landing : that instantly they abandoned the Siege ; and by their quicke departure preuented the hazard which they much doubted.

And within two years after his returne into England, and in the thirteenth yeare of his Reigne (as hee hunted in the said New-Forrest, which his Father had made, and which himselfe had enlarged, by depopulating of sundry Townes, Villages, and Farmes, and with the vtter ruine of many Churches, Chappels, and Religious houses) hee was slaine with an arrow : which being shot vnto a Deere, vnfortunately glanced vpon him, as, not long before, his Nephew *Richard*, and sonne vnto Duke *Robert* of Normandie, had been there slaine.

And thus ended the troublesome, yet victorious, Reigne of king *William*, third sonne to the Conqueror: who being of a wanton disposition, neglecting mariage, and daily solacing himselfe among his whoores and concubines, died without any lawfull issue of his bodie. He was of a comely stature; firmly compacted in his limbes; very strong, actiue, and healthy, exceeding lecherous and couetous; of an high courage, and nobly valorous, constant in his resolutions ; scorning Fortune, and all Troubles.

Thus hee liued, and thus hee died ; getting much , and suddaine-ly leauing all.

THE



THE HISTORIE
OF KING HENRIE.
THE FIRST.



Hen King WILLIAM the Second dyed, ROBERT his eldest brother (fortunate in all his proceedings, sauing onely in his succession to this Crowne) warred victoriously (as many other Christian Princes did) in the holy Land: where (in regard of his honourable deeds and heroicall actions) he refused to bee made king of Ierusalem.

ANNO
1100.

By meanes of his absence, a fit opportunity was offered vnto HENRY his youngest brother, to sit as king in his Throne: whereunto (without labour or difficultie) he ascended, through the fauourable affection of the Nobles and common people: whose hearts were the more firmly engaged to his seruice, because hee was borne in England after his father was crowned king: and also, because his singular Wisdome, rare Learning, milde Disposition and princely Vertues were plaine and apparant demonstrations, that his Government would be accompanied with honorable archievements, gracefull, safe and profitable both to the Church, and also to the Common-weale.

No sooner was he crowned and proclaimed king, but wisdome

*A true vse of
Riches.*

1

*Good policies
wor:by of a
noble King,
and to be no-
ted.*

2

3

4

5

6

7

*Flatterers
banished the
Court.*

8

9

10

11

12

13

*The King
leaueth the
inuesture of
Bishops to the
Pope.*

14

15

16

*Robert Duke
of Normandy
inuaeth
England.*

did informe him, That it was expedient, that his Estate should strongly be supported against the hazzards of future Time, and his brothers Title. Wherefore (hauing seized vpon the plentifull heapes of the last kings Treasure) hee disperfed them frankly into the hands of such, as vpon all occasions, & in all dangers, were able to affoord him their best counsell, and the best reliefe. Then hee dignified such as were great, with the greatest Offices; and with ample Titles of much Honour: And mitigated the rigour of the former new Lawes; and promised restitution of the old. His care was great, that in Weights and in Measures there might bee no defect: but that all, in all places, should be sewed by such Standards as he had made. Hee also acquitted the People from the Taxe of *Dane-gelt*; and from all other vnjust payments and demands imposed vpon them by the two former kings. He gaue free liberty to the Nobles and Gentlemen of this Realme (for their pleasure, and better recreation) to inclose Parkes for Deere, & free Warrens for their Conies, and such like Game. And as Traitors to his Vertues, State, and kingly Gouernment, hee exiled and banished from his Court and Presence all base Flatterers; Nicenesse in Behauiour; Luxuriousnesse in Conuersation; Sumptuousnesse in Apparrell; and Superfluity in Dyer. He ordained punishments by death for all such as violently spoyled or robbed in the High wayes. With indefatigable trauell and paine hee corrected and reformed the monstrous Pride, intolerable Couetousnesse, & secure Negligence and Slouth of the Clergy. He recalled from Banishment *Anselme*, and restored him to his Archbishopricke of Canterbury: and gaue him full power to assemble Conuocations and Synods at his pleasure, for the amendment of such things as were vn sufferable in the Church. He left vnto the Pope his power and authority to inuest Bishops, by giuing to them the Ring, the Crosse, and the Pastorall Staffe. All such Ecclesiasticall Promotions and Dignities, as, by the lewd aduice and counsell of *Reynulph*, Bishop of Durham, his brother had seized into his owne hands, and conuerted to his own vse; he voluntarily and freely conferred vpon Honest, Graue, Learned, and Worthy Men: and committed the said Bishop a prisoner to the Tower of London; from whence he afterwards escaped, and eagerly incited *Robert*, Duke of Normandy, by the Sword to lay his clayme to this kingdome. Who thereupon (to maintaine his demand in that behalfe) raysed a strong Army; which he intended, with all conuenient expedition, to transport into this Realme. But as king *Henrie*, by those precedent prouisions, had endeared himselfe in the Peoples loue: so had hee the more confirmed

firmedit, by taking to wife *Mawle*, the sister of *Edgar*, King of Scots, and daughter vnto *Malcolme*, by *Margaret* his wife, sister to *Edgar Adelinge*, who dyed without issue; and daughter to king *Edward*, the sonne of *Edmund Ironside*, the victorious and valiant king of the Saxons.

*King Henries
title made
stronger by
his marriage.*

When Duke *Robert*, with his Armie, was arriued in England, the noyse of Trumpets, the sound of Drummes, and the swarming multitudes of well-aproued Souldiers, fit for the Warre, afforded none other thing but a fearefull expectation of much trouble. But as a threatening lowring Cloude is sometimes dispersed by a faire shining Sunne: so these approaching conflicts (by the discreet mediation and counsaile of worthie friends) were suddenly preuented; and a friendly peace, betwixt the two brothers, was louingly concluded, vpon such like conditions, as formerly had beene agreed on in *William Rufus* his dayes: wherat the Norman Lords were much displeased, and returned discontented with their Lord.

*A peace con-
cluded be-
twixt the two
brethren.*

But such were the malignant spirits of the Enuious; or such was the greedie disposition of those who were Couetous; or so eager was the Kings appetite to enlarge his Dominion: that many great quarrels, for small and trifling causes, beganne vpon the suddaine to present themselues vnto those two brethren. Insomuch that king *Henry* passed with a sufficient and a well-ordered Armie into Normandy: where he was assisted by many of the Dukes discontented Nobles. By meanes whereof, the king (in sundry skirmishes and conflicts) so preuayled, that with little danger, and small resistance, hee chased the forsaken Duke from place to place; and wonne from him the Cities of Roan, Cante, Valoys, and many others: and then hee returned into England with much honour.

*The King in-
uadeth, and
preuayleth in
Normandy.*

*The Duke is
forsaken by
his Nobles
and Gentry.*

The Duke perceiuing that his Lords and Gentry refused to giue him any helpe; and that the kings Estate, Strength, and Riches so encreased, that no hope of recouerie (by striuing and by struggling) was left vnto him, submitted himselfe to his two Enemies, Time and Fortune (the scornfull deluders of such as repose their confidence vpon them) and came secretly and priuately into England; presented himselfe vnto the king his brother; and referred to his owne censure and will, both himselfe, his Duchie, and all Debates and Controuersies whatsoeuer. But the king (cyther because hee knew that the Duke was too vnconstant; or for that some secret whisperers had prepared him to preiudicate his brothers truth, and honest meaning)

*The Dukes
submission is
scornfully
despised.*

with an estranged countenance, and a disdainfull eye, departed vnkindly from the distressed and perplexed Duke; coyly refusing to accept of his submission, which in all humilitie by him was proffered.

*The Duke
returneth, &
the King fol-
loweth.*

*The Duke is
taken, and his
eyes are put
out.*

*A Rebellion
by the Earles
of Shrewsbu-
ry and of
Mortaigne.*

*They are ta-
ken and im-
prisoned.*

*New troubles
betweene the
King and the
Archbishop
of Canterbu-
rie about the
Temporalities
of the Clergie
and inuesture
of Bishops.*

The Duke (being pierced to the heart, that his misfortunes should so much wrong him) returned with all expedition into his owne country; resolving, That in the open field hee would rather dye as a valiant man, than thus be trampled on by Dishonour and by Disgrace. And the King (coniecturing rightly what he pretended) followed him with many thousands of men: and so often he encountred the weake Duke with his great strength, that within few dayes he tooke him, and brought him as prisoner into England: where (because he hearkned to Natures enticement; which perswaded him to seeke his libertie, and to practise his escape) both his eyes, by the kings commandement, were plucked out. After which time he liued as a miserable and as a wretched captiue, more than the space of twentie yeares. At length, being dead, in Glocester he was buried.

About the same time *Robert Belasme* Earle of Shrewsbury, traitterously did rebell: but wanting Wealth, Wit, Courage, and Strength (the foure champions of the strongest field) hee was enforced to flye into Normandie. Where finding *William* Earle of Mortaigne and of Cornwall, much displeased with the King, for that (as he surmised) hee kept from him vniustly the Earledome of Kent; he so much insinuated himselfe into his loue and counsaile, that easily he perswaded him to rebell. So both of them ioyning both their forces together, they made a goodly shew, as if they would work wonders. But small opposition enforced them to take a plain view of their rash errors; & (leauing that which they had) to make hard shifts for the safegard of themselves. Wherein their ill successe was a iust reward for their foule offence: for by the kings power they were taken, and by him held as prisoners whilest they liued.

The King hauing now cast anchor, as he was resolved, in a safe harbour; and nothing fearing the blasts of any Fortune which might attempt to shake his settlement in this Kingdome: and finding that many inconueniences did daily presse him with much dishonor and disgrace; because he intermeddled not with the Temporalities of Bishopricks when they were vacant; nor with the inuesture of Bishops, as his Ancestors had done: and being informed, That those things were inseparable incidents vnto his crown, and that his neglect to vse them deprived him not of his right vnto them;

them; resolved, That hee would not any longer forbear to challenge; and to put in practise those things which so iustly did belong vnto him. Whereat *Anselme* the Archbishop of Canterbury was much displeased, and did vtterly refuse to consecrate such new Bishops as had receiued their inuestures from the King. But *Gerald*, then Archbishop of Yorke, cheerefully performed that ceremonie, vpon the Kings command.

This new quarrell transported *Anselme* the second time from England vnto Rome: where he complaineth to Pope *Paschal* the Second of those, and of manie other, wrongs: all which were controuerted and debated with the strongest oppositions on eyther partie. But two yeares after, *Anselme* (with the licence and fauour of the king) returned: and in a Synod of the Clergie, holden by him in London, by the Popes authoritie it was enacted, That from thenceforth no Temporall man should giue Inuesture to any Bishop by the Crosse and Ring.

Within three yeares after, *Anselme* dyed: and the Temporalities of that Dignitie being seized into the Kings hands, were (for the space of five yeares) taken, receiued and conuerted to the kings vse. And if at anie time (as hee was often) hee were entreated by the Bishops to conferre that See vpon some other; his answer was, That hee onely kept it for a sufficient and a worthy man.

In the yeare of our Lord God one thousand one hundred and eight, hee erected the Bishopricke of Ely, and endowed it with large and honourable Possessions: which wonne him much fauour with the Pope, and procured him the loue of his owne Clergie.

Thus, when the king (for a few yeares) had enioyed the benefite of an happie Peace, and held all Normandie subiect to his owne command; his tranquillitie and his pleasure were enuiued by *Lewis le Groffe*, then king of France: who first of all procured *Fulke*, Earle of Angeou (vpon a weake pretence) to seize vpon the Countrey of Mayne; and then animated *Baldwyne*, Earle of Flanders, to declare against the king in Armes, for the with-holding of a yearely pension of three hundred markes; which the Conquerour gaue onely vnto *Baldwyne*, the fift Earle of Flanders, during his life. But the same had afterwards beene payed to his Sonne, and Nephew, by the courtesie of the succeeding kings; because the Conquerour had beene well assisted in his Warres with England by the said *Baldwyne* the fift. All these made strong preparations to inuade the Kings Duchie of Normandie: but the newes

Anselme goeth to Rome the second time, & complaineth to Pope *Paschal* the second. The Archbishop prevaileth.

The King entereth vpon the Temporalities of the Archbishop of Canterbury.

The Bishoprick of Ely founded in Anno 1108.

Normandy invaded.

The K. say-
leth into Nor-
mandy, and
promyleth.

newes thereof rowled the King from his bedde of ease; filled him full with princely resolutions; occasioned him to passe the Sea with an Armie of rough and tough Nobles, Gentry and common Souldiers. And shortly after his landing (losing no time) he set vpon the Earle of Angeou and his associates: And after hee had beaten him soundly on euery side, hee enforced him to saue himselfe by a shamefull flight.

Another
victory.

And neere vnto the towne of Nice, which was surprized and holden by the King of France, King *Henry* encountred the other two.

This battaile was made famous by the continuance of nine houres; and was on all parts fought with such eager and manlike resolution, that albeit the king of England wonne the field, and had the long chase of his flying enemies; yet hee boldly and truely would confesse, that he then fought not for victorie, but for his life.

A peace is
concluded.

At length, when the heate of Anger was well quenched, and when manie lay cold on the floore of death, who in their life times had blown the coales of contention between those foure Princes; they all were reconciled vnto peace: and the King married to his eldest sonne *William* the daughter of the said *Fulke*. But in their journey towards England, the said young Princes, *Richard* and *Mary* Countesse of Perch, two others of the Kings children; his Neece *Lucie*, with her husband the Earle of Chester; and moe than an hundred and fourescore others, were vnfortunately drowned by the carelesse folly of the drunken Mariners.

A marriage.

A great mis-
fortune

Drunkennes.

This vnexpected newes, being accompanied with manie millions of sorrowes and of dolefull passions, much grieved the King: but made him not heartlesse, as most Princes would haue beene in the like case. For Wisedome had sufficiently instructed him, with patience to sustaine and beare those burthens, which could not by any meanes be shaken off. And likewise the King was at that time afforded but little leisure to fixe his cogitations on those mishaps, because the obstinate rebellion of the Welshmen drew him vnwillingly into a new Warre. For when hee saw and perceived, that though he were a King, yet vrgent necessitie commanded him to Armes; and that Iustice did require him (by the Sword) to iudge and to execute those lewd and gracelesse Malefactors: hee marched with a strong power into Wales; when the Rebels (trusting ouer-much to their owne valour; which little, or nothing at all, helpeth in treasonable plots and employments) resolved to abide the vtmost push of their fortune:

The Kings
admirable
patience

The Welsh-
men rebell,
and are sub-
dued

tune : which yeelded to the King a speedy and a successfull end of those Warres. For (with little danger, and as small a losse) he gaue them the ouerthrow, and permitted the wastfull deuouring swords of his associates to surfeit vpon the carkasses of those Rebels; whom neither gentle vsage, nor former executions of that nature, could perswade to performe those duties which good subjects doe owe vnto their Prince.

Then returned the King, loaden with much honour, and was joyfully receiued by all his people; especially by *Maulde* his daughter: whom hee forthwith sent to be married vnto the Emperour *Henric* the fifth, her affied husband, with a princely portion of Silver and of Gold; which (in the nature of a Taxe) was leuiued vpon the common people of their Land; which he tooke for an aide towards her marriage. And the same custome, for the marriage of the eldest daughter of the Kings of this Realme, hath beene and is continued vnto this day.

At the same time hee deuised and ordered the manner and fashion of a Court in Parliament; appointing it to consist of the three Estates, of which himselfe was the Head: So that his Lawes, being made by the consents of all, were not disliked of any.

It chanced, that about five yeares after the death of *Anselme, Ralph*, Bishop of Rochester, was by the King appointed to succeed him; and (notwithstanding all former Counsels, Decrees, Commandements, Letters, and Threatnings from the Pope) hee receiued his Inuesture from the King. Then dyed the Archbishop of Yorke: To which See *Thurston*, the Kings Chapleine, should haue beene preferred. But Pride hauing a more large rule and dominion in him, than Lowlinesse and Humility; hee refused to sweare obedience to the See of Canterbury; which his predecessors had both sworn and performed. And because the king (disliking his obstinacy) would not inuest him; hee appealed, and went to Rome: where (by the fauour of some Cardinals, who had the Popes Censure at their command) hee so preuailed, that the Pope not onely freed him of his said obedience and subjection, but also inuested him, and gaue him the Pale: whereat the king was extraordinarily displeased, and prohibited his returne. But in the end (the Popes threatnings menacing nothing but Curses, Suspensions, Excommunications, and such like) he was permitted to returne, and to enjoy the dignity of his Place.

In the seuen and twentieth yeare of his Reigne dyed the Emperour *Henric* the fifth, not hauing any issue by *Maulde* the Kings daughter

Maulde the kings daughter married to the Emperour Henry the fifth.

Aid pur file marrier.

ANNO 1114.
The High Court of Parliament first established at Salisbury in Aprill.

The King inuesteth the Archbishop of Canterbury.

Pride.

Thurston inuested by the Pope.

The King is highly displeased.

Thurston preuaileth, and the King yeeldeth.

*Maid the
Emperesse
married to
Geoffrey
Plantagenet.*

Her issue.

*An oath to
maintaine the
succession of
the Crown in
the Kings
Line.*

*The King
surfeited and
died.*

daughter and heyre. At which time shee being aged about foure and twenty yeares, and being much sued vnto by most of the greatest Princes of the Christian world; the King (to strengthen his Realm against the Kings of France) married her to *Geoffrey Plantagenet*, the sonne and heire apparant of *Fulke*, then Earle of *Angou*. By whom she had issue three sonnes; *Henry*, who was (after *Stephen*) king; *Geoffrey*, and *William*.

This faire off-spring enriched the king with the truest endowment of good content; for that (as hee conceived) he saw in them the settled continuance of his Line in the Crown of this Realme. And (to make it the more sure) within the space of five yeares hee tooke three solemne Oathes of his Nobilitie and greatest Officers of his kingdome, That with their best aduice, and with the hazard of their goods, lands, liues, and fortune; they should support and maintaine the succession of his daughter, and of her heyres.

Finally, when hee had reigned more than five and thirty yeares, he surfeited on a Lamprey; of which hee languished a few dayes, and dyed; and was honourably buried in the Abbey of Reading, which himselfe had founded.

This king was wise, learned, milde, valiant, and iust, beyond most of his predecessors; more enclined to peace than vnto warre; so that hee made warre his Champion stoutly to challenge his Rights, and to reuenge his wrongs. He neuer leuied but two Taxes vpon his people: the first was, to maintaine his warres against the king of France: and the second was, to preferre his daughter in marriage with the Emperour. Hee waxed rich with his owne, and yet he was very liberall: but he only extended his bountie to such as merited it by their publike Seruice, and hee confined his Gifts within the Limits of Thrift and of Measure. He established Lawes, which were profitable to such as were vertuous; but sharpe vnto malefactors who did transgresse: against whom hee caused them to be put in execucion with more seueritie than mercie: he being perswaded, that pitie extended to such as were wicked, hardened them in their sinne, and too much encouraged such, as nothing but correction could eyther terrifie or reforme. To his friends he was a sure pillar, whereunto in all necessities they might boldly leane: and to his enemies he was rough and stiffe, vntill time presented occasion of more loue; and then he was very flexible, and easie to be reconciled. And, as hee would neuer forget good seruice done, nor any good turnes performed for him: so would hee seldome or neuer take rest, vntill by some worthy gift, or correspondent requital, he had shewed himselfe thankfull to such as deserved well. He

was

was too lasciuious in his course of life; vsing many concubines : by whom he had twelue knowne bastards. He erected the two Bishopricks of Ely, and of Carelyle; and founded the Monasteries of Circester, Reading, and Shyrborne; with the Priorie of Dunstable, and some others : all which hee beautified with many Priuiledges and Possessions, answerable to their Dignities and Charge.

Yet did he not retaine the chiefeest roome in the Clergies loue : because that (after the death of *Anselme*) hee reiected the Popes Decrees, to which he had formerly subiected himselfe : and inuested Bishops; receiued Homage of Prelates; seized their Temporalities, when their Sees were vacant; gaue no allowance to any Canons of the Church, except they were ratified and confirmed by the King; compounded with Priests for annuall pensions, to keep their wiues, or to take them (though vnto them the holy estate of Matrimonie was forbidden :) which pensions he enforced them to pay, whether they had wiues or no.

Thus (in this King) ended the issues males of the
Conquerour: and the Crowne of this
Realme was deuolued to his
generall Heires.

ETHE

was too late in the court of law; when many conspirators
 by whom he had been known and hated. He was the two bi-
 lapidary of Ely and of Cuthbert; and founded the Monasteries
 of Cuthbert, Reading, and Spire; with the Prince of
 Danforth, and Countess; all which he provided with many
 Priests, and Bishops, and was able to their Dignities and
 Charge.

Yet did he not retain the chief room in the Church; for
 because after the death of his father he received the
 D. of York, and was made Archbishop of York; and in the
 11th Bishop of London; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 12th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 13th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 14th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 15th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 16th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 17th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 18th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 19th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 20th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 21st Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 22nd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 23rd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 24th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 25th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 26th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 27th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 28th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 29th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 30th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 31st Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 32nd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 33rd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 34th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 35th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 36th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 37th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 38th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 39th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 40th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 41st Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 42nd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 43rd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 44th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 45th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 46th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 47th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 48th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 49th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 50th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 51st Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 52nd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 53rd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 54th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 55th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 56th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 57th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 58th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 59th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 60th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 61st Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 62nd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 63rd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 64th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 65th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 66th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 67th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 68th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 69th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 70th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 71st Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 72nd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 73rd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 74th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 75th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 76th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 77th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 78th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 79th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 80th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 81st Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 82nd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 83rd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 84th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 85th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 86th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 87th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 88th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 89th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 90th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 91st Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 92nd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 93rd Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 94th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 95th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 96th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 97th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 98th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 99th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and
 100th Bishop of Bath; and was made Duke of Lancaster; and

Thus in the King's hand the three marks of the
 Conquest; and the Crown of the
 Kingdom was placed on his
 General's head.



THE HISTORIE OF KING STEPHEN.



HE experience of all Ages hath made sufficient prooffe, that the eager appetite which most Men haue to gaine Wealth and Riches hath made them carelesse to performe those common Duties, which doe belong to Honestie and to Right. But if a Kingdome may bee obtained (though with the breach of a most solemne Oath) no scruple is then made. For the desire of Soueraignetie, and to enioy a Crowne, makes men play fast and loose, and

to hazzard the losse of their Soules, by the wilfull periurious violating of their Faith.

This proved too true at this time : For albeit that *Stephen* Earle of Boloigne, the son and heire apparant of *Stephen* Earle of Bloys, and of *Adela* the Conquerors Daughter, was one of the chiefest, whom king *Henrie* the first had obliged by many solemne and publicke Oathes, to further the succession of *Maud* the Empreffe, being his Daughter; and of her children : yet (when the king was dead) he finding, that all the Nobles (though sworne as himselfe was) applyed themselves to wait vpon his pleasure : hee either vterly forgot, or (at least) hee cared not for the vowes of former times; but caused himselfe to be crowned king.

E 2

And

*Stephen's sur-
pass.*

*The former
Oath is
forgotten.*

1135.

Good Policie.

1

The Kings
liberalitie.

2

3

4

5

Priviledges
granted to
the Clergie.

6

7

8

Castles and
Fortresses
erected.

9

10

The Scots
flattered by
the King.

11

The King of
Scots over-
thrown by
the Archbi-
shop of York.

12

And so well was hee instructed by the former examples of his Progenitors; that, as they did, so did hee endeavour (by Wisdom, and by Policie) to lay a sure Foundation to his Estate. And because Riches are the Sinewes and the Strength of the strongest kings; hee therefore (to enrich himselfe) seized vpon the Treasure of his vncl, the last deceased King: Which hee choised not vpon Chests, or in Bagges, as idle Archers doe their Arrowes in their Quiuers, when (for their honest recreation) they should shooe: but with a large and an open hand hee bountifully disposed of them among such, as either by Armes, or by Counsell, were best likely to stand him in the greatest stead. Hee also created sundry Noblemen: and dignified many others with the honourable Title of Knighthood; whose loue by those meanes hee procured. And (because benefits received doe more please the vulgar and common sort of People, than Right or Reason can doe) hee therefore releas'd vnto them the Dane-gelt, and all other extraordinarie Burthens and Exactions whatsoeuer: causing a large charter thereof, and of the mitigation of the Seueritie and Penalties of sundry Lawes, to be made; and bound himselfe by a solemn Oath to keepe and to obserue the same. Hee also renounced the future Seisures of all Ecclesiasticall Dignities and Promotions, when they should become vacant. Hee gaue to the Church and Church-men such gracefull and profitable Priuiledges and Immunities as they would demand. And (among other things) hee freely exempted them from the authoritie of the Temporall Magistrate, for all offences whatsoeuer; except the Ordinarie should bee pleased; that hee should deale therewith. Finally, hee endeauoured to doe all things iustly, and pleasing vnto all. To prevent suddaine Eruptions, Rebellions, and Incurfions, tending to the generall disturbance of the common Peace; by hauing many strong and fortified places for good defence: himselfe erected many Forts, Fortresses, Bulwarkes, and Castles; and licenced his Nobles, and his Gentrie, and Clergie, to doe the like. Hee gaue vnto *David* the King of Scots, and vncl to *Maud* the Emperesse (because hee should not second her in her demands, or warlike attempts) the whole Prouince of Cumberland; and created his eldest sonne *Henrie* Earle of Huntingdon. Yet notwithstanding, not long after (in her quarrell) hee entred into the Northren parts of this Kingdome; which hee totmented with fire and sword. But in the end hee was encountred by *Thurston*, then Archbishop of Yorke; who compelled him (being pursued with vnspeakable dangers) to flye into Scotland;

land; and to leaue behinde him, dead vpon the ground, more than ten thousand men of his Armie.

In the sixt yeare of his Reigne, *Maud* the Empresse, beeing accompanied with her base Brother, *Robert*, Earle of Glocester, landed with an Armie in England; and was quickly strengthened and emboldened in her Enterprize by the plentifull accessse of many of the English, and of *Raynalph* Earle of Chester, with a lustie crew of bold and forward Welchmen. Hereupon the King (imposing no confidence in delay; but Experience instructing him, that aduised Expedition is the chiefest enabler of good successe) leuied a strong Armie; and marched with good resolution against the Empresse, and her Forces: who greeted him with such Musicke as her warlike Troupes did gallantly present. So that a cruell and a bloudie Battaille (with equall hopes) for many houres was fought betweene them. But at length, the Kings common Souldiours (striving faintly, and, as cowards, rather endeauiouring to saue themselves by flight, than manfully to defend their King) did basely leaue the King: who, with his Nobles and Gentrie, scorning to turne their backs, maintained their part, with as much courage as man-hood could afford; till (in the end) the king was taken, and committed to the Castle of Bristol: where hee remayned a prisoner about the space of three moneths; and was at the last deliuered, to free the Earle of Glocester, who had bene taken, and was imprisoned by the Queene.

After this victorie thus obtained, the Empresse (with many honourable Triumphs and Solemnities) was receiued into the Cities of Circester, Oxford, Winchester, & London. But the Londoners desiring the restitution of King *Edwards* Lawes, and not obtaining their request) consulted to surprize the Empresse, and to deliuer her vnto the King. By meanes whereof, good counsell aduised her to flye: which suddainely shee did; and came vnto Oxford: Where (within few dayes, and v unexpectedly) she was enuironed with a strong Siege: So that despaire of good successe disheartening her, and teaching her a readie meanes for her escape; taking the benefit of the Snow (which at that time lay thicke vpon the ground) shee, with her chiefest complices, apparrelling themselves in white linnen, secretly issued forth; and posting with all speede towards the Sea, they embarked themselves, and sayled into Normandie.

Many yeares together, after these turmoyles, this Realme enioyed a blessed Peace: And in the seuenteenth yeare of this Kings Reigne

*Maud the
Empresse lan-
des in Eng-
land.*

*King Stephen
overthrowne.*

*King Stephen
taken priso-
ner.*

*King Stephen
is set at libe-
rty.*

*The Londo-
ners attempt
to surprize
the Empresse.*

*The Empresse
besieged in
Oxford,*

*A politicks
flight,*

*Henry Short-
Mantle heire
apparent to
the Emperesse.*

Reigne dyed the most valorous and hardy knight *Raynalph* Earle of Chester : and so did *Geoffrey Plantagenet*, husband to the Emperesse. And *Henrie*, surnamed *Short-Mantle*, her eldest sonne, tooke to wife *Eliane*, the daughter and heire of the Earle of Poytoun : which *Eliane* not long before (for neere nesse in blood, and after shee had borne him two daughters) was diuorced from *Lewis* the seuenth, then King of France. So that Prince *Henrie* was now Duke of Normandie, in the right of his Mother ; Earle of Angeou by descent from his Father ; and Earle of Poytoun in the right of his wife : by whom (not long after) hee also had the Earledome of Tholouse.

This worthy Prince (by many of his friends and valiant men of Warre, who longed to haue employment in so faire a iourney) was incited to leue a strong Armie, and to transport them into England ; and by their helpe, and the assistance of other well-willers, to attempt the recouerie of his Right : and the rather, for that King *Stephen*, and *Eustace* his only sonne, did now beginne to warre vpon many of those, who held their Castles for the Prince his vse. His strong Expectation, and hope to bee enthroned in this kingdome, through the fauour of diuers Lords and Commans of this Realme ; easily perswaded him to lend a listening eare to their whisperings : So that to giue vnto them good content, and to forward the attayning of his owne desires, he raised a strong power of willing and able men of Warre. Which (beeing brauely conducted by noble Captaines, well skilled in those affaires) arriued safely in England : where King *Stephen* and his sonne disdained to bee idle ; for they had prouided with an equall strength to encounter him.

*Henry Short-
Mantle inua-
deth Eng-
land.*

Both armies had daily newes the one from the other : they threatned much, did somewhat, but it was but little : Yet in those Expeditions, *Eustace* the kings sonne by misaduenture was vnfortunately drowned ; which ouercame the King with infinite passions of sorrow and extreame griefe. But it made a quiet end of this quarrell. For now, the king (not hauing any sonne which might succeed him) was well pleased to lend a listening eare to the faire proffer of a friendly Peace. And thereupon hee adopted Prince *Henry* for his sonne ; proclaymed him to bee the Heire apparant of his Crowne ; gaue him many honourable and kingly Gifts ; assured him of his vchangeable loue and friendship.

*Prince Eu-
stace drowned*

*The quarrell
is compoun-
ded & ended.*

And by these meanes all Armes were cast aside, and Peace tri-

triumphing ; having gotten a certaine and a sure victorie with few blowes. And the Prince, with his followers, returned into Normandie : where they were with much honour and incredible ioy receiued.

And the next yeare after, King *Stephen* died, when hee had reigned almost nineteene yeares ; and lyeth buried in the Abbey of *Feuersham* in Kent, which himselfe had founded.

And by the happy Succession of this *Henry*.

77, the Saxon Bloud was againe restored vnto the Imperiall

Crowne of this
Realme.

*King Stephen
dyeth.*

*The Saxons
bloud resto-
red to the
Crown of
England.
See the de-
scents in the
Reigne of
King Henry
the first.*



THE

triumphing; having gotten a certain and a late victorie with
few blows. And the Prince, with his followers, returned into
Normandie: where they were with much honour and incredible
joy received.

And the next yeare after King Stephen died, when hee had
reigned almost ninetene yeares; and Iohn buried in the Ab-
bey of Beaulieu in France, which kinde he had founded.
And by the happy succession of this kinde
the Saxon blood was againe re-
stored unto the Imperiall
Crown of this
Kingdom.

King Stephen
died
the Saxon
blood was
restored
Crown of
this
Kingdom



THE



THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE THE SECON D.



HEN *Henrie* was returned into Normandy; the French King (feating lest Time, and his Fortunes, would make him too puissant and too great for his bordering Neighbours, and intending to deale roughly with him, before hee should bee the absolute Master and Commander of his owne strength) very iniuriously seized vpon diuers of his Fortresses and

Castles in Normandy, and elsewhere, which (questionlesse) ought to haue beene subiect to his Gouvernement. But *Henry* (being wise, and full of courage and heroicall Magnanimity; and foreseeing, that if hee should shrink as a coward, and not make himselfe knowne by his valour to the world, when the wrongs which were done vnto him were too apparant) raysed a faire Army: and (for the regayning of one of those his Castles) he girded it roundabout with a strong siege. And whilest hee was thus employed to winne his right, the newes of king *Stephens* death came freshly vnto his cares. And (to prevent such vsurpation, as oftentimes, in the absence of the lawfull kings, depriueth them of their Crownes) he was by his neereft and dearest friends aduised to abandon the Siege; and, without tarrying, to transport

F

himselfe

*Henry Short-
Mamels va-
lour and con-
rage.*

*He sayleth
speedily into
England: but
first winneth
the Castle
which he had
besieged.*

*A resolute
speech.*

himselfe into England. But his answer was full of discretion and true valour to this effect: *The Kingdome of England* (quoth hee) *shall henceforth bee at my command, in despite of those who dare to crosse mee most: And so shall these intruding Frenchmen ere I goe hence.*

1154.

*The King re-
formeth the
Lawes.*

This Resolution redoubled his honour among his friends; and to it did among his enemies. For when the besieged were informed what he had said and determined (fearing the event, if obstinately they should detain him there too long) they surrendered the Castle, and submitted themselves to his mercy: who received it and them with a favourable and gracious acceptance. And then giving such directions as both the time and occasions did require, and being accompanied with many Lords and Gentlemen of the best and chiefest ranke; hee sayled with a prosperous winde into England: where (not long after) he was crowned King.

*England di-
vided into
Circuits: into
which Iudges
were sent, to
ease the peo-
ple.*

The singular zeale and love which he bare to the furtherance of Iustice, and to the execution thereof, appeared manifestly by two Actions of his, performed: the one in the beginning; and the other, towards the latter end of his reigne. For first hee made an especiall choise of certaine men, who were very honest, ypright and best learned in the Lawes of this Realme: by whose industrious labours & trauailes he refined and reformed the common Lawes; making them to bee more tolerable and profitable vnto his People. And towards the end of his dayes he diuided his whole kingdome into fixe seuerall Circuits; and (for the administration of Iustice, and for the tryals of Causes betwixt men and men, for the better ease and comfort of his Subjects) hee appointed certaine Iudges twice in every yeare to ride, and to trauaile through those Circuits: which course and order is carefully continued at this day.

*Strangers
banished: and
the cause why*

Hee also banished the greatest part of Strangers, who (in those dayes) by multitudes flocked hither; and by their extraordinary Sparing, and painefull Industry, procured to themselves much Wealth, and beggered such as were Natiues borne.

*Oath-brea-
kers banished.*

Hee also exiled many of the Nobles, who contrary to their publike Oathes, Duties, and Consciences, had more than ordinarily adlied vnto King *Stephen*: being fully resolved, That the Cogitations of their owne Guiltinesse, in that behalte, would neuer suffer them to bee hearty and faithfull vnto him.

Hee

Hee differed much from the opinion of his last Predecessor; and affirmed, That strong Forts and Castles, erected and maintained in the Heart or Body of a Kingdome, did rather animate great men, vpon all displeasures, to reuolt, than in any sort containe them within the bounds and limits of their Obedience, and of their Duty: wherefore he caused them to be rased (for the greater number) to the ground.

Castles politically razed, and overthrown.

Hee also seized into his owne hands such Territories, Manors, Lordships, and Possessions, as his Predecessors had cyther giuen, or sold, from the Crowne: holding it to be the duty of euery Subiect, to refuse the Gift or Purchase of such things, as doe so immediately concerne the Honour and Maintenance of the king.

He seized on Crown-lands formerly giuen away.

Nota.

And the like he did in the Northren Parts; where many great Men, commanding almost as they listed, had wrought themselves and their Posterities into many Honors, Castles, and Manors (without title) which in truth and in deed appertained to the king.

Hee also resumed into his owne hands the Prouinces of Cumberland, and of Northumberland, together with the Earledome of Huntingdou; which *Dauid* the king of Scots, and *Henrie* his son, had receiued as a gift from king *Stephen*, because they should not intermeddle in the furtherance of his mother *Mauld* the Empresse to her Right and Crowne.

In the thirteenth yeare of his Reigne, he married *Geoffroy* (being one of his younger sonnes) vnto *Constance*, the daughter and heire apparant of *Conan* Duke of Britain: who died not long after, and left vnto them that Duchie.

Geoffroy the Kings younger sonne is Duke of Britaine.

He also affied his younger sonne *Richard* vnto *Adela*, one of the daughters of *Lewis* the king of France: and married his daughter *Mauld* vnto *Henrie* Duke of Saxonie. And about the same time the Empresse his mother died.

Mauld the Empresse died.

Hee loued Peace (though he were passing valiant) because he found it to be pleasing and profitable: yet he willingly entred at all times into the Lists of Warre, when necessary or good reason perswaded him to arme.

Peace preferred before Warre.

When his estate was most quiet, and freest from Warres abroad, or ciuill disturbances at home; hee would now and then, vpon the suddaine, raise an Army, and transport them either into Normandy, or into Britaine, Angeou, or other places subiect to the Dominion of himselfe, or of his sonnes. And himselfe in person vsed to goe with them. And in those places he exercised them

The King exercised his souldiers in warlike negotiations in the time of greatest peace.

The commo-
dity of his so
doing.

1174.
Henry the se-
cond conquere-
th Ireland.

The Kings
sonne twice
Crowned
King in his
fathers daies.

A proud and
an unthank-
full Sonne.

Warres be-
twixt Eng-
land and
France.

Vnnaturall
children.

God plagued
them.

King Henry
sorrowing for
his childrens
rebellions,
dieth.

in fortifications, trainings, and lyings in the field, and with other Marriall discipline. By meanes whereof he seled those Countries in peace, and with good Gouvernment made warlike busineses familiar to his Souldiers; and then returned without blowes into England. By these meanes, when troubles hapned, he little feared: because his men were aply inured to those things, which most properly belong vnto the wars.

In the nineteenth yeare of his Reigne (because the Irish Nation attempted to deprive him of certaine Territories in that Iland, which were left vnto him by his Predecessors) he sailed thither with a mighty Army, and fought many victorious battailes, against siue kings which at that time reigned there. All which hee subdued, and made subiect vnto himselfe: and became the sole Lord of all that Country; and annexed that Title vnto the Title of his Crowne, and returned honourably into England. Such was the surpassing loue of this worthy king to his eldest sonne *Henrie*, That he caused him, and his wife *Margaret* the daughter of the French king, to be twice solemnly Crowned in the presence of his people: (himselfe the second time, for that day, leaning the Title of a King, and seruing as a Sewer at his sonnes table) whereat his proud sonne made no wonder, but publicly affirmed, That his father was nothing thereby dishonoured; For that he was onely the sonne of an Empresse: But he himselfe was the son both of a King, and also of a Queene.

Many larties, and Quarrels in his latter dayes, arose betwixt king *Henrie* the father and *Lewis* the French king: which at length were decided by sharpe and bloudy warres. In all which (most vn-naturally) *Henry*, *Geoffrey* and *Iohn*, the kings sonnes: and (most vndutifully) *Robert* Earle of Leicester, and *Hugh* Earle of Chester, together with *William* then king of Scots, tooke part with the French against the king. In all which (notwithstanding) king *Henrie* by noble valour and courage did preuaile, and vpon submission granted Pardon to his sonnes, and all the rest. Yet were his sonnes after grievously punished by God. For *Henry* died before his father, in the prime and flower of his strength; And *Iohn*, his sonne, (who was after king) was poysoned by a Monke. Yet these vnnaturall Rebellions by his owne children, vnto whom he had extended (if wee may belecue reports) more than the loue, and affection of a worthy father, so inwardly perplexed his minde; that surfeiting vpon bitter passions, occasioned by their reuolt, he fell into a dangerous Feuer, which the more vexed him, because *Richard* his sonne had then raised another broyle against him. And within foure

four dayes after hee died in Normandy, when he had reigned almost fūe and twenty yeares; and was buried at Fountenerard in France.

The history of this kings Reigne, approueth him to haue bene learned, wise, polirickt, iust and valiant: And that (which not a little augmenteth the number of his praises) albeit hee were oftentimes engaged in many busineses: Some of them concerning his wars in France, Normandy, Angeou, Ireland, and in other places: And some of them respecting his poliricke rule, and Government at home; yet he neuer imposed, nor leuiued vpon his Subiects any extraordinary tax, or payment whatsoever. Yet left hee, vnto his Successor more than nine hundred thousand pounds in siluer, and in gold: besides his Plate, Jewels, Household-stuffe, and provision for the war.

And though in most things prosperity made him happy: yet in three things, especially, he was most vnfortunate and vnhappy. The first was the vnnaturall disobedience, and rebellious reuolts of his owne children. The second was his inordinate fauour, and vnquenchable lust, towards *Rosamond* his vnseparable Concubine: who (being admirably faire, but wantonly conditioned) alienated, and estranged his best affections, and loue, wholly from the Lady *Eliano* his most renowned wife; and made his desires subiect, nay slauith, vnto her will. So that whilest shee liued, she was seldome from his right-hand: And being dead, hee caused her with great solemnity and pompe, to be sumptuously buried at Godstow besides Oxford; Fixing on her Tombe this Epitaph.

Hic iacet in Tumba Rosa Mundi: Non Rosamunda:

Non redolet, sed olet, qua redolet sole.

And the third was, the irreconcilable dissension & strife, which hapned betwixt himselfe and *Thomas Becket*, the proud and insolent Archbishop of Canterbury. The which, beginning in the tenth yeare of his Reigne, was prosecuted seuen yeares after, with great asperity and bitterness, on either party, as briefly it shall appeare.

Theobald, Archbishop of Canterbury (for what desert few did know) in such sort fauoured *Thomas Becket* a Londoner, borne of ordinary parentage, that hee made him Archdeacon of his owne Church. And (being able to obtaine any thing of the king, which he did reasonably craue) he procured him to be removed from one Dignity vnto another, vntill (at length) he was made

King Henrys description.

A rich King, who taxed not his people.

200000. L

His vnhappiness.

His incontinency, with the faire Rosamond his Concubine.

Rosamonds Epitaph.

The History of the Kings troubles, with Thomas Becket.

*Thomas Bec-
ket made
Lord Chan-
celor.*

made Lord Chancellor of the Realme. This high honour so puffed vp *Thomas Becket* with the winde of Pride and vaine-glory, that now he thought few, or none, exceeded him for his honour and for his vertues. Yet did hee carry himselfe with such regardfull obseruance and duty to the king, that hee augmented his Estate with the gift of large Tenneries and Possessions: which daily made him the more confident of the continuance of his great fortunes.

*Thomas Bec-
ket is made
Archbsh. of
Canterbury.
His vnthank-
fulnesse.
He is sum-
med at Rome.
He is made
the Popes Le-
gate.
He proudly
surrendereth
his Chance-
lorship & the
great Seale.*

At length *Theobald* died; and the king preferred *Thomas Becket* to succeed him. But he (being most vnthankfull, and resolved as it seemed to play his pranks) secretly, and without leaue, trauelled vnto Rome: and was inuicted by Pope *Innocent* the second, of whom hee receiued his Pale, and was made a Legate. And then he returned into England; and was in great disfaueur with the king. But he (taking little notice of the kings dislike) contrary to the kings pleasure, vpon the suddaine surrendered to the king his Chancellorship, and the great Seale. The king enquired diligently for the cause why he so did. But such was his obstinate folly and vnthankfulnesse, that he would not reueale it vnto anie.

*The Clergies
temporall of-
fences made
subiect to be
tried before
the Tempo-
rall Iudges.*

These jarres betweene the King and the Archbishop, emboldened the baser and the worser sort of the Clergy to commit manie great and horrible finnes and offences; for which they receiued small punishment, because (though their transgressions were Murthers, Manslaughters, Thefts, and Robberies) yet they being to be tryed and adiudged by men of their owne profession, were too too much winked at. So that, by meanes of their carelesnesse, the Common-weale was much wronged. Wherefore the king summoned and assembled his High Court of Parliament: In which, that Law, made by king *Stephen*, which exempted the authority of the Temporall Iudge to meddle with any Ecclesiasticall persons, for any crime by them committed whatsoeuer, was abolished; and the ancient Lawes of this Realme, vsed in the times of *Henry* the first, and of others the kings Progenitors, and (which were commonly called *Anita Leges*) were reduced to their former validity and force.

Anita Leges

But in these proceedings the king was much crossed and interrupted by the obstinate and bold frowardnesse of *Thomas Becket*, and of some few other Bishops; who vnadvisedly made themselves partakers of his Faction. But after many Conferences, Disputes, and Consultations, touching those busineses; all the Bishops (*Becket* onely excepted) ratified and subscribed those newly

reui-

ruined Lawes. But *Becket* would not by any meanes assent thereunto, except hee might insert this Clause, *Saluo ordine suo*: Which words would clearly haue annihilated the life and substance of those Lawes.

This his folly made the king to bite his lippe; and to say little: So that the other Bishops, much fearing to what end the kings extraordinary displeasure and discontentment would tend, did priuately commune with the Archbishop; and prayed him (for the preuenting of future mischieses) to submit himselfe: whereunto he gaue his free consent; and (as the rest had done) so did he take a solemne Oath, to giue allowance to those Lawes. The king forthwith altered the strangenesse of his countenance into pleasing and familiar lookes: hee spake kindly vnto *Becket*; and assured him of his former loue. And being wise and politike, and purposing to assure the Peace of future times, whilst opportunity did serue: hee caused a tripartite Instrument to bee drawne betwixt himselfe and the two Archbishops, testifying this Submission, and this Oath: Two of which parts were forthwith subscribed by the king and by the Archbishop of Yorke. But *Thomas Becket* (falling into the relapse of his former folly) did not onely refuse to doe the like; but expressed great Repentance for the former Oath which hee had taken. And (not so contented) he feeterly iurorned the Pope thereof; and of his inward sorrow for that sinne. The Pope not onely absolved him of that Oath, and enioyned him to some priuate Penance: but hee also required him, without yeelding, stoutly to persist (with a strong Resolution) in his opinion.

Hereupon the kings anger towards *Becket* daily increased more and more. And when this newes from Rome was divulged, his Maiesty seized into his owne hands all such Temporall Lands and Promotions as hee had giuen in former times vnto *Becket*: and required him to render him an account for thirty thousand Marks, which (to his vse) he had receiued when he was Chancellor of this Realme. But boldly hee affirmed, That the king had frankely and freely giuen it vnto him: and that therefore hee would not enter into any such account. Whereupon the king, to satisfie himselfe, made a seizure of such moveable good as appertained to him.

Thus, whilst the Wheele thus turned, *Thomas Becket*, without the kings Licence, transported himselfe secretly vnto Rome: and the king (thereby perceiuing that *Becket* intended nothing more than to incense the Pope against him) sent his Embassadors and Letters

Becket would not giue way to those Lawes

His Exception Saluo iure suo.

Becket is persuaded: and swears to those Lawes.

Becket again withstandeth those Lawes.

Becket is absolved by the Pope.

Becket's temporallies seized by the King.

He is called to an accompt for 30000 marks, and refuseth to accompt.

His monies are seized.

Becket goeth to Rome.

The Pope denieth the Kings request.

He threatneth the king.

The Kings anger against Becket.

The King forbiddeth access from the Pope into England.

Becketts friends are banished.

The French King undertaketh animosity to the Pope.

The King sayleth into France. He conferreth with Becket. His offer to Becket.

Letters vnto Rome: and by them he signified vnto the Pope, how reasonable his owne demands were, and how peruersly *Thomas Becket* had refused to obey. And therefore he, entreated the Pope, that hee might be deprivied of his Place and Dignity: protesting, That he would provide for him and his in some other kind. But the Pope not onely denied his request, but with thundering termes he threatened to send two Legats into England, who should curse the King, and all his Realme; except, on their demand, he restored the Archbishop both to his Place and Dignity, and also to all such Lands and Moucables, as by the kings commandement had beene taken from him. And in the meane time hee commended *Becket* to the Abbot of Pontinyack, where he was gently received, and kindly entertained as a Monke.

But when the king perceiued into what corner the winde did blow, and that the Pope had filled *Becket* with the blasts of pride and vaine glory: he (being more and more exasperated) sent vnto the said Abbot, and required him to turne *Becket* out of his house, or otherwise he protested, hee would not leaue one Monke of his Order in all France.

He also published certaine Iniunctions against the Pope, and all Cardinals, and Legates, which (withour his Licence) should presume to enter into his kingdome.

He also deprivied *Thomas Becket*s nearest and choifest friends of all such Promotions, Lands, and Substance, as they did enioy; and banished them out of the Realme, because (with counsell and with money) they had ioyned with him in this his obstinacy against the king.

This round and bitter course, more troubled *Becket* than all other precedent passages whatsoeuer. And, to encrease his griefe, the Abbot of Pontinyacke (feating the euent of the kings displeasure, if he submitted not himselfe to his command) gently perswaded *Becket* to leane his house. Whereof when *Lewis* the French king heard; (albeit his daughter *Margaret* was married vnto *Henrie* the yong king) yet hee procured him better entertainment elsewhere, and secretly wrote in his behalfe vnto the Pope.

King *Henrie* (desiring to see an end of these troubles, if by any meanes conueniently hee might) vpon the suddaine sailed into France. And (in the French kings presence) hee conferred with *Becket* oftentimes; and made him this offer, That if (at last) hee would take the said Oath againe, and would subscribe the said Instrument Tripartite (as himselfe, and the Archbishop of Yorke had done to the other two) He should then retorne into England, Graced

ced with the kings especiall fauour; and that he should enioy his place and dignitie, and bee (in ample sort) restored to all things taken from him, and whereof iustly hee had bene deprived. And that the like hountie should be extended to his exiled friends. But hee proudly answered, That if the king would consent, that hee might so sweare and subscribe with this exception, *Saluo honore Dei*; he then would yeeld. But this exception displeased the king more than all the rest had done. For then hee perceiued plainly, that *Becket* intended thereby, to expresse; That those Lawes tended to the dishonour of Almighty God: and that therefore hee had a purpose no longer to obey them (notwithstanding he would subscribe and sweare) than he should please. But *Becket* told him proudly and plainly, That hee feared none but God: and that (with those his Lawes were derogatorie to the ancient customes, and priuiledges of the Church, and robbed God of his honour) the king (in seeking to establish them) should not haue his owne will whilest he liued.

The King, failing of his purpose, returned into England; and not long after, two Legates came to him from Rome, to interdict him from comming to the Church, vntill he had in all things whatsoeuer restored *Becket*, according to the Popes commands. High displeasure transported the king into Normandy: where he conferred againe with *Becket*, but found him not the selfe-same man. And being desirous to set an end of those troubles: hee gaue him way, and consented to his returne; and came againe into England. And not long after *Becket* followed the king. But the king mutteringly repined, that among all such as he had aduanced, there was not one who would endeuour to rid him of so dangerous and malapert an enemy.

Hee also receiued a strange welcome of *Henrie* the young king, who exiled him from his Court, and confined him to his owne house in Canterburie: because (in his absence) the king in his Parliament desiring that his said sonne should bee crowned king, the Bishop of London, and three other Bishops (vpon the kings commandement) had performed those ceremoniall Solemnities, and were suspended by *Becket*, because they presumed so to doe without his leaue, and could not be absolved by *Becket*, although hee had been entreated therein by both those kings.

And within foure daies after, *Becket* (by foure gracelesse mat-factors) was wickedly murdered in his owne Church: whereof the king was accused by the Pope, but he denied it vpon his oath. Yet in regard of his former muttering speeches (which by all con-

Saluo honore Dei.

Becket's proud resolution.

Two Legates sent to interdict the King.

He sayeth into Normandy, but finds no alteration in Becket.

The King is pleased that Becket shall returne into England.

The King would faine haue Becket dispatched.

Thomas Becket murdered.

The King accused.

The Kings
Penance.

He is whip-
ped.

lecture hastened his end) the king submitted himself to the Popes
Censure : Who enioyned him to waite three yeares in person in
the Holy Land; which hee redeemed by erecting three houses of
Religion. He was also enioyned to go from London to Canterbu-
rie bare-footed, to visit *Buckes* Shryne : which he did; and
suffered himselfe to bee scourged with rods by
euery Monke there. And thus the king
had a bad end of all those

Troubles.



THE



THE
HISTORIE OF
KING RICHARD
THE FIRST.



RICHARD, the eldest sonne living of *Henrie the Second* (being in *Normandie* when his Father dyed) succeeded in his Throne. And (because those Countries wanted settlement, and required a long time of his presence) about all other things hee was most carefull for the enlargement of *Queen Elianor* his Mother; who by her deceased Husband was committed to strait imprisonment, because shee loathed, and would not endure, his lascivious course of living with his wanton *Rosamond*; but sharply reproved him for the same. And because shee was every way vertuous, discreete, and wise; he committed the whole Government of this Realme, in his absence, to her care. And (because her own Experience had informed her, what anguish and what sorrow poore helpelesse Captives did endure) shee set at libertie all such as were imprisoned for ordinarie offences, or for small Debts, which her selfe did pay: and administrated the Common-weales affaires with great Moderation, Integrity, and Justice, vntill her sonne the King came home, and was with all Solemnitie and strange Triumphs appointed and crowned King.

This King (imitating the milde disposition of his Mother; and

*A good sonne
but an enill
husband.*

*Queen Elianor
is made
Regent of
England.*

*Non ignara
mali, miseris
succurrere
discit.*

*Amercifull
King.*

commiserating the troubles of such as were afflicted) freed out of euery Prison all such as were his Debtors, or were enthrall'd for any transgression which concerned himselfe; and whom, without iniustice done to others, he might acquite. And in the whole course of his Government he so provided, that Iustice with Mercy should be extended vnto all.

*Too much be-
nor elateth.*

He created many honours and profitable Promotions vpon his brother *John*, whom he created Earle of Lancaster, and gaue vnto him the Prouinces of Nottingham, Deuonshire, & Cornwall: & married him to the sole and onely Daughter and Heire of the Earle of Gloucester, from whom he receiued the Lordship of that Countrey.

These great and kinde fauours required, that he should be thankfull. But oftentimes it happeneth, that as the addition of too much Oyle extinguisheth the Lampe, which otherwise would burne, and yeeld her light; and as the ouer-abundance of too much water, falling vpon a Wheele, maketh it the lesse seruiceable for the vse to which it is employed: So the conferring of too much Honour, and of too many Titles of Dignitie, vpon such as are not capable of them all, altereth and changeth their milde and gentle dispositions, and maketh them altogether vnthankfull for those benefits which they haue receiued. And oftentimes they are incited and prouoked thereby, to affect things of higher consequence and moment than are fitting; and to coniecture, that the greatest fortunes are most agreeable to their Estates. So that they neuer cease to attempt great things: which in the end will rather be hurtfull to them, than doe them any good.

*An vnthank-
full brother.*

This proued true betwixt the King and his brother *John*. For when the King had powred on him plentifull showres of his bounty and great abundance; and had aduanced him in Honour, and in Estate, aboue all others: his thoughts mounted aboue the Moon, and made him vnnaturally and vnthankfully to affect the Crowne; and to boast, that his endowments were sufficient, and fitting for a king. And though hee wanted opportunitie, yet hee resolved to push hard for the Crowne, if Time and Fortune would present it to him.

*Cuer de
Lyon.*

This king (for his inuincible valour, & haughty courage) was esteemed to be almost matchlesse in the Christian world: so that he was surnamed *Cuer de Lyon*, or the Lyons Heart. And (to say the truth) he was such a one, as (vpon good aduice and counsell) dared to attempt any thing, if it were honourable to bee archiued, and possible to be done.

His

His fathers treasure enriched him exceedingly with great store of Silver and of Gold. And such was his contempt of Riches, & such was his bountie to such, as either deserved well, or left in him any impression of Noble worth, that hee bestowed on them great Gifts, with such alacritie and cheerefullnesse, that in short time hee vnbowelled all his Bagges and Chests; little foreseeing, that future Business might require the expence of more, than the great Plentie which was left vnto him: and that (when he wanted) hee should be enforced to make hard shift to relieue himselfe.

In the beginning of his Reigne, the Pope solicited him with strong perswasions, and many promises of his Blessings, to wage Warre in his owne person against the Turkes in the Holy Land; and to attempt the winning of Ierusalem from the Infidels and vnbeleeuing Men: who maliciously opposed themselves against the Incarnation, Passion, and Ascension of Christ Iesus. Which iourney he vnderooke, because *Frederick* the Emperour, and *Philip* the Second, surnamed *Augustus*, king of France, *Leopoldus* then Archduke of Austria, and many other Christian Princes, had engaged themselves (both with men, money, and all other Prouisions) to further those Attempts. And thereupon he entred into Couenants with the King of France, and the rest of that Vnion, That their generall meeting should be in Sicillia: and that such Wealth and Bootie, as GOD and good Fortune should make them Owners of, should equally bee shared and diuided among them and theirs.

These things being thus concluded (although the Kings profuse Expences, and great Gifts exceeding measure, had made him bare and needy) yet would he not burden his People with any Taxe to supply his wants. But raising great summes of Money out of his owne Estate; among other things, he sold his Castles of Barwick & of Rokesbrough to the King of Scots, for ten thousand pounds: and the Lordship and Earledome of Durham vnto *Hugh* then Bishop of that See, for much money. He also enriched himselfe with Silver and with Gold, by the Sale of sundry Honours, Lordships, Manors, Offices, Priuiledges, Royalties, and other things, vnto such as parsimonie and sparing had made Owners and Possessors of great plentie; and did protest, That (for the performing of so great and honourable a Seruice) hee was not vnwilling to sell his Citie of London, if any were of abilitie to buy it, rather than hee would be chargeable vnto others.

And thus the King hauing furnished himselfe with all prouisions fit and necessarie for his iourney; and hauing leuied a strong Ar-
mie

A bountifull King.

The King resolued to warre in the Holy Land upon the Popes motion.

Frederick, Philip, Leopold.

Their Couenants and Agreements.

The King in his wants would not taxe his people.

He leuied money of his owne State.

His willingness to undertake this voyage.

William Longchampe made Regent of England. The King departed. He wins Cyprus, and sells it for 30000. marks.

A quarrel betweene the King and Philip King of France.

King Richard neglected the French Kings anger.

The Christian Princes doe preuaile.

Acon won.

King Richard trampleth on Leopolds colours.

mic, in which were many Lords, Knights and Gentlemen, whose resolutions encreased his hopes of good successe: he committed the principall government of his Kingdome vnto *William Longchampe*, then Bishop of Ely; who (not long after) was made the Popes Legate. And then hee sayled with his whole Armie to the Isle of Cyprus: which (with braue courage) after many hot and dangerous Encounters, he won; and sold the same to the Knights Templars for thirtie thousand Markes.

And from thence (according to his former appointment) he transported his Armie into Sicilia; where he met with *Philip* the French King: and vpon their first enter-view, they pleased each other with many passages of familiaritie and of loue. But this faire Sun-shine was quickly vayled and covered with a cloud of scorne and discontentment. For when the French king was denied to haue any part or share with king *Richard* in his archiueement of the Isle of Cyprus (both because he was absent when it was taken; and also because it was affirmed by King *Richard*, That their Couenant extended onely to such things, as they should winne and gaine in the Holy Land) hee waxed angrie, and vsed many high and disdainfull rearmes, and made publike shew of inward discontent. All which King *Richard* did set at nought; and told him to his face, That doe what hee dared, hee should not bee a partier in that Bootie.

It stood not with King *Philip*s honour, to waxe cold so soone in this great Enterprize, whereon the eyes of all the Christian World were fixed; and dastardly to returne home. But howsoeuer hee had disposed of himselfe, and of such Forces as hee commanded, yet King *Richard* was resolved to goe forth: so that (Necessitie enforcing them to some agreement) they proceeded in their iourney. In which, they all, and their Confederates, performed many honourable and wonderfull deedes of Armes; terrifying and daily diminishing the Turkes Numbers and Forces with continuall slaughters, and giuing them but little leysure, or courage to resist.

And (among many other strong Townes, Forts, Castles, and Garrisons of great strength and importance, which they conquered) they wonne (after a long and a sharpe Siege) by maine Batteries and resolute Assaults, the stoutly defended Citie of Acon: Vpon the Walls whereof a forward knight advanced the Banner and and the Colours of *Leopold* the Archduke of Austria. But king *Richard*, scorning that too much Grace and Honour should bee done vnto the Duke, and his owne deserts bee thereby

ble.

blemished, he having first of all entred into the Citie, ranne vp vnto the Wall; plucked down that Banner, and those colours; and trampled them with his feet: Whereat the French king was much displeased, and gaue his tongue libertie to speake great things; But king Richard (neglecting his frowner; and laughing at his discontent) affirmed, that in so doing hee had only righted himselfe of those Injuries which were done to him: And that, if any were disposed to looke vpon the same, he was carelesse of his anger, and in the field would be ready to maintaine his doings against any.

The French king swelling at the heart, to see king Richard thus carelesse, resolute, and bold: And seeming to distrust lest by some secret league, or other compact, betwixt king Richard and the Turkes, some danger might assaile him and his followers; He took an vnkinde leaue, and carrying away with him all such troupes as belonged to the Emperour, to Leopold, and to himselfe, he left the king of England, and returned home.

This his departure discomforted not king Richard: But with his owne Souldiers, and with the forces of some other Christian Princes, who submitted themselves to his direction and gouernement, hee persisted in those Warres, and prosecuted his attempts with such constancie, and heroicall magnanimitie, that he preuailed, and became Victorious, when the greatest dangers assailed him most to make him feare. And (among many other things which boldly hee attempted) he returned vnto the Isle of Cyprus; and by force hee valiantly worne it from the Knights Templers, vnto whom he had formerly sold it, and then exchanged it for the Citie of Ierusalem, with Guy of Lefingham the last Christian king; who held, and did possesse it. By meanes wherof, king Richard was stiled king of Ierusalem; and so were many of his successors long after.

Thus while hee became victorious, and daily triumphed ouer the Turkes miseries; his kingdome of England was badly gouerned at home by the Bishop of Ely; to whom hee had committed the charge thereof. For he (being the Grand childe of a Ploughman, and the sonne of a Cow-herd in the North: and being aduanced to that Bishoppricke, & made Lord Chancellour of England; Legate to the Pope; and Protector of all this Realme) tyrannized, as himselfe listed ouer all sorts of people; exercised on them strange and vnusuall oppressions, both in the Church, and also in the Common-weale; and was so infinitely ambitious and so proud, that he would neuer ride abroad for his pastime, and for his recreation, except hee were attended and waited on by a thousand horse, and more;

The French King is angry.

King Richard's conduct.

The forces of the Emperour and of the French King and of Leopold, do leave K. Richard.

King Richard proceeds.

Hee winneth Cyprus again.

He is stiled King of Ierusalem.

England is badly Gouerned.

Asperius nihil est humili, quam surgere in altum.

A beggar on horse-backe will ride.

*The ambitious Bishop
sells.*

*He disguiseth
himselfe, and
is dragged on
the Sands.*

*He is restor-
ed.*

His death.

*The causes
which hasten-
ed King Ri-
chards re-
turne.*

*King Richard
saves his life
by swimming.
He is taken
prisoner, and
sold to the
Emperour
Henry the
Sixth.*

*He is ranso-
med.*

*He revenges
his injuries
upon the
French King.*

more, and was served by the sonnes of the greatest Nobles in this Land; vnto whom he gave in marriage, with some portions, diuers of his base and rusticke kinne. But at length hee grew so be lo contemptible, lothsome and vile, in all the peoples eyes, that (feearing what would bee the sequell of his vnlimited insolencie and pride,) Hee resolved to forsake this kingdome. And comming (for that purpose) into Douer, disguised in the habit of a woman, and hauing vnder his arme a piece of Country cloth, which hee offered to the sale, hee was desiered and discovered, and by the common people was furiously and shamefully dragged and drawn vpon the Sands, and was afterward sent vnto London: where the Lords & greatest Nobles comming him to the Tower, in which hee remained vntill the kings returne, and then hee was restored both to his libertie and offices. But shortly after, as he trauelled towards Rome, hee died: whereat much ioy was conceiued generally by the Englishmen.

Of these affaires, and of his euill Government, King Richard was informed in the Holy Land: as also of the great discontentment of his brother *John*, for that the Bishop of Ely, and not himselfe, was (in the kings absence) made Gouvernor of this kingdom: and how that he had seized many of the Kings Townes, Forts, and Castles, into his hands; & only wanted the peoples fauour to make himselfe a King.

He likewise was informed, what Sallyes, Inrodes, and Inuasions, the French King (after his returne home) had made in Normandy, thereby to reuenge himselfe of those pretended iniuries & wrongs, which he supposed he had receiued from King Richard in the Holy Land.

These Tidings thus concurring, and the good desire which King Richard had to preuent the ruine of his owne Estate; enforced him (when he possessed the greatest hopes of Conquest) to conclude a peace with the Turks for three yeares. But in his returne, he was (by the violence of a raging storme) compelled after a dangerous shipwracke to saue his life by Swimming, neer vnto Histria, which lyeth between Aquileia and Venice: and comming to the Territories of *Leopold* in Austria, hee was taken prisoner; and by him sold to the Emperour *Henric* the Sixt, the sonne of *Frederick*, for threescore thousand Marks; who (taking of him good security for his Ransome, assessed vnto one hundred thousand pounds) did set him at libertie: So that with speedy iournies hee passed vntill he came into Normandie; where he raised a strong Armie, and marched furiously into France, and reuenged himselfe soundly of all

all such iniuries and wrongs, as in his absence were done vnto him by the French king. And then he reduced to his subiection all such Peeres in Normandie, as by the Frenchmen, in his absence, had bin taken from him.

Thus whilst the King was builed abroad: his brother John, Earle of Lancaster, repaired to him, and not only submitted himselfe to his grace and mereie, but voluntarily surrendered to him all such Forts and Castles as hee had seized into his hands: excusing himselfe as being provoked and enforced to disloyaltie by the extraordinary pride and insolent behaviour of William Longchampe Bishop of Ely; who vnworthily had disordered the gouernment of the whole Realme. Vpon which submission, and his contrition for his offence, he obtained not only the Kings pardon, but also his especiall grace and fauour.

Then did they both come into England: where the king (to make payment of his Ransome) ransacked the Treasures of diuers Religious houses, and grievously taxed the People; and summoned his High Court of Parliament, in which he caused himselfe to be againe crowned King. And to augment his owne Estate, he resumed into his hands all such Honours, Lordships, Manors, Castles, Offices, and Priuiledges, as he had formerly sold to his owne subiects for his supplies; and enforced the Buyers to content themselves with such profits thereof, as they had taken. Then fourescore thousand pounds of his Ransome were paid: but the residue was discharged by Leopold; who was accursed by Pope Innocent the third, for that he had iniuriously made king Richard a prisoner, in his returne from his Wars in the Holy Land.

Then the king raised a new Armie, and transported it into France; and from that time forward hee ceased not (with variable successe) to warre with the French king: vntill at length taking a priuate view of the besieged Castle of Chalons, neere to Lymoys, he was defiered by a common Souldier; who so grievously wounded him with an arrow, that within three daies after hee died, when hee had reigned almost nine yeares; and was buried at Founteuerard in France at his fathers feet.

After hee was wounded, as is before mentioned, he wonne the Castle by terrible assaults, and caused all such as hee found therein to be slaine; except the malefactor: who being demanded by him how hee dared to shoote vnto the person of a king, made answer, That in those warres hee had lost his father, and his brother, and that hee was exceeding glad that fortune had so assisted him in his reuenge. Then when hee expected nothing but a present terrible

H

death,

*Duke John
submitteb
himselfe to
the King his
brother, and
is pardoned.*

*He useth
unjust means
to pay his
Debts and
Ransome.
He is crow-
ned anew.
He resumeth
the Lands
which hee
sold, and
payes nothing
for them:
Leopold is
accused, and
releaseth part
of the Kings
Ransome.*

*The King
warreth in
France.
He is slaine*

*Vltio diui-
na,*

*The King
pardoneth
him who slew
him.*

*Robin Hood
and Little
John.*

*Honest
Thieves.*

death, the king gaue him his pardon, and caused him to be safely conducted out of his Armie.

In the beginning of this Kings reigne, certaine Out-lawes, to the number of one hundred and more, being resolved and desperat men (whose chiefeft leaders were named *Robin Hood* and *Little John*) robbed and spoyled in diuers places of this Land. They neither hurt, nor much wronged any, except they would runne themselves into danger by resistance. They attempted against none, but against such, as being rich, gained by vsurie; or gaue no entertainment by good Hospitalitie to their neighbours, and to the poore. They spared all women, and were bountifull benefactors to such as stood in neede. Thus they continued diuers moneths; vntill their chiefeft Leader *Robin Hood*, by meanes of a sharpe sickenesse (being let blood, and being betrayed) bled himselfe to death. And then the whole Rout of this theeuish companie was disperfed, and the Malefactors secretly repaired home to their owne Houses.

THE

And if hee would have valiant men to fight for him, and for those
his lordes, he would surely find many thousands who would



THE HISTORIE

OF KING JOHN

And the rightfull Heire of this Crowne, and the longing desire
which the young King had to see the Crowne of his Ancestors
restored to him, and to see the French King's Ambassadors
driven out of his Realme. So that partly by the helpe of the
Norman barons, and partly by the helpe of the French King's
Ambassadors, hee was crowned King: and his other Ambassadors
driven out of his Realme. And thus began the reign of King John.



ARTHUR PLANTAGENET (Earle
of Lancaster in his own Right, and
Earle of Gloucester in the right of his
wife; and being the yongest sonne
of King *Henric the Second*) succe-
ded, and was crowned King: albeit
that *Arthur Plantagenet* his nephew,
and sonne to *Geoffrey* his elder bro-
ther, was then living. The whole
course of this Kings Government
was accompanied with continuall

troubles: and his two Persecutors were Pope *Innocent* the Thirde,
and *Philip* the Second, then King of France.

The French king feared the greatnesse of Englands strength, and
the prosperitie of this kingdome was hurtfull vnto his eyes: and
glad hee was, if (at any time) the least occasion would offer him
some seruice to further his designs against king *John*. For prooffe
hereof, he protested a world of loue to the said *Arthur*; informed
him of his Title to the Crowne of England, and of his vndoubted
right to the Duchies of Normandie, and of Britaigne; animated him
to raise his spight, and to aduance his courage to winne them all.
If hee were destitute of Friends, which might aduise and counsell
him; hee and his nobles would supply that want: if hee stood in
need of Silver and of Gold, to feede and to nourish the great bo-
die of that Warre; hee should be supplied with sufficient store:

H 2 And

Arthur
Plantagenet
was lawfull
heire
to the Crowne
of England

Arthur
Plantagenet
was lawfull
heire
to the Crowne
of England

The French
King taketh
part with
Arthur a-
gainst King
John.

And if hee would haue valiant men to fight for him, and for those his Rights, he would supply him with many thousands, who should adventure to spend their best blood in his Quarrels.

These large and friendly proffers (which indeed proceeded rather from a kinde of which the French King had of himselfe, by reason of King *John* his Uncle, than from any inward affection or hearty love, which hee bare vnto *Arthur*, the lawfull and the rightfull Heire of this Crowne) and the longing desire which made this young Gallant hopefull of those great achievements, persuaded him very easily, not onely to accept of the French Kings friendship, but also to vie his aide. So that partly by the helpe of the Normans, and partly by the French kings meanes, hee leuied a puissant Armie, and wonne diuers places both of Worth and of Strength in Normandie. But the Kings Lieutenant, and his other Agents in that Duchie, defended themselves valiantly, persisted in their Duties, and fought it out diuers times; vntill king *John* himselfe came into that Countrey with a strong Armie, and fought many cruell battailes with his Nephew.

But oftentimes it falleth out, that by Warre (which is the enemy of Peace) Peace it selfe is procured. For, when those two Princes had exchanged store of blowes, and when their Armies had made haucke each of other; and death had drenched her selfe in their blood: they entered into certaine Capitulations for Peace; which, for a shorttime, gave them some respite of breathing. But the same was againe interrupted by *Philip* the French King; who promised *Arthur* a doubling of his strength, and fed him with much assurance of prosperous successe; and made him confident to renew those Warres. And hereupon the French King carried a faire Armie into Normandie; with which hee spoyled; ransacked, and depopulated many places in that Duchie.

But king *John* (who wanted nothing but money to encounter with so peruerse an enemy) was warned by his Lords, Gentlemen, and the inferiour sort of his common people, That shame would wait vpon him for his neglect, in suffering his Honour to be trampled on, and his Territories in such sort, without blowes, to be taken from him. And (to wher the dull edge of his courage, delected by reason of his wants) they voluntarily and freely granted him a large Taxe to support his necessitie: and euery lustie Ladde boldly proffered his seruice, to buckle strongly with the French.

Arthur
Plantagenet
leuies an ar-
my.

King John
goeth into
Normandy
with an Ar-
my.

A peace is
concluded.

The peace is
broken by the
French Kings
meanes.

The English-
men for-
wardnesse to
buckle with
the French.

By these meanes King John was quickly furnished and streng-
thned both with money and with men; and with a strong Arm to be
used in the Duchie of Normandie: where his numbers were
every day augmented, by the repaire of many thousands, who
were well appointed, and did resolve with him to expect the same
for and the same fortune. And not long after, the two Armies met,
and fought together with such desperate boldnesse, that each of
them tooke pleasure to give blowes, wounds, death. Each of them
rejoyced in the ruine of the other; and those solemne spectacles of
sorrow which would have made others sad, gave them occasion of
much mirth.

But things which are violent cannot long endure. This feare-
full storme must bee changed into a pleasant calme. And so it
was. For the Frenchmen were discouraged, and fledde; and Ar-
thur, the kings Nephew, and the rightfull Heire vnto his Crowne,
was taken prisoner, and sent to the Castle of Roan: where (lea-
ping from the wals with an intent to escape) hee was drowned
in the Ditch. And thus ended his Life, his Title, and those
Warres.

But the next yeare following, the French king himselfe, preten-
ding Title to the said Duchie of Normandie, raised an exceeding
great power; and so sodainely, and with such Purie, did invade it,
that (wanting present meanes of resistance) the whole Duchie (to
prevent vtter desolation and ruine) yeelded, and subiected it selfe
to the French king.

And now began the kings other Enemie, Pope Innocent the third,
to play his part, and to vex him more dangerously than Philip of
France had done. And the occasion which he entertained to effect
his purpose, was this.

Hubert, the Archbishop of Canterburie, died: and the Monks
of Saint Augustines in that Citie (without the Kings Licence, or
knowledge, and about midnight) elected Reynold (a brother of their
owne) to succeed him; and tooke of him an Oath forthwith to tra-
uaile vnto Rome, and there to procure his inuesture, and to receiue
his Pall from the Pope.

The king beeing thereof informed, by manifest shewes, made
knowne his inward dislike of those their vnadvised doings. So
that (vpon his motion, and to appease his wrath) they newly
elected John Gray, who was then Bishop of Norwich. And in-
continently, the king (vpon his owne charge) sent Letters, and
Embassadours vnto the Pope, entreating him to ratifie his last
choyce.

King John
passeth into
Normandie
the second
time with an
Armie.

The two Ar-
mies fight.

The French-
men flye.

Arthur is
sent prisoner
to Roan.
Hee is drow-
ned.

This Warre
ended.

The French
King sodainly
winnes all
Normandie.

The quarrell
betweene the
King and the
Pope.

The quarrell
betweene the
King and the
Pope.

The quarrell
betweene the
King and the
Pope.

The quarrell
betweene the
King and the
Pope.

The quarrell
betweene the
King and the
Pope.

The quarrell
betweene the
King and the
Pope.

But

Pope did not
dome or no-
wer grant to
any King
their reason-
nable re-
quest.

Stephen
Langton in
chosen Arch-
bishop of Can-
terburie and
the Pope
motion and
against the
commande-
ment of the
King.

The King
forbiddeth
appeales to
Rome.

But in the mean time a new Schisme or Faction did appeare. For the Suffragan (because hee was not made acquainted, nor an actor in either of the said two Elections) made suit to the Pope to displace them both. But the Pope (imitating the proud example of his Predecessors, who counted to swimme against the Streame, and seldome, or never, granted any kings request, lest they should in some sort be thought to bee yielding) neglected the Kings entreatie, and confirmed him that was chosen first. The king stor- med because hee was so slenderly regarded. And diuers of those Monkes (to please the King) refused to receive him that was by the Pope confirmed; contesting against their owne choyce, be- cause it was made in the night, and not in the open day. But the rest affirmed, That such a choyce was not meely voyde, and in it selfe a Nullitie; but remained good, varill by Iudici- all proceedings, and by a Sentence, it were pronounced to bee voyded.

At length, this question and this doubt was controuerted and disputed on in Rome; and thereupon, the Pope (making a colour- able shew to content the King, to please the Monkes, and to end this Schisme; but indeede to preferre *Stephen Langton*, the Cardi- nall of Chrifogone, to that Dignitie) aduised the said Monkes to e- lect the said *Stephen*.

The King perceiuing well what was intended and meant there- by, required the said Monkes not to proceed to the said Election, nor to deale any further in that businesse. But very vndurifullly they neglected to content, or to obey the King; and with them the Papall Commandement tooke place: and *Stephen Langton* (a man plying to the Popes humour) was elected Archbishop of Canter- burie.

This later choyce so sharply exasperated the King, that by his Letter to the Pope hee protested plainly, That from thenceforth hee would take a strickt account of all such of his subjects whatso- euer, as for any matters concerning Right, or Iustice, should bee gadding vnto Rome. And did alledge, That he had Bishops, Pre- lates, Nobles, and Magistrates of his owne, who could and should (according to the Lawes and Customes of his Kingdome) decide and determine all Controuersies and Doubts, which should arise either in the Church, or in the Common weale. And that he would rather expose himselfe to a thousand deaths, than basely (as he was required) make himselfe and his kingdome seruite and subiect to the Popes insolent and peremptorie Commands.

The Pope (according to his custome and fashion) not onely answered

answered proudly, That the Election of the Cardinall should stand: but required the king, to giue him the quiet possession of his See; to recall such Monks from banishment as he had exiled; & to restore to them their goods, on which he had seized by reason of their last choyce: and did authorize foure Bishops within this Land, to interdict and to curse the king, and his Realme, if he refused to doe as by the Pope he was enioyned.

The king (perceiuing that those foure Bishops were much elated by reason of their new authoritie: and that they thought the time to bee long, ere the king had replied and signified his intent and resolution) seized vpon their lands and goods; and did proclaime, That he resolved to take the like course with all such, as receiued any Promotions, Inuestitures, or Ecclesiastical degrees, from the said Cardinall, or went vnto Rome vpon any occasion without his licence, or did appeale for any cause thither; or did attempt to put in execution any command from the Pope, within his kingdome.

The Pope (being aduertised hereof) sent into England his two Legats, *Pandulphus* and *Durant* (men of proud spirits, and prone to put in practice all things as they should be required) These two perswaded the king to be reconciled to *Stephen Langton*; to the foure Bishops; and to the Prior and the Monks of his Couent of *S. Austin*; and to restore to them their Places, Lands, and Goods, that peace, and amitie, by meanes of his so doing, might be renewed betwixt the Pope and him. The king (fearing to bee accursed, and being desirous to preuent future inconueniences) yeelded, and promised to performe all whatsoever was required, except it were to allow the said Election of the said Cardinall: and protested faithfully, That if another might bee chosen, hee then would with all speed and expedition, preferre him to some other Bishopricke, or better place of Dignitie within his Realme. But the two Legats (in stead of gratifying the kings request) pronounced the Popes curse; not only against him, but also against all such as gaue him attendance, or things necessarie; or kept him company. They likewise absolved all his subiects from their oathes, dutie, and seruice towards him, and required all Christian Princes to make warre vpon him, as vpon the arch and grand enemy of the Church of God. The Pope also pronounced and published against him his sentence of deprivation, & gaue his Crown and his kingdome to *Philip* the French king, if by any secret plot, or open violence & hostility, he could expell or murder him.

These were the fruits of this vnholly holy Father, the Popes Religion

*The Popes
proud and
peremptorie
answer.
Foure Bishops
authorized
to interdict
the King.*

*The King
seizeth on the
foure Bishops
lands and
goods.*

*The Popes
Legats curse
the King and
his ayders.*

*This King-
dome is giuen
to the French
King.*

*The King
confronteth
the Pope and
his Legates.*

*He taketh
oath of his
people.*

*Hee carrieth
an Armie in
to Scotland,*

*The Scots
submit them-
selues.*

*The French
King propa-
reth for Eng-
land.*

*Three hun-
dred of his
Ships are
taken.*

*King Iohn
faunteth.*

*He asketh
pardon, and
resigneth his
kingdome to
the Pope.*

*The Pope
regranteth.*

ligion and Gouernment. And this vsurping arrogancie was a badge of his vnufferable pride: in that he presumed to doe what no earthly creature can doe, nor what a Christian ought to attempt to do, against the Annoynted of God; and against such a one, as the Almighty hath placed in a kingdome to gouerne and to rule his people. The king was not (as yet) terrified with this Thunder, but was in good hope that all those Fulminations would quickly flash, and as loone vanish away, as the Lightning doth. And being thoroughly resolved to confront the Pope, and his busie Legates, in contemning them and their greatest power, he tooke a solemn oath of his subiects for his defence, and their faithfull seruice. And then with a strong Armie he entred into Scotland, against king *Alexander* the second, because he had receiued, supported, and maintained diuers of his Clergie, and others: who (adhering to the Pope, and magnifying his vsurped authoritie within this kingdome) had forsaken the king; and (as Rebels, and Out-lawes) fled vnto him for succour. But the Scottish king (perceiuing that Fire and Sword gaped greedily to deuoure both him and his Countrie) submitted himselfe (with great humilitie and reuerence) to king *Iohn*; and without further trouble, hee was reconciled to his Grace and Fauour.

The French king hoping and endeuouring to possesse himselfe of the Popes gift (which was not his to giue) and gladding his owne heart that now he had gotten some colour to warre in England vpon king *Iohn*; prouided a great Armie to inuade this Realme. But by the wisdom, valour, and circumspection of the king, and by Gods assistance, three hundred of his ships (being loaden with Corne, Victuals, and other requisites for the warre) were surprised, and by meanes thereof king *Philip* was at that time robbed of his vaine hope.

The Pope, notwithstanding, ceased not, but ever and anon hee accursed the king againe, and againe: insomuch that he feared, lest utter ruine and his ouerthrow did attend him. Wherefore (suddenly, without the consent of his Nobles, or aduice of his Councell of Estate) vpon his knees, before *Pandulphus* the Legate, he confessed his disobedience to the Pope; craued pardon; and (by a publicke Instrument in writing vnder his hand and seale) he resigned his Crown and his kingdome, to the Pope: which *Pandulphus* kept the space of foure daies to the Popes vse. And then he gaue the kingdome and the Crown againe to king *Iohn*, and to his heires; reseruing a Tenure thereof to the Church of Rome, with an yearly tribute of one thousand markes.

This

This base submission and subiection of his, so alienated from him the deare affection of diuers of his Nobles, and men best skillfull in Chiuallrie, that they reuolted from his seruice, and fled vnto his enemy the French king; whose head was building of Castles in the aire, and who made new and large preparations and prouisions, to make *Lewis* his sonne the sole King and Monarch of this kingdome. And when all things were in a readinesse, the young Prince with a strong Army came into England, and was oftentimes encountered with sharpe blowes, but yet he did much harme. And the Pope (being by his Legats informed in what case king *John* and his Realme stood) required the French king, and Prince *Lewis* his sonne, and all others who adhered to their part, of what estate or condicion soeuer they were, forthwith to desist and cease from all hostility and warre; because both king *John* and his kingdome, were reconciled to his fauour, and to the Church, and the Crowne of his Realme was holden of the See of Rome: So that (by conscience, and by the lawes of God and of Men) he ought to be protected and defended by him, and by his authority and power. But the French refused to obey; affirming, That no king (without the free consent of his Nobles, Prelats, & common people) could giue vnto any other his kingdome, nor the protection of his Subiects, which were committed to him by God; and consequently, that this kingdome was not holden of the Church of Rome, nor ought to be defended or protected by her. This answer so startled the Pope (whose will may not willingly meet with the least resistance) that incontinently he sent *Guallo* the Cardinall of St. Martin into this Realm: who accursed *Philip* the French king, and Prince *Lewis* his son, and such of the English Nobility as took part with them, and all their Complices and Adherents.

The wiser sort among them little respected what was done by the said Cardinall: but the common people, and the ordinary degree of Souldiers (whose deuotions more depended vpon feare, than vpon their knowledge) were so amazed and daunted with those sharp and sudden curses, that (leauing their Leaders, and the Field) they returned home to their houses, and to their ships. And the poore Natiues of this Realme (knowing that diuers great Lords were vnder the censure of this curse) entered into their houses, fields, and grounds, robbing and spoyling, and bearing, and driving away, whatsoeuer they could find and take: they being so far off from doubting or disputing with their owne consciences, whether therein they did well or no, that they supposed their so doing tended immediatly to the glory of Almighty God, and that their

The King is despised and forsaken.

Prince Lewis of France im-madeth.

Contention between the Pope and the French King.

The Pope curseth.

The effects of the said curse.

Robbery, stealth, and oppression.

Papists blindness.

*The revolted
Lords are
distressed.*

*They submit
themselves.*

*They are
pardoned and
received into
favour.*

Peace.

*I 2 I 2.
The Councell
of Lateran.*

*Princes ex-
communicat-
ed, and their
Prouinces
and King-
domes inter-
dicted.*

*A Popish
Policy.*

*Auricular
Confession.
Transubstan-
tiation.
Damnation.*

stealths and Robberies were meritorious and pleasing in his sight.

By these meanes, those Lords and Nobles were much perplexed and pinched with great distresse, and were likely to bee starued to death; because they wanted all necessaries belonging vnto life, and knew not how to relieue their owne wants. Neither durst any other (by reason of those Curfes, and of their Treasons) to relieue them: So that at length (when all friends, and when all other remedies did faile) Necessity (which is the most imperious Commander of all those, ouer whom she tyrannizeth) enforced them to prostrate themselues at the kings feet; to confesse their vndutifull reuolt; and to craue his pardon.

The King (who by nature was gracious, and full of pity; and being more willing to forgiue than to punish such, as in the highest measure had offended him, albeit he had, by their assistance giuen to his enemies, beene oppressed with infinite miseries, and had found more fideliry and seruice in strangers borne, than in those his owne subiects) in milde and in gentle sort accepted of their submission, pardoned their transgressions, and restored them to their Honors, and to their Lands.

And by these meanes this Realme was disburthened of the French Nation; and a quiet peace began to salute the King and his people: who now found some leisure to looke vp, and to refresh themselves; as Fishes doe in a faire calme, after they haue beene tumbled and tossed in the Waters by an vnquiet Storme.

The Pope (intending to make these his proceedings with King Iohn in England, a president vnto other Princes) assembled a generall Councell at Lateran: wherein hee published them all at large, together with the said kings Grant of his Kingdome to the Pope, and his said regant, and the Tenure thereof to be of the Church of Rome. And in the same Councell, *Otho* the Emperour, *Peter* king of Arragon, and *Raymond* Earle of Tholouse, and diuers other Princes, were excommunicated: and others were interdicted, together with their Kingdomes and their Prouinces (for Heresie, as it was pretended.) But the certaine scope of this crafty and cunning packing tended to none other end, than onely to make temporall Princes subiect to the Popes correction, and consequently to enrich himselfe and his successors, with their spoyle. In the same Councell also, Auricular Confession, and Transubstantiation were established and decreed: and therein it was enacted, That such as spake euill of the Pope should bee damned in Hell; and that no man

man should be Emperour, vntill he had sworne his Homage to the Pope, and had receiued his Crowne from him.

And thus all these troubles (hauing had from the fourth yeare of king *Johns* Reigne as long a continuance as the Trojan Warres) were at last ended. But the Clergy would in no sort bee heartily reconciled to the king. For such was their secret grudge and spleene towards him, that (vnder the colour of much seruice and duty) as hee lay in the Abbey of Swansteede (not farre from Lincolne) hee was poysoned by a Monke of the Order of Saint *Bernard*: who, to make his match sure, and to auoide jealousy and suspicion, first dranke vnto the king, and poysoned himselfe for company. And thus died king *John*, when he had reigned aboue seuentene yeares, and lyeth buried at Winchester.

In the seuenth yeare of his Reigne he transported a puissant Army of valiant men of armes, and common souldiers, into Ireland: and with great resolution and courage hee reduced that Nation to their former obedience; from which (with insolent obstinacy) they had revolted.

And in the ninth yeare, by a new Charter, hee enabled the Citizens of London to make their annuall choice of a Maior, and of two Shirifes, for the better Gouvernement of that City.

And the yeare following, the Bridge of Stone was there built ouer the Riuer of Thames.

This king was very wise, politike, and wonderfull valiant: not to bee subdued but by Death; nor wearied with any Trauaille; nor would bee discouraged with more than ordinary Dangers. Hee fought many successfull Battailles both at home and abroad; yet was hee not alwayes fortunate. For by meanes of the Popes quarrellings, *Philip* of France wonne from him the greatest part, yea almost his whole Duchy of Normandy, and vexed him exceedingly at home in his owne Kingdome. Hee was liberally bountifull and benigne to all Strangers; but sparing in his gifts to his owne subiects. And some reason hee had to be the more close-handed towards them, because the most of them (better louing France than their owne Countrey, and caring more for the French king than for him, who was their Soueraigne Lord and Master) gaue him little stomach and courage to aduance them; as otherwise (no doubt) hee would haue longed and desired to haue done.

Hee left behinde him foure sonnes; viz. *Henry* who succeeded

Emperour.

*Peace after
ten yeares
warre.*

*King John is
poysoned.*

1205.

Ireland.

1208.

*A Maior in
London.*

*London
Bridge.*

1209.

*A description
of King John.*

death; *Richard*, who was elected king of the Romans; *William*
of *Valentia*; and *Guido Disnay*: and three daughters; viz.
Isabel, married to *Fredericke* the Emperour; the
second, to *William Marshall* Earle of Wor-
cester; and the third, to the
Earle of Leice-
ster.



THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRY THE THIRD.



FTER the death of king *John*, *Henrie* his sonne (being of the age of nine yeares) was crowned king: and the Protection of him, and of this Realme, was committed to the Earle of Glocester: who hauing married one of the kings Aunts, and being well learned, politicke, and wise; temperate, and valiant; administered the Lawes and Iustice vprightly to the people.

So deep an impression had confidence made in the hearts of *Philip* of France, and of Prince *Lewis* his eldest sonne, that the kings Minority, Traiterous friends, and their owne good fortune, would make them the Soueraign Lords of this kingdome; that no former Commandements, or Curses from the Pope, preasted, to make them vterly to abandon and to forsake this kingdome. For their hopes fed them with this conceit, that their new repaire hither, and the daily disturbance and trouble, which by their means should vnjoynt the Peace, & the good Government of this Commonweale, would, and (in the end) should shake it with a continuall feauer, and make it hopelesse of all recovery or reliefe, sauing onely by their meanes. And vpon this proiect they landed fresh forces within this Land.

Bur

1216

A Prologue.

The French King againe invades England.

The Welch-
men take
part with the
French.

But the new Protector was not idle in his charge. For his Preparations were expedited with great celerity and iudgement: and (with such forces as hee had leuied) he manfully opposed himselfe against all Encounters of the French, and of the Welch, which obstinately adhered to the French part.

But the best successe by Warres (in a distempered and in a mutinous Estate) giues little cause of boasting to either part. For the slaughter of many friends and kinsfolke (affording the Victory) cannot chuse but bring with it a sorrowfull remembrance of their vntimely end; and beget many wishes, that (their vndutifull Errors hauing beene reformed) they were aliue againe.

The Pope.
curseth again

Honorius the Pope being truly informed, how obstinately the French and the Welch Nations (being assisted with some English) daily warred and spoyled within this Realme: not onely confirmed the authority of *Guallo* the Legate; but by him hee thundred more sharpe and terrible Curses against them all, than formerly hee or his predecessors had done. Whereunto hee added new Excommunications, Depriuations, and other bitter Censures of the Church of Rome.

His curses
are not cared
for.

Hereupon Prince *Lewis*, with his confederates, seemed to be peacefull for a while; and made an outward shew, as if he onely waited for a fit opportunity to depart. Yet in the meane time, king *Philip* his father (with great care and cost) prepared new Forces for his aide, and shipped them for this Realme. But *Hugh de Burgh* (being a man prouident, and truly valiant, and being chiefe Master of the five Ports) hauing fitted a strong Fleete of good Shippes, and furnished them to the prooffe with choice Mariners and expert men of Warre, encountered them brauely vpon the Sea: and with such hardy blowes so fiercely did assaile them, that (beeing altogether vnable to resist him) they submitted themselves, and all their Shippes, vnto his mercy.

Hugh de
Burgh pre-
vaileth on
the sea.

The French
are absolved,
and doe re-
turne.

This noble Exploit (being thus attended by Victory) forthwith drew Prince *Lewis* to a milde entreaty of Peace: So that (being absolved by *Guallo*, and receiuing good summes of money to further his returne) hee surrendered all such Forts, Castels, and Townes as hee had taken, and with his companies sayled into France; leauing his English friends (who had supported his Estate and part in all these Warres) to the censure of the Lawes, and to end their miserable dayes with sundry executions and strange deaths.

The

The Common-weale being now suffered to breath, and having found some leisure to provide fitting medicines to cure such maladies as distempered her estate, required that a Parliament might be summoned, which was granted: and in it the ancient Lawes of King *Edward* were reduced and restored to their former vigor and strength. And the Grand Charter (in those dayes called *Magna Charta*, comprising sundry laws, which were both easefull and commodious to the common people) was ratified and confirmed. And whereas the Wardships of the heires of such of the Kings tenants, as died, seized of any lands by them holden in Knights service, was granted to King *Edgar* during their minorities, and their marriages were afterwards granted to King *Edward* the Confessor: Those lawes (which a long time had lien asleep) were now revived and awaked, and were restored to their former use. In the same Parliament also, a voluntary Taxe was frankly giuen to the King: partly to discharge such debts as former warres had occasioned, and partly to leuie new forces, to be conducted by *Richard* the kings brother, for the recovering of Poyters & of Gascoyne, which late years (most iniuriously, and with too much violence) had been vsurped and taken from King *Henries* predecessors, by the French King.

The Parliament being ended; the said Taxe, with great celerity, and without contradiction by any, was soone leuied: so that the Kings Coffers were replenished with siluer, and with gold; and all requisits were carefully provided, and a gallant Army of courageous men of warre were assembled, and safely transported. With which, *Richard* the Kings brother did (almost) wonders; subduing where he found resistance, and seizing vpon Lordships, Towns, Forts, Castles, and other defended places, quietly, and without blowes, where no head was made against him. So that within few moneths (such was his valour and good fortune) he recovered both those Prouinces wholly for the king; and returned with much honour into England.

But the kings absence from those places, ministred opportunity to the French king to be vnfriendly, and daily to make wars, roads, incursions, and inuasions into those Prouinces, which (without colour of right) he endeouored to subdue. So that hee (refusing no aduantage, which might in any sort further his desires) suddenly led a new Army into Poyters, and quickly made himselfe the Lord thereof. And then he marched into Perigor and Aluerne, and other places in Guian; where he did the like. But king *Henry* sent thither another Army, with which his brother *Richard* Earle of Cornwall fought

A parliament.

King Edwards lawes restored.

Magna Charta.

Wardships & Marriages.
Ann. 962.
Ann. 1056.

A voluntary Taxe.

An Army transported into Gascoyne &c.

Richard recouereth Poyters and Gascoine,

The French King winneth Poyters, Perigor, &c.

A new Army transported.

A peace is concluded.

fought many cruell and sharpe batailles; and in the most of them, Fortune assisted him with good successe, and all things afforded him great hopes, that hee should recover whatsoeuer (in his absence) had bin lost. But in the height of all these broyles, a friendly peace was concluded betwixt the two kings; and *Richard* returned safely into England.

The causes of dislike betwixt the King and his Barons.

These troubles being thus ended, and peace gladding the hearts of all such as had been tired with those warres: vnkinde ieaiousies began to breed much heart-burning, betwixt the king & his owne Barons; for that (as they conceiued) the king reposed little confidence in their faith; neglected their seruice and society; and applied himselfe and his fauours, wholly vnto strangers; whom neither alliance, nor Country bound to performe any duty towards him, nor would be found trusty, when the hand of his bounty and liberality was closed vp. And the king (perceiuing their discontent) entered into the secret closet of his owne breast, and tooke a strict examination of his owne dealings. And finding them to be such, as iustly might displease: he reformed his error; remoued the causes of those dislikes; and louingly reconciled himselfe to his Nobles.

The King reconciles himselfe to his Barons.

John Scot Earle of Chester dieth.

About this time, *John Scot* Earle of Chester died, without issue male, hauing foure daughters and heirs. From them the king resumed into his owne hands that Earldome, & all the Territories belonging therunto: which he augmented with large additions of yearly reuennues; & many Regall Priuiledges, Liberties, and Honours. And for a recompence & by way of exchange, he gaue vnto those Ladies many Honours, Lordships, Castles, & Mannors, which exceeded their owne in true value. And hauing married Prince *Edward*, his sonne, to *Elisauer*, sister vnto the king of Spain: he gaue vnto him the Prouince of Guyan; the Lordship of all Ireland; & created him Earle of Chester, and Prince of Wales: which two later dignities he then annexed to the eldest sonnes of the kings of this Realme.

Chester and Wales annexed to the Kings eldest sonnes.

The murdering of the King is attempted.

And not long after, a Clerk dwelling in Oxford (counterfeiting a kind of madnesse) attempting to murder the king; for which purpose in the depth of the night, he crept in at the window of the kings chamber, in which most commonly hee lodged. But (failing of his purpose, because the king lay not then there) he was taken; examined; confessed his villany; and by the course of law being condemned, he was put to a cruell death.

The French King breaks the league.

We haue heard before, that a peace was concluded between the kings of England & of France; but the French kings were alwaies secretly

secrety, or openly, malicious to the Kings of this Realme, because they had certaine Territories and Provinces in France which bordered on their Countries. And this malice made them little respect of the sanctitie of such solemne Oathes, and honest Promises, as (more strongly than bonds of yron) should binde kings. For no sooner was any gappe open, into which they might thrust a foot, or any opportunity (were it neuer so little) was offered; but that they threw behinde their backs the remembrance of all Truces, Leagues, and Conventions of Peace whatsoever, and made all things to be lawfull, which either by sleight, or by violence, they could enterprise or doe. And as common experience oftentimes made it manifest; so did it now. For about the foure and twentieth yeare of King *Henric* Reigne, *Armis* the ninth, with a deuouring Armie, entred into Guyan, and spoyled and wasted that Country in all places where hee came. And King *Henric* intending their quicker reliefe; and purposing, if he might, to regaine all Normandie, and such other prouinces as the Kings of France vniuersally had detained from him) sayled thither with a puissant Armie, and oftentimes bickered with his enemies: against whom sometimes he preailed, and at other times had the worse hand. Yet his naughty courage abandoned all feare; and no perils whatsoever could make him shrinke: for in all those skirmishes he performed stout resolution, and the noble valour of a worthy King.

But Fortune no further favouring those his endeavours, than
 weakly enabling him to stop the French kings proceedings, he re-
 turned into England. But shortly before his departure, the French
 king married his brother *Alphonse* vnto the daughter of the Earle
 of Tholouse, and gaue to him the Earledome of Poytiers, and all
 king *Henries* Territories in Aquitaine; and plotted cunningly to
 haue procured the Earle of March to doe him homage for such
 Lands as hee affirmed he held of the said Earledome of Poytiers.
 But he stoutly refused to yeeld vnto him any such due or seruice.
 And this his denyall so enraged the French king, that hee entred
 with an Armie into the Earledome of March, and daily spoiled
 it without sparing.

to ~~King Henry~~ having carefully employed his labours to withstand this violence; and having raised a faire Armie, which himself conducted, transported it vnto Burdeaux. And not farre from thence (due preparations on all parts being made) both the Armies met; in which the blood of the most valiant men of France was freely sold, and dearely payed for. But in the end, Fortune

For the purpose of
the above mentioned
work.

Lewis the
north-bound
det. Geyer.

King Henrie
carrieth an
army thither.

He stoppeth
the French
Kings cour-
ses, but boats
burn not back,
MILITARY
-HOMES

The Earldome of March is invaded by the French.

King Henrie
leaves the
field.

The Earle of
March sub-
mits himself.

41.
1256.
The Barons
Warre.

The counsell
thereof.

Infantum
Parliamentum.

The Kings
Prerogative
crossed.

Les douze
Piers.

extending more favour to the French, than to king *Henrie*; he was enforced (with the losse and slaughter of his best men) to leave the Field.

And the Earle of March grieving at this mishap, and being loth that king *Henrie* should be engaged in a greater danger; submitted himselfe, and obtained Peace on faire conditions with the French King. And then king *Henrie* returned into England; and married one of his sisters vnto *Alexander* then King of Scots, because hee would the better assure himselfe of his friendship in time of neede.

And now began those mischieuous broyles and turmoyles within this Realme; which (vntill the kings death) daily, yea almost hourelly, vexed and molested him and his whole Kingdome. For the King (of later yeares) lending too pleasing an eare to many lewd and euill Officers (whom, aboue all others, hee best loued and fauoured; and by whose counsell and aduice both himselfe & his whole Estate was guided and directed) made little account and reckoning of the best of his subjects loue: and tooke from them (in diuers things) such libertie and freedome, as by the Lawes and Ordinances of this kingdome they iustly claymed, and ought to haue enjoyed. He also pinched his people with many vnnecessary Impositions and grievous Taxes; which (by those lewd and bold Officers) were with much rigor & sharpenesse leuied, to their great dislike.

And the king following their humours, assembled his High Court of Parliament in Oxford: In which, his designs were altogether crossed: and the prosecution of businesses was so vnfortunate to the whole Estate of this Realme, that (*ab euentu*) it was euer after named, *Infantum Parliamentum*, or the Mad Parliament. For when multitudes of such as were grieued, swarmed thither, and complained of many iniuries and wrongs which daily did oppresse them; the Lords and the Commons (endeauouring to redresse what was amisse) established many things, profitable (as they intended them) for the Commonweale, but highly derogating from the Prerogative of the King. And to the end that those things which they had so contriued and concluded, should be inuolably kept and obserued; choise was there made of twelue of the grauest and most worthy persons of this kingdome (whereof the Earles of Leicester and of Gloucester were the chiefest) and they were filled with the title of *Les douze Piers*, or the Twelue Peeres, to whom complete and absolute authoritie and power was largely giuen to support and to maintaine those Lawes. For which

cause,

cause they publicly received their Patent, and a solemne Oath. All which was sealed, and ratified by the King himselfe; although vnwillingly hee did it. So that (the Parliament being ended) the said Commissioners beganne (by stricke execution) to give life vnto those Ordinances and Lawes. For which purpose, they first of all dismissed, and did clearely thrust from their Places, Offices, and Attendance, many of the kings meniall seruants; and appointed others in their stead.

And this their doing was (aboue all other things) most distasted and grudged at. For the King perceiuing, that such as waited on his person should rather bee trusted by others than by himselfe; and that he himselfe should be furthest off from chusing such as should be neereft vnto him: waxed infinitely melancholy and sad. And hoping, that vpon further aduice and counsell hee should receiue better contentment, and be more kindly vsed; he assembled another Parliament: in which (with great griefe, and extraordinarie passion) he complained of the hard measure which was offered to his owne person by the Twelue Peeres: So that much labour was taken by his neereft friends, not onely to abolish their Authoritie and Power, but also to cancell and so make voyde those new Ordinances and Lawes.

But such was the determinate resolution of the Lords in generall, and of the Commons of that Assembly, that in stead of pleasing the king with Reformation answerable to his desires, they ratified and confirmed whatsoeuer was formerly concluded on: and by the Archbishop of Canterburie, and nine other Bishops of this kingdom, a solemne Curse was publicly denounced against all such, as either by Direction, or by Armes, or otherwise, withstood or hindered the execution of those Lawes, or the Authoritie of the Twelue Peeres.

These new proceedings so much augmented the Kings furie and implacable discontent; that euen those things, which by his naturall disposition hee chiefly delighted in, were by him loathed and detested most. And to the end that hee might procure and purchase more contentment and ioy abroad, than hee could finde at home; hee sayled into France, to visite King Lewis the ninth: by whom hee was with all gentlenesse and courtisie receiued, and lodged in his owne Palace; where hee was feasted as a friend, and honoured with all accomplements appertaining to a great King. And at the same time hee concluded a Marriage betwixt John Duke of Britaine, and one of his owne Daughters.

The King ratifieth their Commission.

The Commissioners displace the Kings Officers and Attendants.

43.
1358.
Another Parliament.

The King complaineth.

*The former Lawes and Ordinances are confirmed
A Curse.*

The King is full of indignation.

He sayleth into France.

*Normandie
surrendered to
the Kings of
France by
King Henry.*

*King Henry
is made Duke
of Guyan.*

*Discord be-
tweene the
Prince and
the Duke of
Gloucester.*

*The King
procureth two
Bulls from
Rome.*

*The Lord
chiefe Justice
displaced.*

The French King also held a Grand Parliament of Estate: in which he protested publicly, That his conscience was much grieved, for that (vniustly, and without Title) hee detained from king *Henrie* his Duchie of Normandie, and such other Territories in France, as in right he ought to enioy. And on the other side, king *Henrie* (intending to conclude an inuolable Peace with so deare a friend, and to remoue from him all future scruples of his conscience in that behalfe) frankly and freely surrendered to him the said Duchie; together with the Lordships of Angeou, Poytiers, and Mayne. And in the same Parliament, with great solemnitie & honour, he receiued againe to himselfe, and to his heires, the said three Lordships, with the stile of the Duke of Guyan; for which he did his Homage in that Assembly.

Whilest these things thus proceeded in France, a publike Quarrell (vpon some secret displeasure conceiued by reason of the execution of those ourbing Lawes) began to breake forth, betwixt *Edward* the young Prince, and the Duke of Gloucester; which by the Barons was stoutly suppressed; vntill the Kings returne: by whom they were not long after reconciled, and made friends.

The king being vexed at the heart, because his Regall authoritie was diminished by the Twelve Peeres: and not finding any redresse thereof at home; endeauoured to procure some remedie thereof by his friends abroad. And for that purpose (with the great expence of much Coyne, and with rich and costly Gifts) hee secretly obtained two Bulls from Pope *Alexander* the Third: by both which, the King himselfe, and all others who had formerly sworn to obserue and to maintaine those new Ordinances and Lawes, and to support the Proceedings, and the Authoritie of the Twelve Peeres, were freely absolved from their Oathes.

Yet the twelve Peeres, not hauing any notice of those Bulls, ruled all: and were so busily employed about their charge, that the king had little or nothing at all to doe. They had but small leysure to recreate themselves with any sports; but the king had time enough to play: for he was a king in Name, but not in Authority, nor in Power.

Among others, Sir *Hugh le Spencer* being then Lord chiefe Justice of England, and an especiall fauourite with the King, administered the Lawes of this Realme; not according to equitie and right, but after his owne fancie and will: and such was his indifcreete carriage of most things which belonged vnto his Office and

to

to his place, that the Twelve Peeres (sate against the kings minde) removed him, and supplied his roome by Sir Philip Basset (a man well learned, wise, vertuous, and discreet.)

They also dismissed such Sheriffs and Iustices errants, as the king had made, and bestowed those offices vpon others, so that the king (being vnable any longer to endure those indignities, and deeply repining to be every houre disgraced and crossed by his owne subjects) resolved presently to make vse of the Popes Bulls: for which purpose, he caused them with great solemnitie and reuerence to be proclaimed in sundry eminent places, in England, Ireland, and in Wales; and therewithall he commanded straightly, That all such (of what estate, condition, & degree soeuer they were) as did from thenceforth by word or by deede, support and maintaine the said Ordinances and Lawes, or the authoritie of the said Twelve Peers, should be committed to strong prisons, and should not be enlarged but by his especiall notice and consent. Hee also tooke a solema oath in the Citie of London, of all such as were twelve yeares old or more, to be true, faithfull, and ayding to him and to his heires, & did perswade himselfe, that by this meanes he should from thenceforth haue his owne will. But he was much deceived therein; for such was the resolution of his Barons to the contrary, that they protested they would rather dye than cease to vphold all those things which in so honourable an assembly they had solemnly sworn to maintain. And some of them (coniecturing, & peradventure nor without good cause, that the king in private contrived some desperate plot, to set himselfe at libertie by their ruine) repaired to the Marches of Wales, where they raised a strong Armie, and furnished it with all things needfull and conuenient for the Warre.

And standing thus vpon their Guard, yet resolved to abstaine from all violence, except necessitie (which obeyeth no king, nor lawes) should vrgently compell them to take a sharper course. They addressed their Letters (in most submissiue and humble sort) and sent them to the King; protesting with many oathes their dutie & their seruice to his Grace, and entreating his Highnesse, for the honour of Almighty God, for his owne soules health, & for the welfare and happinesse of his people and kingdom, vterly to desie (except his Queen and Children) all such as either counsailed him, or did themselves intend to suppress the Ordinances and Lawes which were established at Oxford, or the authoritie and the power which (for the Common-weales prosperitie) was granted to the Twelve Peeres.

The king (having read those Letters) was much displeased, and retur-

THE KING
- OF FRANCE
- AND ENGLAND

Iustices errants and Sheriffs displaced.
The Popes Bulls are published by the King.

He countermandeth the authoritie of the Twelve Peers.
The Londoners do not swear to obey and to ayde him.

The Resolution of the Barons.

The Barons raise an Army.

Their Letter to the K.

The King makes them no answer.

*The Barons
march to-
ward London*

*Their Letter
to the Citie of
London.*

*That Letter
was sent by
the Citie to
the King.*

*The Cities
answer to the
King, and
also to the
Barons.*

*They are ioy-
fully receiued
into London.
The Kings
denice faileth
him.*

*Officers re-
moued.*

*The Counsell
order diso-
beyed.*

*The contro-
uersie is re-
ferred to the
French kings
censure.*

returned not any answer to the Barons; wherfore they maintained a stout march towards London, vnder a Banner richly and beautifully flourished with the kings Armes. And as they passed by the houses and possessions of such as fauoured the Popes Bulls, they robbed, spoyled, wasted, burnt and consumed them with fire, holding them for vndoubted enemies to the King and to his Crowne. And when they approached nere to the City of London, by their Letters they importuned the answer of the Mayor and Citizens thereof, Whether they resolved to support the said Ordinances and Lawes, and the authoritie of the Twelue Peeres, or no? protesting before God, and assuring them that they themselues meant not, nor intended any other thing. And that if any matters of substance contained in them were defectiue, or could iustly bee condemned, it should receiue sound reformation with all conuenient speede.

These Letters (being thus receiued) were postingly sent vnto the king, who demanded of the said Mayor and Citizens, whether they would support those Lawes and the Twelue Peeres, or no? who stoutly answered, that they would, in regard that by the kings consent they had taken their oathes to that purpose. The King vnto measurably stormed at this answer, but none other could hee get: and the same answer was by them sent vnto the Barons, who therupon proceeded in their march, and were with much ioy and kinnesse receiued into the Citie.

The King (plotting to defeat those Lords, and to dissolue their Companies by a flight) proclaimed, that himsele, and the greater number of the Barons were agreed; and did require, that (in regard thereof) all Armes might be laid aside, that his peace might be preserved, and no further feare or terror might amaze his people. But (this notwithstanding) the Barons marched with their whole Armie vnto the kings Castle of Windsor, where they found many aliens, whom the Prince had placed there in severall Offices and Roomes: those they rifled of their goods, and remoued them from thence, wherat the king was much displeased. And the Lords of his Councell (labouring to content him) ordered that those goods should bee restored to those aliens, and that from thenceforth none, but the King himsele, should presume to place, or to displace any of his meniall seruants. But the Barons vnto refused to obey their order: yet, vpon the kings motion, they gave consent, that all those debates, controuersies, and sharp displeasures should be referred to the censure & iudgement of the French king, Lewis the ninth.

This

This conclusion sheathed all swords, appeased (for the present time) all those larres, and gaue good contentment to either part; and as time gaue leaue, those businesses were controuerted before the said King, and reasons were vrged to the prooue on either side, vntill (at length) it was by him decreed, that all the said Ordinances and Lawes should bee annihilated and made voide, and that from thence forth no authoritie or power should bee left in the Twelve Peeres. This sentence was so displeasing to the Barons, that they publickly accused the French king of grosse partialitie, and sinooching with King Henrie; and so absolutely did they refuse to obey his order, and so strongly were they bent to maintaine whatsoeuer had beene in Parliament established, that they repaired againe to the Marches of Wales, and leuied a new Armie, and (in their passage toward London) they robbed, spoyled, and burnt the houses, Lordships and goods of Sir Roger Mortimer; who (about all others counsailed the King to withstand them) and the Prince (whose lustie youth was furnished with much valour) leuied another Armie, with which hee marched towards the Barons: and each of them so fitted and disposed their iournies, that those two Armies greeted each other with warlike salutations, and fought together without remorse or pitié; so that in the end, diuers of the Princes most potent friends and best souldiers being slain, and his part discomfired, they all were enforced to flight to saue their liues, and to leaue the Barons masters of the field.

After this victorie, they marched forth and came to London, where they were receiued with as great kindnesse as before; but some of the vnder sort of the inhabitants of the Citie (despising gouernment, and intending vnder the colour of these broiles to do some mischief) elected two brain sicke Captains, and called them the Constables of the Citie, and did agree, that (at the tolling of the great Bell in *Pauls Church*) as many as would partake with them, should bee in a readinesse to put into execution, whatsoeuer those Constables should command, and (though much paine and labour was taken to dissuade them from their wicked purpose and intent) yet their longing desires after spoyles, and their resolution to bee lawlesse, vpon the tolling of the said Bell, transported them furiously eight miles Westward from London, to the house and possessions of the Kings brother *Richard King of the Romanes*, which they ruined, and carried away with him all his moueable goods there found whatsoeuer.

This insolent outrage thus wickedly committed by the headlesse multitude, furthered the succeeding Warres. For whereas before that

The French Kings decree.

The French King is accused of partialitie. His decree is reuelled.

The Barons leuie a new Armie.

The Prince doth the like.

The Prince is ouerthrowne.

The Barons are receiued into London. A mad tumult.

The two Captains called the two Constables of London.

Richard king of the Romanes being grossely wronged, is thereby made the Barons enemy.

The King ob-
taineth a
victory.

The Barons
Letter to the
King.

The battails
of Lewis.

47.
1262.

that time the vertuous & milde king *Richard*, king of the Romans, and brother to king *Henric* (in regard of his neere alliance with *Gilbert Clare* Earle of *Glocester*) had (with all his power and be-
deuours) mediated a peace betwixt the Barons and the king: now was hee so exasperated and rowled from his peacefull humor, that he became a professed enimie both to the Barons, and also to the Citie of *London*. And King *Henric* hauing intelligence, that Sir *Peter Mountfort* had raised a strong Armie at *Northampton* on the Barons behalfe; and being resolved to make some triall of his fortunes, in regard of the apparant iniuries and wrongs which daily were practised to his disgrace: leuied a strong Armie, and marched thither; and by maine assaults hee tooke the Towne, surprized Sir *Peter Mountfort*, and *Symon* the eldest sonne of the Earle of *Leicester*, and many others; and sent them all to sundry prisons, to be disposed of as he should please.

And on the other side, the Barons (who being exceeding strong, and nothing at all discouraged with this pranke of vncertaine fortune; but preferring the dutie of worthie subjects to their Soueraign, before their hopes, which expected fortunate successe) wrote their Letters to the King; and with all humilitie and submissiue protestations confirmed their fidelities, and assured him, That they intended nothing but the performance of their Oathes, by supporting those Ordinances and those Lawes which in Parliament had bene established at *Oxford*, for his Highnesse good, and for the welfare and profit of the Commonweale.

But the king, his brother, King *Richard*, and *Edward* the young Prince, beleeuing nothing what was written, and deeply disdain-
ing, that Subjects should rule and correct their Soueraigne Lord and Master, and determining to reuenge those disgraces, which their stomachs no longer could endure; proclaimed an viter defiance to the Barons: and with their Armie met them in *Suffex*, neere to the Towne called *Lewys*; where (betwixt them) was fought so fierce and so cruell a battaile, that the father spared not the sonne, nor the sonne the father. All kindred and alliance was there forgotten: the common Souldier held himselfe to bee as good a man as the greatest Lord. Honour was there set at nought; and Manhood (being oppressed with Multitude) could make no shew. Hee who was most valiant, was soonest made breathlesse, and the coward found no opportunity to runne away. He who could strike deepest, wound many, and kill most, obtained the chiefeest praise. Pity and Compassion were scorned and laughed at, and all remorse was vicerly exiled from them. None medi-

ted

red betwixt them but their swords, and their best Reconciler was Death. Lamentable were the sighes and groanes, the plunges, and the panges of such, as (bleeding) breathed forth their liues: and euery man fought with such an obstinate resolution, as if but one only man at the last should be left aliue. At length the two Kings, Prince Edward, and many Knights and Gentlemen of choyce account, and of the best worth, were taken prisoners, and more than twentie thousand men were slaine in this Battaile.

And thus Furie (triumphing in bloud) was contented at length to hearken vnto Reason: and they who could scarcely set their feet vpon the ground, by reason of the multitude of dead car-kasses, which as thicke as stones lay before them; were now pleased to take breath, and to conferre vpon conditions of Peace. And in the end it was agreed, That the king should (by new Articles, and by the renewing of his Oath) confirme the authoritie granted to the Twelue Peeres; and all the said Ordinances and Lawes: with this caution notwithstanding, That two Lords of the Spiritualie, and two Lords of the Temporarie, should take a strait examination and view of them: and if in their iudgements it were needfull, that any of them should be reformed, full power to them was giuen, to alter and to change what they thought fit. And if they dissented in their opinions, it was then further ordered, that the Duke of Britaine (as Vmpier) should haue power to arbitrate and to end the doubt. This being on both parts consented to and concluded, the two Kings left both their eldest sonnes for hostages with the Barons: who sent them to the castle of Douer, where they remained about nine moneths.

Then did the king with all conuenient expedition summon his High Court of Parliament: In which, so strongly was the continuance of the said Lawes and Ordinances made at Oxford, vrged, that they were then againe ratified and confirmed: and the king (though much against his will) tooke an Oath to maintaine them and the authoritie of the Twelue Peeres, vntill (according to the said former referment) they should be reformed, if any thing in them were found to be amisse. And all such as in those Warres, or otherwise, had in any sort maintained them, receiued their pardon from the king. And hereupon the two yong Princes were enlarged. But not long after, so great a variance touching those Ordinances grew betwixt the two Earles of Leicester & of Gloucester (the two Generals of the Barons Faction) that nothing but mortall Warre had decided their controuersie, if the king had not interposed his authoritie and mediation to make them friends.

L

But

The two Kings and the Prince, with many others, are taken prisoners.

20000 men are slaine.

A new conclusion for Peace.

The two Kings are set at libertie. Hostages giuen, and the Prince was one.

A Parliament,

The former Lawes and Ordinances are againe confirmed. The Hostages are enlarged.

Discord betwixt the Earles of Leicester and of Gloucester.

*A faire opportunity well
wasched and
taken.*

*The Prince
raiseth an
Armie.*

ANNO 48.
1263.

*The Barons
doe the like.*

*The battaile
of Euerham.*

*The Barons
are over-
throwne.*

*A Parlia-
ment.*

*The former
Decrees are
all made voyd.*

*The King re-
solueth to
burne the Ci-
tie of London.*

But the young Prince *Edward* (taking much aduantage by reason of this iarre) departed secretly from the kings Court, confor- ted to his company the Earles of Gloucester and Warreyne, Sir *Roger Mortymer*, and many other renowned men for the Warre. And all these raised a new Armie in Wales. And the Earle of Leicester conceiuing that his surprisall and ruine was conspired (to prevent his owne danger and misfortune) did the like. And not long after the two Armies met, nere to Euerham in Worcestershire, and fought together so maliciously, and with such bloody resolutions, that in short time many thousands among them were slaine. For Death (taking part with both) spared neither, but strining to make her gaine by their losse, insulted proudly in the Armie, and bragged most, when shee did most harme. But in the end the Barons were discomfited, and *Simon* Earle of Leicester, with his eldest sonne, and Sir *Hugh le Spencer*, and many others of great account, were slaine, and the rest fled. The common Souldiers that preuailed, despihtfully mangled the dead carkasse of the Earle, cutting off both hands and feete, and sending them into diuers Shires to their friends, as Trophies of their victorie. And others among them (beeing more inhumane and barbarous) cut off his head, and his priue members, and placed them on either side of his nose.

This overthrow did vnterly defeat the Barons, and deprived them of all their hopes: and it so reuined the melancholy king, that now he began againe to be sensible of his owne strength, and resolued (with all speede possible) to breake those chaines with which so lately hee was so strongly bound. And for the effecting thereof, hee assembled his high Court of Parliament: In which, no man dared to speake otherwise than as the king spake. So that those former Ordinances and Lawes, which were made at Oxford in the Madde Parliament, and the authoritie of the Twelue Peers, and all Patents, Commissions, and Instruments whatsoever (which tended to the establishing or ratifying of those affaires) were (by the Kings expresse commandement) brought forth, and were publicly damned, cancelled, and made voyde. And thus king *Henrie* regained his former libertie and power, to say & to do in all things as he pleased.

When this Parliament was ended, the king (perhaps by the instigation of his brother *Richard*, king of the Romanes, who was cruelly wronged by the baser sort of the inhabitants of London, without any cause by him giuen, as before it is mentioned) resolued vnterly to waite and to consume with fire his City of London: because

(as hee alledged) the Rulers and the Inhabitantes thereof had alwaies despised him, and taken part against him with the Barons in their Warres. Whereupon such of the Nobilitie (and others as were secret fauourers, and next about the person of the King) besought him instantly to abstaine from so foule a decree, which would not onely much weaken his Estate and Kingdome, but also make him infamous through the World; and vnto all succeeding Ages. Their suite was earnest; and their reason to perswade were vnanswerable: yet the King protested, That his determination should be vnchangeable; and that his Iustice vpon such rebellious Causes should be a preside to punish all perversse and obstinate Traitors and Rebels in future times. And this his resolution justly occasioned the Citizens of London to quake at the indignation of their angry King: so that they (perceiving that his rage and furie could not be mitigated) caused an Instrument in writing to be made, and satisfied it with their common Seale; by which they confessed their Rebellion; humbly craved pardon; and with out any restraint or exception; wholly submitted their Lands, their Goods, and their Lives, together with the whole Citie, to the kings Grace and Mercie.

No intercession can procure.

The submission of the Londoners.

The Citizens committed to prison, and given away by the King.

This Instrument they sent vnto Windsor by diuers of the chiefest and richest inhabitants of the Citie, who were prepared with all humilitie to haue presented it vpon their knees. But so fierce was the Kings wrath towards them, and so implacable was his anger, that he reputed none of those to be his friends, who interposed themselves as Mediators in their behalfes. Neither would hee vouch safe to admit any one of them to come into his presence, but caused them forthwith to be cast into prison; and five of the chiefest of them, together with all their Lands and their Goods, hee gave vnto the Prince; and all the behest hee gave to other of his attendants, who burthened them with heauie seruitude and thicke miserie, and tooke from them what they pleased, leauing to them the least part of their owne.

The Prince procureth the Kings pardon and fauour.

Thus when the King had a little auenged himselfe, and time had cooled the heat of his passionate humour, he hearkned to the importunate intercession of the Prince, and receiued the Citie and all the inhabitants thereof into fauour, and only tooke of them a fine of one thousand marks; and restored them to all their Liberties and Customes, which for their transgression were seized into his hands.

The five Ports are pardoned.

The King also, vpon the Princes intreatie, pardoned the inhabitants of the five Ports: who sinning Iustice to bee fast asleepe, whilst the Barons warres outrageously disturbed the whole Estate

and Kingdome; robbed, rifled, and spoyled on the Seas both their owne neighbours and Countrey-men, and also all Nations whom they met, without any difference or respect.

And lest the King should bee too much troubled with the frequent complaints of such as had beene wronged by them, or his Courts of Iustice pestred with the multitude of such suitors; the king commanded that none of the offenders should bee impleaded elsewhere, but only in the Courts of those Ports: by means whereof there were but few that complained, because none of them had any hope to haue recompence or redresse there. And now, though those intestine troubles and ciuill warres (which, like an outrageous fire, dispersed in the heart and midst of a well compacted Citie, endangered the whole estate of this kingdome & Commonweale) were thus appeased: and although *Gilbert Clare* Earle of Gloucester by his revolt from the Barons, and by his adhering to the Prince & to his complices, had greatly furthered the good successe, which had made the king to enioy a blessed peace; yet was the said Earle so little trusted, that hee neither found fauour nor reward; but the little respect which was had of him, and his cold entertainment at the Court, made him desperate of all good fortunes, and inflamed his heart to worke reuenge.

The Earle of Gloucester being overruled, thinks on mischief.

The rascality of London do flock vnto him.

They do mischief.

The Prince procures a large pardon.

This furie carried him headlong vnto the Citie of London, where no sooner was his discontented humour made known, but the rascall and the baser sort (forgetting the great calamitie which that famous Citie did endure, and the great fauours which so lately they had receiued from the king) flocked in troupes about him, & boldly committed many grievous outrages within the Citie. And then they went vnto the kings Palace at Westminster, which they rifled, spoyled, and ransacked without meane or measure. This rude beginning prognosticated the sudden accessse of another ciuill war: which might haue bred as much danger as any of the former had done; but the Prince, againe, interposed himselfe an earnest mediator betwixt the king and all the said offenders, and procured a large and a free pardon for the Earle.

Thus this dangerous fire was soone quenched, and good prevention in due time did wisely cut off all occasions of future warre: and at the same time, and by the like meanes, the king pardoned many decayed and out-lawed Gentlemen, who (in the heat of those broyles) had committed many robberies and spoyles in diuers places of this kingdome.

The Earle of Gloucester requests.

And not long after, the Earle of Gloucester (despairing of all inward grace and fauour from the king, and being desirous, as it seemed,

med, by deedes of Chiuallrie to make himselfe famous among the enemies of Christ) requested that he might be sent with an Armie to make warre in the Holy-land. This motion (though it tended to much expence and great charge) yet it pleased the king exceedingly; because he knew that the Earles busie head and turbulent spirit would stil be plotting and deuising of new broiles, and hurly-burlies at home: wherfore he caused a faire Army to be raised, and furnished it with all necessaries fit and requisite for so long, and for so dangerous a iourney.

But when all things were in a readinesse, the Earle fained many excuses which tended to ouer-much delay, which caused him to bee lesse regarded by the king, and to bee in great dislike with all others.

But Prince Edward (being full of youth and courage, and longing greedily to hoist his Sables in the Sea of Honour, and by aduenturous deedes of Knight-hood, to equall his name with those who were accounted most valiant in the world) by his earnest suite and trauell, obtained the conducting of that Armie, and transported it into the Holy-land, where his sword wrought wonders: and his Armie bred such terror and admiration among the Turkes, that they would seldome or neuer aduenture themselves against the Christians in that quarter where the Prince serued. And to saue themselves from his furie vpon his coming thither, they raised their siege from the Citie of Acon, which (for a long time) they had continued with more than a hundred thousand men. And seeing that his death could not bee hastened by force and violence in the open field, they attempted it by poysonings and other secret villanies, which tooke no effect. But at length a dogged Sarazen grievously wounded him with an envenomed Knife, yet (after much paine and great danger) hee escaped death. But in his absence his father King *Henrie* died, and was buried at Westminster, when hee had reigned more than fiftie and six yeares; where-

of the Prince was quickly informed, and therefore

(by great iournies) he safely returned

(with great honour) into

ENGLAND.

*An Armie
raised to be
conducted in-
to the Holy
land by the
Earle of
Glocester.*

*The Earle is
dismissed
worthily from
that charge.*

*The Prince
undertakes
it, and doth
performe it.
Their happy
successes.*

*The siege of
Acon raised.*

*The Prince
was villi-
anously wound-
ed.*

*The King
dyeth.*

THE

and by degrees of Chivalry to make himself famous in one day
of arms of Christendom that he might be seen with an Army
to make wars in the Holy Land. This motion (though intended
to much expense and great charge) yet it pleased the King exco-
dingly; because he knew that the Barons had the head and shoulders
that would still be plowing and sowing of new broils and busy-
ness at home: whereas he could have an Army to be raised and for-
tified with all necessaries fit and requisite for so long, and for
so dangerous a journey.

Now when all things were in a readiness, the Earl of Hereford
certainly which reached to over much delay, which caused him to
be little regarded by the King, and to be in great dislike with all
the Prince Edward (being full of youth and courage, and long
ing greatly to follow his father in the sea of Honor, and by adven-
turous deeds of Knight-hood to equal his name with those who
were accounted most valiant in the world) by his earnest suit and
travail obtained the conducting of that Army, and transported it
into the Holy Land, where his sword wrought wonders: and his
Army spread such terror and admiration among the Turks, that
they would seldom or never adventure themselves against the
Christians in that quarter where the Prince landed. And so late
the Prince from his first upon his coming thither, they raised
their siege from the City of Acon, which (for a long time) they
had continued with more than a hundred thousand men. And so
ing that his death could not be passed by force and violence in
the open field, they attempted it by poisonings and other secret
villanies, which took no effect. But at length a dogged Saracen
grievously wounded him with an enormous Knife, yet (after
much pain and great danger) he escaped death. But in his
place his father King Edward died, and was buried in Westminster;
where he had reigned more than fifty and six years, and therefore
of the Prince was quickly informed, and therefore
(by extraordinary) he lately returned
(with great honour) into
England.

THE

The Earl of Hereford
The Prince Edward
The King Edward
The Duke of Gloucester
The Duke of Lancaster
The Duke of York
The Duke of Norfolk
The Duke of Devonshire
The Duke of Somerset
The Duke of Kent
The Duke of Cornwall
The Duke of Exeter
The Duke of Devonshire
The Duke of Somerset
The Duke of Kent
The Duke of Cornwall
The Duke of Exeter



THE HISTORIE OF KING EDWARD THE FIRST.



HEN Edward, surnamed *Longshankes*, was informed of his fathers death, he made quicke preparations for his returne from the Holy Land; and by great Iournies traiailed vntill he came into England: where (with the generall applause, both of his Nobles and common People) hee was crowned King, when he was of the age of five and thirtie yeares.

Wee haue heard how, when, and where *Symon de Mountford* Earle of Leicester, *Henrie* his eldest sonne, and sundry other Barons were slaine in the last Battaille betwene them and the last King. And it is true, that after his ouerthrow, the Ladie *Eliane* his daughter, with many others of his allies and kinsfolkes, were sentenced to Exile, and departed into France: where they were courteously received by the French King *Philip* the third, surnamed the *Hardie*; whose kind entertaining of them proceeded not so much from his owne bountie and naturall disposition to Liberalitie, as it did from an opinion which hee conceived, That in so doing hee should gaine the loue & good liking of many English Lords; who (being discontented with the last Kings Government) were not wel

The new King returneth from the Holy Land.

The French kings practise against King Edward.

*Lluellen of
Wales sent
to the French
King to haue
in marriage
Elienor the
exiled daughter
of the late
Earle of Leis-
ester.*

*She is sent
towards
Wales.
She is taken
at Sea.*

*Lluellen re-
bels.*

*The King
rayseth an
Armie.*

*Lluellen
voluntarily
submitteeth
himselfe.*

*Lluellen
voweth and
swareth loy-
alty.*

*Lluellen is
pardoned,
fauoured, &
wineth.*

well pleased with his sonne, who had crossed them in most of those affaires. And moreouer, he knew the noble valour and courage of King Edward to be so eminent, that it was now high time to craue counsell of Wisedome and of Policie, how and by what meanes he might preuent him from making himselfe more great. And because Reason and common Experience taught him, That he, whose owne house is on fire, will rather employ his endeouours to quench that flame, than to set his enemies house on fire also: he therefore praised secretly with *Lluellen* (the most valiant, and greatest in dignitie among the Welchmen) that see, with those Inhabitants, would rebell, if at any time any Warres were but likely to bee attempted against the French Nation by King Edward. And this his plot was much furthered by the exile of the aforesaid Ladie *Elienor*: who being (by reason of her misfortunes) in the disposing & power of the French king, was (with great importunitie) desired in marriage by the said *Lluellen*: to whom (vpon those conclusions and agreements especially) shee was sent with honourable attendance and rich gifts. But King Edward (being secretly enformed both of the said purpose, and of her passage towards Wales) wisely preuented his owne danger, and intercepted her on the Sea, and detained her as his prisoner. By meanes whereof, *Lluellen* (whose best Rhetoricke to perswade, was by open War and Rebellion) entred into the field with many thousands, who were more ready to robbe and to steale, than to reclayne themselves, and to be mindefull of their due to their Prince.

The king likewise on his part (purposing to make his first voyage terrible to the Welchmen, for examples sake to that sickly Nation) leuied so strong an Armie, that, by all coniectures, the Welchmen were altogether vnable to resist him. And it seemed they thought so too: For their chiefe Captaine and Leader (partly for the loue which hee bare to his longed-for Ladie, and partly to preuent those fatall dangers which knocked at his door) vunexpectedly submitted himselfe to the kings Grace, and yeelded himselfe to be disposed of wholly and onely at the kings pleasure; and vowed & protested with many great and sollemne Oathes, That his obedience should be constant, and his sword alwaies ready to serue the king, both against France and against all others in future time, if he might be made happie with the kings fauour, and haue the enioyment of his Lady.

The king, whose heart was euer enclined to mercie, and more desired by affabilitie to winne an enemy, than to conquer him by blowes; and supposing that his loue to his Mistresse would bee a stronger

stronger bond to strengthen his allegiance, than any other thing; freely granted him his pardon, his fauour, and his wife. And thus those Warres (which menaced the death of many thousands) were quietly ended, without the effusion of any blood.

But within few yeares after, *Lluelien*, by the wicked perswasions and enticements of his brother *David* (a man more contentious than prudent, and lesse valliant than malicious; and yet one whom the King did extraordinarily loue and fauour) rebelled against the King; and fought with Sir *Roger Morsmyer* many sharp and aduantageous battailes. But at length (Gods iudgements hastening Traytors to a shamefull end) both of them were taken; and their heads (as Trophies of the victory) were sent vnto the King: who caused them to be set vpon the Tower of London, for a terror vnto others; and there they remained long after.

But (notwithstanding all this) yet the naturall disposition of the Welchmen so strongly preuailed, and so blind they were, & vnable to foresee their owne ruine, that within few moneths after they rebelled twice; and by many slaughters and strange executions they were subdued, and compelled to obey. And because their Warres were rather maintained and cherished by shiftings and by startings into the huge and vast Woods (which made those Rebels more disordered, and confident to saue themselves when greatest danger did approach) the King caused those Woods to be hewen downe, and to be consumed with fire: By meanes whereof, they were reduced to a more ciuill kinde of life; and began to practise diuers commendable Occupations, Arts, and Sciences, and tooke some pleasure (from thenceforth) to liue like honest men.

In the eighteenth yeare of king *Edward*s Reigne, *Alexander* the king of Scots (not hauing any issue of his body) fell with his horse, and vnfortunately brake his neck. He had three sisters: the eldest of which was married vnto *John Baylyol*, Lord of Galloway; the second vnto *Robert le Bruse*, Lord of Valley-Androw; & the third was married into England to *John Hastings*, Lord of Abergauenny. Betwixt these three (each of them being backed with the best support of their most able friends) sharpe bickerings and ciuill warres occasioned the deaths of many worthy and valiant men, together with the ruine and destruction of some of their Houses and best Fortresses: and the Commonweale of that kingdom received many desperate wounds and strange misaduentures, because each of them (in the right of his wife) attempted and hoped to be a king. Whereupon king *Edward* (with great expedition) went into Scotland as the Soueraign Lord, and endeauoured to compose this strife: But such

Lluelien rebelleth.

Lluelien and his brother are taken and beheaded.

The Welchmen rebell againe and againe.

They are subdued.

Their woods are burned.

They become more ciuill.

The King of Scots breaketh his neck.

Contention about the Crowne of Scotland.

The title is referred to the censure of King *Edward*, as to the soueraign Lord thereof.

*Scotland is
surrendered to
king Edward.*

*A wife and a
discreet King.*

*John Baytol
is made King
of the Scots.
He doth ho-
mage for it
to the King.*

*The French
King wrong-
eth King
Edward.
Edm. counsell.*

*The King
strippeth the
Church.
He is hated
by Church-
men.*

*The Clergies
sute denied.*

Mortmayne

such was their mutuall desire to might, that no protestation pre-
sented to make any one of them to yeeld. But in the ninth month (con-
sider aduice took place: so that they all (by a publick writing vnder
their hands and seales) consented to restore their (states and their
Titles to the censure and judgement of king Edward. And by the
same Instrument they freely surrendered all Scotland, and that
Crowne, into the kings hands, to the end, that by this they might
enable him absolutely to possesse such a one of them in that king-
dome, as (in his judgement) ought to haue the same. Hee also re-
ceived from them in writing their severall demands, and each mans
proofes, reasons, and arguments to maintaine his Claim. And
thereupon king Edward elected and made choice of twenty of the
most discreet, wise, and worthy men of his kingdome of England,
and of twenty more of the kingdome of Scotland: and by their ad-
uice and counsell he informed himself truly of that businesse, and
at length pronounced his sentence for *John Baytol*, who had mar-
ried the eldest of those three sisters: who received from him that
Crowne and Countrey, and for it performed and did his homage
to king Edward.

The king, although hee were earnestly employed in these and in
other affaires at home; yet was he more troubled with greater bu-
sinesse abroad, by reason that the French king daily wronged him
in Gascoyne, Guyan, and elsewhere. And to maintaine those wars,
the king (by the aduice and counsell of *William Marchyan* his chief-
est Treasurer) seized into his hands the Plate, Jewels, and Treasure
of the Churches, and of the religious Houses within this kingdom,
and compelled the Clergy to giue vnto him the one halfe of one
yeares value of all their Ecclesiasticall Dignities and Promotions.
This vnaccustomed Sacriledge made the king hateful in Church-
mens eyes. But yet he seemed in some sort to content them with
faire promises of Restitution, when his Treasures should by other
meanes be increased. But they little relying vpon that promise, and
(by common experience in other things) being resolved, that the
kings Coffers would not be emptied to fill theirs (and yet feeding
themselves with a vaine hope, that some other recompence might
be made them) became humble suitors to the king, That hee would
be pleased to reuoke and to annihilate the Statute, which in the
fourth yeare of his Reigne was made against *Mortmayne*; which
prohibited the giuing and the conueying of any Lands and Tene-
ments to any Corporation whatsoever, without the kings leaue.
But as hee neuer meant to gratifie them in any sort whatsoeuer: so
he made them answer, That it lay not in him, without the consent
of

of a Parliament, to reuoke and to frustrate any Law. The Clergie (to their great griepe and sorrow) perceiued, that their Treasure was swept away, together with all hope of restitution or amends: and though it vexed them inwardly, yet durst they not to expresse anie outward tokens of dislike.

Thus when the King had augmented his store, by the Clergies plentie: he (by the directions of his said Treasurer) imposed a Taxe or Sufidie vpon euerie Sacke of Wools, and vpon all Fells and Hydes which were to bee transported out of this kingdome; and also required the tenth part of euerie mans moueable goods and substance to maintain his Warres: which being granted, hee caused it to be leuiued by manie payments within the space of three yeares. He also compelled the Clergie to bring into his Coffers all such summes of mony as they had promised to pay vnto the Pope, towards the maintenance of the Christian War with the Turkes in the Holy Land. He also tooke vp one hundred thousand Quarters of the best Wheat, and sent it to his Armies in Gascoyné & in Guyan: where they fought with much courage and valour, but with doubtfull successe, sometimes gaining what was lost, and sometimes losing what they had wonne.

In the five and twentieth yeare of king Edwards Reigne, John Baylyol the king of Scots (partly by the secret procurement of the French King, and partly by the lewd aduice & counsell of factious and wicked persons) sent a Defiance (with a proud renunciation of his Fealty and Homage) to the King, and with an Army of braine-sicke Rebels entred into the Northerne parts of this kingdome: where (with fire and sword) they oppressed such as could make no resistance, and (without pity and compassion) slew such as were armed in the defence of their Countrey, and to saue themselves. Whereupon king Edward recounting his manifold fauours and great loue to the said revolted King, and the high Honour wherewith (not manie yeares before) he had graced him, and being resolved to correct his ynthankfulness with sharpe reuenge, leuiued a puissant Army, and marched (in full strength) towards the Northerne parts: and found his fortune to be so fauourable, that with much ease hee wonne the strong Castle of Barwick, with the slaughter of five and twenty thousand Scots. Hee also wonne the well-defended Castle of Donn-Barre: and (piercing into the sides of Scotland) hee tooke Edenburrrough, and all other places of the best defence. And the king of Scots perceiuing the dangerous estate wherein he stood, and reposing his last hopes in the Kings Grace, by the aduice of all his Nobles repaired in person to the

A new Taxe.

25.
1296.
*John Baylyol
inuaides
England.*

*The King
with an army
marcheth a-
gainst the
Scots.*

*Barwicks
wonne,
The Scots are
overthrowne,
25000 Scots
are slaine.*

*The King of
Scots yeeld-
eth himself,
and surren-
dred his
Kingdome.
How sent to
the Tower of
London.*

*The King
placeth a Go-
vernor over
Scotland.*

*King Ed-
ward sayleth
into Flanders
and assisteth
the Earle
thereof.*

*The Scots
rebell.*

*The Scots
are subdued.*

*The French
King dared
not to fight
with King
Edward.*

*A peace is
concluded.*

*London is
restored to
her liberties.*

kings presence, humbly submitted himselfe, craved pardon, and solemnely surrendred his whole Kingdome into king *Edwards* hands: Who forthwith sent the said Scottish king with a strong Guard to the Tower of London; but gave him large allowance both of Liberty and of Attendance, and of his Diet. And then he committed the Government of that Kingdome vnto *John War-ryne*, Earle of Suffex and of Surrey; and made *Sir Hugh Cressingham* his High Treasurer, and *William Earnsley* his chiefe Iustice of that Kingdome. And having confined some of the Rebellious Peeres of Scotland within the Marches of England; hee returned triumphantly, and with great honour.

And then king *Edward* vsing great expedition and much policy for the refreshing and for the renewing of his Army; transported it into the Territories of *Guy*, then Earle of Flanders: against whom, *Roberts* Earle of Arthois (by the procurement, and with the assistance of the French king) made sharpe warre. And the French king intending to hasten king *Edwards* returne into England, to saue himselfe and his owne Countrey; animated the Scots to rebell againe: And they (because they were factious, and ready to doe vnto France all seruice vpon all commands, though with the hazzard of their liues, and of their lands) without any feare, or fore-cast of their future miseries, did put themselves in armes.

But king *Edward* purposing to greete the French king and his Forces with a Souldiers welcome, appointed *Henry Perce* Earle of Northumberland, and many other Lords and Gentlemen of the best ranke, for the repressing of that Rebellion: who so manfully banged the Scots, that they enforced them to flye out of the field, and pursued them with a mercilesse slaughter, and reduced the rest to their former duty and obedience.

The French king perceiuing, that his practice with the Scots wanted his hoped successe; was not desirous to trie his strength with king *Edward* in the open field: but reposing more confidence in his wit than in his valour, hee proposed very honourable conditions of amity and loue, which by king *Edward* were accepted: and then a generall Peace was proclaimed betwixt them all. And thus those Warres (by king *Edwards* meanes and assistance) receiued a short end; which made a shew of long continuance, with the expence of much blood.

After the kings returne into England, hee restored to the Citizens of London their Liberties, which (for many vndutifull misdemeanours) had remained forfeited in his hands for the space of twelue

twelve yeares. And forthwith he led all his Forces into Scotland; where a new Rebellion madly raged, and could not bee suppressed without much strength. And being more willing, that the execution of Iustice vpon few (for examples sake) should rather reclaim the multitude, than that the Sword should wastfully consume them; he required the deliuey of their Leaders, and offered his free pardon to the rest.

But their froward dispositions (preparing them to much more misery than as yet they had endured) animated them obstinately to arme themselves, and in warlike fashion to bid battaile to the King: Inasomuch, that his Highnesse finding his fauours to bee neglected, and perceiuing that all extremity was to be vsed; set vpon them with such fury and violence, that with the losse of eight and twenty of his followers, and with the slaughter of two and thirty thousand of the Scots, hee enforced the rest to yeeld: and taking a new Oath for their Fealty and Homage, hee appeased that Countrey; and (to the great ioy of all his people) hee returned againe into England. Where (vpon the earnest entreaty and request of Pope Boniface the eight) hee enlarged *Iohn Baylyol*: Who trauielled into France, to take a view of his Lordships there; (which according to his owne name) were called *Baylyols Lands*.

King *Edward* had no sooner finished these Troubles; but the Scots were in Armes againe: So that the third time hee entred with a great Power into that Countrey; where none were so daring, or so hardy, as to endure his presence. But the greater number of the Barres, Barons, and chiefeest Gentlemen of that kingdom had withdrawn themselves into the strong Castle of *Estryuelyn*; which was by them so strengthened, that in their iudgements it was impregnable. This Castle was long besieged by the king, but to little purpose: and hee much doubted, lest his continuance in that seruice would afford him but little honour in the end. Wherefore (to make a tryall how farre his Inuention would take place) he caused two paire of Gallowes to be set vp in the Castles view; and with the sound of a Trumpet did proclaime his free Pardon, if the besieged did yeeld themselves within three daies: but denounced death vnto them all, by hanging, without respect of Honour, or of Person, if obstinately they enforced him to continue a longer Siege. And hereupon the besieged, although they were so strongly immured, that they might boldly haue trusted vpon their strong defence, yet because they distrusted to be relieved, they reposed their confidence in the kings word, and submitted both the Castle and

The Scots rebell againe.

A mercifull King.

27.
1298.

The battaile of Fawkes.

The Scots are ouerthrowne.
28. English men slaine.
32000. Scots are slaine.

Iohn Baylyol set at libertie.

The Scots do rebell againe.

The King leadeth an Arme into Scotland.

Estryuelyn is besieged, in which the Nobles are.

The Kings Policke.

A Proclamation.

Estryuelyn is yeelded.

The Scots do
swear their
obedience to
K. Edward.

The Scottish
Chaire.

Troile-Ba-
ston.
A memora-
ble deed done
by a worthy
King.

The Prince
is committed
to prison, and
Pierce Gawe-
ston is banished
Cornwall and
Wales given
to the Prince.

29.

1300.

Peace be-
twixt Eng-
land and
Scotland.

The Scots do
swear obe-
dience.

The Popes
claime to be
high Lord of
Scotland, and
his command
to King Ed-
ward.

and themselves to his grace and mercy, whereof they had good proofe. For (taking new oaths for the performance of their obedience, and duty in future times) hee set them free and at liberty: and the like oaths he tooke of all Iustices, Mayors, and other Officers of Townes, Cities, Castles, and Forts; and hauing disposed all things in a comely and in a peaceable order, for the good gouernment of that Kingdome, hee returned into England, and brought with him (for a memoriall of his great victory) a Chaire of stone, in which the kings of Scotland by common custome receiued their Enstallment and their Crowne: which Chaire remaineth in the Kings Chappell at Westminster, among the faire Monuments of our famous Kings of this Realme.

Asloone as King Edward was returned from his iourney, he caused a generall enquiry (which was termed *Troile-Baston*) to be made throughout his Kingdome, of the misdemeanours and oppressions of his Officers of all sorts; so that the number of the transgressors was such, and so great were their offences, and their fines so heauie, that with their money the King filled his empty Coffers to the brimme, dischargd his old scores, which were very great by reason of his warres in Wales, Scotland, the Low-Countries, Gascoyne, Guyan, and elsewhere, and then he displaced those corrupted Officers, and placed better in their steads.

About the same time Doctor Langton then Bishop of Chester, complained grieuously to the King vpon Edward the yong Prince, who (by the lewd aduice and instigation of *Pierce Gaweiston* his loose and gracelesse companion) brake forcibly into his Parke, and made hauocke of his game; for which the Prince was committed to prison, and *Gaweiston* was banished the land, and required not to return on paine of death. And the next yeare after *Edmund* Earle of Cornwall, sonne to *Richard* king of the Romans, died without issue; so that that Earldome reuerted to the Crowne, which (together with the Principality of Wales) the King gaue vnto Prince Edward, his eldest sonne and heire apparant to his Crowne.

In the thre and thirtieth year of king Edwards reigne, a generall peace was proclaimed between England and Scotland, & *Robert le Brus*, and many other Knights, Lords, and Earles of that Country came into England, and voluntarily swore their Fealtie and their Homage to the king: yet before one yeare was fully expired, the said Lord *Brus* and many others secretly procured from the Pope an instrument in writing, by which the Pope made claime to the kingdome of Scotland, as holden of his Church of Rome; and the king was thereby peremptorily requied to surcease from all de-

mands

mands of Tenure, and of Soueraignty ouer it. But the king (by the aduice of his Nobles) signified by his Embassadors to the Pope, That the Signiory and Lordship of the said kingdome of Scotland did onely belong to the kings of England, and not vnto the See of Rome, nor vnto any other: and therefore he prayed him to reuoke his said Instrument and vniust claime; for that both hee and his Nobles were resolu'd to maintain his right and lawful inheritance therein, with the vtmost expence of their goods, lands, and liues. But whilest those things were thus handling, *Robert le Brusé* (by the Popes consent) caused himselfe to be crowned king of that Realm: which occasioned king *Edward* the fourth time to enter into Scotland with a puissant Army; where he so largely extended his valor, and with the sword so fiercely deuoured the Inhabitants which ioyned with their vsurping king, that they were compelled (with extraordinary tokens of subiection and humiliry) to yeeld themselves to the kings mercy. And *Robert le Brusé* (finding no meanes to make good his false title to that Crown) secretly withdrew himselfe, and fled into Norway, where he remained vntill king *Edwards* death; which happened soone after, when hee had reigned victoriously almost thirty five years.

*The Kings
message to
the Pope.*

*Robert le
Brusé doth
vsurpe in
Scotland.
The King in
his owne per-
son the fourth
time subdu-
eth the Scots.
The vsurper
fleeth into
Norway.
The King
dieth.*

THE

The King
message to
the Pope.

1. The first
 2. The second
 3. The third
 4. The fourth
 5. The fifth
 6. The sixth
 7. The seventh
 8. The eighth
 9. The ninth
 10. The tenth

ЭНТ



THE HISTORIE OF KING EDWARD THE SECOND.



After the Kings death, his sonne Edward succeeded, and was crowned King.

His tall and comely Personage, graced with outward Majesty, seemed to promise many blessings to ensue. But his Maners (being grossely corrupted by lewd and gracelesse companions) were so lasciuious, and vnbefitting the condition of a King,

that hee became burthen some to his Nobility, and (almost) a scorne to his inferiour subjects. For hee neglected the society and the counsell of such as were wise and graue, and conformed himselfe with his owne Minions: by meanes whereof, he put in practise euery loathed thing, wherein hee could either take pleasure, or expresse his folly. So that his euill Government made his kingdome to bee vnfortunate, and himselfe a president of wretchednesse to succeeding Ages: as in the discourse of his History it will more particularly appeare.

No sooner was his head adorned with his Imperiall Crowne, but his heart longed for *Piers Ganeffon*, the wicked corrupter of his youth, and the professed enemy of all honesty and vertue. For albeit that he was exiled by the last king, who rooke an Oath of this his Successour, neuer to permit him (vnpunished) to come backe againe into England: yet the remembrance of his villanies (confor-

N

ting

An euill
King.

Piers Ganeffon.

The King
breakes his
Oath to re-
call Ganeffon

*Pierces Gane-
ston is all in
all.*

*The Nobles
tell the King
of his Oath.*

*Ganeston is
admonished.*

*He conveys
the Kings
Jewels out of
the Realme.*

*The King
lives loosely
and lewdly.*

*The Queen
in vaine
keeth to re-
claim the
King.*

ting with the Kings bad nature and euill disposition) was a quicke messenger for his returne. And his arriual so abundantly replenished the Kings conceits with extraordinary joy, that nothing else (in comparison of it) gaue him any contentment: Neither could any man (besides him) expect for any gracefull entertainment from the King.

The Noblemen (who perfectly knew how wickedly this *Ganeston* was enclined) perceiuing that the king doted on him, and that his affections towards him were vnlimited: being perplexed with inward griefe, and fearing the Ruine which (through his insolencie) threatened the subuersion of the whole Realme; emboldened themselves to put the King in minde of his oath. But as his conscience troubled him not for the breach thereof: So their disliking encreased his desires towards *Ganeston*, and to make him great. For *Ganeston* alone, and none but *Ganeston*, was likely to doe all in all: and (frowne hee that frowne would) the King cared not who was displeased; hee was resolved, that *Ganeston* should be great. And therefore hee first Lorded him with the Baronic of Wallingford: and soone after, he created him Earle of Cornwall; & made him the sole and onely Commander ouer his Jewels, and his Treasure. In which Office, so absolute was his power, and so cunning was his crafty head, to prouide in the time of his prosperity for aduerser fortune which might ensue; that secretly he conveyed beyond the Sea a fittre Table and Tressels, all made of beaten gold, and many rich and precious Ornaments and Jewels, to the great hurt and prejudice of the King and of this Realme.

Hee also tooke much pleasure to feede the Kings fancies with great variety of new delights; and by his example, hee enured him to Banquet, Drinke, and to Carowle beyond measure: And his dishonest persuasions and enticements made him carelesse of the Bed and of the society and fellowship of *Isabel* his Religious and vertuous Queene, the daughter of the French King *Philip* the faire, and sister to his Successor *Charles* the fourth; and trayned him to the aduolrous consorship of wanton Curtizans and shamelesse Whores.

The Queene (who sorrowed hereat beyond measure) reposed all means for redresse of those her vn-sufferable wrongs in her prayers vnto God, and in her modest wooings for her Kings loue. But all her endeouours proued nothing at all: For the beames of her excellent vertues could not pierce the thicke clouds of his vanities; neither could her teares or her groanes mollifie his hard heart, which fastened vpon too much plenty of loathsome sins.

The

The common people gave large liberty to their Tongues, to speake and to talke reproachfully, and to the Kings disgrace. Hee knew it well; he heard it; and cared not for it: but was resolved to perseuere in those vngodly courses, which by *Pierce Ganeslon* were contriued and propoled vnto him.

The Noblemen, and such as by reason of their Offices and Places were of the kings Councell; did (in their particulars) aduerture many times secretly to informe him of the lewdnesse of *Pierce Ganeslon*; and that both strangers, and also his owne people, did strangely speake of him and of his Gouvernment: which was altogether eclipsed by the foule interposition of his vices betwixt himselfe and it. But their labour was quite lost, and their fidelity was requied with vnthankfull frownes; rather testifying his determination to continue subject (though hee were a king) to his follies, than in any sort to amend any thing which was amisse.

When nothing could preuaile, either to reforme the king, or to make him carelesse of *Pierce Ganeslon*; the Lords and Barons of this Kingdome beganne seriously to consult and to take another counse. For they preferred their generall Petition to the king: wherein they plainly discouered the foulness of his faults, and the sorrow of his best affected subjects, for that his Majesty (more than was fitting or comely) was guided and gouerned by *Pierce Ganeslon*; and earnestly entreated him to bee pleased (for the preventing of such mischiefs as were otherwise likely to ensue) to banish that lewd Companion both from his Court and Kingdome.

The king perceiuing that his Nobles were resolved to vrge his consent vnto *Pierce Ganeslons* Exile, agreed (though vnwillingly) therunto: yea, in such a displeased humour granted hee their request, that thereby they might well vnderstand, that his heart subscribed not to their desires. But away he was sent into Ireland: Where he was no sooner arrived, but by messengers sent to him by the king, hee was required to bee iocund and chearefull in his banishment; for that his absence should in the end bee recompenced with greater honours and more gracefull fauours than he had formerly received: And for a pledge thereof, the king appointed him to bee the chiefe Gouernour and highest Commander in that Countrey; and sent him such store of Plate, Jewels, and Coyne, both of Silver and of Gold, that he might well thinke, that his banishment was but an honourable Embassage, and an occasion thereby presented by good fortune to the king, to make him the more potent and more rich.

*The people
talk of the
Kings still
life.*

*The King
cares not for
good counsell.*

*A petition
for Ganeslons
banishment.*

*Ganeslon is
banished into
Ireland.*

*The King
sends com-
fortable mes-
sages vnto
Ganeslon.*

*Ganeslon is
made Gener-
nour of Ire-
land.*

*The King
sends him
Jewels and
Money.*

*The Nobles
doe sue for
his returne.*

*Gauceston is
recalled.*

*Gauceston is
wicked and
insolent.*

*Gauceston is
banished a-
gaine.
He is recal-
led.*

*Gauceston
banisheth of
his wicked
counsel.*

*He scornes
the Nobles.*

*The Barons
strike off Ga-
ucestons head.*

*The King is
impatient for
Gaucestons
death.*

*The King fa-
uourith the
two Spencers.*

*The Spencers
are at hand
at Gauceston.*

*The fruits of
euill gouernment.*

And besides all this, the kings discontented passions so swayed in him, and *Gaucestons* absence so much perplexed him; that his Nobles (being in hope of future amendment of all things which had beene done amisse, and to please the king) freely, and of their owne accords, moued the king for his returne. But when he came backe againe, so strongly and so strangely was hee supported by the publike fauors and vnremoueable loue of the king; that with greater insolency and pride than before, hee practised many more notorious villanies than euer he had done. So that (by meanes of the incessant importunity of the Nobles) hee was againe banished into Flanders: where hee remained not long, but the king called him backe againe.

Those his Exiles (thus procured by the Lords and Barons of this kingdome, and their consents to call him home againe) might haue reclaymed him from his foule and grosse errors, if wisdome and vertue had in any sort beene entertained by him. But in stead of changing his bad nature into good qualities, hee tooke an extraordinary delight to glory in his owne sinne; and to boast, how he mis-led the king. He also scornefully despised the greatest Nobles of this Land, and abused them to their faces; and by vntrue informations (which priuately and behinde their backs he gaue vnto the king) he caused them to bee frowned on; and did all things in such a disordered fashion, without controlment, that the Barons with one consent (being hopelesse of redresse, and being vnable any longer to support such a despised burthen) besieged him, being in a strong Castle; which they wonne: and to redeeme the kings honour, and to procure their owne liberties, and the welfare of the Commonweale; they caused his head to bee smitten off. But so highly was the king displeased thereat, that alwaies from thenceforth he endeaoured nothing more, than by cruelty and by tyrannie to reuenge his death.

And then (to anger his Nobility) he entertained into his nearest familiarity and counsailes the two *Spencers*, Sir *Hugh* the father, and Sir *Hugh* the sonne; men as gracelesse, and as odious to the Lords and common people, as the other was. Their aduice enclined the king, to prosecute his lewd and wanton course of life among lasciuious and wanton Whores and Concubines, and to set at naught the sweet company of his modest and vertuous Queene: which made him a scorner to forraigne Princes, and hatefull in the sight of all honest men. Yet the king, in despite of his greatest Lords, supported the two *Spencers* in all things which they would take in hand.

But

But his euill government, both of himselfe and of his kingdome, reuiued new discords betwene the King and his Barons: and by meanes thereof, the affaires and busineses of the Commonweale were ill managed; and such as lay in wait to aduance their Estates by reason of this dissension, had now gotten fit opportunity to put in practise what they pleased. Among which, *Roberts le Bruis* (returning from Norway into Scotland) was ioyfully receiued there, and was the second time crowned King of that Kingdome: And then he leuiued a strong Army, with which he entred into the Marches of England foure or fve dayes iourney; and with fire and sword miserably wasted and defolated those Countries, vntill hee was encounterd by the King, and compelled to retyre.

But king *Edward* fighting a Battaille with the Scottish power within the borders of their owne Countrey, receiued the overthrow: and hauing scene the slaughter of many thousands in his Army (among which, were *Gilbert de Clare* Earle of Gloucester, and two and forty other Lords, and more than three score Knights and Barons, besides two and twenty men of Name, who were taken prisoners) hee was compelled (for his owne safety) shamefully to flye, and with dishonourable successe to returne againe into England. Where he was (eife soones) perplexed and put to much trouble by the vnrde and desperate attempt of one *Iohn Poydras* a Tanners sonne dwelling in Exeter: who boldly affirmed himselfe to be the truly begotten sonne of the last king, and said, That he was changed in his Cradle by his Nurse for a Carters childe: and offered diuers colourable proofes for the same: and among the rest, he strongly instanced vpon the vnworthy and base conditions of the king; sorting to none so fitly, as vnto one of obscure and of common birth.

With this his clayme, and bold assertions, quickly abused the eares and the hearts of the vulgar, and drew many of them (for want of wisdom and obedience) to flocke vnto him, as to their king. But at length he was apprehended, and hauing confessed his Treason and his folly, and being arraigned, conuicted, and condemned, hee was executed according to his deserts.

At the same time also, the strong and almost impregnable Castle of Barwicke was treacherously betrayed into the hands of *Roberts le Bruis*, the vsurping king of Scots: and such a generall scarcity of all sorts of Victuals, and such a Murraine of all kindes of Cattell so punished the people, that the like before among them was neuer scene. And diuers notorious and bold Theeues, to the number of two hundred at the least (being clothed in Friers weeds of gray) without

The King and his Nobles are at variance.

Robert le Bruis being recrowned, invadeth England.

7.

1313.
The Battaille of Evesham.

The King receiveth a great overthrow.

The King flyeth.

Iohn Poydras discovered and executed.

Barwicke betrayed to the Scots.

A famine. Theeues beare great sway.

The Scots invaded England.

The Famine grievously increased.

The King is overthrown the second time by the Scots.

A miserably distressed people.

The use of this History.

The Nobles endeavour reformation.

They complain on the two Spencers.

without respect of person or of sexe, robbed and spoiled the Inhabitants of the North. But (in the end) they were taken, and, according to their deserts, were put to death. The Scots also raised a new Army, and with great violence and fury they entered England; where (besides the great afflictions occasioned by that warre) the Inhabitants of those Countries were so pinched and plagued with famine, that in many places those who lived, scarcely sufficed to interre their dead: and the rest (to preserve their lives) were compelled to sustaine themselves in the great extremity of their hunger, by eating of Rats, Mice, Cats, Dogges, Horses, and such like.

The king (intending to suppress the Scots, and to correct them for their insolency and folly) encountred them with his whole Army, but received a notorious overthrow; and (being scornfully checked and disgraced by his bold and lawcic enemies) hee returned home again with great ignominie and shame, leaving his poore subjects in the North, so miserably distressed and vnrelieved, as euer any people were forsaken by an vnworthy and a careless king.

Of these disgraces, and of these troubles, wee make this profitable vse: That as the herdicall vertues of excellent Princes are crowned with many blessings from above; so for the iniquity and haynous transgressions of wicked and vngodly kings, both themselves and their people likewise, are severely punished by God, before whom Princes must fall as well as the common subjects, except their true and hearty repentance (being ioynted with the amendment of their liues) doe (in season) procure his mercy and his fauour.

The Peeres and the Nobles of this Kingdome (perceiuing that the diseases of the Common-weale did daily encrease and grow more dangerous) determined (like good Physicians) narrowly to search out the causes of these maladies, and to finde some remedy to cure them before it were too late. The miserable examples of all kindes of wickednesse which presented themselves vnto their view, emboldened them to informe the king, That the two Spencers and their misguiding of the State (by whom onely, and by none other the king was counsailed and directed) were the immediate occasioners of all those mischiefs & calamities, which miserably afflicted and tormented the whole Kingdome. They plainly told him, That such was their interest in the kings person, and in his government of his people, that they were bound (in honour, and for conscience sake) to informe his Highnesse of all such misdemeanors

com-

committed by any of his subiects as tended to the subuersion of the State, and the disturbing of the common peace thereof: & then they became importunate suitors to his Maiesty, That he would be pleased to put from him the two *Spencers*, who corrupted him with monstrous vices, and made him altogether carelesse of those duties which by Almighty God were required at his hands. They told him likewise, That as subiection belonged to the people, so the King was bound to protect them, and that (vnconscionably and most dishonorably) he had left his Commons in the North, to the rage and rigor of the Scots, and to all extremities of hunger and of other wants: & that if he pleased not (vpon their humble entreaty and request) to cashier those two gracelesse Counsaillors, of their places and from his seruice; they then must and would presume to doe it, though it were with the hazzard and perill of their owne liues.

The King could not choose but harken to this grieuous and true report. For as it was founded and grounded vpon conscience, and on duety, so was it maintained with a constant resolution to reforme that which was amisse. Hee bit his lip therat, and his countenance proclaimed his discontentment. Inwardly hee meditated and deuised how he might surpris those Noblemen, who (most of all) stomacked the two *Spencers*, whom so immoderately hee did loue, yet inwardly his tongue gaue the Barons a pleasing answer, so that hee forthwith summoned his high Court of Parliament: and pretending a reformation of all things that were conceiued to be amisse, hee gladded the hearts of his Nobles and Commons exceedingly. But the Lords & Barons (although they reioyced much that the time would shortly come, in which these matters should be substantially debated on) yet were they iealous, and suspected lest the king intended their surprisall in that solema meeting: wherefore the greater numbers of them repaired vnto London, being strongly guarded with a braue Army of sufficient and gallant men, which were all cloathed in a like Liurey; whereat the king was highly displeased: but most of all it grieved him, that he knew the Barons would haue their owne will by taking and separating from him the two *Spencers* (who were more deare to him than his Queen and children, & all his friends beside) and in the end (among many other things) it was (by the whole Parliament) enacted, That they should bee exiled during their liues, and neuer bee licensed by the king to returne againe into England.

This being thus concluded, the Barons (who longed to see the two *Spencers* vnder saile) caused certaine Ships to bee prepared in which

The resolution of the Nobles touching the two *Spencers*.

The King framed on his Nobles.

A Parliament. The Nobles do stand upon their guard.

How the king loved the two *Spencers*. The two *Spencers* are banished for ever.

The King
hateth his
Barons.

The younger
Spencer
hath been a
Pyrate.

The grinded
Lords com-
plain, but the
King laughs.

The Spencers
are recalled,
and honoured
with more
Dignities.

ANNO 13.

The Spencers
doe scorn
and deride
the Nobles.

The Barons
doe raise a
strong Army.

The King
doth the like.

A cruel
Battle.

The Barons
are over-
thrown.

which they were embarked and sent away. So that now all men were well pleased except the king; whom their absence vexed at the heart: and in all things he endeavoured plainly to expresse his hatred and his anger towards the Barons, who had enforced him to consent vnto their banishment. And to expresse the same more fully, he was informed, that the younger Spencer had strengthened himselfe with a few good Shippes; and that he lay (as a Grand Pyrate) coasting vpon the narrow Seas, robbing, ransacking, and spoyling the Merchants, and all Nations who passed by them; but especially, and chiefly, such as were of this kingdome. And although great suite was made vnto the king, that a convenient Fleete might bee prepared for his surprizall; and that hee might bee produced vnto iudgement, and receive such punishment as the Lawes of this kingdome appointed, for the cutting off of such a notorious Theefe: yet the king smiled, and was inwardly glad to heare this newes, and turned a deafe eare to their request; and was so farre off from providing to fetch him in, that (pardoning all his offences, and to despight his Barons) hee recalled them both from their Banishment, and honoured them with more Dignities, Offices, and Authority, than euer hee had done before.

This thing being thus strangely performed by the king, and the daily vnusuall injuries and insolency of the two Spencers (who scorned and derided the Nobles, as being vnable to controll them, or doe them any harme) were sufficient warnings to the Barons to looke vnto themselves, and to provide for their owne safety, before it were too late. Wherefore, seeing that neither entreaty nor Law could right their wrongs; they raised a strong Army, and boldly marched into the field: And the king, with the two Spencers, and some others of the Nobles, did the like. And after many sharpe Bickerings and Encounters both their Armies met, and fought on either part with such obstinate desire to reuenge, that he was supposed to bee the most valliant man among them, who could and did drench his sword deepest in the most blood. The Noblemen now forgot, that vndutifully they fought against their Soueraigne Lord: and the king would not by any means know, that his Tyrannie had compelled them to take Armes. Kindred, Alliance, Countrey, Religion, Neighbourhood, nor any other respect now preuailed to winne fauour: but fury made them trust to their weapons, and death stickled the controuerfie betwixt them. In the end, when many of the Barons, and thousands of their adherents were slaine; they fled, and were pursued

sted by the king, who obtaining the victory, neuer ceased the pursuit, till he had taken the Earles of Lancaster, Hereford, & many other Lords, of which he caused two & twentie to take their heads in sundry places of this Realme, to the great astonishment of the rest, and to the terror of the vulgar sort.

Thus when this hapock was made of the Nobilitie, and when this victorie had pulled vp the two *Spencers*, with intolerable insolencie and pride, they made no good vse of their good fortune; for the amendment of their liues, or better counsailling of the King, but (as tyrants) they now did all in all as they themselves listed, and their will was the best Law. And then (presuming that all things should bee ordered as they listed) they procured the King to hold his high Court of Parliament at York, in which he created *Edward* his eldest sonne Prince of Wales and Duke of Aquitaine. He also created *Sir Hugh Spencer* the Father, Earle of Winchester, and *Sir Andrew Hartley* (whose extraordinary seruice was a principall meanes of the Barons late overthrow) Earle of Carle-Lisle. He also exacted the sixt penny of all Temporall mens goods and moveables, inhabiting in England, Wales, & in Ireland, to defray and to support his intended wars against the Scots: but the leuying thereof enforced the common people to grudge and to murmur, affirming, That they were altogether impouerished by dearth and famine, and thus vndone by reason of the disordered government of the king.

The Scots (beeing secretly informed that king *Edward* was resolved to invade their Countrey, and to reuenge those indignities and those wrongs, which by the incursions and inuasions of *Robert de Bruce* their usurping king, he had receiued) endeououred to dilert his purpose another way, so that they entered into Ireland with a copious Armie. But the king (who was not ignorant of their determination) made such provision against their landing there, that the greater number of those assailants were slaine, and the rest being vicerly overthrowne were compelled to fye vnto their Ships, and shamefully to returne into their own Countrey.

The king was now perswaded that scarcely any strength could withstand so great a power as hee had leuied, and that the Scots should now be called to a full account for all their Inroades, incursions, inuasions, murders, robberies, and spoyles. And for the effecting thereof, he conducted his Armie into Scotland, where the Nobles and the other inhabitants of that land (beeing armed well, and being in number many thousands) for many daies by continual preparations, made a shew to giue battaile to king *Edward*, when

Twenty and two Lords beheaded.

The two spencers were made insolent and proud.

The Prince of Wales created. Sir Hugh Spencer the elder made an Earle. A parliament.

The people doe murmur.

ANNO 1297. The Scots do invade the king. The Scots are overthrown.

The King embarks into Scotland with an Armie.

*The Scots do
retire into
the Woods &
Mountaines.*

*The English
Armie is ty-
red out.*

*The Kings
Armie is
afflicted.*

*The King is
pursued and
fleeeth.*

*The King
loseth his
Treasure and
Provisions.*

*Sir Andrew
Hartley
Earle of Car-
lile beheaded.*

*The Queene
fleeeth into
France, and
carrieth the
Prince with
her.*

*Shee is kindly
entertained
by her brother
the King.*

*The Barons
do offer her
their service.*

as (indeede) they meant nothing lesse. For when King Edward ap-
proached neere vnto them, they craftily, yet stoutly and strongly,
retired many miles, and at length withdrew themselves into the
Woods, Forests, and Mountaines: where they soone cloyed, wea-
ried, and wasted the English forces; partly with the vncafinesse of
those passages, and partly with such Stormes, Tempests, Raine,
Hayle, Snow, Frosts, and other distempered weather, as vually in
those places were too bitter and too sharpe.

And besides all this, the want of victuals and other necessities
so grievously afflicted the kings Armie with mortalitie and death,
that (not hauing performed any thing worthy a kings care and tra-
uaile) he began to retire: which when the Scots perceiued, they
pursued and hunted him with much cruelty and violence: So that
(finding his forces to be broken, and his Armie scattered) the Scots
gaue a bold on-set vpon the king himself, and enforced him to saue
his life by an ignominious flight, and to leaue behinde him his
Treasure, Ordinance, and his best provisions, wherewith they made
great iollie and mirth.

This last disaster and this last danger (which King Edward by a
shameful flight escaped) was principally occasioned by Sir Andrew
Hartley, whom the King had created Earle of Carlile, for his great
service in his behalfe against his Barons in their late overthrow:
for hee (hauing secretly receiued from the Scots a great summe of
money for a bribe) practised to betray the King: for which offence
he lost his head.

The Queene (knowing that the two *Spencers* enuied her deeply
at the heart, and that by their perswasions the king refused to keep
her companie, and solaced himselfe too too wantonly with lewd
and lasciuious strumpets, and pining the late slaughter and bloody
executions of very many of the Nobilitie, and perceiuing that the
affaires and businesse of the Commonweale were made flauish and
seruile to all misfortunes) taking with her the young Prince Edward
her sonne, fled into France to her brother King Charles: by whom
she was receiued louingly, and was recomforted by earnest promi-
ses and oathes, That by his assistance, and at his costs, her wrongs,
& this whole kingdomes ruines, should be repaired. And not long
after, the Barons (by their letters) offered their best service to her
and to the Prince her sonne, and did protest, That if shee could
reurne strengthened onely with the helpe of one thousand valiant
men at armes, they would therto adde so great a strength as should
suffice to make the two *Spencers* seeke the smart of their vnsubsta-
ble follies.

This

This proffer exceedingly reioyced the Queene, and daily fedde her conceits with fresh hopes of fortunate successe at the last. But the two *Spencers* (greatly fearing the event of her returne, if the French King should take her part, and making the kings Coyne and his Treasure their best Advocates to plead their case) so corrupted king *Charles* and his Councell of Estate with vntuallable presents of Gold, of Silver, and of rich Jewels, that not onely all aide and succour was denied to her by her owne brother; but in very sharpe and in quicke manner, shee was by him reproved and blamed, as being foolishly affraid of her owne shadow, and as having vnwisely and vndutifully forsaken the company of her Lord and kinde husband. The Pope likewise, and many of his chiefeest Cardinals (being by like rewards engaged by the two *Spencers*) required the French King (vpon the penaltie of Cursing) to send the Queene and the young Prince her sonne to King *Edward*. And doubtlesse shee had vnnaturally beene betrayed by her owne brother, if secretly and speedily her self and her young sonne had not been conueyd into the Empire by Sir *Robert of Arthois*, her neere and kind cousin and friend: where they were with vnexpected and extraordinarie ioy receiued and welcommed by the Earle of Henault, and by Sir *John* of Henault, Lord *Braunmont* his brother; who (being accompanied with three hundred Knights and selected men of Armes) went with her and with her sonne into England.

Vpon the first intelligence giuen of their landing, the Lords and Barons, with gladd hearts and lustie troupes of resolu'd Gallants (who were soundly and at all points armed) repaired euery day to the Queene and Prince, and hourly their forces were encreased. So that the King hauing notice of these new troubles, left the Government of the Citie of London to his chiefeest Treasurer *Walter Stapleton* then Bishop of Exeter (who was an inward friend to the two *Spencers*, and a professedemie to the Queene, and hated generally by the inhabitants of that Citie) and the King hastened vnto the Marches of Wales for the present, leauing of an Armie. But hee was no sooner on his iourney, but the Londoners (scorning the Government of their proud and insolent Commander) apprehended him, and without any lawfull proceedings, or iudiciall Sentence, caused his head to be smitten off at the Standard in Cheape: and then they suddenly, and with great violence, rushed into the Tower of London; where they slew all such as they found there: & kept both it and that Citie to the vse of the Queene and of the young Prince her son.

The Spencers do bribe the French King with the kings Money and Jewels.
The French King becketh the Queen his sister.
The Pope and his Cardinals are bribed.
Sir Robert Earle of Arthois a friend to the Queen.
The Queen and Prince flye into the Empire.
They are kindly entertained by the Earle of Henault.
The Queen and Prince do land in England.
 ANNO 19.
 1325.
The Nobles & Commons doe repaire to the Queen and Prince.
The Bishop of Exeter beheaded by the Londoners.
The King goes toward Wales.
The Londoners take the Tower.

*The King
changeth his
purpose.*

*The King for-
sisteth Bristol.*

*The Queen
winneeth Bri-
stoll.*

*The King is
besieged in
the Castle.*

*Elit inequit-
able Fatum.*

*A strange
matter.*

*The King
and Sir Hugh
Spencer the
younger are
taken.*

*The Castle of
Bristoll yeel-
deth.*

*Sir Hugh
Spencer the
father, and
the Earle of
Arundel are
beheaded.*

*The Queen
and Prince
doe marche to-
ward London.*

*The younger
Spencer is
publicly de-
rided.*

*He is cruelly
executed.*

*A just re-
ward for
their wicked-
nesse.*

As soon as King *Edward* was refused and informed of this Re-
uolt; he desisted from his intended purpose, and posted vnto Bri-
stow, and fortified it in the strongest manner that he was able, and
committed the defence thereof to the Earle of Arundell, & to Sir
Hugh Spencer the father; and himselfe (with Sir *Hugh* the sonne)
entred into the Castle there, and were determined to defend it with
all their strength. But within few daies after, the said City was be-
sieged, assaulted, and wonne by the Queene and by the Barons:
who (committing the two Earles, and diuers others of the chiefest
note, vnto safe keeping) besieged the Castle in such sort, that the
King and his Minion (distrusting the event) stole away secretly in
the night, and put themselves into a little Fisher-boate. Yet such
was the will and pleasure of God (to make them to know him by
their future miseries) that euery day, for a week and more, the
same Boat (by reason of a contrary wind) was driuen backe, neer
to the said Castle: Which being at length perceiued and obserued
by the Lord Beaumont, he chased the Fisher-boate with a small ves-
sell, and boarded her, and found in her the king and Sir *Hugh Spen-
cer* the son, whom they so much desired, and brought them to the
Queene; who presented them before the Castles view: and vp-
on the sight of them, the besieged yeelded the possession of their
Fort into the Queenes hands. Then were the heads of Sir *Hugh
Spencer* the Father, Earle of Winchesters, and of *John* Earle of Arun-
dell (whose daughter was married to the younger *Spencer*) smitten
off. And the king being committed vnto honourable and safe kee-
ping; the Queene, with the young Prince her sonne, being accom-
panied with the Barons and a strong Armie, marched towards
London, carrying with them Sir *Hugh Spencer* the sonne as a slave:
before whom, certaine vnworthy and base Fidleres (vpon Pypes
which they had made of Reedes) scornefully played, skipped, and
lung, in euery Town which they passed through. And being come
to the Citie of London, hee was fast bound vpon the top of an
high Ladder; and (his priuie members and his heart being seuered
from his bodie and burned) his head was forthwith cut off and set
vpon London Bridge.

Thus Gods iudgements pursued those two vngodly and
ambitious carniues: by whose lewd aduice and euill counsell the
king forsooke the bed and companie of the Queen his wife; liued
wickedly; made hauock of his Nobilitie; neglected his common
People; permitted his Enemies (to his disgrace) to triumph and
to insult ouer him; and gouerned more like a Tyrant than a
King.

And

And thus those times of Trouble being now againe blessed with a happie Peace, the Queene bountifully feasted and rewarded Sir *John* of Henault, Lord *Beaumont*, and all his associates: who taking leaue, departed, and were receiued into their Country with much ioy and great honour.

And then the Queene and the young Prince (to reforme such things as were amisse, and to settle a better course of Government within this Land) assembled an High Court of Parliament at Westminster. In which, the king, by a generall consent, was deposed: and (being very honourably respected and attended) he was committed to the Castle of Killingworth; & Prince *Edward* was crowned King. And not long after, the King being removed to the Castle of Corff, was wickedly assailed by his Keepers: who through a Horn which they did put into his fundament, pierced his guts with a burning Spit, and murdered him; when hee had reigned almost nineteen yeares.

Sir John of Henault and his companie are feasted and rewarded

A Parliament.

The King is deposed, Prince Edward crowned King.

The old King is murdered.



THE

Edward the Second

And when the Queen and the young Prince (as before
things were with the Queen's house) came to the
where the Land of Glamorgan was
minister in which the King by a general command was
and being very honourably respected and attended he was
minister to the Count of Killingworth, the Prince Edward was
and King. And not long after the King being removed to the
House of Commons was wickedly attacked by his keepers: who
though they did put into his hands
poisoned his ears with a burning spit and
burned him: when he had reigned
almost thirteen years.



THE HISTORIES OF KING EDWARD THE THIRD.



HENRY the Third, being of the age of fifteene years; and crowned king; whilst his deposed father liued; was chiefly directed in his yonger years by the aduice and counsell of Queene *Isabel* his mother; and of his vnckle *Edmund* of Woodstocke Earle of Kent, and of Sir *Roger Mortimer*: which knight (to interesse himselfe more especially in the Queenes loue) traitorously conspired and procured the murder of the last king, by the monstrous villanie and barbarous cruelty before mentioned.

In the second year of this kings reigne, *Robert la Bruce* (the bu-
lie vsurping king of the Scots) denounced Warres against him &
his kingdome : which occasioned the leuying of a strong Armie,
which consisted of: foure and fiftie thousand men ; with which, the
king himseffe (being accompanied with *Sir Iohn of Hertelle*, Lord
Beaumont, and five hundred Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen stran-
gers his associates) marched into Scotland : Where he hunted and
chased his enemies from Marish to Marish, from Wood to Wood,
from Hill to Hill, and from Mountaine to Mountaine, for the space
of one moneth and more : yet (by reason of the Scots cowardise,
which made them to skulke and runne from place to place, tyring
our

Sir Roger
Mortimer
wickedly pro-
cured the
murder of
the old King.

King Edward
Institute
Scotland.

**The Scots
fly into the
Woods and
Mountains.**

The King re-
turneth.

The King
marrieth
Philip
daughter to
the Earle of
Henault.

A Parlia-
ment.

Persons as-
tainted.

A dishon-
rable peace
with Scot-
land.

Their tenure
is released.

The Charter
called Rag-
man, deliv-
red up.

A marriage
with Scot-
land.

Sir Roger
Mortimer
created Earle
of March.

He is satisfied
with the
Queen Isobel.

He procured
the Kings
uncle to be
beheaded.

Articles
against Sir
Roger Mort-
imer.

our the English Armie. The King with his whole company (not hauing performed any memorable seruice) returned home; and thome after to his wife the Ladie Philip daughter to William Duke of Henault, his cousin German in the third degree, and affected his high Court of Parliament, in the manner in which (and so forth) and so forth, and so forth, and so forth, and then the King (by the directions of his mother and of Sir Roger Mortimer) concluded a dishonourable peace with the Scots, and released to them their homage, fealty, and seruice to him due for that kingdome, and deliuered vp to them the Grand-Instrument or Charter called *Ragman*, which vnder the hands and Seales of their late king, & of the Nobilitie of Scotland, testified their tenure and subiection to the kings of this Realme; and then hee married his sister Iane vnto David the son and heire apparant of Robert le Bruse the vsurping Scottish king, and created Sir Roger Mortimer Earle of March, whereat his Nobles were exceedingly discontent. And such was this new Earles inward malice and hatred vnto the kings vncle the Earle of Kent, and so powerfull was he with the King by reason of his too much familiaritie with his mother Queene Isobel, that he neuer desisted from his wicked and vngodly plottings, vntill he had bereft him of his head. But God permitted not this wicked man to stay long in his vngodly courses. For within few moneths after hee was accused by the State for these horrible and hainous crimes.

1. *Imprimis*, For that hee had wickedly plotted and procured the murder of the Kings Father.
2. *Item*, For that (by his false accusations and sinister counsaile) he had caused the King to cut off the head of his said vncle, who was truly noble, religious, valiant, honest, and a strong pillar to the Common-weale.
3. *Item*, For that too too familiarly he conversed with Queene Isobel the Kings mother, to her lust reproach and the dishonour of the King.
4. *Item*, For that hee received of the Scots a bribe of twentise thousand pounds, for which he procured the Kings retreat out of Scotland, and the releasement of his Signiorie, and Homage due for that Kingdome.

And

5. And lastly, because he had deceitfully couſened and beguiled the King of his Wards and Treasurie, conuerting all to his owne uſe.

For theſe his wicked Treasons and horrible tranſgreſſions, hee was condemned to dye, in the ſame manner which hee had deuised for the execution of Sir Hugh Spencer the younger. And Queene Iſabel (being moſt honourably provided for, and attended on) was ſequeſtered into a ſtrong Caſtle, where ſhee liued more than thirty yeares after, and then dyed.

In the fifth yeare of King Edwards Reigne, his perſonall appearance (in kinde and friendly fort) was required by Philip de Valois king of France, & vncle to the young Queen (that is to ſay) brother to Iane, Counteſſe of Henalt, who was mother to K. Edwards wife; together with his Homage & Fealty for his Duchy of Guyan. For the performance whereof, he departed hence; and was with much triumph, & magnificence receiued, entertained, & feaſted in France. But his homage, and his fealty, he would, and did only confeſſe by words, and would not doe them in ſuch ſolemne and ſubmiſſiue faſhion as they were demanded; Whereat the French King was ſo inwardly moued, that king Edward (at his departure from the French Court) might well perceiue, that his welcome was more reſpected and honoured, than his going from thence.

Aſſoone as the king came home, by new Embaſſadors his homage was againe required to be performed with all ſolemniety and due rites. And thereupon, (to giue ſome contentment to the French king) it was ſent vnto him, in an Inſtrument in writing, vnder the great ſeale. Whereat the Lords and Peeres repined much, affirming That the Crowne of France, (in the right of Queene Iſabel his mother) did belong to him; and that therefore hee might iuſtly haue reſuſed, to haue done vnto him any homage at all.

Not long after theſe buſineſſes thus ended, king Edward by his Embaſſadors required David the yong king of Scots, being his brother-in-law, to reſtore vnto him his Caſtle of Barwicke, and to do him homage for his kingdome: But David ſtoutly returned anſwer, That his father by conqueſt and by his ſword wonne that Caſtle, and that he had receiued it, by deſcent from him; and therefore would hold and keepe it as his owne. And touching the kings demand of his homage for the kingdome of Scotland, his anſwer was, That his Father neuer acknowledged any ſuch ſeruiſe; & that king Edward had releaſed it, if any had been due. And that therefore he would not confeſſe any tenure of king Edwards Crowne.

Sir Roger Mortimer
attainted and
Executed.

Queene Iſabel ſequeſtered.

The Kings
Homage for
Guyan re-
quired.

The King
would not doe
Homage in
ſuch ſort as it
was required.

The French
King is an-
grie.

The Kings
Homage a-
gaine requi-
red.

It is ſent vn-
der the Great
Seale.

The Nobles
are offended.

The Kings
Title to
France firſt
brooked.

The King re-
quireth the
Caſtle of Bar-
wicke to be
reſtored.

It is denied
by the King
of Scots, and
his Homage
denied alſo.

*The King
warreth in
Scotland.
The King
preuaileth.
Barwick is
reconered.*

*Edward Bay-
lyol crowned
King of Scot-
land.*

*The King in
person setteth
the Govern-
ment of Scot-
land.*

*David flyeth
into France.*

*He returneth
with an Ar-
my into
Scotland.*

*David is o-
uerthrowne
by King Ed-
ward.*

*Robert de
Arthoys
comet into
England.*

*The King re-
quites his
former kind-
ness.*

The high spirit of the king would not suffer him thus to bee slighted and shaken off, for he resolved to make himselfe the Lord of both. For which cause; hee marched with a strong Army into Scotland, and quickly subdued the better & the greater part of that kingdome, with small resistance. And hauing fortified for his own vse, the Castles and Townes of best defence, he returned, and came to Barwick, where the Towne (after a strong siege) was by composition surrendered into his hands: And then he crowned Sir *Edward Baylyol* king of Scotland, and committed the gouernment of the Town of Barwick vnto his charge; and returned into England with much honour.

But before two yeares more were expired, he passed againe with an army into Scotland, placed his new king in his throne, & receiued his homage: and re-inuested diuers English Lords, and gentlemen, of such Lordships and Territories, as by reason of the kings dishonorable peace with the Scots, (when hee first began to reigne) had been taken from them.

These disasters, and aduerse fortunes, which inseparably accompanied *David* the deposed king, compelled him to flye into France, where (after two yeares continuance) his heart was cheered with faire promises, and his necessities were relieved plentifully, with large and ample supplies of all things needfull and conuenient: he also obtained an Army with which hee sayled into Scotland; his hopes fairely promising that ere long he should bee a king againe. But he was much deceiued. For king *Edward*, hauing certain intelligence of his & of the French kings endeouours, provided effectually for the encounter; and marched into Scotland with a strong Army, where hee fought often with fortunate successe, against *David* and the French kings forces: and at length by battaile obtained an honourable victory; and securing the gouernment of that kingdome, (according to the rules of wisdom and of policy) he returned ioyfully into England.

In the tenth yeare of this kings reigne, *Philip de Valois* then king of France, sentenced the Earldome of Arthoys from *Robert De Arthoys*, vnto *Maud* Countesse of Burgondy, & Aunt to the said *Robert*; which censure so incensed the said Earle, that in his heat he vttered these words: *By me was he made a King, and by me, he shalbe again deposed.* For which offence, he was throughout all France proclaimed to be a traytor to the Crowne, so that (to preserue his life) hee was compelled to flie into England; where (in regard of his fideliry, and honourable seruice, performed to *Queene Isabel*, and to the king himselfe, when they were both in France) he was with all comple-

ment;

means of kindeesse and hearty loue receiued; and entertained by King Edward who knowing him to be right valiant, hardy, & wise, and not forgetting to requite fauours extended to him in his distresse) created him Earle of Richmond: and so entirely loued him, that while he liued, he neuer attempted any great and important matter without his counsaile and aduice.

This noble Knight sealed not to informe the king of his Title to the Crowne of France, by Queene Isabel his mother, who was the daughter of Philip the Faire, which appeared to stand thus.

Philip the Hardie, had issue two sons, Philip the Faire, and Charles de Valois. Philip the Faire, had issue three sonnes, (all which successively were kings and dyed without issue Male) that is to say, Lewis the tenth, Philip the fifth, surnamed the Long; & Charles the fourth. He had also one daughter which was named Isabel, Queene of England, and married to the kings father named Edward the second.

And Charles de Valois (the second sonne of Philip the Hardie) was father vnto Philip de Valois who reigned then in France; and of this Charles it is noted that he was the sonne of a King, The brother of a King, The vnckle of a King, and the father of a King, & that himselfe was no King.

According to the Lawes of France, the Crowne was to descend to the Issue Male, and no woman could inherit the Crowne: but king Edward, (in regard that he was a Male, though the descent of the Males was interrupted by a Female, viz. by Queene Isabel his mother) pretended that in right the Crowne of France was his; and could not be deprived thereof by humane lawes. The state of this question standing thus, Sir Robert de Arthois Earle of Richmond daily whispered it into the kings eare, & with such forcible reason & perswasions so vrged the same, that now the king began to think on nothing more, than how to attaine to the Crowne of France.

This busines as it was of extraordinary weight and importance, so it required the best secrecy vntill it were plotted well. For which purpose K. Edward (by private messengers & letters) craued the aduice & counsel of the barle of Henalt (his wiues father; & brother-in-law to the French king) and of Sir John of Henalt Lord Beaumont his brother, & of sundry other great States & Princes of the Empire; who not only counselled him by his sword to prosecute his right, but made him offers of their assistance by their best meanes. They also procured king Edward by a solemne instrument in writing to bee created the Vicar Generall of the Empire, by reason wherof he had the power to command the Nobles & the common people of those Countries, to further his purpose and his doings.

He is created Earle of Richmond.

King Edward wards title to the Crowne of France.

Charles de Valois.

Secrecie is the best furtherer of great negotiations.

The Counsell of the Earle of Henalt is craued.

Aide promised to the King.

The King is made Vicar generall of the Empire.

ANNO II.

The French
King maketh
incredible
provision to
warre in the
Holy-land.

The French
King alter-
eth his pur-
pose.

He prepareth
against Eng-
land.

K. Edward
fills his cof-
fers.

Want of mo-
ney in Engl.

The K. and
Queene doe
saile into
Flanders.
He enlargeth
himselfe with
the Germans
and Belgicks.
K. Edwards
Army.
K. Edward
landeth in
France.

The French
King taketh
the field.

Whilest these things werethus contriving in England, & whilest king *Philip de Valois* little thought that his Kingdome and Crowne were aimed at, or that his strength should bee tryed with English warres; he (by the importunity of Pope *Benedict* the eleventh) prepared such an Army to haue made warres in the Holy-land, as neuer before was conducted by any Christian Prince. Hee also committed the gouernment of his kingdome vnto his eldest sonne *John* Duke of Normandy: To whom (by reason of his youth) he added (for assistance) a discret, wise, and a grante Councell. And when he had thus provided and settled all things needfull for his huge army; and for the maintenance thereof for three yeares space: the reports of king *Edwards* claime and purpose, began as a sodaine storme to breake forth, and to be knowne: Wherupon, king *Philip* assuring himselfe, that (in his absence) the English Army would very little regard such forces as should be left behinde, and that his departure would encourage many (who hunted after nouelties and change) rather to make offers of their seruice to his enemies, than to performe that duty which by subiects was due vnto their king: And knowing, that it would be a ridiculous thing (by dangerous attempts) to winne honour abroad, and to neglect the safetie of his owne kingdome and estate at home, he desisted (on the sodaine) from prosecuting his journey into the Holy-land; & prepared strongly to defend himselfe against king *Edward*, and his claim. And (on the other side) king *Edward* (to the end that nothing might be wanting, when time should serue) By many politike deuices leuied such inestimable summes of monie, That (for want of coyne among the common people) a fat Oxe was sold for a noble, a fat sheep for six pence, sixe Pigeons for a penny, and a quarter of wheat for two shillings.

When he had thus done, hee (with Queene *Philip* his wife) sailed into Flanders, where they remained all that winter, & (at Antwerp) The king oftentimes conferred, & at length concluded with the Princes, and States of Germany, and of those Prouinces, vpon all things touching his said intended warre. So that, after his returne, hee leuied a strong Army, which (with his assisting friends) consisted of seuen and twenty thousand chosen fighting men, with which strength he landed in France, when the Summer was almost spent.

The French king, hauing an Army which consisted of three-score thousand souldiers, and being accompanied with the three kings of Behayne, Nauarre, and of Scotland, with sixe Dukes; Six and twenty Earles; and more than foure thousand Lords, and Knights,

Knights, brauely entred into the field, where hee found king Edward sufficiently provided to shew himselfe a valiant man. But whilest each Army gazed on the other, and expected many houres, which part should giue the first stroke of the battaile: Behold and wonder, and a strange wonder! For betwixt both those kings (vpon the motion, and through the mediation of the Lady Jane Countesse of Henalt, sister to king Philip, and mother to king Edwards wife) not a blow was giuen: but (on a sodaine) Both the Armies were dissolued, and king Edward, with his friends, and Nobles, returned into England.

In the foureteenth yeare of king Edwards Reigne, hee sayled into Flanders, where at Brusels he met with the greater number of the Princes of Germany, who of their owne accords, with hearty loue and forwardnesse, incorporated themselues with king Edward in those his warres against France.

And (at the instance of the king) the said Princes entreated the Flemmings to ioyne with them in that Enterprize, and seruice: whereunto they seemed willing to condescend, if king Edward would entitle himselfe king of France; and would quarter the Armes of France, with the Armes of England; and would (as king of France) release vnto them a bond of two millions of Floreyne, wherein they stood obliged not to wage any warre against the king of France. Whereunto the king yeelded, and did performe all things, according to their desires. And thus hee conformed to his part the Germans & Flemmings in those affaires, by promises, oathes, and by a solemne Instrument in writing vnder their hands and seales.

Whilest king Edward was thus busied abroad, the French kings Nauie landed many thousand men at South-hampton, who ranfacked the Towne and consumed it with fire: and the like outrage and cruelty they exercised in the Countries thereunto adioyning.

The king (immediately vpon his returne out of Flanders) summoned his high Court of Parliament: in which, that nothing needfull might be wanting, to furnish and to maintaine his warres with France; a Subsidie of the fifth part of all his Subiects moueable goods was granted to him, and the ninth part of their Corne, Together with a large custome vpon Wolles, to bee paid two yeares before hand. The leuying of which Taxe, turned the Praiers of the people into Curses, because they were altogether vnwilling to pay the same. He also (by way of loane) borrowed huge summes of mony of his richest Subiects: and the City of London disbursed for him twenty thousand Markes.

*A woman
parteth a
great affray.*

ANNO 14.

1339

The Germans incorporate themselves with King Edward in his warres. Vpon what conditions the Flemings ioyned with King Edward. He quarters the Armes of France. The French doe burne in England.

A Parliament.

A great Taxe.

The King borroweth Money.

*New coine
with the
French armes
quartered.
King Ed-
wards Fleet
and Army.
The battell of
Sluce.*

*The Kings
victory at
Sea.*

*King Ed-
ward landeth
at Sluce.*

*He rides to
Gaunt.*

*A huge
Armie.*

*Iaques Dar-
tuell a famous
Fleming.*

*Tourney be-
sieged.*

The King also coined great store of siluer and of gold, on which he quartered with his owne the Armes of France in the first place, and instamped him thereon king of England and of France. He also prepared a fleet of two hundred Saile of Ships, and throughly appointed them to the prooffe, and then hee leuied an Army of ten thousand selected men of warre, all which he imbarqued: and passing with them towards Sluce, he fortunately met with the French Fleet, which (consisting of Frenchmen, Picards, Genowayes, and other Nations) amounted to the number of forty thousand men; among which, were they who not only had robbed and rifled many English Merchants on the narrow Seas, but also had burned South-hampton and the Countries thereabout (as lately you haue heard.) The king being full of magnanimity and valour, resolute in his purposes, and reckoning of the French as of his subiects and inferiours in Armes, especially vpon the Seas, and hoping by his good successe, not onely to winne honour among the Princes & States of his confederacy, and purposing, if he might, to strike a terror in the French Nation concerning those warres, let vpon their whole Nauie with such an incomparable courage and bold spirit, that after a long, a fierce, and a bloody fight, very few or none of the French ships escaped, but were (by him) either taken or sunke into the Sea.

The king on his part hauing received but little losse, his prisoners he sent into England, but himselfe (the next day) landed at Sluce, where he was triumphantly receiued by the Inhabitants and Countrey, who (with great ioy and infinite commendations) congratulated his happy and victorious successe.

And from thence he rode to Gaunt where his Queene lay. And about the space of one moneth after, he (being accompanied with seuen Earles, eight Bishops, eight and twenty Baronets, two hundred Knights, foure thousand men of Armes, and nine thousand Archers of his owne Nation, and with the Duke of Brabant, who commanded twenty thousand of his followers: and with *Iaques Dartuell* the famous Fleming, who conducted threescore thousand men of those Prouinces: and with the Duke of Guelders, the Marquesse of Musse, the Earls of Iullers, Mouns, Sauiens, & of Henault, the Lord *Falquemont*, and many thousand Almaines: He strongly besieged the Ciry Tournay, which was with great resolution and valour manfully defended for the space of ten weekes, in all which time the French king appeared not for their defence. But (by the importunate mediation of the aforementioned *Jane de Valoys*, mother to the Queen of England, & to the Duchesse of Iullers, and to the then Earle

Earle of Henault, and sister to the French king) a Truce was concluded for one yeare : which was afterwards renewed for one yeare more. Thus was the siege broken vp : and euery one returned to his owne home.

Now whilst the king had thus employed himselfe in the Low-Countries : and in the Empire ; and in France. The Scots (disliking *Edward Baylyol* their king, because hee would not in any sort oppose himselfe against the king of England, who so highly had aduanced him ; and leauing to him onely the name, but no honour due to a king) rebelled against king *Edward* : And gained into their possessions almost all things whatsoeuer, which hee in his former Warres had wonne from them. But king *Edward*, scorning to bee checked by the lawlesse disobedience, and insolency of the Scots, leuied an Army of fixe thousand horsemen, and forty thousand on foote ; with which he marched into Scotland : And those Inhabitants (hauing intelligence of these vnresistable preparations ; and being apprehensieue of their owne weaknesse) craued, and obtained a Truce for foure Moneths, vpon condition to surrender to king *Edward*, whatsoeuer in his absence they had taken from him : And also to submit themselues, if within that time *David* their deposed king returned not out of France for their defence. But before the time of Truce was expired, *David* returned secretly : and being safely landed in Scotland, he raised an Army of more than threescore thousand men ; with which hee entred into Northumberland, spoyling, robbing, wasting, burning & killing (without compassion) in all places whereon hee set his foote, vntill hee came to New-Castle vpon Tyen ; which hee girded about with a strong siege. But in the depth of the night, two hundred resolute gallants issued forth ; And (vpon the suddaine) entred into the Earle of Murrays Tent : which they ransacked, slew many, and carried the said Earle away with them, to the great amazement and terrour of the Scottish Campe.

The day appearing, was their true informer of all things, which in the night had hapned. And *David* (purposing a bloudy reuenge for this dishonour done vnto him) caused the Castle to be continually assaulted. But the Scots were manfully repulsed by the defendants, whose vndaunted spirits had banished all feare : In so much that *David* (being vnwilling to spend there too much time in vaine) raised his siege, and marched to the City of Durham, which he tooke, ransacked, and burnt, and slew all the men, women and children, which did inhabite and were found there.

From thence the Scottish Army marched forth, and passed by the

A huge Army was dissolved vpon the motion of a woman.

The Scots renelt from their King, and from K. Edward.

The King leadeth a huge Army into Scotland

A Truce.

The Scots inuade England.

New-Castle is besieged.

A bold brado,

The siege is raised.

Durham taken & burnt.

*A valiant
exploit by Sir
William
Montague.*

the strong Castle of Rowsbrough: which then belonged to the Earle of Salisbury who was a prisoner in France. In this Castle was his faire and admirably beautifull Lady, & it was kept by Sir *William Montague* (his brother) who for his wisdom, and for his valour, was a most renowned Knight. When he had narrowly viewed the Scottis March, hee expected their vtmost fury in their returne; and therefore hee determined to giue him a present taste of his man-hood. So that he issued forth with forty Horsemen well appointed, and fell vpon their Rereward, and slew of them more than two hundred, and tooke from them one hundred and twentie horses, which were loaden with the richest of those booties, which they had taken at Durham: and safely returned, and carried them into the Castle.

*The Castle of
Rowsbrough is
besieged.*

David (disdaining thus to bee beaten by so small a number) forthwith retired, and with continuall assault so sharply oppressed the besieged for many dayes, that hee scarcely gaue them leisure to take breath. By meanes whereof they were almost tyred, and so worne out, that small hope of long resistance was left vnto them, except they were (in due time) rescued and relieued by the king. To giue his Highnesse intelligence whereof, it was resolved; That one of them (in the depth of the night) must giue a desperate aduventure through the Scottis Campe. This proiect seemed so full of imminent perill and danger, that euery one of the inferiors refused the attempt: So that the braue Knight himselfe (considering aduisedly in what case the Castle stood: and pitying the distressed estate of the comfortlesse Countesse his sister, who expected nothing but villainous abuse if it were yeilded) with a settled resolution vndertooke the iourney. And being gallantly mounted vpon a swift courser, he speedily posted through all the thousands of his enemies. And in the morning, hee informed *David* (by such passengers as hee did meete) that very quickly hee should heare newes of him againe.

*A braue at-
tempt, with
fortunate
successe.*

*The Castle is
brauelly as-
saulted and
defended.
The siege is
raised.*

The Scots (knowing that it was no time to linger; and yet being desirous to reuenge the great disgrace which their Army had receiued) againe, and againe furiously assaulted the Castle; and (in them) they performed many braue feates of Armes: which witnessed their eager longing to haue wonne it; but they were still repulsed, and beaten backe, with many incredible slaughters of their Souldiers; and were compelled to raise the siege, and with great speed to hasten into their owne Country.

*The King
comes too
late, for the
Scots are
gone.*

King *Edward* (the very day of their departure) had travelled a long and weary iourney, thinking to haue met them there. But he

he failed of his purpose, for which hee was much grieved. Yet by the mediation of diuers Honourable personages, a Truce was concluded on for a few Moneths: But to be enlarged for two yeares, if the French king (without whose leaue the Scots could make no Peace) would consent thereto.

The French king liked the motion well, and gaue freedom to the Earle of Salisbury: For whom the Earle of Morret was by king Edward set at liberty.

And though king Edward tooke but little pleasure in this Truce, yet he was the more easily drawne to consent thereto: because (at the same time) he had wars in France, Gascoyn, Poytiers, Paynron, Britaine and elsewhere. All which, daily consumed as much Treasure as he could get. The king (when hee perceiued that the Scots were gone from the Castle) disarmed himselfe, and (with ten, or twelue Lords and Knights) entred into the Castle, where the excellent beauty, and modest behauiour of the sweete Countesse of Salisbury so inflamed his heart, that by secret & amorous wooings he endeauoured to perswade her, to ease his passions with her loue. But the vertuous Lady (first with milde and kind intreaties, and afterwards with quicke and nipping reprehensions) strined to make the king to see his owne error. But such was his desire, and her denials were so peremptory and resolute, That discontentedly the king left her, cashiered his Army, and returned backe againe. And (hauing for many yeares together beene vexed, and toyled in sundry Warres) hee intended to recreate himselfe, his Lords, his Knights & chiefeft Martialists, with such pastimes and sportings, as men of Warre tooke greatest pleasure in. Wherefore hee proclaimed a solemne Feast to continue many dayes, and generally inuited thereunto, the valiant men of his owne, & of forraine Nations and Kingdomes; proposing the exercise of feates of Armes, at the appointed time. By meanes whereof, many Noblemen and such as were of best renowne for Chiuallrie, repaired into England from many Countries (excepting France) and were (with all magnificence, courtesie, and loue) receiued, and entertained by the king, and by all his Court. But in those heroicall sportings (by an euill and an vnfortunate accident) Sir John Lord Beaumont, a valiant Knight of this Realme: (who formerly had taken the last king, and Sir Hugh Spencer the younger in a fisher, before the Castle of Bristol) was slaine.

This Royall feast, and these warlike pastimes, being thus finished: a Parliament was assembled at Westminster, wherein the king created his eldest Sonne Edward Prince of Wales, & vnto him was giuen

A Truce.

The causes why the King consented to this Truce.

The King makes loue to the Countesse of Salisbury.

Shee cares not for it.

The King keeps a solemne Feast.

Strangers repaired into England.

Martiall sportings.

The Lord Beaumont slaine.

*ANNO 18.
A Parliament.
The Prince of Wales is Created.*

Commissioners for the
employment
of the Subsidy
money.

ANNO 19.

1344

The order of
the Garter
devised and
established.

An Army
sent into
Gascoyne.

Jaques Dar-
nell.

Malum con-
siliū con-
sultori pec-
simum.

given by a free and generall consent, foure fifteens by the Laity, and thre by the Clergy, but with this condition, that no part thereof should be converted vnto any other vse, than only to the furtherance of the warres of France. And certaine Lords and some others of principall note, were then selected, to whom the onely care and charge of that imployment should belong.

The next year following, king *Edward*, to increase vertue and valour, in his Nobles, to enlarge his Amity, and Friendship with the States and Princes of forraigne Countries, deuised and established a new order of knight-hood, confining the number of them to twenty and sixe, of which himselfe and his Successors were to be Presidents, and called them knights of the honourable Order of the Garter. The Rites and Ceremonies of which order, are euery year solemnized with Princely magnificence in the kings Castle at Windsor, to Gods glory, and the honour of all such as are dignified with that degree.

And thus king *Edward* hauing a while recreated himselfe, with such Princely delights as exercised his Martialists in feates of Armes, to the pleasure and good contentment of his people: Hee now beganne againe to thinke vpon his affaires with France, and to make his Forces better knowne to the Frenchmen, than formerly they had beene.

For which purpose, he leuied a faire Army; which by his Cousin the Earle of Darbie, was landed and directed in Gascoyne with such discretion, and with such valour, that hee not onely acquitted himselfe right nobly, by way of defence against *Philip* the French king, but daily won from him his Cities, Townes, Castles, and his Forts, and filled his hands so full, that whilest the said Earle remained there hee laboured in vaine to catch at any thing, which belonged to king *Edward*.

At the same time *Jaques Dartnell* (whom fortune from a low beginning had raised to the greatest command that euer any man before him had in Flanders, notwithstanding that *Lays* their Earle then personally did liue among them) secretly purposed to disheerite the said Earle, and to make Prince *Edward* of England the great Lord and Master of those Territories: And to effect what therein hee did intend, hee called a generall Councell of the Lords, and great men of those Territories, and appointed the place of their meeting to bee at Sluce; where hee also procured the presence of king *Edward*, and of the Prince his son.

To draw these States together, he proposed nothing publicly, but the necessity of a sound conference touching their proceedings

dings with the King of England against France. And within the Hauen there, the place of Councel was in king Edwards great ship; called the *Katharine*. But (v unexpectedly to the Flemish Lords) *Iaques Dartnell* discoursed boldly, and at large, of the great Honour, Prowess and Valour of king Edward; and of the young Prince his Sonne. And by many circumstances, and deuised arguments, hee endeauoured to extenuate the worth of their owne Earle, as being altogether vnfit, & vnable to be a Lord of so great a command: and in the conclusion of his speech, he strongly strived to perswade them all, to depose the Earle *Loy* and his posterity: and to adde an inuincible strength to their Estates, by electing, and chusing the Prince of England to be their Master, and great Lord.

The Nobles & the great men of Flanders (being now made ear-witnesses of *Iaques Dartnells* attempt: And inwardly detesting to leaue vnto a future age a memoriall of such treacherous infidelity and wrong) made answer, That albeit no people in the world, did, more than they, respect king Edward: Nor more affect the aduancement and the Honour of the Prince his Sonne: Yet this motion could not preuaile, except the Natiues and common people of those Countries (who had as large an interest as they, in the deposing of the said Earle, and in the disposing of his Lordship and command) would willingly assent thereto. And (though in their hearts they intended and meant nothing lesse) yet (to make faire weather for the present time) They told the king, that they liked the motion exceeding well: and that they would forthwith depart vnto the seuerall places of their habitations; and would informe the people of this proiect, and do their best endeauours to perswade, and to incourage them to consent thereunto. And (hauing promised the king, that at the end of one Moneth they would returne againe, with their full answer to the said motion: And hauing mutually performed all complements requisite for a kind farewell) they departed thence. But when this newes was diuulged, and when it was publicly knowne what *Iaques Dartnell* had proposed, both he and his practice were inwardly detested, and so hated, that he was not esteemed to bee a true borne Fleming, who had the least inclination, to giue any furtherance thereunto. Yet notwithstanding, such was the great confidence, which this great Commander reposed in the fauour of the common people: and such was the resolution of him (whose authority before that time was vnlimited, and whose prosperity was equall to the greatnesse of a potent king) that his presence would worke wonders; and change the minds of the common people; That to make

*Displeasing
Counsell.*

*No trusting
to the peoples
fancie.
Iaques Dar-
nell is hated
and murdered.*

make trial of his power in that behalfe, he came to Gaunt. But as he passed through the streetes, he might well perceine that his entertainment was nothing correspondent to his former wel-comes, and that the countenances of the Inhabitants bewrayed their inward contempt, and loathing, both of him and of his despised motion. And no sooner was hee entred into his house, but by many thousands of mutinous and armed Swaggerers, it was compassed round about: and then was hee rayled on with the foulest words, and reuiled with the most bitter termes, that either their hearts could deuise, or their tongues vter. So that hee perceined that it auailed him not to looke bigge, nor to presume (by his authority) to appease their rage. Wherefore (at a great window of the house) hee began mildely, and with humble termes to pleade in his owne excuse, and promised to giue them a full satisfaction, vpon what grounds, points, and reasons, he had vnadvisedly conceined that motion. But the sight of him (whom in former times they loued and honoured as an Angell) was now so lothsome and so vile, and his words were so vnpleasing to them, that with dirt and stones they beate him from the window, assaulted his house, brake it open, entred in, and slaughtered him with a thousand wounds: And thus dyed that great Commander of the Flemings, who (for his power and absolute authority among them) had neuer his equall in those Countries. And by these meanes, King Edward not onely lost a sound, and a potent friend; But euer after that time, the hearts of the Flemings more fauoured the French King, than they did him.

King Edward loseth many powerfull friends.

Sir John of Henalt, Lord Beaumont, revolteth to the French.

At the same time also, his noble and worthie friend and vnckle Sir John of Henalt, Lord Beaumont, revolted from him, and adhered to the French King, because King Edward (vpon some priuate vnkindnesse conceiued) did with-hold and keepe from him a Pension, which (for his faithfull and good seruice) hee had formerly giuen, and duely paid vnto him.

A valiant King.

And though King Edward did daily growe more strong in his hopes, to possesse himselfe of the Crowne of France: yet the losse of some great friends, being his associates in those Warres, made him indeede more weake; yet, those his misfortunes so little auailed to discourage him, that it increased his magnanimity and his resolutions, to maintaine those his Warres with the greater helpes of his owne strength.

ANNO 20.
Aguillon is besieged by 100000. men.

Now was the King informed, that John the eldest Sonne of the French King, had strongly besieged the Castle of Aguillon in Gascoyne, well-neete with an hundred thousand men (within which were

were the noble Earle of Pembroke, and the renowned Knight Sir Walter of Manny, and diuers others of especiall note and place. Whereupon king Edward leuied the number of foureteene thousand men; which he and the Prince his sonne, being accompanied with eight Earles, fiftene Barons, and a great number of braue Knights and gallant Gentlemen, by the aduice and counsaile of Sir Godfrey Lord Harboure, a French banished Noble man of great wisdom, and wonderfull valour in the Warre, carried into Normandie; and with them he besieged the rich & strong town of Harflew: but (because the English Armie seemed terrible in the sight of the Inhabitantes) it was not defended, but the King rooke it without blowes, and gave the spoyle thereof to his common Souldiers, so that he filled their Purles with Crownes, and thereby prepared them with the greater courage, and resolution for more dangerous attempts. So that within few dayes after, hee wonne, rifled, and spoiled the rich Townes of Cheirbrough, Mount-brough, and Quarentine, and the Castle there.

Then king Edward marched forth in great strength through that Country; being hedged in on the one side by his Marshall the Lord Blacourt, and five hundred chosen men of warre which hee commanded, and by his other Marshall on the other side with a like number. And with such feueritie ransacked, spoiled, burned and harrowed all places as he passed by; that euery common souldier was now a rich man, & the kings Army was encreased, & now consisted of nineteene thousand fighting men, with which he pitched before the citie of Cane, in which were the Earles of Tankerville and of Ewe: Besides the Earle of Guyens, who being high Constable of France, had gathered & brought into that place many braue & approued men at Armes, & made a flourishing shew, as if he meant to issue forth, and to giue battell to the King. But feare possessing his heart, he made but a faint resistance, and in short time and with little losse the Citie was taken, and ransacked by the English souldiers, who conueyed all their spoyles into England.

In the yeelding vp of the Citie, first, the three Earles submitted their fortunes to Sir Thomas Holland, a valiant English Knight, who had but one eye, of whom the king bought them for tenne thousand markes in Gold: and receiuing them as prisoners into his Armie, hee marched to the Towne of Loures, which hee quickly won, and then entred into the Province of Eureux; all which hee wasted, spoiled & burned, without pitie (the walled Townes, Cities, and Castles only excepted: with none of which hee medled, lest by them his strength should bee diminished before hee met

The King transported an Army into Normandy.

Harflew is taken.

Diuers towns and Castles are taken.

Normandy harrowed by K. Edward.

The English Army is rich. The English Army increases.

The City of Cane is taken. Sir Thomas Holland. Loures is taken. Why King Edward medled with no walled Townes, nor Castles in the Province of Eureux.

Many towns
won by the
English.

The French
King forsaketh the Pa-
risians.

Those of A-
myens are
slaine and
taken.

The English
Army is en-
vironed on
the suddaine.

Gobyn of
Grace.

King Ed-
ward passeth
through the
river of Somme
and slaughte-
reth the
French.

1345.

with the French king, who had solemnely sworne and protested that king *Edward* should not returne into England before a battaile fought between the m.

After this, king *Edward* in his march, wonne Gisors, Vernon, Saint Germans in Lay, Mountrell, St. Clowde, Rely, & the whole Country about Roan, Pont de Larch, Nants, Newlench, Robboya, Fountain, Poys, & Viney, in all which places he found but weake resistance. King *Philip* of France, hauing true intelligence, that king *Edward* with all his army was within two leagues of Paris, left that City, and went to St. Dennis where his army lay, perswading the Parisians that king *Edward* dared not to looke them in the face, but they beleueed him not, and feare made them greatly displeased with their king. Neere about the same time Sir *Godfrey* Lord *Harcourt* being one of king *Edward*'s Marshals, encountered with certaine Burgeses of Amyens, whom the French king had appointed to come vnto Paris for the better defence thereof, if need should so require: and though they defended themselves with much valour, yet at length twelue hundred of them were slaine, and the rest being taken prisoners, were brought vnto the king. The English Army so eagerly pursued the happinesse of their fortune, That they possessed the whole country through which they passed, yea euen to the gates of Aubenile, and of Saint Valary: yet were they vni-uares environed with the River of Some on the one side, and with the French kings Army (consisting of more than an hundred thousand men) on the other side. The place wherein he was, promised him no manner of advantage, if he should fight: but many inconueniences presented themselves vnto him: So that hee consulted with his Prisoners, if any of them could direct him to any Ford where he might transport his Army, among whom, one who was named *Gobyn* of *Grace*, directed him to a convenient passage. But when the king came thither, it was defended by twelue thousand of the French kings Army. Yet notwithstanding (when the Sea was ebbd) king *Edward*, with the Prince and the whole Army, did put themselves into the water, and so did the French men on the other side, so that they all encountered pell mell in the midst of the River, and fought with such desperate resolution on either part, that many a man was stricken downe, being slaine, or by that meane was drowned. But at length the Frenchmen being much wearied by the sword, fled, and the Englishmen slaughtered them in the Chafe a full league and more.

And now approached the time, in which this iourney made by king *Edward* and his son was to bee blessed with much honour, and

and happinesse, or to be vnfortunate, though hitherto it had proceeded well. For the French king (being resolved to be reuenged without pitie, and in regard that his Armie contayned in number more than fixe times as manie fighting men as king Edward had, and making no doubt but that a triumphant victory should preuent all future danger of Englands claime to the French Crowne) marched with all his strength, in good order of battell, against king Edward. Who (knowing that onely the sword was then to decide the controuersie, and to pronounce the iudgement) entred into a spacious field neere vnto Cressley, where hee did set his whole Armie in good order and diuided it into three battailes. All which he so imparked behinde with carriages and carts, that no man was easily able to interrupt or to endanger them in the Rereward. And when the battaile should begin, the first Companies were conducted by the young Prince, who was assisted by the Earls of Warwick, & of Camford, & by the Lords of Harcourt, Stafford, Manny, De Lavarre, Chandoy, Clifford, and Bourchier, Sir Reynald Cobham, Sir Thomas Holland, Sir Roger Newill, and many other Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of name. And in that battaile were eight hundred men at Armes, two thousand Archers, and one thousand other lustie and good Souldiers.

The second battell was directed by the Earles of Northampton, and of Arondel, who were accompanied with the Lords Rose, 1790, Willoughby, Bassett, Saint Arbin, Myleson, and De La Sell, and by manie other Lords, Knights and Gentlemen. And in this battaile there were eight hundred men at Armes, and twelue hundred Archers.

And the third and maine battaile (being placed betwixt the other two) was led by the King himselfe, who was assisted by many Earles, Lords, Knights, Esquires, and Gentlemen of the best ranke. And in that battaile there were seuen hundred men at Armes, two thousand Archers, and ten thousand other common souldiers, well approued and expert men of warre.

The English Armie hauing exercised themselves in prayer vnto God, & moderately refreshed themselves with some meat, & some drinke, laide themselves downe vpon the ground, thereby to comfort and to ease themselves before they fought. But the Frenchmen although they proudly bragged, and proffered many shewes, yet for that day they wanted courage to beginne the fight. But the next morning the French King commanded that fiftene thousand Genowayes, with their Crosbowes, should giue the first onset vpon the Prince his battaile. But eyther for want of skill, or else (in making

*The famous
and victori-
ous battaile
of Cressley.*

Great odds.

*The battaile
of the Blacke
Prince.*

*The second
battaile of
the English.*

*The Kings
battaile.*

*Fiftene thou-
sand Geno-
wayes over-
throwne.*

*The maine
bataille of
the French
Army is dis-
ordered.*

*The Prince
his Bataille
recometh the
Frenchmen
to their pain.*

*The benefit of
good order.*

*The King
would not
reliue the
Prince his
sonne.*

*The French
Army is o-
uerthrowne.*

king more hast than good speed) their disorder was so foule, and so grosse, That by the English Archers the greater part of them were slaine, and the rest were soone defeated, and compelled to retire. In which (so violent was their hast and posting) that in rude heapes they rushed into the French Kings main bataille, and disordered it, but were by their owne friends without mercie put vnto the sword.

And though the French Armie (by reason of their disorder not to be repaired) had little warrant for good successe: yet being emboldened by reason of their multitudes, & being sharp set vpon reuenge, aduanced themselves, and charged gallantly vpon the English Armie, but bent their chiefest strength against the Prince his battell, who receiued them with such furie and hardy blowes, that thousands of them (almost in a moment) were made Bond-slaves vnto death.

For still the Prince his bataille remained entire and vnbroken. By meanes whereof, hee made prodigall expence and hauck of the Frenchmen, who being first broken, could not obserue any order at all, nor helpe themselves by anie ingenious policie of Warre.

And though they fell in great numbers before the Prince his bataille, yet their new and copious supplies, which alwayes succeeded those who were slaine, gaue no leifure nor respite at all to the Prince, nor to his assistants, to take any breathing; much lesse to refresh themselves. So that the braue Prince, though hee were full of incomparable valour, and resolution, yet (being distressed for want of breath, and of some reliefe) hee sent to haue some helpe and succour from the king: who inquired of the messenger if he were aliue: who answered that he was. Then (quoth the king) report to him from me, that he expect no ayde: for this shall be the day in which he shall winne his spurres, or else shall lose his life. For in life or in death hee shall ingrosse to himselfe the whole honour and glorie of this day. When Prince Edward was informed what the king had said (being vrged by sharpe necessitie, and animated with fresh hopes of a famous victorie) Hee, with his companions in armes, renewed their strength, and redoubled their manlike courage: and (wholly reposing their trust and confidence in Gods goodnesse, and in the edges of their hungry swords) they fought with such vndaunted spirits, that the Frenchmen began to flye; and were so eagerly pursued, That the greater part of their whole armie lay breathlesse vpon the ground. And, in the Chase, the two Marshals of England en-

coun-

countred with a multitude of the inhabitants of Beuoy, Reignyer, Aubeuille, and of Roan, of whom seven thousand were slaine, and the rest by flight had much adoe in saving of themselves. And the next day the said Marshalls were recharged by the Archbishoppe of Roan, and by the Grand-Pryor of France, who conducted a strong Armie to ayde their King: They not knowing that the Battaile was already fought, and the field lost by their friends.

With these new forces the English men encountred and contended so proudly, that quickly they began to flye, and were almost all wasted by the sword. So that within the compasse of those two dayes, there were slaine on the French part eleven Princes, fourescore Barons, twelue hundred Knights, and more than thirty thousand Souldiers of the common sort: And the French king himselfe by speedie flight, verie hardly escaped with his life. The whole bootie of this field, the king frankly bestowed vpon his Nobles, Gentry, and on his whole armie: and caused the dead bodies of all such as were honourable and of note, to be taken vp, and carried them with him vnto Mountrell; where they were buried with much solemnitie and great honour.

Now (when king Edward perceiued, that the French king made no preparation at all for a new supply to encounter him) hee marched towards Callice, burning, spoyling, and rissing all places, as he passed by. The Towne and Castle hee intended not to assault: for as it would haue bene full of danger, so hee knew the strength thereof to be such, that in assaulting it hee should both lose his labour and his men. It therefore gaue him good content, to gird and to compasse it round about with a strong siege: Which (when he had continued a full whole yeare) the French king, with a huge armie of two hundred thousand men, marched towards Callice.

But finding euerie passage and way, in such warlike sort to bee guarded & defended, that he could not approach vnto the English armie; Hee challenged king Edward to maintaine his honour, by fighting with him a battaile in the field. But king Edward (by reason of his long siege having spent much Treasure; and the Towne and Castle of Callice wanting many things, needfull and necessarie for their reliefe) made this answer: That his manie and great Victories in France, and elsewhere, sufficiently cleared him from the suspicion of cowardize: and that (seeing hee had travelled, and spent so much time and money for the winning of Callice) the French king should open all passages by force, and then make

Another French Company is slaine.

No misfortune goeth alone.

The number of prisoners, and of such as were slaine.

The King gives away all the spoiles.

The Kings chariote.

K. Edward besiegeth Callice.

Two hundred thousand men in the French Kings Army.

The French Kings Challenge.

K. Edwards answer.

*The French
Army esbi-
red.*

*The Scots in-
made Eng-
land in the
Kings ab-
sence.*

*The Queen
fights with
them.*

*John Copland
takes the
King of Scots.*

*The Scots are
overthrown.*

*John Copland
would not de-
liver his Pri-
soner to the
Queene.*

*John Copland
is thanked,
& rewarded.*

*King David
and others
are commit-
ted to the
Tower.*

*The Queen
passeth over
to Callice.*

*The Callici-
ans CTANS
murder.*

triall of his Strength before that Towne, or (otherwise) might re-
turne. Whereupon the French King (not finding any meanes how
he might releue Callice) cashired his Armie, and retired: leauing
poore distressed Callice to the mercy of king Edward, who daily
expected when it would be yeilded into his hands.

Now whilst the king thus lay before Callice, David of Scotland,
with an Armie of fifty thousand men (by the procurement, and
furtherance of the French king) entred into England, and did much
harme. But the Queene (with her Armie, consisting onely of
twelue thousand valiant men) confronted him in the field, where
was fought a long and a sharpe battaile; vntill king David (by an
Esquire named John Copland) was taken prisoner, and secretly con-
veyed out of the Armie. There were also (at that time) slaine of
the Scots, diuers Earles, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, besides
more than fiftene thousand souldiers of the common ranke. And
the residue of them beeing defeated, returned by continuall flight
into Scotland.

The Queene much importuned John Copland for the deliuerie
of his Prisoner king David. But he (making challenge vnto him, as
to his onely behoofe, by the Lawes of Armes) made answer, that
he would not deliuer him vnto any but to the king himselfe. So
that the Queene (being highly displeased with him) certified the
king both of her victorie, and also in what sort John Copland had
answered her, touching the deliuerie of the Scottish king. Where-
upon, John Copland (being sent for) went vnto Callice, where hee
was graciously and louingly wel-comed by the king, who thanked
him heartily for his great seruice; and made him an Esquire of his
owne bodie; and recompenced his traualles, and his good fortune,
with the gift in Fee simple of five hundred pounds by the yeare in
good Land; and commanded him to deliuer his Prisoner to the
Queene at his returne: which he performed accordingly. And then
the Queene committed the said king and the Earle of Morret, and
many others, Prisoners to the Tower of London: where they re-
mained long after.

And then the Queene (beeing accompanied with a great troupe
of faire Ladies, and beautifull Gentlewomen (whose husbands, fa-
thers, brothers, and kinsfolkes, had for a long time been employed
in the French warres) came vnto the king, as he lay before Callice;
and were by the king, and his whole armie receiued, and entertai-
ned with much ioy.

And now the distressed, and the besieged Towne of Callice (tra-
uelling with many wants, and being destitute of all hope so be re-
lieued,

lieued, because the French king not long before had cashiered and dismissed his whole Armie) craued pardon, and mercie of King Edward: Who (in regard of their peruerse and long continued obstinacie, and for that they had spoyled and robbed many of his English Merchants vpon the Sea, before they were besieged) would in no sort hearken to their request and submission; except fixe of their worthiest inhabitants did come vnto him, Bare-legged, Bare-headed, in their Shirts, and with Halters about their neckes, to bee corrected and disposed of as the king should please. And though this condition was full of terrour and of bitterness, yet necessity compelled them to accomplish the kings demand. So that they sent him the keyes both of the Towne, and Castle, by those fixe, who presented them to the King. The keyes he receiued, but forthwith commanded that the said Townesmen should bee hanged. Whereupon, all such in the kings Armie, as were either Honourable by birth, or had for their seruice deserued well, or were graced by the kings especiall loue and fauour; became earnest petitioners to the king for the Pardon of those distressed men. But such was the kings resolution, and full determination, to make them examples to the rest, for the iniuries, and for the wrongs which formerly they had done the English Nation, that all their meanes was insufficient, and vnable to deliuer them from death. Which when the Queene perceiued (on bended knees, with Prayers, and with Teares, and with importunate request) she neuer ceased to yrge the king, vntill shee had procured their Pardon, and their enlargement from that danger.

The chiefe Captaine named Sir Guy of Vyen, and such Knights and Gentlemen as were in the Towne, and in the Castle, were sent Prisoners into England; where they remained about six moneths, and were then ransomed by the French king.

Thus when the king was quietly and fully possessed of Callice (the key to France) and had (without sparing of any cost) in wonderfull sort strengthened, and fortified it. He left none to remaine there, but Englishmen; the Captaine only excepted: Who being a Lombard by birth, was named Sir Andrew de Pave, an especiall fauourite of the kings, whom the king (vpon the vndoubted trust, and confidence which he reposed in him) placed chiefe Captaine, and Commander there.

These things being thus settled in good order; the king with the Queene and all his troupes, returned into England; and were receiued into London with extraordinarie Triumph, and great ioy. And from thence hee sent fixe and thirtie rich, wise, and graue Citizens,

A hard condition.

Ingens re-lum accessitas.

A beavis sentence.

Intercession for the times of the Callicians.

The Queene only procured their Pardon.

Callice is yeelded to King Edward, in An. Dom. 1347. and in the 22 years of King Edwards raigne.

A stranger made Captaine of Callice.

The King returneth into England. Londoners are sent to dwell in Callice.

Great priu-
ledges gran-
ted to the
Callicians.

The Pope
mediates a
truce.

Callice
should haue
been betrayed.

The King
passeth se-
cretly into
Callice.

The money is
received.

K. Edwards
valour and
courage.

Sir Eustace
Lord Ryba-
mount.

A noble
King.

rizens, with their wiues and families to Callice, to inhabite and to trade and traffique there: and gaue to the said Towne and Castle such profitable and large immunities, priuiledges, liberties & fran- chises, that they thought themselves to be very happy, whom the king would licence to dwell there.

Pope Clement the Sixt (having many years laughed in his sleeue to see these two potent and mightie kings, so busily to employ themselves each against other in those bloudie warres) at length mediated a Truce betwixt them; which (on his motion) was con- cluded for two yeares.

And in the meane time, king Edward was informed that Sir An- drew de Panie his chiefe Captaine of Callice, (for twenty thousand Crownes to him promised by the Lord Charney Captaine of Ar- ras) had conspired to betray the towne and castle into his hands. Whereupon king Edward (to make a tryall of this newes, and to surpriſe the said Lord, and all his companie, if hee might, when hee should come to take the possession of Callice) departed secretly out of England with three hundred selected men at armes, and in the depth of the night landed at Callice, and was quickly recei- ued in; where hee sharply reprehended the Lombard, who, vnder the pretext of honest dealing for the king, excused himselfe of any treacherous intent. But within a night or two after, the Lord Charney (at the appointed time) repaired thither with twelue hun- dred armed men, to surpriſe both the castle and the towne. The money (in good gold) was by the Captaine receiued at a po- sterne gate of the castle, and one hundred only of that Company were suffered to enter in. But they (finding quickly that they were beguiled and betrayed) without noyse, or resistance, yielded them- selves, and were closed vp in a strong Dungeon. And then the king himselfe, with three hundred men at Armes; (vnder the Banner of Sir Walter of Manny) brake forth out of the Castle, and furiously rushed vpon the Frenchmen, who attended for better newes. But when they did perceiue that they were deceiued, they resolved to acquit themselves like men; and, for an houre and more, so they did. But when manie of them were slaine, the rest fled; and were thus deprivied, both of their money and of their hope. In this conflikt the King himselfe encountred hand to hand with the Lord Eustace of Rybamount, a right hardie and valiant Knight; and was by him twice stooped on his knees: but scorning to yeeld to anie base conceit, or froward fortune, hee aduanced himselfe so no- bly, and in such fort redoubled his courage and his strength, that in the end he took the said Sir Eustace prisoner with his own hand:

the

the said Lord not knowing with whom he had so sharply contended. But the king making him to know all, released him without ranfome, promised him future fauours, and dismissed him with a Princely reward.

About the same time the French king *Philip* of Valoys died: and his sonne was crowned king.

In the beginning of his reigne hee created Sir *Charles* a Noble man of Spaine, Earle of Angouleme, because hee entred into the narrow Seas on the French behalfe with a powerful Fleet, and miserably spoiled, robbed and rifled the English Merchants, and exposed them to much crueltie. With him king *Edward* fought, and compelled him to flye, hauing lost many of his chiefeft men, and two and twentie of his best ships.

And about the same time, the Castle of Guyens was yeelded to the kings people of Calice; and in the seuen and twentieth yeare of his reigne, hee created his cousin *Henry* of Bullinbrooke (who was Earle of Darby) Duke of Lancaster; with whose daughter and heire, the kings sonne *John* of Gaunt afterwards married, and was Duke of Lancaster in her right. He also created Sir *Roger Stafford*, Earle of Stafford. The said Duke (vpon some mis-information that he should publish some disgracetull words of the Duke of Brunswicke) was by him challenged to a single combate before king *John* of France; whereof hee gladly accepted: and at the appointed time, they both being thoroughly fitted for that purpose, entred with haughtie courage into the Lists, for the tryall of their cause. But they both of them were reconciled by the French king, to the great contentment and honour of the Duke of Lancaster, notwithstanding that hee was an Englishman and a subiect to his enemy.

King *Edward* (during the time of the aforesaid Truce) had vsed all friendly means to reconcile the Flemings, and draw them from the French to his owne part: but finding that all his endeouours proued vaine, and that no courtesie could win them, hee withdrew from them all his Marts for Merchandizing, which *Iaques Daryuelt* had procured for them. Which thing (in a short time) became exceeding hurtfull and preiudiciall to the Flemings.

And now (the time of the former Truce with France being long since ended) king *Edward* leuied a puissant Armie of his most expert and approued men of warre, which hee committed to the charge and gouernement of his sonne, the noble and valorous Prince of Wales, surnamed the *Blacke Prince*: who being accompanied with manie Earles, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of

The French King dyeth.

ANNO 24.
John is crowned King of France.

The Kings victorie at Sea.

Guyens is yeelded to the Callicians.

ANNO 25.

ANNO, 27.

A Duke of Lancaster created.

How John of Gaunt became Duke of Lancaster.

A combate appointed betwene the Duke of Lancaster and

the Duke of Brunswicke.

A reconciliation.

The Marts for England remoued from the Flemings.

The Blacke Prince lan- deth in Gas- coyne with an Army.

*He prevaileth.
The French
King leuyeth
a huge army.*

*Ten thousand men on-
ly in the En-
glish Army.*

ANNO 30.
1355.
*The battaile
of Poytiers.*

*The French
men are dis-
ordered.*

*King John is
a most val-
ant Prince.*

*The brave
valour and
resolution of
the English.*

*The Blacke
Prince his
vow.*

name, departed out of England, and landed in Gascoyne; where he ranfacked, spoyled, burnt, and consumed Villages, Townes, Cities, Forts, and Castles, in all places as he passed by, without any resistance or defence. But king *John* of France, intending to stop this Torrent: and making no doubt but that the multitude of his souldiers should giue him an easie Victorie over so small a Companie as the Prince conducted, which exceeded not ten thousand men, Leuied a huge Armie, which he assembled from all places subiect to his Dominion. And being accompanied with *Philip* his yonger sonne, & with the Flower of all the Chivalrie of France, He marched with great strength, against the Black Prince, whom he found neere vnto Poytiers, readily prepared in the field to receiue him. The French armie was diuided into foure Battailes: who (as their turnes, or lots came) fought with much valour, but with little vse of their great skill. For the thicke shot of the English Archers, (galling vnmeasurably their great Horses) was the cause that quickly they brake their order and their array: which suddenly bred such a totall disturbance in the whole armie, that themselves (as waues of water doe in a turbulent, and in a tempestuous Sea) overwhelmed each other; so that such as were downe, were troden to death by their owne friends who could not auoide them; such as would presse forward to make good prooffe of their valour, were repressed by such as did retyre; And such as did recoyle, were stopped and hindred of their purpose, by those who could not choose but resist their comming backe. Notwithstanding, the French Kings owne Battaile (which was better ordered than all the rest) encountring with that Battaile of the English Armie, in which the Prince of Wales was; performed most rare and wonderfull feats of Chivalrie, which (to the utmost of their powers) they encreased; being extraordinarily animated thereunto by the matchlesse valour and fortitude of their king: who (like a worthy Knight for his surpassing valour and courage) exceeded all his Nobles for performance of that day.

But the Blacke Prince, and his Battaile (whom no disorder troubled) struiuing almost beyond the abilities of men to winne honour, and to saue themselves, retained vndaunted spirits. And as dangers pressed forth; so did they (with incomparable manhood) driue them back againe, making the Frenchmen know by their miserable experience, that they could not so much as dreame of any flight, nor of yeelding, but were so greedy of the best honour, that nothing but Death, or Victorie, could content them. The Prince himselfe vowed, that through the helpe of Almighty God he

he would that day performe the part of a good knight. And, to say the truth, such were his vnmarchable deedes of armes, so haughty was his spirit, so pleasing was his example, and so cheerefull were his encouragements to his whole Armie; that euery one among them (striving to imitate his valour, and to winne his fauour) redoubled his strength, and with such resolution fell vpon the Frenchmen, that they were compelled to giue backe, and were so violently pursued, that the battaile (in which their King fought) was now opened, and in such sort disordered, that the Englishmen entred into the midst of them, wounding and killing on euery side with little or no losse, or danger to themselves. And at length King *Iohn* (scorning to leaue the field) yeelded himselfe & his sonne *Philip*, prisoners vnto Sir *Dennis Morbeck*, a knight of Saint Omers; who for a murder forsook his countrey, and serued for wages with the Blacke Prince. In this battaile there were slaine verie manie great men of the Nobilitie and Gentry of France, and aboue ten thousand others.

Too much desire of Honour, and too much couetousnesse, were the causes, that the French King (being thus taken) was ill vfed: for (by reason that more than ten Gentlemen layed seuerall claimes vnto him, as to their prisoner) hee was vnciuilly drawne from one to another, not without some perill to his life: but telling them, that hee was so great a Lord, that hee could make them all rich, they were better pleased, and brought him to the Prince: Who with great reuerence bowed himselfe before the King; reuiued his heauie spirits with cheerefull and with comfortable words: feasted him and *Philip* his younger sonne: attended dutifully at his Table, lodged him in his owne bed, prouided for him most honourable attendance; supplied all things about him which were wanting, and brought them both from thence vnto Burdeaux, and from thence into England; where he was ioyfully and royally received, and welcommed by the King and Queene, and by the Nobilitie of this kingdome, and was entertained with as great magnificence and courtesie, as hee could expect, or wish for. And vpon King *Iohn*'s owne confession, the honour of his taking was by King *Edward* adludged to Sir *Dennis Morbeck*: who for his great and good service was much thanked, and bountifully rewarded by the king.

In this battaile (besides such as were slaine) there were taken prisoners seuentene Barres, thirte as manie Barons, and as great a number of knights and Gentlemen of name and of note: thare- vnto English common souldier (who had fewest prisoners) had two:

*The French Army is o-
uerthrowne.*

*King Iohn &
his younger
sonne are ta-
ken prisoners
by Sir Dennis
Morbeck.*

*The French
King is ill v-
fed.*

*How the
Black Prince
received and
entertained
the French
King and his
sonne.*

*The Blacke
Prince bring-
eth the
French King
and his sonne
prisoners into
England.
Sir Dennis
Morbeck.*

Prisoners.

all

*A bountifull
Prince.*

*The English
Army are
made rich.*

*How the
French King
was disposed
of.*

*The honour-
able propo-
sity of K. Ed-
ward, and of
the Blacke
Prince.*

*King David
of Scotland is
released.*

ANNO 32.

ANNO 33.
*The Dolphin
allows not
his Fathers
conclusions.
K. Iohn of
France com-
mitted to the
Tower.*

all which, together with the whole spoyle of the field, the Prince frankly and freely gave to his Companies, who valiantly had wonne them by their swords. So that there was not a poore man in the English Armie, but euerie one of them had as much Gold, and as much Silver, Plate, and Jewels, as gaue him good contentment for his paines. And such was their store, and such was their plentie of those things, that rich and costly Armour, and such like warlike prouisions, were not taken vp, nor cared for at all.

The French king (for a while) liued at the Sauoy, which by king Edward was sumptuously furnished, and beautified with all things necessarie for so great a guest. And from thence he was removed to the Castle of Windsor, where he feasted, hunted, hawked, and did all things according to his owne pleasure and will, for the space of two yeares; the king and the Black Prince as often as anie leisure gaue them leaue repairing thither, and gladding him with their cheerefull and most friendly companie, and with the varietie of manie pleasing sports. By meanes whereof, true and hearty loue and affection did knit them fast together, so that they concluded a friendly Truce, to continue for the space of two yeares. And thus were king Edward, and the Noble Prince his sonne, honoured and blessed by Almighty God, with such triumphant successe in their warres, both in Scotland and in France (they then possessing for their prisoners at one time, the kings of those two kingdomes, and Philip the French kings younger sonne, and many Dukes, Earles and Barons) as none other Princes in Christendome then were.

And David the king of Scots, after ten yeares of imprisonment in England, was enlarged for a ranfome of one hundred thousand pounds, to be payed in five yeares: and (vpon his oath neuer again to beare Armes against England; and vpon his homage and fealty done for that kingdome; and vpon his faithfull promise to do his best to procure the Nobilitie of Scotland to doe the like) hee was enlarged and set free.

Not long after, king Edward and the king of France, entered in to a pallee for a longer time of Truce. But their conclusions and agreements were vterly disliked by his eldest sonne Charles, then Regent of France, and Duke of Normandie; and by the whole Baronic of that Countie. Whereupon King Edward, with all expedition and conuenient speed, made greater preparation to make Warre there, than hee had done at any time before. And (hauing committed the French king, & his sonne Philip with honorable at-
ten-

tendance, close prisoners to the Tower of London) himselfe, with the Black Prince his sonne, transported thither a puissant Armie, and landed at the Towne of Callice, and from thence he marched strongly into Rhemes, where he besieged the Castle seven weeks, but did not winne it in the end. From thence he marched towards Paris, and Chartres, wasting, burning, and killing in all places as he passed: so that hee compelled the Regent, and the Nobilitie of France, to become earnest Petitioners unto him for peace: which they obtained, upon these Articles ensuing.

1. That King EDWARD should pay for his ransom, five hundred thousand Pounds of sterling money.

2. Secondly, That from thenceforth, No King of France should aide, or assist, any King of Scotland in any War or Rebellion against England: And that no King of England should from thenceforth take part with the Flemings in any expedition, or War against France.

3. Thirdly, That the Kings of England should haue, and for ever enjoy freely, without homage, and in their owne right, their Territories in Gascoyne, and in Guyen, with the Precincts, Castles, Bories, Townes and Cities of Poytiers, and Perigord. The Barlondome of Bugeon, Poitou, and Guyen, the Citie of Lymoges, Tharbes, Guaire, Agen, Angoleme, Agenors, Rauerne, and Caours. The Lordship of Montreuil, Calice, Marguise, Sandgate, and Coloyne.

4. And lastly, That (in regard thereof) King EDWARD, as well in the behalfe of himselfe, as of his Successours Kings of England, should utterly renounce and leave both the name and title to the Kingdome of France.

And for the performance of these Articles, Charles the Regent of France, & the Prince of Wales, in the presence of six Knights of each Nation, receined the holy Sacrament at the high Altar, and then King Edward and his sonne returned into England, and were (with all complements of due and kindness) entertained, and fastned in the Tower of London by the French king, who was con-

R

ueyed

ANNO 34.
King Edward and the Black Prince do land a puissant Army at Callice. The Regent Dolphin sends for Peace. The Arrivall of the Prince.

The ransom.

The title to the Crown of France is renounced.

ANNO 34.
How the confirmation of this peace was manifested. The King and Prince returning into England.

The French
King feasted
them.
The two prin-
ces swore.
Hostages.

King John
was a priso-
ner some
yeares.

ANNO 37.
Three Kings
doe visit
K. Edward.
King John
dieth in Eng-
land.

The Blacke
Prince launth
in Burdeaux.

ANNO 40.
The causes of
K. Edwards
future losses
in those
Countries.

Peter King
of Castile is
deposed by
Henry the
Bastard.

King Charles
the fifth tak-
eth part
with Henry
the Bastard.

The Blacke
Prince being
victorious, re-
settled Peter
in his King-
dome.

ueyed from thence to Callis, where (according to agreement) he re-
mained foure moneths, and then king Edward repaired to him, and
both of them (at a high Masse) solemnly swore to obserue, per-
forme, and keepe the said Articles and the peace. And King John
(for the hostages of his Ransome) deliuered to King Edward foure
Dukes, seven Earles, ten Barons, many Knights, and two of the
worthiest Burgeses of every great Citie in France, and took a most
friendly leaue of the King, and of the Prince of Wales, & departed
towards Bolcine: he hauing remained a prisoner more than foure
yeares. And King Edward with his sonne returned into England,
bringing with them their honorable hostages, who were (with all
humanitie and kindnesse) feasted and entertained by the king and
by his Nobilitie, and were permitted freely to vse all sports, pa-
stimes, and exercises for pleasure and contentation, as they pleased.

About two yeares after king Edward was at one time visited
(for loue and kindnesse onely, and for no businesse at all) by three
kings, that is to say, by king John of France, David the king of Scots,
and by the king of Cyprus, and were with all munificent bountie
and liberalitie feasted, and honoured by the king, but king John fel
sicke, and dyed in the Sauoy, and his body was conuayed vnto S.
Dennis in France, where (with great pomp, and princely ceremo-
nies) it was buried.

The next yeare following, the noble prince of Wales and his
wife (being very gallantly attended and provided) went vnto Bur-
deaux, where hee liued, and gouerned the kings Prouinces there-
about, and elsewhere in France, to the great contentment and good
liking of the Nobles and commons of those Countries.

In the fortieth yeare of king Edwards reigne an unfortunate busi-
nesse was taken in hand by the valiant Prince of Wales, which al-
beit it were performed with great resolution, & was rewarded with
deferred honor, yet within few yeares, by reason of a future acci-
dent, it was the occasion that king Edward lost a great part of his
territories in France, and it was thus. Peter the true & lawful king of
Castile was in the field overthrowne, put to flight, and dispossessed
of his Crowne by Henry his bastard brother, who was assisted by
Charles the fifth, the sonne of John the deceased King of France.
This poore distressed king (in his wanes and miserie) repaired to
the Prince of Wales for aid, who for his restoring, and vpon large
and faithfull promises of liberal pay and great rewards, conducted
an army into Castile. And albeit that the Spanish & the French for-
ces were in number four times more than the Princes were, yet in a
bloudie battail, the most of them were slaine, and the rest were pur-
sued

by you

II

to

to flight. And king *Peter* was againe restored to his Crowne, and settled in his kingdome by the Prince, who returned againe to Burdeaux with great honor.

But (not long after) *Henrie* the Bastard, (being newly supplied with fresh forces) warred with such great furie and violence vpon king *Peter*, that he subdued him: and (to prevent all future claimies and troubles which hee might make) hee caused him to bee put to death. But his two daughters and heires were after married vnto *John* of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, and to *Thomas* of Woodstocke, two of King *Edward*'s sonnes.

By reason of King *Peter*'s death, the Prince his souldiers (being hopelesse to receiue their promised pay, and large rewards) and being oppressed with many wants, daily petitioned the Prince to supply their need. But he (finding none other meanes to support their necessities, nor being stored with money to relieue their pouertie) imposed (contrary to the customs of those Countries) diuers Taxes vpon the Inhabitants of Aquitaine: which so highly did displease them, that the Lords thereof complained of this sharp noueltie to the French king, who (flatly contrary to the Articles not long before concluded on for peace betwixt England and France) arrogated to himselfe the Soueraignty over the Prince, and his dominions in France; and summoned him to appeare before him at Paris. So that the peace, and those agreed Articles were broken by the French King, and warres were againe proclaimed betwene England and France. But before the Prince of Wales could enable his forces for a strong defence: the inhabitants of those Countries for the most part revolted from him, & daily yeelded their Towns, Cities, Forts, and Castles, into the hands of the French king. So that king *Edward* (who for the space of fortie yeares together was most honourable, & more fortunate than any other Christian Prince, by gaining of incredible victories vpon the Scots, and French Nation) within the compasse of one yeare, & without blowes, lost almost all his Command in those Prouinces, which by the said agreement, and Articles of peace, were allotted, and by solemn oath assured vnto him.

King *Charles* of France (forgetting what hee had sworne, and pleasing himselfe thus quietly to bee made the Lord of all those Countries which were assigned to king *Edward*) conceiued strong hope, not only to defeat him vtterly of all these Countries, but also to vex him at home in his own kingdome. And for that purpose he furnished a strong Nauie, with which he kept the Narrow Seas. But king *Edward* (to drine those forces backe againe) sent his sonne

Henrie the Bastard taketh, and slaieth *Peter*. *Peter*'s two daughters married to *John* of Gaunt and *Thomas* of Woodstocke. The want of pay was the Princes his chertie row. This Taxe mard all.

The French King breaks the League.

The Prince summoned to appeare at Paris.

Warres proclaimed. Almost all do revolt from the Prince. The mutableness of fortune. An unfortunate yeare.

ANNO 43. The French Nauie.

John of Gaunt with an Army landeth at Callice, and marcheth to Burdeaux. He beates the French King.

ANNO 44.
Another Armie sent into France. The English doe promaile.

Dissention caused the Englishmen to overthrow.

ANNO 45.

ANNO 46.
A Parliament. A Subsidie granted.

The Clergie will grant none.

The Clergie disgraced.

ANNO 46.
The Earle of Pembroke defeated, and taken at Sea.

John of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, with an Armie into Callice, who (to the terror and spoyle of the Frenchmen) marched from thence, vntill he came to Burdeaux to the Prince his Brother, without opposition, or resistance; wasting, and hauocking in all places as he passed by, saying that he was once met with, & encountred by king Charles; who (being soundly beaten) was enforced to retire, and to giue free passage to the Duke.

King Edward (as much as in him lay) though hee began to grow old, yet he was very carefull of those affaires. For as soone as his sonne *John of Gaunt* was gone out of England: hee sent another Armie vnto Saint Omers, which was conducted by Sir Robert Knoules, who (marching through those adiacent Countries) with fire and sword depopulated it, yea almost vntill he came to the Citie of Paris. And then he marched into the Earldome of Angeou, where he wonne the strong Townes of Vaas and Ruilly, and sundry others thereabout. But the French king being informed, that there was great dissention in the English Armie, betwixt Sir Robert Knoules and the Lords Piz-walter, and of *Grauntson*; rushed vpon them sodainely with an Armie: and finding their mindes diuided, and their forces by great disorder broken, preuailed against them, and slew about one thousand Englishmen. Whereupon the said Towns, which they had taken, were againe yeilded into the French kings hands. He also (following the good hap of his fawning Fortune) sent another armie into the Prouince of Guyan: where the Prince was weakely assisted, and his Townes, and Castles daily reuolted from him.

King Edward (being much perplexed with the common reports of his declining Fortune; and being resolved to do his best to preuent the worst) assembled his high Court of Parliament at Westminster: wherein (to supply his wants, and to giue better strength and furtherance to his French Wars) the Temporaltie with much cheerefulnesse granted him a Subsidie of fifteen thousand pounds: and the like summe hee requested of the Clergie; who were contented to giue him faire words, but no money. Whereat he was so much displeased, that whereas (at that time) the Bishops and the Clergie men, were chiefly honoured with all Places and Offices of Honour, and of Profit; and of Command; disgracefully hee deprined them, and dismissed them all, and placed more thankefull Subiects of the Laitie in their roomes.

King Charles had now besieged the Town of Rochell almost one whole yeare: for whose reliefe, and to remoue the siege, king Edward sent the Earle of Pembroke with an army to the Sea; but he

was

was encountred, fought with, and put vnto the worst, by *Henry* the vsurper of Castile, who in fauour of the French king, and thankfully to require his former loue, when he assisted him against king *Peter*, kept the narrow Seas with a strong Fleet. In this fight, the Earle himselte, and one hundred and threescore others, were taken Prisoners; many men were slaine, and the rest who escaped returned altogether discomforted into England. And vpon the certaine report of this disaster, the Towne of Rochell, Angoulesme, Xants, and Saint Iohns of Angley, and diuers other Prouinces, were giuen vp vnto the French King.

Sir *John de Monmouth* Duke of Brittain (perceiuing that good successe accompanied the French king in all his actions) began to feare, lest (in the height of his prosperitie) he would attempt some quarrell against him. Wherefore he fortified his Countreies, and then came into England, & offered his assistance to K. *Edward*: who forthwith leuied a strong armie, and committed it to the gouernment of his sonne the Duke of Lancaster. Who (being accompanied with the Duke of Brittain) landed at Callice, and with sword and fire wasted the whole Countrey, vntill he came to Burdeaux: where the Duke of Lancaster found his brother the prince of Wales exceeding sicke; who made him Gouvernour of all king *Edwards* Prouinces. And hauing seene all such Noblemen, as he could command, to take their solemn oathes for the performance of their duties, and obedience to his brother the Duke; he sailed into England. After whose arriual, three parles for peace betwixt England and France were entertained, vpon the motion, and by the mediation of Pope *Gregorie* the eleuenth. But not one of them was made fruitfull with any fortunate successe.

In the last yeare of King *Edwards* reigne, in a Parliament holden at Westminster, the king required a Subsidie from the Clergie and from the Temporaltie of his kingdome, towards the supporting of his warres. But the Lower house of that assembly complained grieuously against the Lord *Latimer*, chiefe Chamberlaine to the king, and of many other of his Officers; for that they not onely mislead the king in his old age, but also vnthriftilly spent and consumed the Treasure of his kingdome. Wherefore they refused to yeeld vnto the kings demand, except those euill Officers might bee displaced, and better men settled in their roomes. Which being by the king through the important perswasions of the Prince consented vnto, he cheerfully obtained his demand.

And now approached the ends of these two famous, and most worthy Princes the Father and the Sonne. For the Prince of

The French King winnes Rochell, &c.

ANNO 47.

John of Gaunt and the Duke of Brittain, oppose themselves against the French King.

They waste the Countrey.

ANNO 48.

John of Gaunt is made Gouvernour. The sicke Prince cometh into England.

ANNO 49.

ANNO 50.

The Lower house of the Parliament complains vpon the Kings euill Officers.

**The Black
Prince**

**The King
restores his
small Officers.**

*Richard is
Crowned
Prince of
Wales, Duke
of Cornwall
and Earle of
Chester.
King Ed-
ward death.*

Wales dyed the eighth day of Iune, in the year of our Lord God one thousand, three hundred, threescore and sixteen, when he had lined fortie yeares; and lyeth buried at Canterburie.

And no sooner was hee dead, but king Edward (very vnadvisedly, to his great dishonour, and to the great discontentment of his people) removed from him such new Officers, as in the late High Court of Parliament were established and placed nere about him: and restored the Lord *Latimer*, and all the rest, to their former Offices, and Places. And finding himselfe exceeding weake (by reason of his sharpe, & grievous sicknesse) he created his Nephew

Richard (Son to the Prince deceased) Prince of Wales, Earle of Chester, & Duke of Cornwall; and committed the

Regencie of his kingdome to his son *Iohn* of

Gaunt Duke of Lancaster : & died, when

hee had reigned fiftie yeares,

and somewhat

more.

[illegible]

In the last years of King Edward's reign, in a Parliament held at Westminster, the King republished a statute, which he had taken from the Temporalities of his Kingdom, to wards the support-
ing of his wars. But the Parliament or that assembly con-
plained generally against the Lord Bishops, the Clergy, the
to the King, and of many other of his Officers, for that they not
only withheld the King his soldiers, but also his subjects, from
and

THE

And now I approached the ends of the two tunnels, and met
worthy fathers the Father and the Son. For the Father of
Jesus



THE
HISTORIE OF
KING RICHARD
THE SECOND.



RICHARD the Second (being the Son
and Heire of the Blacke Prince, and
aged elouen yeares, and somewhat
more) was crowned king of England
in the yeare of our Lord God, one
thousand three hundred and seuentie
seven.

In the whole course of his euill go-
uernment, he neglected his Nobilitie,
and taxed his Subiects, to enable him-
selfe to giue prodigally vnto his ill de-
seruing Faworites. He was too too re-
solute in his follies, and refused to be repproued or reformed. He al-
so despised the sage aduice, & good directions, of his wisest & best
Councillors, & wholly plotted all his courses, by the wicked and
graceless proiects of his base companions, whom he raised to more
honorable Estates than becomed the meane of their condition.
So that they fell by their own weight, and he himselfe (in the end)
was enforced to endure the extremitie of his hard fortune. For be-
ing first disgraced by his Cousin, *Henry of Bullen*, Duke of
Lancaster, and sonne and heire to his Vncle *Iohn of Gaunt*, he was
at length by him (with the general consents of a whole Parliament)
deposed from his Crowne, committed to Prison, and afterwards

wic-

ANNO 1.
1377.

*King Ri-
chards euill
manners and
bad Govern-
ment.*

*The French
men burnt
divers townes
in England.*

*Alexander
Ramsay
desperate at
tempt, and
successe.*

*The French
men land in
England.*

*ANNO 3.
A Parliament.
This Tax
caused much
trouble:
An Armie
sent into
France.*

wickedly murdered, as in this discourse of his disordered government, more amply it shall appeare.

In the first yeare of king *Richards* reigne, *Charles* the French king (presuming much on his Minoritie, and being aided by the Spaniards) landed in the South-west, and in the South-east parts of this kingdome, and ransacked, & burnt the Townes of Plymouth, Dartmouth, Portsmouth, Rye, and some other Townes and Villages, coasting vpon the Sea, and would haue done more mischiefe, if by the kings Vncle *Edmund* of *Langley* Earle of Cambridge, and by the Earles of Buckingham, and of Salisburie, they had not been fought with, and beaten to their ships.

At the same time also (by the instigation of the French king) one *Alexander Ramsay*, an approued Scottishman at armes, with fortie of his companie, in the depth of the night, sodainly and desperately scaled the wals of the Castle of Barwick: and (finding the Captaine, and all his souldiers securely sleeping) he tooke it without blowes; and intended also to haue surprised the Towne. But the inhabitants, (hearing an extraordinary noyse and tumult in the Castle, and endeavouring to preuent a feared mischiefe) hewed away the staves of the Draw-bridge, on the Townes side: so that when the Scots did let fall the Draw-bridge, the chaines brake, and the Bridge fell into the Castle Ditch. By meanes whereof the Scots could possiblie out, but were imprisoned by their owne *Vi-
Glorie*.

This necessitie enforced them (as well as they were able) to fortifie the Castle, which on the kings behalfe, was soone besieged, and assaulted by tenthousand men: who after many feates of armes performed brauely by the assailants, and after much valour, with high courage, shewed by this small number of valiant Scots, won the Castle, and received not one of them to mercy, but only their Captaine *Alexander Ramsay*.

And not long after, the Frenchmen landed againe in England, & did much harme at Douer, Winchelsey, Hastings, & at Grauesend, & returned with their booties into France: But to preuent like future mischiefes, and to reuenge those iniuries done to the king and his Realme by the French king: A Parliament was assembled at Westminster. In which a Subsidie of fourepence, for every man, and for every woman within this kingdome (beinge aboue foureene years of age) was granted to the king. The leuying whereof procured much heart-burning, which (not long after) brake forth, and endangered the whole State of the Common-weale: Yet with that monie great prouision was made, and an Armie of eight thou-

(and

land men was sent into France, vnder the command of *Thomas* of Woodstock the kings Vncle: who passing ouer the faire and great Riuers of Soame, Oyse, and Marne, spoyled, and burnt all the Countries, and ransomed the inhabitants, vntill he came into Britaine; where he was receiued by the Duke *John Mountford* with all friendly entertainment, and much ioy.

And now began a Rebellion in England, which was exceeding hazardous to the whole kingdome. For *John Wall*, a factious Priest, perceiuing that the inferiour sort of the people much murmured and grudged at the payment of the afore said Subsidie; by secret conferences in all places where he came, informed the Bondmen, Villaines, Slaues, and such others, as were pinched with penury, and with want, that, by descent and parentage from *Adam*, all men were of one condition, and of equall worth: and that the Lawes of this kingdome were iniurious, and vniust, which did set so great a difference betwixt men; as to make some of them great Peeres, Potentates, and Lords, and in giuing to some others large authoritie and command, and in enlarging of great possessions, and store of riches vnto some, and in commanding others to be base, seruile, beggars, and to enioy little or nothing at all. And therefore (with trayterous reasons) he perswaded them, either by faire meanes, or by open insurrection and ciuill warre; to prouide for their owne liberties, and to relieue their owne wants.

This lewd and damnable doctrine so insatuated and infected the Rusticks from shire to shire, that at length it was spread in the Citie of London, where the meanest, and the basest sort (beeing a multitude, who eagerly enuyed the prosperity of the more worthy inhabitants, and greedily coueted to bee enriched with their substance) were in great hope (by rebellious mutining) to make viter hauocke and spoyle of all things at their pleasure. And (to effect that which they intended) such as were most desperately inclined among them, informed the headlesse multitude in the Countries round about them, that if they would come thither and ioyne with them, the whole Citie of London should be at their command. So that incredible numbers of braine-sicke, turbulent, and trayterous people prepared to flocke thither, from Kent, Essex, Suffex, Bedfordshire, and from many other places.

Of this rude and rascall rout, *Wat Tylar* (who by his profession was a Taylor) was made Captaine, to command the rest: and the said *John Wall*, *Jack Straw*, *Jack Shepheard*, & some others, were made chiefe directors, and their leaders. And (stiling themselves, *The Kings men*, and the seruants of the Common-weale of England) they

ANNO 4.

A great rebellion in England.

John Wall was the beginner of this rebellion.

His wicked course in perswading.

Wat Tylar, John Wall, Jack Straw and Jack Shepheard, Captains in this Rebellion.

*The French
men burne
diuers townes
in England.*

*Alexander
Ramsay
desperate at-
tempt, and
success.*

*The French
men land in
England.*

*ANNO 3.
A Parliament.
This Taxe
caused much
trouble:
An Arme
sent into
France.*

wickedly murdered, as in this discourse of his disordered government, more amply it shall appeare.

In the first yeare of king *Richards* reigne, *Charles* the French king (presuming much on his Minoritie, and being aided by the Spaniards) landed in the South-west, and in the South-east parts of this kingdome, and ransacked, & burnt the Townes of Plymouth, Dartmouth, Portsmouth, Rye, and some other Townes and Villages, coasting vpon the Sea, and would haue done more mischief, if by the kings Vncle *Edmund* of *Langly* Earle of Cambridge, and by the Earles of Buckingham, and of Salisburie, they had not been fought with, and beaten to their ships.

At the same time also (by the instigation of the French king) one *Alexander Ramsay*, an approued Scottishman at armes, with fortie of his companie, in the depth of the night, sodainly and desperately scaled the wals of the Castle of Barwick: and (finding the Captaine, and all his souldiers securely sleeping) he tooke it without blowes, and intended also to haue surprised the Towne. But the inhabitants, (hearing an extraordinary noyse and tumult in the Castle, and endeavouring to preuent a feared mischief) hewed away the staves of the Draw-bridge, on the Townes side: so that when the Scots did let fall the Draw-bridge, the chaines brake, and the Bridge fell into the Castle Ditch. By meanes whereof the Scots could not issue out, but were imprisoned by their owne *Vi-
olence*.

This necessitie enforced them (as well as they were able) to fortifie the Castle, which on the kings behalfe, was soone besieged, and assaulted by tenthousand men who after many feates of armes performed brauely by the assailants, and after much valour, with high courage, shewed by that small number of valiant Scots, won the Castle, and received not one of them to mercy, but only their Captaine *Alexander Ramsay*.

And not long after, the Frenchmen landed againe in England, & did much harrie at Douer, Winchelsey, Hastings, & at Grauesend, & returned with their booties into France. But to preuent like future mischieses, and to reuenge those iniuries done to the king and his Realme by the French king: A Parliament was assembled at Westminster. In which a Subsidie of fourepence, for every man, and for every woman within this kingdome (beeing aboue foureene years of age) was granted to the king. The leuying whereof procured much heart-burning, which (not long after) brake forth, and endangered the whole State of the Common-weale. Yet with that monie great prouision was made, and an Arme of eight thou-
land

land men was sent into France, vnder the command of *Thomas of Woodstock* the kings Vncle: who passing ouer the faire and great Riuer of Soame, Oyle, and Marne, spoyled, and burnt all the Countries, and ransomed the inhabitants, vntill he came into Britaine, where he was receiued by the Duke *John Monmouth* with all friendly entertainemēt, and much ioy.

And now began a Rebellion in England, which was exceeding hazardous to the whole kingdome. For *John Wall*, a factious Priest, perceiuing that the inferiour sort of the people much murmured and grudged at the payment of the aforesaid Subsidie; by secret conferences in all places where he came, informed the Bondmen, Villaines, Slaves, and such others, as were pinched with penury, and with want, that, by descent and parentage from *Adam*, all men were of one condition, and of equall worth: and that the Lawes of this kingdome were iniurious, and vniust, which did set so great a difference betwixt men; as to make some of them great Peeres, Potentates, and Lords, and in giuing to some others large authoritie and command, and in enlarging of great possessions, and store of riches vnto some, and in commanding others to be base, seruile, beggars, and to enioy little or nothing at all. And therefore (with trayterous reasons) he perswaded them, either by faire meanes, or by open insurrection and ciuill warre; to prouide for their owne liberties, and to relieue their owne wants.

This lewd and damnable doctrine so insatuated and infected the Rusticks from shire to shire, that at length it was spread in the Citie of London, where the meanest, and the basest sort (beeing a multitude, who eagerly enuyed the prosperity of the more worthy inhabitants, and greedily coueted to bee enriched with their substance) were in great hope (by rebellious mutening) to make vtter hauocke and spoyle of all things at their pleasure. And (to effect that which they intended) such as were most desperately inclined among them, informed the headlesse multitude in the Countries round about them, that if they would come thither and ioyne with them, the whole Citie of London should be at their command. So that incredible numbers of braine-sicke, turbulent, and trayterous people prepared to flocke thither, from Kent, Essex, Suffex, Bedfordshire, and from many other places.

Of this rude and rascall rout, *Wat Tylar* (who by his profession was a Taylor) was made Captaine, to command the rest: and the said *John Wall*, *Iack Straw*, *Iack Shepheard*, & some others, were made chiefe directors, and their leaders. And (stiling themselves, *The Kings men*, and the seruants of the Common-weale of England) they

ANNO 4.

A great rebellion in England. John Wal was the beginner of this rebellion. His wicked course in perswading.

Wat Tylar, John Wall, Iack Straw and Iack Shepheard, Captaines in this Rebellion.

*How they
passed to-
wards Lon-
don.*

*The King
went to speak
with the Re-
bels, but da-
red not.*

*They resolve
to burn South-
warke.
They enter
into London.
Their kind
entertain-
ment pleaseth
them.*

*The Sauoy
burned.*

*The Innes of
Court rifled.*

*They commit
sacrilege.*

*Prisoners en-
larged.
Wat Tylers
cruelty to his
old Master.*

*All strangers
are rifled.*

*60000.
The incivility
at Saint Ka-
therines.*

they marched towards London, beating downe the houses, and rifling all the moveables of all such as were professors of the Law; and compelling all Knights and Gentlemen either to flye before their comming, or to be partakers in this uproare. They also sent vnto the king who then lay in the Tower, requiring him to come and to speake with them. Whereupon the king (purposing, if he might, to prevent all future mischieses which were threatened by this disorder, and being accompanied with some of his wisest and discreetest Lords and Counsellors) went by water to Grauesend. But when he perceived their vnruely madnesse, and their rage and furie, and that all their numbers consisted of the basest Swads, and of the off-scumme of the People, hee feared to put himselfe into their hands; and returned backe againe to the Tower.

The next day they all came to London. But finding the Gates to be shut against them, and the Bridge to be strongly fortified: they intended first to kill all the inhabitants of South-warke; then to steale their goods; & last of all to consume it vterly with fire. But (to prevent that mischiese) a free entrance was given them into the Citie: where the greatest men made them the best cheere, and fed them with their chiefest dainties; and by liberall gifts, in some sort, pacified their furie and their rage.

Then they entred into the Sauoy (which then belonged to *John of Gaunt* Duke of Lancaster the kings Vncle) which house they rifled, burnt, and wickedly murdered all his Officers whom they found there. They also robbed all the Innes of Court; burnt their Law-bookes; and sacrilegiously they stole in all Churches, and in all Religious Houses; accounting their monstrous thefts to be no sinne.

They also released out of all Prisons all manner of offenders whatsoeuer. Among sundry other outrages which they then committed, Their chiefest Ring-leader *Wat Tylar* sent for his old Master, named *Richard Lion*, a worthy and graue Citizen, from whom (during the time of his seruice) he had received for a foule offence some small correction: & for a reuenge, without other iudgement, according to his gracelesse command, his head was striken off, and borne vpon a Launce before him in the streets. They also robbed & spoyled all Flemmings, Frenchmen, Lombards, & other Forrainers inhabiting in or neere about the Citie of London. And at length (their numbers beeing encreased to threescore thousand) they came to Saint Katherines, neere to the kings lodging; where they remained that night. But such were their hideous, beastly, and confused howlings, roarings, whoopings, and out-cries, that often

oftentimes the king and his Councell feared greatly, least by treachery, and by treason, they had possessed themselves of the Tower, in which he lay.

The next morning they sent againe to the King: entreating him to speak with them at Mile-end-green. But his Highness was no sooner gone thither, than *Wat Tyler*, with forty more of his wicked and rascall companions, pressed in by violence at the Tower Gates, and robbed the Chambers and the lodgings there: not sparing those: which did belong to the Princeesse of Wales the kings mother, whose head *Wat Tyler* brake, and in such rude and beastly sort behaved himselfe towards her, that feare, and griefe entreated a sicknesse in her, which a long time after was dangerous to her life.

They also apprehended there *Simon*, a learned and a famous Archbishop of Canturburie, and strook off his head, because vpon the first notice of *John Mals* traitorous persuasions to the base rascals, hee had committed him to a short and to an easie imprisonment.

The king (as soone as he came to Mile-end-green) demanded what it was that with such violence they required? They all with a mightie shout, and with a horrible confused crie, desired that they might be *dismissed* and set free, and that their posterities might not be Villains, nor in bondage. The king graciously replied that he would not only grant (in most ample and large manner) their demand, and procure it to be established by a Parliament: but gave vnto them his banners for their safe conduct to returne into their Countries, and to their own houses, and also pardoned them their rebellion and their offence.

The greater part of this rude multitude, (who were not made acquainted with any further mischief, which was secretly intended by the rest) returned vnto London: where (with all convenient speed) by instrument in writing, The king cheerfully performed his promise: and thereupon great numbers of them, returned to their own homes.

But *Wat Tyler*, and about twenty thousand more of his wicked & gracelesse conforts (determining, if it were possible, first to massacre, and then to burne, the Citie of London) kept many of the kings banners, and his pardons which were vnder the great seale, and came with all his remaining Rable into Smithfield.

When the king heard that this unruly assembly was not vitally dissolved, no pretence time such mischief as they might doe, being guarded but with a small strength, hee perswaded him selfe before

The King
goeth to
Mile-end-
Greene to
speak with
the Rebels.
Wat Tyler
enters into
the Tower.
He robbeth
the Kings
Mother.

He behead-
eth the Arch-
bishop of Can-
turburie.

Dismissi-
on is requi-
red and pro-
mised.

The Kings
Banners, and
Pardon gi-
uen to the
Rebels.

The greater
number doe
depart to
their Houses.

Twenty thou-
sand should
not depart.
Wat Tyler
comes into
Smithfield.
The King
perswades to
the Rebels.

Was Tylar
refuseth the
Kings favors.

His proud
speech to the
King.

He requirith
his sword
bearing a dog-
star.

He requirith
to have the
Kings sword.
The Esquire
standeth by.

The sword of
Was Tylar
slaine by the
Murtherer at
London.

For this cause
that Citie
gives the
Sword to her
Armes.

The Rebels
prepare for
revenge.
The London-
ners sent an
Armourer.

The King
Banneth and
Pardons are
restituted.
They send
some more
Rebels to the

ore the Rebels: and with all princely courtesie, and kindnesse, be-
haved himselfe towards them: and perswaded them to desist from
all violence, and from wrong: assuring them, that they should not
only obtaine their libertie, and pardons, but should (vpon trial) find
him to be their good Lord, and gracious king. But the Arch-
Traytor was Tylar, with a frowning countenance, insolent beha-
viour, and rough speech, refused to accept of the kings favour: &e
proudly told him, That all these Troups, &e many more thousands,
were ready at his beck, to doe and to execute whatsoeuer he would
command: and (to the end that his pride might want no manner
of audacious boldnesse) hee required the kings Esquire (who bare
the sword) to deliver to him his dagger. But with a stout answer,
and with a man-like courage hee refused so to doe, vntill he was by
the king commanded to deliver it. Now when the Traytor had
thus gotten the dagger, he requir'd to haue the sword also: but the
Esquire told him plainly, that it was the kings sword, and should
not be giuen to a knaue. Whereas was Tylar was so extraordi-
narily incensed, that (with an execrable and a vile oath) he swore,
that the Esquire should lose his head before he himselfe would ci-
dure like any meke, or drinke any drinke. The Mayor of London
(named William Walworth) who then attended on the king, disdain-
ing that a proud Traytor should so confront, and braue the king, drew
forth his sword, &e strike him so soundly on the head, that he fell
him to the ground: and (incontinently) hee was slaine. Whereas,
some hope was suddenly conceived, that the rest of the Rebels
would haue gone away. But they (being desperately resolved to
revenge his death) according to their little skill cast themselves in
some order: so that now, every minute of time increased the de-
struction, and slaughter of many men.

The Citizens of London being informed what had hapned, and
purposing with all speed to aide the king, and to free themselves
and the Citie from ruine and from spoyle, sent an Arme of eight
thousand men well armed, and well appointed, to the king: all
which were quickly marshalled and ready to give the charge. But
first the king required the Rebels to submit themselves, or else to
deliver vnto him such of his Banners, and Free Pardons, and Ma-
nmissions, as they had gotten into their hands. But so farre off
were they from being fornic or repentant for their Treasons, that
(in a proud bragging, and in such scorn) they re-delivered them
all vnto the king. Who caused them, in their open view, to bee
cancelled, and to bee torne in pieces. The doing whereof, so so-
lemnely discomfited and quailed the hearts and courages of those in-
solent

solent and gracelesse Rebels: that (when the King expected nothing but all violence to be executed by the sword) they cowardly disperfed themselves, and ranne away: every man (without any order or staying) making all possible haste and shift to save themselves. And thus vanished this cloud, which threatned an outrageous storme of much danger, and mischief, to the King and Common-weale.

And the chiefest of those malefactors (a thing which neuer faileth in such tumultuous rebellions) were by their owne companions (to insinuate grace and favour with the King) deliuered into the hands of Iustice: who afterwards, with fifteene hundred more (of the principall agents in this businesse) were (vpon due enquiries, and iust conuolutions, according to the Law) executed, and put to summy tortures and deaths, in diuers places of this Realme.

The King hauing thus pacified this Rebellion, and Vproare, married the Lady *Isabel* (daughter to the deceased Emperour *Charles* the fourth: and sister vnto *Meneslaus* the Emperour who then reigned) and was made happy, through much prosperitie and peace, vntill the ninth yeare of his Gouernment. And then hee summoned, and held his High Court of Parliamēt at Westminster, in which he created his fifth and sixth Vncles, *Edmund of Langley* (being then Earle of Cambridge) Duke of York; & *Thomas of Woodstock* (who was then Earle of Buckingham) Duke of Gloucester. He also created his Cousin *Henrie of Bolingbroke* (son & heire apparant to his fourth Vncle *John of Gaunt* Duke of Lancaster) Earle of Darbie; and his Cousin *Edward Plantagenet*, (the sonne and heire apparant of his said Vncle *Edmund of Langley*) he created Earle of Rutland, and Sir *John Holland* (brother to the Earle of Kent) was made Earle of Huntingdon; and *Thomas Lord Mowbray* was made Earle of Nottingham.

The King (whose affections were but greene, and who was easily seduced by such as he best loued) was at this time wholly directed, and counselled into many euill and vngodly courses, by his vnworthy flouertices, *Michael De la Poole* (his Chumcellor) whom he created Duke of Suffolk; & by *Robert de Vere* (Earle of Oxford, and Marquesse of Dohlyn) whom he made Duke of Ireland; and would haue made him King of that Countrey, if his Nobility would haue consented therunto.

In the same Parliamēt, He caused his Cousin Sir *Roger Mortimer* Earle of March (who was the sonne and heire of *Edmund Mortimer*, and of *Philip* his wife; who was the daughter and heire of the

The Rebels
flye.

The Cap-
taines deliuered
to the
King by the
Rebels them-
selues.
Fifteene hun-
dred Rebels
executed.

ANNO 5.
King Richard
marrieth.

ANNO 9.
1385.

A Parliamēt.
Two of the
Kings Vncles
were created
Dukes of
York and
Gloucester.

Henrie of
Bolingbroke
created Earle
of Darby.

Other Earles
created.

King Ri-
chards still
Cruell & Tyrant.

Affection
of nobility
re-
son.

Roger Mort-
imer pro-
claimed heire
Apparant.

This Sir Roger Mortimer was slaine many years after.

ANNO 10.

1386

The King neglecteth his Nobility and their Counsell. Michael de la Poole. Robert de Vere.

Alexander Archbishop of York. Robert Tresilian.

The King intendeth the surprisall of the Duke of Gloucester and of the Earles of Warwick and of Arundell.

They come well guarded to the Parliament.

Fourte Fifteenes demanded.

It is denied.

A Parliament may be held once a yeare.

In what case the Knights and Burgeses may depart.

The Houses of Parliament denie.

the kings third Vncle, *Lionel* Duke of Clarence) to bee proclaimed heire apparant to his Crowne. But hee was long afterward slaine in Ireland, by such Rebels as he endeoured to suppress.

It is now to bee obserued, that from henceforth the king respected not the sage aduice and counsell of his grauest, and most experienced Lords: and that hee began carelessly to neglect the Nobility, and his great Officers of his Kingdome: and that hee did all things preposterously, by the lewd and vnskillfull persuasions and directions of his two newly-created Dukes of Suffolke, and of Ireland; & of *Alexander* then Archbishop of Yorke, & of *Robert Tresilian* his Chiefe Iustice. And as they all did lead him into many errors: so did they especially exasperate him (without iust cause) against his renowned, & truly noble Vncle *Thomas* of Woodstock, Duke of Gloucester; and against the two Earls of Warwick & of Arundell: which three he intended to haue surprized at a Banquet in London; if *Nicholas Extor* (then Maior of that City) would haue consented therunto. But because his help shen failed, and the king could not (at that time) obtaine his purpose: Hee resolved to effect it at a more solemne meeting. For which cause principally, He summoned his High Court of Parliament: but the said three Lords (vpon good information being iealous of such vnkindly entertainment) repaired to the said assembly, being strongly guarded by a multitude of valiant men at armes: by means whereof they secured their owne liberty, and the vngodly project of the King, and of his wicked Counsellors, came to nought.

Now when this long Parliament produced nothing worthy to be noted: *Michael de la Poole* (in the kings behalf) required a Tene of foure fifteenes, affirming that a lesser gift could not support his Estate, and maintaine such warres as hee was likely to undertake. But the Lords, and the Lower House, not only refused to yeeld vnto this motion, but made a solemne declaration; That as the kings of this Realme (for the better ordering, and preserving of their Estate, and Kingdome) might once in euery yeare assemble a Parliament: so by an ancient Law, all the members of that great Council might, without leaue, breake vp the same assembly, and depart to their owne houses, if the king absented himselfe from their company for the space of forty dayes together; and that they would not proceed in any businesse, but depart, except the king would bee pleased personally to come among them, and to grace them with his presence, and would also remoue *Michael de la Poole* from his Chancellorsship, and commit him to Strait Prison, because hee lewdly counselled the king to attempt many things;

which

which were dishonourable to himselfe and hurtfull to the Common-weale.

The King (asa Lion) being sterne, and scorning to yeeld vnto any motion, although it tended to his owne safety, and to the well-fare of his people; required, that fifty selected men of that Assembly might be sent vnto him, with whom he would conferre and agree vpon such affaires, as they required to bee treated on. But the two houses (denying to make any conclusions priuately, of such affaires, and businesses, as by a Parliament were to be disputed publickly, and publickly to be established) did send vnto him his said Vncle Thomas Woodstock, Duke of Glocester, and Thomas Arundel then Arch-bishop of Canterbury: and none others. And they two (by expresse commandement) told the King, that by his absence hee obscured the light of iustice, and hindred the negotiations of the Common-weale, which (without his approbation and consent) could not receiue any strength, or life: and that if he pleased not (vpon their humble intreatie) to come among them for the furthering, and for the finishing of such weighty affaires as thea they had in hand; they would depart to their owne houses, because he had absented himselfe from them (to their dislike and discouragement) more than forty dayes. They also craued with great submission and humility (as they were commanded) to bee informed, by whom his Maiesties treasure, belonging to the common-weale, was prodigally wasted and consumed: and how it came to passe, that his large reuenues could not suffice to maintain and to support his Estate and charge (seeing he had no wars) except his people must be taxed?

This message, and these demands, so wonderfully incensed the king against both the houses of his Parliament, that in great choler and indignation hee deeply swore, that if he had foreknowne the faucie boldnesse of his owne Subiects, (who as he supposed intended to rise in Armes against him) hee would more willingly haue submitted himselfe to the King of France, and haue relied vpon his protection and defence, than thus be baffled, and be made feruile and an vnderling to those, whom his Soueraignty ought to command.

The two Lords (with such wonderfull grauity and temperate mildnesse) so effectually related to the king, the inueterated malice which the kings of France had borne towards this Kingdome, and the kings which ruled it; and the loyall duetie, and obedience, which both the Lords, and also all other inferiour subiects of this Realme, did beare vnto him, as vnto their most gracious

The King denies their suit.

They will not yeeld to his command.

Two, and no more are sent vnto the King

The King is told of his faults.

A reckoning is demanded of the King.

The King threatens the two Houses of his Parliament.

Advice to beware of France.

*wise Counsell
appeaseth the
Kings rage.
The King
commeth to
the Parlia-
ment.*

*Michael de
la Poole, ac-
cused, con-
demned, fined,
imprisoned,
deprived, &c.*

*Thomas Ar-
undel Arch-
bishop of Can-
terbury is
made Lord
Chancellor.*

*Commis-
sioners chosen in
the Parlia-
ment to ex-
amine the
Kings Offi-
cers.*

*The King
swareth to
allow it.*

*Disseminators
to be punished.*

*Half a Pf-
terene condi-
tionally gran-
ted.*

and good Lord, that (thereby) the greatest flame of his fire was much quenched: and the kings passions began to bee more moderate and calme. So that he promised (within three dayes) to come among them; and did performe it accordingly, to the great ioy and contentment of all such, as meant and wished well.

When they were all thus met together: *Michael de la Poole* was by the Lords accused, and found guilty of many notable and notorious cousonages, and deceits by him practised in the execution of his office; and for that he had purchased with the kings mony, in yearely reueneue, so much land as was worth one thousand pounds and more; and had purloyned (in bribes from the kings Subiects for expeditions, and by such crafty and dishonest trickes) the summe of twenty thousand markes at the least: for which of fences all his lands were given to the king; together with a fine of twenty thousand Markes: and himselfe (being deprived of his Office of Chancellourship, and of his liberty; was committed vnto straight Prison: and *Thomas Arundel* then Archbishop of Canterbury (who was a wise and great States-man, and did employ his best endeouours for the welfare and prosperity of the Commonweale, without any respect to his friends, or profit to himselfe) was made Chancellor in his stead. In the same Parliament also thirteene persons were elected, sworne, and authorised (aswell by the consents of the Lords spirituall & temporall, and by the Commons, as also by the kings agreement thereunto published in writing vnder his great Seale) to examine all, or any of his Maiesties officers, touching their behanours, & their demeanors, in their seuerall roomes and places; and by whom, and how, both at home, and abroad, the kings treasure had bene purloyned, or mispent; and to correct and punish all such, as for iust transgressions they should censure and condemne. And the king himselfe tooke a publicke oath, not to reuoke, nor to suppress the said Commission, or their power, except a Parliament should ioine with him therein. And furthermore it was then enacted for a Law, that if any man should or did attempt, directly, or indirectly, to perswade or to encourage the king, to infringe his promise, and to make breach of his said oath, touching all, or any of those matters; hee should for his first offence lose all his Lands and Goods; and, for his second offence, should receiue triall, iudgment, & execution, as a Traytor to the king, and to his Crowne. And then a Subsidie of one halfe Pifteenne was granted: If, by the said Commissioners, and vpon their view of the kings Estate, it should be thought needful for him to haue the same.

No sooner was this Parliament ended, but the king (by the persuasions of his euill Counsellors, and contrary to his owne assent, promise, and oath) enlarged *Michael de la Poole*, & went with him, & *Robert de Vere* his Duke of Ireland; & with *Trefilian* his Chiefe Iustice, and many of his Iudges, vnto Nottingham: where they pronounced the kings Votie, *Thomas* of Woodstock Duke of Gloucester; & *Thomas Arundel* Archbishop of Canterbury; the said thirteen Commissioners; & many others, to be guilty of High Treason: because they had compelled the king, against his will & conscience, to ratifie the said Commission by his oath, and vnder his Great Seale. And then they went to Couentry: where the said Iudges, by an instrument in writing vnder their hands and seales, declared and confirmed their opinions (touching those matters) to be agreeable, and consonant to the Lawes of this Realme.

Now (for a while) must we leaue the King, and his Nobility, perplexed with many euill conceits, each of the other, and studying vpon the future euents of those former conclusions: and will informe the Reader, that the time of Truce, betwixt England and France, was more than fully ended: and that the French king (to beget more broyles at home) sent his Admirall into Scotland, with a thousand Lords, Knights, & Gentlemen, compleatly armed, and furnished with armour and with weapons, sufficient for one thousand more. But such was their course and homely entertainment, that (vpon their first arriual) the Common people abandoned their company, making no manner of reckoning or accompt of them, nor relieuing of their wants with any thing which was needfull: but suffered them to bee oppressed with as many miseries, as strangers (being in a forraine, and in a poore Countrey) were able to endure; vntill they ioyned with the Scottish army, which consisted of thirty thousand men. And with them, they entred into England, and did much harme. But when they were informed, that the king with eight thousand men at armes, and threescore thousand Archers, traualled hard iournies to encounter with them: they then forsooke their ordinary march, and passages, and went ouer the high and craggy Mountaines into Wales; where they committed many vile, and wicked outrages, which turned little to their commodity and gaine. But (in the meane time) king *Richard* with fire and sword entred into Scotland: where (being vnresisted) he rised and burnt the Townes, and Cities of *Eden-burgh*, *Saint Iohns*, *Espreuelling*, *Dondie* and many others; and returned home. And the Scots and Frenchmen retyred themselues into Scotland: where (by reason of the late hauock, and ruines of that kingdome)

ANNO 11.
The King breaketh his promise and his oath. Michael de la Poole is enlarged. The Commissioners are pronounced Traytors. Some Iudges doo ratifie the confirmation.

The French Lords, and Gentlemen, come to animate the Scots against England. Their course entertainment. They invade England. They make a troublesome iourney into Wales. King Richard with an army of 68000. men, entreteth and spoileth Scotland.

The French and Scots return into that wasted Countrey.

*The great
misery of the
Frenchmen.*

*How the
Scots abused
and wronged
them.*

*The King of
France is en-
forced to re-
deeme his
subiects.*

*The French
King dra-
weh to con-
quer England*

1200. Ships.

*The great
Army of the
English.*

Homo po-
nit, dispenit
autem Deus

*The disorders
of the French
souldiers.*

the French Gallants were worne out with more necessities than before. For neither could or would the Townes or Countrey afford them any helpe; and the apparant hazzard of their liues, by the violence of the poore distressed Scots, did altogether terrifie them from foraging abroad: And in the end (to adde vnto them greater affliction than all the rest) the Scots compelled their mearest Gentlemen (without their horses, and vnarmed, and penniless) to returne into France; but kept (as pledges, or as pawns) the Admirall, and such as were honourable and great, vntill a full reckoning and an amends were made vnto them for all such losse and damages, as (by the English armie) they had sustained: affirming, That the French king had engaged Scotland in those wars, not for themselves, but to serue his owne turne, and in his seruice.

The French king (though angred at the heart to be thus abused, yet finding none other meanes to enlarge the Admirall, and such other great men as hee had employed in those Warres) sent to the Scots as much money as was demanded: and therupon, the French Admirall, Barons, and Gentry, were dismissed, and returned home, hauing small cause to bragge of their successe, or of their entertainment in that journey.

But the French king intending to relieue himselfe, and to wreck his anger vpon England; resolved to transport into this kingdome such an Army, as should make an absolute Conquest of this whole Land. And (to further his prouisions therein) hee imposed many grieuous and intolerable Taxes on his people; which were not leuiued without much grudging, and great trouble. His whole Fleet consisted of more than twelue hundred saile of shippes. The number of his men was extraordinary, and exceeding great: and such were his prouisions, that (among Christian Princes) the like before was seldome seen or heard of.

King Richard (who was very valiant, and cared not for his approach) was readily prepared to giue him a welcome, with ten thousand gallant men at armes, and with more than one hundred thousand fighting men: besides such as furnished his braue Nauie on the sea; and besides all such, as for the defence of Callice were sent thither.

Experience teacheth vs, That the greatest preparations for any Expedition whatsoeuer, are made in vaine, if the thing to which they are intended and directed bee not seconded by Gods fauour; as by this example it shall appeare. For when the French souldiers were departed from their owne dwellings, and travelled disorderly towards the place where their shippes lay; they robbed and spoi-

spoiled in all Prouinces, and in all Countreies, through which they passed, with greater fury, and with more violence, than commonly the English, or any other forraine enemy, accustomed to doe. So that the Inhabitants of all places (subiect to their cruelty and vnciuill outrage) were not onely (in the highest degree) displeased and discontented; but, by sollemn imprecations, they cursed both them and the action likewise which they had in hand. And when those loose companions came into the Low Countries where the Fleet was: such were their wants of all things needfull to relieue them (by reason of their excessive numbers, and by reason of the long absence of the Duke of Berrey, the French kings Vncle; who hastned not thither, nor liked well of that journey, although it altogether depended vpon his furtherance and presence) that first they sold their armour and their weapons; then their horses: and last of all, their clothes, to provide them meat. And when all those means failed them, then they daily, yea hourly, committed such violence and such outrages in those Countries without controlment, that they became hatefull and odious to the Inhabitants: and (at length) the king their master (being vnterly discouraged by his said Vncle in this attempt) dissolued his whole Army. And thus (at one instant almost) he lost both his honour and his hope, his mony, and many great things besides.

And the end of those his great designes affords vs liberty to returne againe to our highly displeased and discontented King: whom his Lords (with all humility and submissiue modesty) petitioned and desired, Newly to ratifie and to confirme his former Promise and his Oath; and to thrust from him Michael de la Poole, Robert de Vere, Alexander the lewd Archbishop of Yorke, Robert Tresilian his chiefe Iustice, & Sir Nicholas Brembre of London (who were generally reamed to bee the Kings wicked counsellors) and to banish out of the Land all those soothing and flattering Iudges, who (to please the King) had subscribed to the Nullitie of the said Commission, and had censured all such as procured it, to be traitors to the King and to his Crowne.

But the Kings affections were so strongly riueted and annexed vnto those five, and so confident was hee, that both himselfe, and they, and his said Iudges, had done well in their proceedings at Nottingham, and at Couentry, that in plaine termes he denied them their request. And thereupon, the Lords (for their owne safety, and to support the peace, and to prevent the ruine and the destruction of the Commonweale) raised a strong Army of their friends, and of such as vnterly disliked those disorders in the King, and

The men and the enterprise are accursed by the oppressed people.

The French Armie are in great misery.

They sell all.

The Army is dissolued.

Parturiunt Montes, nascitur ridiculus Mus.

The historie of the Kings euill gouernment at home is pursued.

The petition of the Nobilitie.

The Kings five euill Counsellors.

The King denyeth their petition.

The Nobility raise an Army.

and came to the City of London: being fully resolved, that they themselves would put in execution those things, which the King (vpon their reasonable and iust request and petition) had refused to yeeld vnto.

But when those five wicked Counsellors perceiued throughly what was purposed and meant; they then endeououred to perswade the king to surrender Callice, and all his other Lordships & Territories in France, to the French king, and confidently to relye vpon his aide: assuring him, That in so doing hee should obtaine two glorious and pleasing victories; the one ouer all his Warres, by settling of his Estate in a perfect peace; and the other, ouer his Noblemen, who strined (as lewdly they pretended) to make him subiect and seruaile to their wils.

And though, in all things besides, their counsels were his Oracles; yet the King would not (at any hand) hearken to this motion: and yet he was determined (by one meanes or other) to curbe and to abridge the strength of his Nobility; who strined to reforme such things as were amisse. And (that his purpose might therein be effected) especially he enquired of the Maior of London, How many able armed men that City could conueniently set forth? who certified him, That fifty thousand such might easily, and in a short time, bee prepared and spared there. Whereupon the king commanded him, with all expedition, to send him such an Armie: which forthwith he endeououred to performe.

But when the grauest and the wisest Citizens had maturely considered of this businesse; they interrupted his proceedings, and told the king, That they might not bee employed in warlike manner against his Lords, who for his Maiesty and Honour, and to preserve his Kingdome from ruine and from destruction, had vsed all faithfull and good meanes to remoue from his Person those his wicked Counsellors; who onely (for their owne commodity and aduancement) had hazzarded the whole estate of his Kingdome, by aduising and by counselling of him to rule and to gouerne vnadvisedly, according to their pleasures, and after their lewd and lawlesse wils.

The king perceiuing by this Message, that his inferiour subiects would (in those Troubles) adhere vnto the Lords; seemed a little to restrain his violent affections: & did informe the Lords, That he would assemble his high Court of Parliament; in which, those five favorites of his should be answerable to all Obiections whatsoever, and should (if they were convicted) receiue such punishment, as should (by the publick censure of the House) be inflicted on them.

This

*Wicked
counsellors
by
the five
wicked
Counsellors*

*The King
would not
hearken to
that counsell.*

*The King
requirith an
Army from
the Londoners.*

*The graue
Citizens of
London do
resist their
vnwise Maior.*

*The Kings
gentle
message to
the Lords.*

This vnexpected and good message so thoroughly contented the Barons, that presently they disfurnished themselves of all their warlike Forces, and were most thankfull for it to the king. But as the Winde, so was he suddainely changed: For in stead of performing what hee had promised; hee freely licenced *Robert de Vere*, Duke of Ireland, to leuie five thousand men for his owne particular guard and defence. And the Barons perceiuing thereby, that it was high time for them to looke vnto their owne safety, with incredible celerity and expedition renewed their strength; and (vpon the suddaine) so strongly equironed the said Duke betwixt their Armie and the Riuer of Thames, that they compelled him (for the preseruatiō of his life) by swimming on horsebacke, to passe ouer vnto the other side: from whence he presently fled into France, in which Kingdome (about five yeares after, as he hunted) hee was slaine by a wilde Boare.

But such was the Kings affection towards him whilest he liued, that he caused his dead carkasse to be embalmed, and to be brought into England; and to bee apparrelled in princely Ornaments and Robes: His necke to be compassed with a massie chayne of Gold, his fingers to be couered with Rings; and his Funerals to be solemnized with all magnificence and pompe.

Now when the said Duke of Ireland was compelled by swimming on horsebacke (as you haue heard) to saue himselfe, and was fled into France; the Barons executed some of his chiefeest consorts for an example vnto others, but suffered the multitude to disperse themselves, and required them (with all speed) to repaire to their owne houses. But the said Barons conducted their owne Army to London; where they were receiued with much ioy. And such was the bountifull entertainment which they found there, that they might thereby assure themselves of their hearty welcome.

The king (who kept his Court in the Tower of London) was well pleased to admit of a conference with the Lords. In which it was concluded, That a Parliament should bee summoned: Which being orderly assembled, the kings wicked Counsellors, and some of the aforesaid Iudges, were required personally to appeare. But they came not thither: yet were they (after great debating and disputing of that businesse) condemned of high Treason to the King and to the Common-weale. And not long after, Sir *Iohn Earle of Salisbury*, & Sir *Nicholas Brembre* lost their heads; and *Robert Tresilian* the chiefe Iustice was hanged at Tiborne: and the rest of those Iudges had beene hanged in like sort, if vpon the importunate and vncessant request of the Queene) their liues had not beene redeemed by

The Lords do cassier their Army.

The King performs not his promise.

Hee licenceth the Duke of Ireland to,

raise 5000 men to defend himselfe.

The Lords do renew their Army.

The Duke swimmes on horsebacke

ouer the Thames.

He is slaine by a wilde Boare.

How the king honoured his dead corps.

Some of the said Dukes consorts executed.

The Barons army is with ioy receiued into London.

A Parliament.

The fine wicked Counsellors and the Iudges condemned as Traitors.

Execution.

Banishment.

ANNO 12.
The Scots doe invade.

A Truce betwixt England, France and Scotland for seven yeares.

ANNO 13.
John of Gaunt goeth with an Army into Spaine.

ANNO 14.
How his brave attempts succeeded there. His two Daughters are married to the Kings of Spaine, and of Portugall.

ANNO 16.
Laws against the Popes usurped Authority.

ANNO 17.

ANNO 19.

by their banishment. And thus were the threatnings of ciuill wars, conuerted into some assurance of prosperity and of peace.

But the next yeare following the Scots invaded this Realm; and did much harme: against whom great preparations were made by the King, who resolved to recompence his owne dammage, by iust and seuerer reuenge.

But the wisdome and discretion of many great Estates, were such, that a Truce was concluded to endure for three yeares, betwixt England, France and Scotland, which shortly after was enlarged for foure yeares more.

So that now, all matters betwixt those three Kingdomes and their kings, being blessed with tranquillity, and with peace: the kings fourth Vncle, *John of Gaunt* Duke of Lancaster, was suffered by the king to leuie a strong Army, which hee transported into Spaine, where hee demanded his right to the kingdom of Castile, in the behalfe of *Constance* his wife; who was the eldest daughter of *Peter*, the deposed and slaine king.

In those Warres, the Duke and his Army performed many honourable seruices: and (with the assistance of the king of Portugale) so preuailed, that, to conclude a sued-for peace, the king of Spaine married with *Constance*, the Dukes eldest daughter by his said wife; and gaue vnto him eight Waggones laden with massie Gold; and secured him, and his wife, of the yearely payment of ten thousand Markes, during both their liues. And then the Duke went into Portugale, where he married *Anne* his yonger daughter to the king of that Country, and then returned into England with great riches, and much honour.

This time of peace betwixt England, & other nations, bried some quarrelling betwixt the King and the Pope, who vsurped too too much authority and iurisdiction within this Realme. Wherefore (to preuent such mischiefes as this intolerable sufferance might beget) in a Parliament (vpon graue and great aduice) it was enacted, That the Popes pretended authority within this kingdom should cease and be determined: and that no appeale for any matter, or cause whatsoeuer, should from thenceforth bee made to the See of Rome; vpon the penalty of a *premunire*, which did extend to perpetuall imprisonment, and to the forfeiture of the Lands and Goods of such, as (contrary to that law) presumed to offend.

In the seuenteenth yeare of king *Richards* Reigne, his faire and vertuous Queene *Anne* died.

And about two yeares after, the king married the Lady *Isabel*, daughter to the French king *Charles* the sixth. By reason whereof a peace

a peace was concluded betwix those two kings, to endure for thirtie yeeres. And king Richard (being too kinde, but too little aduised) of his owne accord, and free will, surrendred and gaue vp to the Duke of Brittain, the strong Towne & Castle of Brest: which very much grieved and discontented his Nobility, especially his Vncle Thomas of Woodstocke Duke of Gloucester; who told him plainly, that it was not conuenient, that (withour blowes, with the said Duke of Brittain) he should haue departed with that strong Towne and Castle, which his Ancestors had wonne with the expence of much blood. Whereat the king was so much displeased, that in his heart hee causelessly vowed seuerall reuenge: and in this his hasty passion he was abused, and furthered by such of his Favourite as enuid the estate, the vertues, and honour of the Duke, causing strangers to informe the king (flatteringly, & maliciously) that ouers of the Princes, Electors intended to haue made him Emperour, had not some others of them gain-said it, and alledged that hee was altogether vnfit, to gouerne the dispersed Seignories, and Dominions of the Empire, who could not rule and command his owne subjects at home. The greedy desire which king Richard had, to bee magnified, and made great, by being dignified with the name and power of the Empire: and his strong reliance vpon the vntrue report, which was suggested vnto him by such as only endeoured to whet his anger against his Lords, armed him with subtilty, and with hearty desire to circumsure his Barons, though it were done with the breach of his oath, and with the shipwracke of his honour. So that (pretending much loue and fauour towards them: but especially to the Duke of Gloucester his Vncle, and to the two Earles of Arundell & Warwicke) he caused them to bee apprehended, when (as they imagined) they had least cause to feare. And hauing so done, hee assembled his High Court of Parliament. In which his basest and his grossest flatterers, the speaker of the Lower House, named Sir Iohn Buss, who was a man of a most proud, insolent, and aspiring spirit, irreligiously, profanely, and dishonestly (in a formal and in a tedious speech) ascribed vnto the king the highest titles of diuine honour: and therefore condemned (almost to Hell) all such, as traitorously had conspired against his Maiesty. Among whom hee particularly impeached Thomas Lord Archbishop of Cantebury, being next vnto the king: who made no answer at all thereto, because the king himselfe (vnder pretence of more than ordinary loue and fauour) had privately enioyned him vnto silence, and vnto a future absence from that Assembly: promising, and protesting, that nothing should

K. Richard
marrieth the
French Kings
daughter.
A Peace for
thirty yeeres.
Brest is
yielded vp.
The Duke of
Gloucester re-
prooues the
King for it.
The death of
the Duke of
Gloucester the
Kings Vncle
is plotted.
Machi-
uillians policy,
Ambition
makes enuie
Prooves con-
fident that
their Kernes
doe deserve
much.
The King
intendeth the
destruction of
his Barons:
being galled
with an vn-
true report.
Cantebury
Lord is im-
peached.
A Parlia-
ment.
A grosse
flattering
Speaker.
The Archb-
shop of Can-
terbury is ac-
cused of
Treason.
How the king
wronged the
Archbishop.

He is ban-
ished.
Warwicke,
and Arundell
are condem-
ned to Tray-
tors.
Arundell is
beheaded.
Salisbury is
banished, and
dies miser-
ably.

The Duke of
Glocester
murdered in
Callice, by
Thomas
Mowbray
Earle of No-
thingham.
A new Par-
liament is
graunt (as it
was wont to
be) by the
Commons.

The King
will be called
Prince of
Cheshire.

Cr. earles of
Nobles.

should be attempted, or done against him by any meanes. Yet notwithstanding (for want of his presence, and of his answer to the said vnttrue objections) he was (with the kings consent) banished this Realme. And the two Earles of Arundell, and of Warwicke, were also condemned of High Treason: and shortly after, the former of those two lost his head. And so had Thomas Mowbray Earle of Warwicke, if (by his humble confession of things vnttrue, and vpon his great submission) hee had not procured a mitigation of his punishment. For hee was confined into the Ile of Wight: where (contrary to the Kings promise) hee endured such misery, and was so grievously oppressed, with the griefe which hee sustained by reason of his great wants, that he quickly dyed.

But the good Duke of Glocester the Kings Vncle, (being vntreated) was sent to Callice: where (according to the Kings directions) Thomas Mowbray Earle of Nottingham (between two feather beds) caused him to bee smothered to death; for which good seruice, he was afterwards made a Duke.

This being done, the king procured the Vpper and the Lower Houses of Parliament, to make an example without precedent, by granting full and absolute authority vnto six or eight such persons as he should nominate, finally to determine all such causes (and to enaie them) as then remained vndecided, and not ended there. This was not only made him proud: but (to serue his present turnes) he nominated for that purpose, such, as (to please his humour) decreed many things which were dishonourable to the King, and hurtfull to the Common weale.

The king also, to please his Guard (who for the most part were Cheshire men of ordinary parentage, and of base birth) caused himselfe (very ridiculously) to be stiled *Prince of Cheshire*: as if it had beene more honourable for him to be such a Prince, than to be the King and Monarch of the whole Realme.

And (to add more strength and liking vnto those things which then were done amiss) the king bestowed many honourable dignities vpon some of his best liked Noblemen.

So that his Cousin *Bartholomew* (sonne and here apparent to the kings fourth Vncle) Duke of Lancaster, & who was at that time Earle of Derby, was by him created Duke of Hereford: his Cousin *Edward* (being Earle of Rutland) was created Duke of Aumearke: and *Thomas Mowbray* Earle of Nottingham, was made Marshall of England and Duke of Norfolk: and the Earle of Kent, was created Duke of Surrey: and

Sir

Sir John Holland his brother, being Earle of Huntington, was made Duke of Exeter: and the Earle of Somerset was created Marquesse Dorset: & the Lord Spencer, was made Earle of Gloucester: the Lord Nevill Earle of Westmerland: the Lord William Scrope Earle of Wiltshire: & the Lord Percie was created Earle of Worcester: & vpon all these, he bestowed many great Lordships, Mannors, & large reuenues, which of late did belong to his muredred Vncle Thomas of Woodstock, sometimes Duke of Gloucester; and vnto the said two deceased Earles of Arundell, and of Warwicke.

He also granted his free pardon to all offenders whatsoeuer: fifteen only excepted, whom he would not nominate. By which vngodly and craftie policy, hee hedged his Nobility round about with continuall feare, and made them most seruite, and most base. For if any one of them in any high measure had offended him, he would then pronounce him to be one of those fifteen, who were excepted out of his free and generall pardon; and then would put his life vpon tryall, for supposed and surmised Treason.

It happened about this time, that Henrie Bullinbrooke Duke of Hartford, and Cousin to the king, was much grieued daily to heare such slanderous reports, as were too commonly noyed of the king; partly vpon his too much liberty, which beyond the Lawes hee challenged in the course of his Gouvernement; and partly by reason of his vniust, and vnskilfull managing of the weighty affaires, and busineses of his Kingdome. And though affection (by meanes of his neere consanguinity with the king) moued him heartily to wish for, and to desire a present reformation of those euills: yet could hee not better deuise, how hee might effect that which hee so much craved, than by making vse of his great familiarity, and acquaintance with Thomas Mowbray Duke of Norfolk; who had an extraordinary interest in the kings fauour. Whereupon (very priuately, and in great secrecy, as vnto a most kind and louing friend) he imparted the causes of his griefe in that behalfe vnto the said Duke: and earnestly entreated him (vpon fit opportunity, and at his leasure, and as from himselfe) seriously to informe the king of the said reports, and (withall) to entreate his Hignesse, to extend more grace, and more fauour, to those Lords, who (for his honour, and the Kingdomes good) had both incurred his displeasure, and also were (with too much extremity) condemned of High Treason.

But the Duke of Norfolk (who more respected his owne preferment, than the kings honour, and strongly presumed that hee

A crafty Pardon, which enabled the King to much mischief.

ANNO 22.

The Kings Cousin desires reformation in the King by his friend Tho. Mowbray Duke of Norfolk, whom the King did fauour extraordinarily.

*A false, and
an unfaith-
full friend.*

had now gotten fit meanes to aduance himselfe, by his friends fall) related all his sayings to the king, in the rudest, and most viciuill manner which he could deuise; and added many things to his relation, which were vntreue, and neuer spoken, thereby aggravating an offence, which was not committed, and incensing the king with high indignation to vow reuenge and punishment, when the Duke of Hartfords fideliry, & loyall seruice, deserued great thanks and a good reward.

*The King is
angry.
The Duke of
Hartford an-
swers for
himselfe.*

The king was so much vexed and enraged by meanes of these ridings, that nothing could giue him any contentment in any thing; vntill his Cousin the Duke had made his answer thereunto. And, being sharply pressed thereto by the king, Such things, as in that secret and friendly manner, hee had desired might, hee reformed, he both confessed and iustified. But the vntreue suggestions, which falsly and maliciously were added, he denied. And to cleare himselfe of them, hee challenged the Duke of Norfolke to a single Combate; which was by him accepted; and consented vnto by the king. But when the appointed day was come, and the two Dukes were within the Lists, readily prepared, and aduanced themselves each toward the other, for the encounter: The king would not permit them to proceed, but banished the Duke of Norfolke for euer, who shortly after dyed at Venice; and his Cousin, the Duke of Hartford, he exiled for fixe yeares.

*The Combate
challenged
and accepted.*

Banishment.

*King Charles
the sixth.*

Whereupon hee sayled into France; and was honourably receiued by king Charles the sixth, Father to the Queene of England, king Richards wife: who so effectually iustified him in his said actions and doings, and so highly affected his Descent, his Personage, his Wisdome, his Vertues, and his right Noble Conditions, that hee would haue bestowed vpon him in marriage the Daughter of his Vncle, the Duke of Berrie, if his Sonne-in-law king Richard (by extraordinary sollicitations, and by vnusuall meanes) had not beene the hinderer thereof.

*Iohn of
Gaunt dieth.*

Not long after this Dukes Banishment, his father Iohn of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster & Vncle to the king, died: the descent of which Duchie, would haue made the said Duke a potent Prince. But the king (refreshing his humours with new practises of secret reuenge, and that hee might keepe him low) vniustly seized vpon all the Lordships, and Possessions, belonging to that Duchie, and vpon all the moucables of his said deceased Vncle, and shared and distributed them among his Sycophants, and wicked Counsellours. Which tyrannous, & wrongfull dealing, so much displeased his

*The King
wrongeth
Henry the
new Duke of
Lancaster.*

his Vncle the Duke of York, and his Cousin the Duke of Almarle; that presently they left the Kings Court, and retyred themselves to their owne houses.

At this time king Richard was wholly misled, and lewdly directed in all his doings and negotiations, by his principall fauourites, Sir William Scrope Earle of Wiltshire, Sir John Bussy, Sir James Bagot, & Sir Henrie Greene: by whose aduice (without the consent of his priue Counsellors of Estate) he leuied a strong Army; farmed to them, for certaine yeares, his whole Kingdome, and all his Reuenues belonging thereunto; and sayled into Ireland: where hee behaued himselfe so valiantly, that hee subdued that rebelling Nation, and by his seuerity, hee compelled them to bee willing to obey.

But in his absence, his banished Cousin, Henrie of Bullingbrooke Duke of Hartford & of Lancaster, together with his old friend and exiled companion, Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, returned into England, to make clayme to his Duchie of Lancaster. His first landing was in the North: where, such was the singular loue and the great affection of the Noble men and of the common sort of people towards him, partly in regard of his noblenesse and vertues, and partly in regard of the Kings disordered courses in his government; that they all (with extraordinary chearefulness and acritie) flocked vnto him, well armed, and in great troupes: So that within few dayes his Companies were increased to a strong Armie, with which hee marched peaceably, and in good order, vnto London, and was receiued, entertained, and settled there, with much honour and great ioy. And from thence hee went into the Westerne parts of this Kingdome; the people (in all places where hee came) being heartily gladdened, with much contentment, with his doings.

But in the meane time, king Richard (who was returned, and had quickly leuied great forces, which hee conducted against the Duke) perceiuing that euery day his subjects fled from him, and voluntarily offered their seruice to the Duke; and being certainly informed, that Sir William Scrope Earle of Wiltshire, Sir John Bussy, and Sir Henrie Greene (three of his wicked Counsellors, and vpon whom hee most of all relied) were taken, and had lost their heads: despairing of any safety to be gained by force and violence; of his owne accord he came vnto his Cousin the Duke of Lancaster, confessed publicly his owne insufficiency and weakenesse to rule and to gouerne well, praysed the Dukes rare and singular vertues, and his absolute worthinesse to bee a king, and proffered to make him

Edmund of Langley and Edward his sonne.

More wicked Counsellors to the King.

Scrope, Bussy, Bagot, Greene.

The King farmeth his Kingdome, and sayleth into Ireland.

The lawfull cust him his Crowne and his life.

ANNO 23. The Duke of Lancaster landeth in England.

His companies encrease to a strong Armie.

He is receiued into London.

He goeth into the West.

King Richard returneth.

He rayseth an Army: which shrinketh daily.

Three of the wicked Counsellors were beheaded.

The Kings submission and offers to the Duke.

*A faint re-
fusall.*

*The King is
sent to the
Tower.*

*The Duke
summoneth
a Parliament*

an absolute Surrender of his whole Kingdome, if hee would accept thereof.

But the Duke (though hee much affected the wearing of a Crowne; yet, because hee hoped, that the fauour of the Nobilitie, Gentry, and of the common People, would freely cast that Burthen and Dignity vpon him, with greater safety, and assurance of continuance) refused to accept thereof: and protesting (with many pleasing speeches) That he onely desired to enioy his owne Patrimonie, and to reforme such things as were amisse; hee caused the King (with very honourable and respectiue attendance) to be guarded to the Tower of London: and then hee assembled a Parliament, in which (among sundry other things) were publicly proposed these ensuing Articles, concerning the euill Government of the King.

Articles proposed in Parliament against the King.

1. **I** Nprimis, That he would not permit the said Duke of Hartford (who was so much wronged for his good aduice and counsell touching the Kings Government) to fight the Combate against the falsely accusing Thomas Mowbray Duke of Norfolke, and yet banished him vniustly for sixe yeares.
2. Item, That albeit vnder the Great Seale of his Kingdome he had licensed the said Duke of Hartford, at his departure out of England, to make his Atturney to proceed for him in his causes of Law: yet (he being gone) the King would not permit any man to deale for him in his absence.
3. Item, That very vnecharitably he prohibited all his Nobilitie, and all others, to be sutors vnto him for the said Duke of Hartfords returne from his vniust banishment, vpon the forfeiture of their liues and goods.
4. Item, That after the death of Iohn of Gaunt, the Kings Vncle, father to the said Duke, and Duke of Lancaster, hee had wrongfully seized into his hands all his mouables whatsoever,

foener, and had diuided and shared them among his grace-
lesse, and wicked Counsellors, and had also (by like iniu-
stice) seized all the possessions of the said Duchie of Lan-
caster (which rightfully did belong to the said Duke of
Hartford) into his owne hands, and kept the profits thereof
to his owne use.

5. Item, That colourably, as a good friend to Thomas Arun-
del Archbishop of Cantuarbie (who was falsly accused of
high Treason to the King, as he sate next to him in the higher
house of Parliament) hee perswaded the said Archbishop to
make no answer at all in defence of the said accusation, nor
repaire any more to the same house: protesting, that neither
the said accusation, nor his silence, nor his absence, should
be hurtfull or preiudiciall onto him: and yet banished him
out of the Realme, not hauing examined the said surmised
(treason.)

6. Item, That whereas his Chancellor had refused (in an con-
troversie matter) to grant a prohibition vnder the Great Seale
of England; the King himselfe (to peruert the due course
of Iustice and of Right) granted the said prohibition vnder
his priuie Seale, and straitly required, that it should be exe-
cuted, and obeyed.

7. Item, That most unnaturally and cruelly he had procured
Thomas Mowbray to smother to death, betwixt two feather-
beds, the Kings most noble and most renowned Vncle Tho-
mas of Woodstock, Duke of Gloucester, when (wrongfully,
and without any good cause) hee was a prisoner at Callice:
and afterwards dignified the said murderer; first, with the
Barlondome of Nottingham; then, with the Office of the Mar-
shall of all England: and last of all, made him Duke of
Norfolk; he being altogether unworthy of so great honour.

8. Item, That the King (to further his last Expedition for Ire-
land) without law, & without iustice, tooke from the Clergie
the Religiouse houses, great store of many plate, jewels,
and rich ornaments; not hauing the owners consent for doe.

- 9 Item, That in the same iourney, without the approbation of his Counsell of Estate, hee carried with him into Ireland the plate, and rich iewels, belonging to the Crowne, which might haue tended to the great inpowerishment of this Realme.
- 10 Item, That in euery Shire he had secret Intelligencers, vpon whose bare information that any man had repined at the Kings bad gouernment, the party so accused (without examination or triall) was enforced to procure his pardon by the payment of a grieuous fine.
- 11 Item, That by the lewd aduice of his wicked Counsellors, hee had deuised many subtile and craftie Oathes, by meanes whereof manie of his honest Subiects had beene rōdone.
- 12 Item, That by the like aduice and counsel, he procured Russians, and desperate companions, to accuse rich (but weake) men, of sundry falsly-supposed crimes, and imagined offences, and by meanes thereof, enforced them to redeeme the combate with much mony.
- 13 Item, That he gaue large gifts vnto wicked and lewd companions, who (maliciously to aduance their owne Estates) animated him against diuers of his Barons, who onely desired a good reformation of his euill gouernment; and imposed diuers Taxes vpon his people, to enrich them.
- 14 Item, That hee had procured such Records to be cancelled, and imbeselled, as testified his extortions, and his oppressions vniustly imposed vpon his people.
- 15 Item, That hee had oftentimes said, that the Lawes of his Kingdome were in his owne breast; and that (vpon this opinion) hee had put to death many of his noble men, and some of his inferior subiects without iust cause.
- 16 Item, That most of his writings, and letters vnto forraigne Princes and Estates, were so crafty, ambiguous, doubtfull, and vncertaine; that they could not relye confidently vpon any thing which he had written.

17 Item,

- 17 Item, That in his Parliament bolden in the one and twentieth yeare of his Reigne, his Cheshire Guard (who onely were permitted and suffered to weare weapons) committed many Robberies and Murders, and yet not one of them was punished or reprovued for the same.
- 18 Item, That (to insinuate fauour with those loose, and lewd companions) the King had basely, and fondly, dishonoured his High Estate and Soueraigntie, by entitling himselfe The Prince of Cheshire.
- 19 Item, That whereas, in the same Parliament, sundry great Lords intended liberally, and dutifully to haue spoken of such things as were not well ordered, to the end that they might haue beene reformed: the King in such sort threatened them, that for feare of ensuing dangers they held themselves silent, and spake not at all.
- 20 Item, That hee exacted great fines from the wealthiest of his Subiects, for adhering to the Barons; notwithstanding that in full Parliament he had before granted them his free pardon.
- 21 Item, That by himselfe, and his owne authority, he had displaced diuers Burgeesses of the Parliament; and had placed such other in their roomes, as would better fit, and serue his owne turne.
- 22 Item, That contrarie to his solemnne Oath, and Instrument in writing vnder the Great Seale of his Kingdome, He had not onely disallowed the Commission, granted in the same Parliament to the thirteene Lords, to enquire of, and to reforme the great abuses, and the apparant misgouernment of the Common-Weale, But also had exiled, beheaded, and otherwise executed, diuers Noble Men, and others, who for the Kings honour, and for the safety and welfare of the Common-Weale, had procured the said Commission, or had executed the said Authority, according to the trust and confidence in them reposed.
- 23 Item,

23 Item, That whereas hee had caused certaine Lawes in the same Parliament to bee made for his owne gaine, and to setue his owne turne, he procured the Popes Bulles to curse such as should withstand, or disobey them: which thing greatly tended to the derogation of his Crowne, and was done expressely against his owne law made against the Authoritie of the Pope within this Realme but seven yeeres before.

24 Item, That hee had displaced lawfull and good Shiriffes, and had elected others, whom he suffered to continue and to hold the said Office, two yeeres together and more, because their vniust oppressions augmented and encreased his guine.

King Richard confesseth all the Articles.

He resignes his Crowne. K Richard is deposed.

Henry Duke of Lancaster is made King. Thomas Arundel restored to the Archbishopprick of Canterbury.

King Richard is cruelly murdered

He was very valiant.

The transcript of all these Articles and Obiections, were (by both the Houses of Parliament) authentically sent vnto the king: who not onely confessed them to be true, and acknowledged his owne insufficiency to rule and to gouerne better; but also by a plaine, and exact instrument in writing vnder his hand and Seale, hee resigned his Crowne and Kingdom to his Cousin *Henry of Bullinbrooke* Duke of Lancaster: which being read publickly, and beeing generally ratified, approoued and confirmed by the Lords Spirituall and Temporall, and by the Commons in the same Parliament assembled; they deposed king *Richard*, and made the said Duke king. And his true, and faithfull friend, and his companion in Banishment, *Thomas Arundel* Archbishop of Canterbury (being then and there restored to his place and dignitie) installed the said *Henry* in the kingly Throne. And the late king *Richard* was sent to Pomfret Castle, there to bee safely kept, and with Princely honour to bee maintained: but verie shortly after (by the new kings direction and commandement; who feared lest his Estate might bee shaken, so long as *Richard* liued) hee was wickedly and villanously assaulted in his Lodging, by *Sir Pierce Exton*, and eight other armed men: from one of which (with a Princely courage) hee wrested a browne Bill, and therewith slew foure of his mischieuous and vngodly Assailants: and with admirable resolution fought with all the rest; vntill comming by his owne Chaire (in which the base Cowardly Knight himselfe stood for his owne safety) hee was by him

him stricken with a Polle-axe in the hinder part of his head: so
that presently he fell downe and dyed. And thus was he wic-
kedly and treacherously murdered, and his body bu-
ried at Langley: but was (afterwards) re-
moued vnto Westminster,
where it now
lieth.

*Though he
were an euill
King, yet no
religion war-
ranted these
vniust pro-
ceedings.*



THE

him thrown with a Pollaxe in the hinder part of his head: so
that presently he fell down and dyed. And thus was he wit-
nessed and manifestly murdered, and his body bu-
ried at Langley: but was afterwards re-
moued vnto Westminster,
where it now
lieth.

Though he
was a man
of great
religion
and
wisdom
yet he
was
cruel



THE



THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE

THE FOURTH.



ALTHOUGH the Crown of England, in right (if *Richard* the deposed king should dye without issue) was by succession to descend vnto *Edmund Mortimer* Earle of March (the Son and Heire of *Edmund Mortimer*, by *Philip* his wife, who was the daughter and heire of *Lionel* Duke of Clarence, the third sonne of *Edward* the Third :) Yet his Cousin *Henrie* of *Bullinbrooke* Duke of Hartford, and sonne and heire vnto *John* of *Gaunt* the younger brother of the said *Lionel*, was elected and crowned King. And forthwith he created his eldest son *Henrie*, Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, and Earle of Chester: and summoned his High Court of Parliament, in which an order was prescribed and set downe, for the safe keeping, and for the honourable attendance, and mainraining of *Richard* the late king. But his deposing, imprisonment, and all the former proceedings which were had against him, were in the same Assembly publikely condemned and reprovod by *John* Bishop of Carlile, as hatefull vnto God, trayterous towards the wronged king, and infamous among good men. For he auerted boldly, That if he were not a good king, yet more iniury was done vnto him than ordinarily is done to Murderers, and to Thieves: because they are not (as hee was) condemned, before they had made their an-

ANNO I.
1399

*John Bishop
of Carlile
condemnes
the former
proceedings
against King
Richard.*

*The Bishop of
Carlisle is at-
tached.*

*The Crown is
Entayled.*

*Treason plot-
ted, so he all-
ed at Oxford.*

*The confede-
rates.*

*The Treason
was strangely
discovered.*

*The Duke of
Aumarle
confesseth all
to the King.*

answer to the objected crime, before Iudges which were indiffe-
rent, and pronounced their iudgement vpon good prooffe. But
as soone as hee had ended his speech: he was attached by the Earle
Marshall; & committed to strait Prison in the Abbey of Saint Al-
bons. And then (among many other things in the same Parliament
done) the Crowne of England was entailed to King *Henrie*, and to
his Heires for ever.

As soone as this Parliament was ended, such of the greatest
Lords, as made the fairest shew of publike applause and ioy, for
the High dignity which king *Henrie* did possesse; conspired by
Treason to take away his life, at a solemne Iusts to be holden in the
City of Oxford: whereunto the king was invited, and promised
to bee present, because he conceiued, that the same Triumph was
so appointed for his honour, and for his delight.

This Treachery was cunningly plotted and contriued by the
Conspirators: who by Indentures vnder their hands and seales,
had bound themselves each vnto other, both for secrecy, and also
for the resolute effecting and performing thereof; all which they
solemnly confirmed by their Oathes.

The Confederates in this Treason, were the kings Cousin
German, *Edward Plantagenet* Duke of Aumarle, sonne and heire
apparent to *Edmund of Langley* Duke of Yorke; *Thomas Holland*
Duke of Surrey; and *John Holland* his brother, Duke of Exeter,
both which were halfe brothers to king *Richard*; *John Mountagen*
Earle of Salisbury; *Hugh Spencer* Earle of Gloucester; Sir *Thomas*
Blunt; and one *Magdalen*, who was sometimes a Chamber-wayter
to the deposed king, and both in stature, and in countenance, and
in his behauiour, was not much vnlike him.

All these Conspirators (the Duke of Aumarle only excep-
ted) met at Oxford, at the appointed time, being strongly guarded,
and honourably attended, by lusty Archers, and other valiant
men. But the absence of the said Duke, was (by his Associates)
wondred at: for which there was good cause. For as hee sat at
Table with the Duke his Father, one Labell of a part of the said
Indentures appeared at his bosome: by which, the old Duke
drew forth the whole writing. And hauing read the same; hee
caused his Horse to be made ready, because he intended (with all
poasting speed) to make this newes knowne vnto the king. But his
guilty, and perplexed Sonne (perceiuing that his Father would
reueale this secret) and knowing that now the least delay might
extraordinarily hasten his danger: being branelly mounted (with all
celerity) he out-rode his Father, & came to Windfor Castle to the
king

King (who was preparing for his said journey) and without any tedious discourse, or lingring ceremonies, hee reuealed to his Maie-
stie the whole conspired Treason; and freely obtained his owne
pardon.

It now behooued the king to change his course: and so hee did.
For presently he rode to the Tower of London: where he tooke a
present and a persit view of all such things, as were behoofesfull,
and necessarie to an Armie.

And then he leuied a strong power: purposing to defend him-
selfe, and to surpris those grand Traitours, if he might. But when
the Conspirators were informed, that all their Plot and Treason
was reuealed: They caused the said *Magdalen* to bee attired in
Royall Robes; and to faine, and affirme himselfe, to be king *Rich-
ard*. And with him, & all their Troupes (which were very war-
like and strong) they marched towards London: resolving to op-
pose themselves in the field against the king.

But king *Henrie* (knowing that those Lords, both in bloud, and
for their power, were more than ordinarily great) was not igno-
rant, that his best meanes to repress, and vanquish them, consisted
in the quickest expedition and dispatch, which hee could make.
Wherefore (with a bold and with a kingly courage) hee marched
speedily towards them, with twentie thousand well-armed
men.

The newes of the kings approach being voyced among the com-
panies, which were conducted by the Conspiratours; so perplexed,
and so amazed them, that very cowardly they ranne away, and
left those Lords comfortlesse, and destitute of all aide. So that the
most of them were apprehended; and not long after were put to
death, in sundry places of this kingdome: and the rest (being sur-
charged, and ouer-burdened with feare, and sorrow) not long after
dyed.

Thus was king *Henry* happily deliuered from this danger. And
lest the like Treason for king *Richards* sake might at another time
bee attempted against his person: he caused him to bee murdered
in the Castle of Pomfret; as in the end of the discourse describing
his Reigoe, and Historie, more particularly it doth appeare. When
the French king *Charles* the sixt, Father-in-law to king *Richard*, was
truely informed what had been done in England: hee was much
griued at the vn-sufferable wrongs which were done vnto him;
and did intend (as a faithfull friend in his extremities) to relieue his
lamentable estate, and (to be pitied) miseries. And for that pur-
pose he sent his letters of defiance to king *Henry*: and brought an

*He is parda-
ned.*

*The King
raiseth an ar-
mie.*

*Magdalen
was King Ri-
chards coun-
terfeit.*

*The King
marcheth to-
wards the
Traitors.*

*The Traite-
rous Lords
are left, by
their compa-
nions.*

*The Lords fly
and are taken
and executed.*

*Charles the
sixt, resol-
meth to relieue
his Sonne in-
law King Ri-
chard.*

*He desisteth
when he bea-
reth of King
Richards
death.*

*A French
Armie.
An English
Armie.*

*The French
King giveth
over his en-
terprise.*

*Marriages
with France
are seldome
fortunate.*

*Owen Glen-
dor rebelleth.*

*Edmund
Mortimer
taken and
sharply im-
prisoned.*

Armie Royal into Piccardy, with which he resolved to make sharp War within this Realme.

But when hee certainly knew, that the poore, distressed, and afflicted king, was dead, and that it was too late to doe him any good: he dissolued his Armie; and proceeded no further in that businesse. Yet to reuenge those wrongs; hee was very hopefull to surprise many Townes, Cities, and Castles in Aquitaine, and in Guyan. And, to effect the same, not long after hee leuied other Forces; encreasing them to a great Armie. And king *Henry* (to withstand him) did the like. But the English Armie (standing in those Countries before the French king was in a readinesse: and being boldly commanded and conducted by the Lord *Perce*, Earle of Worcester, vnto Sir *Thomas Knowles* the king of Englands Lieutenant there: and they hauing taken the fealrie, and the homage of the Lords of those Prouinces, for their obedience, and alleaied vnto king *Henry*;) caused the French king to change his mind dishonourably to disband all such companies as hee had. Yet for all this, king *Henry* (still distrusting the weakened vsurped title, and endeavouring to support it with a more solid foundation) entreated the French king *Charles* the sixt, to giue in marriage his daughter *Isabel* (sometime king *Richards* wife) to his eldest sonne *Henry*, Prince of Wales. But her father (observing that marriages betwixt England & France were but seldome fortunate) denied the kings request, wherupon, she was conueyed into France with Princely attendance, and great honour. And not long after she was married to her Cousin *Charles*, the eldest sonne of *Lewes* Duke of Orleance, her Vncle.

The aforesaid Treason conspired against the king by the aforesaid Lords; and the late preparations of the French king, first to haue inuaded the kingdome of England, and secondly, to haue wrought wonders in Aquitaine, and in Guyan: and the frequent speeches which euery where were vttered touching the manner of the kings attaining to the Crowne; animated the Welchmen, and the Scots, to shew themselves troublesome neighbours vnto the King.

For in Wales, *Owen Glendor* (a bold Squire) with many hundreds of his lawlesse and vnciuill companions, entred into Armes, and did much harme in the Marches which bordered neere vnto them. Against whom, the Lord *Gray* of Ruthen, and *Edmund Mortimer* (who was the true and rightfull heire of the Crowne) conducted their Forces, and fought with him. But they both were taken Prisoners: and the said *Edmund* was by him kept close in a darke Dungeon,

geon, which was both cold and vnhealhy; where hee was overburdened with daily wants, and much misery. All which were with the greater extremitie laid vpon him, because king Henry, his Cousin, should be enforced the sooner to redeme him with a great Ransome. Wherein (because the king was too too slacke and negligent) he was entreated and vrged by his Lords, but especially by the distressed Earle kinfinne the *Percies*. But vnto them all he turned the deafe eare: rather desiring his destruction, than holding it safe for him to set him free.

The King would not redeme him.

The Scots also invaded the Northerne parts of this kingdome: but king Henry, with a puissant Armie, came into their Country; and retenged his wrongs every where, with fire, and sword, at his true pleasure. But (because the Winter was extraordinarily wet, cold) he dissolved his Armie, and with great honour, victoriously returned backe.

The Scots invaded.

The king cutteth them.

As soon as he was gone, the angry Scots (being in number about a thousand at the least) entered with barbarous crueltie into the Northumbers, but were gallantly encountred by the *Hot-spurre*, the sonne and heire apparant of Henry the first of that Prouince: who (with tenne thousand lustie and valiant men) gaue the Scots such a bloody overthrow, that hee slew more than ten thousand in the field, and tooke aboue fiftie hundred Prisoners; among whom *Mordaunts Earle of Fyffe*, *Archibald Earle Douglass*, *Thomas Earle of Murray*, and *Robert Earle of Angus*, were the chiefe.

The Scots againe do invade.

Henry Hot-spurre overthroweth them. His great Prisoners.

The next yeare following, the French King sent for Wales (to assist Owen Glendor in his rebellious enterprises) twelue hundred Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of good account, that they might be leaders, and directors, to those disordered Traytors. But the windes (not being answerable to their desires) were so contrarie at the Sea, and a storme so violently increased: that twelue of their greatest ships, with all their men & furniture, were swallowed into the Sea, & the rest, with great difficultie, returned into France.

ANNO 7.
The Frenchmen spoiled by a storme at Sea.

This misfortune so animated the English Nation, that they began (every where) to talke of and to iest at the French king: because all his warlike expeditions had still beene vnfortunate and disastrous; and though they threatned much, yet alwaies they vanished as a cloude. The report whereof so whetted and exasperated his resolutions, to do some memorable seruice: that forthwith he sent vnto the said rebelling Welchmen, an army of twelue thousand men; who safely landed, and ioyned with ten thousand of that Nation.

The English doe divide the French.

Twelve thousand Frenchmen sent into Wales.

*He desisteth
when he hea-
reth of King
Richards
death.*

*A French
Armie.
An English
Armie.*

*The French
King giueth
ouer his en-
terprise.*

*Marriages
with France
are seldome
fortunate.*

*Owen Glen-
dor rebelleth.*

*Edmund
Mortimer
taken and
sharply im-
prisoned.*

Armie Royal into Piccardy, with which he resolved to make sharp War within this Realme.

But when hee certainly knew, that the poore, distressed, and afflicted king, was dead, and that it was too late to doe him any good: he dissolued his Armie; and proceeded no further in that businesse. Yet to reuenge those wrongs; hee was very hopefull to surprise many Townes, Cities, and Castles in Aquitaine, and in Guyan. And, to effect the same, not long after hee leuied other Forces; encreasing them to a great Armie. And king *Henrie* (to withstand him) did the like. But the English Armie (standing in those Countries before the French king was in a readinesse: and being boldly commanded and conducted by the Lord *Perce*, Earle of Worcester, vnto Sir *Thomas Knowles* the king of Englands Lieutenant there: and they hauing taken the seacie, and the homage, of the Lords of those Prouinces, for their obedience, and alleageance vnto king *Henrie*: caused the French king to change his mind, and dishonourably to disband all such companies as hee had leuied. Yet for all this, king *Henrie* (still distrusting the weakenesse of his vsurped title, and endeavouring to support it with a more sure foundation) entreated the French king *Charles* the sixt, to giue in marriage his daughter *Isabel* (sometime king *Richards* wife) vnto his eldest sonne *Henrie*, Prince of Wales. But her father (observing that marriages betwixt England & France were but seldome fortunate) denied the kings request, wherupon, she was conueyed into France with Princely attendance, and great honour. And not long after she was married to her Cousin *Charles*, the eldest sonne of *Lewes* Duke of Orleance, her Vncle.

The afore said Treason conspired against the king by the afore said Lords; and the late preparations of the French king, first to haue inuaded the kingdome of England, and secondly, to haue wrought wonders in Aquitaine, and in Guyan: and the frequent speeches which euery where were vttered touching the manner of the kings attaining to the Crowne; animated the Welchmen, and the Scots, to shew themselues troublesome neighbours vnto the King.

For in Wales, *Owen Glendwr* (a bold Squire) with many hundreds of his lawlesse and vnciuill companions, entred into Armes, and did much harme in the Marches which bordered neere vnto them. Against whom, the Lord *Gray* of Ruthen, and *Edmund Mortimer* (who was the true and rightfull heire of the Crowne) conducted their Forces, and fought with him. But they both were taken Prisoners: and the said *Edmund* was by him kept close in a darke Dungeon,

geon, which was both cold and vnhealy; where hee was overburdened with dailie wants, and much miserie. All which were with the greater extremitie laid vpon him, because king *Henry*, his Cousin, should be enforced the sooner to redeeme him with a great Ransome. Wherin (because the king was too too slacke and negligent) he was entreated and vrged by his Lords, but especially by the distressed *Earle* kinsmen the *Perreys*. But vnto them all he turned the deafe eare: rather desiring his destruction, than holding it safe for him to set him free.

The Scots also inuaded the Northerne parts of this kingdome: but king *Henry*, with a puissant Armie, cossed into their Countrey; and reuenged his wrongs euery where, with fire, and sword, at his owne pleasure. But (because the Winter was extraordinarily wet, and cold) he dissolved his Armie; and with great honour, victoriously he returned backe.

But as soone as he was gone, the angry Scots (being in number twentie thousand at the least) entred with barbarous crueltie into England vpon the Northumbers, but were gallantly encountered by Sir *Henry Hot-spurre*, the sonne of heire apparant of *Henry Perre*, Earle of that Prouince: who (with tenne thousand lustie and brauer men) gaue the Scots such a bloody overthrow, that hee slew of them more than ten thousand in the field, and tooke aboute fiftie hundred Prisoners; among whom *Mordache* Earle of *Fyffe*, *Archibald* Earle *Douglasse*, *Thomas* Earle of *Murrie*, and *Robert* Earle of *Argus*, were the chiefe.

The next yeare following, the French King sent for Wales (to assist *Owen Glendower* in his rebellious enterprises) twelue hundred Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of good account, that they might be leaders, and directors, to thole disordered Traytors. But the windes (not being answerable to their desires) were so contrarie at the Sea, and a storme so violently increased: that twelue of their greatest ships, with all their men & furniture, were swallowed into the Sea, & the rest, with great difficultie, returned into France.

This misfortune so animated the English Nation, that they began (euery where) to talke of and to iust at the French king: because all his warlike expeditions had still bene vnfortunate and disastrous; and though they threatened much, yet alwaies they vanished as a cloude. The report whereof so whetted and exasperated his resolutions, to do some memorable seruice: that forthwith he sent vnto the said rebelling Welchmen, an armie of twelue thousand men, who safely landed, and ioyned with ten thousand of that Nation.

The King
would not re-
deeme him.

The Scots in-
uaded.

The king dis-
solved his armie.

The Scots a-
gaine do in-
uade.

Henry Hot-
spurre over-
throweth
them.
His great
Prisoners.

ANNO 3.
The French-
men destroyed
by a storme
at Sea.

The English
doe deride
the French.

Twelue thou-
sand French-
men sent into
Wales.

The King
marched into
Wales.

The French
men fled to
their ships.

The King is
victorious
without
blowes.

The King
marries the
Duchesse of
Brittaine.

The King
makes great
friends a-
broad.

ANNO 3.

The King re-
quires the
Percies to de-
liver to him
their Scottish
Prisoners.
They refuse
it.

The Percies
resolved to see
Edmond
Mortimer at
liberty, and
to restore him
to the Crown.

This Armie occasioned king Henry to prepare soundly for his safety. For he was well assured, that if any neglect, or want of skil, or of courage, should give them the least advantage whatsoeuer, then his Crowne would be shaken, & many miseries would threaten his overthrow. Wherefore hee (in his owne Person) marched with a strong and with a compleat Armie into Wales. But as soon as the Frenchmen had certain notice of his coming, they thought it was high time for them to aduise what course to take. For per chance, not because they were distrustfull of their owne valour, and resolution, but because the inconstancie of that turbulent and fickle Nation, when danger did appeare, affrighted them fully with feares and with doubts, lest they would flee into the Woods, and craggie Mountaines, and forsake them, when they should craue the best performance of their helpe. And so strongly did this doubtfull feare possesse them, that suddenly, like men amazed, and heartlesse, they ran vnto their ships: and (not having performed any manner of service whatsoeuer) disgracefully, and cowardly, they returned into France.

Hereupon, the Welch Rebels (desperately shifting for themselves) fled, euery man his owne way: so that king Henry found those Trayterous multitudes dispersed, and quite vanished, and would not be fought with. Wherefore hee dissolved his great armie, and returned in peace without blowes.

Afterwards, king Henry took to wife, Jane the widow of John the deceased Duke of Brittain, and gaue Blanch (his eldest daughter) in marriage vnto William Duke of Buriert, the son and heire apparent of the Emperour Lewis of Buriert.

And (some few yeares after) hee married Philipp, his youngest daughter, with the king of Denmarke. For his daily troubles, and turmoiles at home, gaue him aduice, to make himselfe more strong, by procuring of great friends abroad.

In the third yeare of his reigne, hee required Henry Percie Earle of Worcester, Henry Percie Earle of Northumberland, & Henry Hotspurre his sonne, to deliver vnto him such Scottish Prisoners, as they had taken in those last warres. But they affirmed stoutly, That by the Lawes of Armes, and Chivalrie, those Prisoners belonged vnto them: and thereupon they refused to deliver them vnto the king. By meanes whereof, some vnkindnesse grew betwixt the king and them, which not long after was made apparant to the World. For the Percies now beganne to resolve vpon the restoring of their intralled Cousin, Edmund Mortimer Earle of March, both vnto his libertie, and also to his Crowne: and to de-

pose

poſe King *Henry*, if by any means, and undertakings, they could bring their purpoſes to paſſe. Yet for a time, they concealed their intent: and making none other ſhew but of naturall kindneſſe, and friendſhip, to the ſaid Earle, in regard of their affinity, and kindred; earneſtly prayed the king to ransome him, and to ſet him free; becauſe he was unfortunately taken in his ſervice, and was oppreſſed with much miſerie. But the king, not hearkning to their ſute; nor, indeed, deſiring that hee ſhould be enlarged: made anſwer, and cauſed it to be proclaimed, That the ſaid Earle had voluntarily cauſed himſelfe to be taken priſoner, ſo that Rebels (having him in their cuſtodie, and company) might pretend ſome colour, therewith to varniſh ſuch Conſpiracies, and Treasons, as ſecretly they had plotted, and contrived againſt his Crowne, and him: and that therefore his owne ſafetie, and his good diſcretion, gave him aduiſe and counſell, not to hearken to their motion, but to puniſh his offence.

The *Percies* (having received this anſwer, and being much grieved with the ſaid Proclamation: and being reſolved no longer to delay and to deſerre the enlargement of the ſaid Earle) paid his Ransome to *Owen Glendower*, and redeemed him at their owne coſt: and ſecretly entred into ſuch a League of friendſhip and familiaritie with *Owen Glendower*, that he faithfully promiſed to ſticke vnto them ſtoutly, whenſoever they would attempt the depoſing of king *Henry*.

And then the ſaid Lords *Percies*, being (by reaſon of their Scottiſh priſoners) aſſiſted with a multitude of warlike Scots; ioyned vnto the iurſt the Earle of *Stafford*, & *Richard Scrope* Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, brother to the beheaded Earle of *Salisbury*; and many others, who encreaſed their numbers with Engliſhmen, & purpoſed to ioyne with *Owen Glendower* and his Welch conſorts, in the depoſing of the king: againſt whom (by way of accuſation) they framed certaine Articles, which they publiſhed, and ſent them to him in writing, to this effect.

Articles againſt King HENRY.

I *Primit*, That when hee came into England from his Banishment, hee tooke an oath, only to challenge, and to recover his inheritance, and his wifes; & not to inter-

*They deſire
the King to
Ransome him.*

*The King wil
not, but accu-
ſeth him.*

ANNO 4.
*Sir Edmond
Mortimer is
Ransomed by
the Percies.*

*Owen Glen-
dower conſpires
with the Per-
cies.*

medle with the King, nor with the Crowne. By reason of which oath diuers loyal & good Subiects to King Richard, resorted vnto him, not hauing any treasonable intent. But when he perceived that his strength was so much increased, that hee might doe what hee pleased, he wickedly brake his oath, and without any title, or right, procured himselfe to be made, and to be crowned King.

1. Item, that not onely, as an Archtraitor, hee had imprisoned his naturall, and vndoubted Lord and Master, King Richard, but had caused him wickedly, and traiterously to be murdered: that with greater securitie, he might enioy his Crowne, and his Kingdome.

2. Item, that, ouer since the death of King Richard, he had vniustly kept the Kingdome, and the Crowne from his Cousin Edmund Mortimer Earle of March, who was the sonne and heire of Philip, the daughter and heire of Lionell Duke of Clarence, elder brother to Iohn of Gaunt father to the usurping King.

3. Item, that when no want or need compelled him, he had imposed diuers Subsidies, and Taxes, vpon the people, to their great grieve, and discontentment: of which they willingly would, but dared not to complaine.

4. Item, that no iustice could be expected at his hand: because (contrary to the oath which he tooke when he was crowned) he had by letters, written, and sent into sundry Shires, procured certaine Burgeships for the Parliaments, all which he bestowed vpon such as would not faile to serue his turne, when opportunitie did serue.

5. And lastly, that whereas in honour and for affinitie sake, hee ought to haue ransomed, and redeemed his said Cousin the Earle of March, from his strait and loathsome imprisonment (and the rather for that he was earnestly solicited so to doe) he not only denied the said request, but falsly, and vntuly published and proclaimed, that the Earle himselfe was of his owne accord become a voluntary Prisoner, to the

the end, that the Traitors and Rebels ioyning with him, might haue somewhat wherewith they might colour such Treasons as they would conspire against him.

For all which causes, and many others more, they utterly defied him as a Traytor, and as a Vurper, and (as an enemie) they vowed his destruction, and the restoring of the said Earle to his Right.

The king perceiuing, that nothing but strong blowes could end this strife: and being perswaded, that if hee became victorious in this Rebellion, he should bereaue all his enemies of all hope to preuaile in the like attempts; had leuiued a strong Armie: with which hee marched courageously against those Lords; hoping to meet with them before they should ioyne their forces with the Welchmen: and so great was his care, that he failed not therein of his purpose. For both their Armies met neere vnto Shrewsburie: and in their first encounter, the Scots gaue a braue onset vpon the king. But with such hardy violence hee received them, that (almost in a moment) the greatest part of them were slaine.

Yet notwithstanding, the Lords and their Armie stoutly performed their task: and fought with such admired courage and resolution, that they perswaded themselves of good successe, vntill the King and the marriall Prince his sonne (determining by honourable death rather to be subdued, than to become the laughing stocks of aduerser and froward fortune) redoubled their strength and valour, & by their particular examples each to the other, they so renewed the fight, that Sir *Henry Hotspurre*, and some others of the principall Leaders of those companies, and many thousands more, were slaine, and his vnckle, the Earle of Worcester, was taken prisoner in the field, & the rest fled. And so the king with the losse of sixteene hundred of his souldiers, hauing slaine more than six thousand of his enemies (of which thirtie and six fell by his own sword) obtayned a famous victorie. And because the Earle *Douglas*, in a single combat with the King himselfe, performed the part of an approved and of a worthy knight, the king granted him his libertie, without ransome.

The next day following, the king and all his armie (with great deuotion and reuerence) gaue thanks vnto Almighty God for their good and honourable successe: and then hee caused the Earle of Worcester to be beheaded; and many others, being ring-leaders in that Rebellion, to be drawne, hanged, and quartered, and did set their heads vpon London Bridge.

And

*The Pericles
does despise the
King.*

*The King
raiseth an
Armie.*

*The battaile
of Shrewsbu-
rie.*

*The Scots are
overthrowen.*

3.
1401.
*The Pericles
dies over-
throwen.*

*The King
himselfe slew
36.*

*Douglas is
released by
the King
without ran-
some.*

*Thanksgiv-
ing vnto
God.
The Earle of
Worcester is
beheaded.*

The Prince
marcheth in-
to Wales.
Owen Glen-
dor forsaken
by his compa-
nies.
He is faine-
shed to death.

The Earle of
Northumber-
lands volun-
tary submis-
sion.

A Challenge
sent by the
Duke of Or-
leans to King
Henry.

King Henrys
discreet an-
swer.

And the king intending forthwith to pursue and prosecute his good fortunes for the better settling of his estate in future times, sent the Prince of Wales, & his whole Armie, into Wales. But when he came thither, his chiefest enemy Owen Glendower was utterly forsaken by his whole companies, and throwed himselfe in the Woods; and being compassed round about by the Princes forces, (who eagerly hunted to apprehend him) hee was miserably famished to death; and many of his associates being taken, were put to death: and then the Prince returned joyfully to the king.

Now, whilst the Prince was shuttled in Wales, Henry the Earle of Northumberland, came (of his owne accord) and submitted himselfe to the Kings mercie, protesting and swearing with many oaths; That he was never made acquainted, nor intermeddled in those Treasons. And though the King conceived not the least thought which might excuse him, yet (for that time) he entertained him with smooth words, and with a smiling countenance, and suffered him to come and to goe at his pleasure, because he had in his possession the Castle of Barwicke, and other places of great strength.

When all these troubles had found an end, Louis Duke of Orleance, brother to the French king (being proud & vain-glorious) sent a challenge to king Henry; requiring him, with one hundred chosen men as armes of his kingdom, in some indifferent and convenient place, to fight with him, and with the like number of Frenchmen, for honours sake. But the king (with great discretion and wisdom) made him this answer, That his former actions, in warlike employments, could cleerely acquite him from the infamous name and title of a Coward: And that Kings ought not to bee so carelesse of their Countreies and of their people (whom GOD had committed unto their charge and government) as to fight for any cause, except it were for the furtherance, or for the maintenance of true Religion; or in defence of their Rights; or to defend their Kingdomes from foraine enemies; or to revenge their wrongs; and for such like important causes. And also, that a Soueraigne and an annoynted King (by the Lawes of Armes, and of Honour) was not bound to answer any Challenge in the field, except it were made upon good cause, by his Equal in Dignitie and in Office. And yet hee further added this, That hee would at all times bee very ready to repulse and to repell any violence or wrong, which the Duke should dare, faintly or undauntedly, at any time to attempt against him, or any of his people.

11 The Duke, being out-passionate when he received this discreet and milde answer, with all expedition besieged the Towne of Verge in Guyan, and remained there for the space of three moneths, & some what more. In which time he offered many sharpe assaults, and much violence, but received as many stout repulses as he could well endure. And in the end, having lost many of his best men, and chiefest friends, hee was compelled disgracefully to raise his siege, and to returne into France.

A rash attempt had a disgracefull end.

12 The Duke of Burgoine also (supposing that the instabillity of king Henries estate at home, could not permit him to leave his kingdome and to warre abroad) obtained leave of the French king to attempt the regaining of Callice to the French. For which purpose he procured a puissant Armie, in which he had six thousand valiant men at armes, fifteen hundred Crosbowes, and twelve thousand ordinary Souldiers on foot. But when the French kings Councell were informed, of the great preparations made in England by king Henry to defeat them, and had maturely considered of the difficulty (yea almost of the impossibilitie) of this attempt: the said Duke was commanded to desist from his intended service: whereat hee was much grieved, and did coniecture, that the proud Duke of Orleans, & some others, had discouraged the King in that businesse, because they were iealous, that by his valour he would win too much honour and renowne.

The Duke of Burgoine attempts the regaining of Callice.

He is required to desist.

13 Experience teacheth vs, that as the highest Trees are subiect most to bee hurt by a storme: so the greatest Estates are in greatest danger to be shaken by Entie. An euident prooffe thereof appeared plainly in the whole course of this kings reigne. For no looner was he freed from one mischiefe, but incontinently he was threatened by another. And though hee had now escaped the great dangers of two former Treasons, and Rebellions, and had bene victorious ouer the Scots, and the Welch Rebels, and had out-faced the French, who (if they had dared) would haue attempted high Achieuements at Callice, and in Aquitaine, and in Guyan: yet was he now againe in hazard to haue beene turmoyled with another Ciuill Warre at home, which secretly was plotted, and contriued, by *Henry Percy* Earle of Northumberland, *Richard Scrope* Archbishop of Yorke, *Thomas Mowbray* Earle Marshall, and by the Lords, *Hastings*, *Faulconbridge*, and *Bardolf*, and by diuers others.

ANNO 6. A new Rebellion secretly plotted, but discovered.

14 But as (in such like cases) it often falleth out, so this Traiterous Conspiracie was secretly reuealed to the king: who came so vnexpectedly, with his Armie into the North, that ere any man reported

The King suddenly surpriseth the Traitors.

*The Prince
warreth in
Scotland pro-
spiously.*

*The King in
danger to be
taken on the
Thames by
French Pi-
rates.*

*The Lord of
Cambray in
trouble, clea-
red himselfe.
ANNO 9.
A valiant
Sheriffe.*

*ANNO 11.
Thomas is
made Duke
of Clarence.
John Duke
of Bedford.
Humphrey
Duke of Glo-
cester.
The King
prepareth to
warre in the
Holy-land.
The King fal-
leth sick.
His Crowne
is placed on
his Pillow.*

ted the news of his coming, he surpris'd the said Lords (the Earle of Northumberland, and the Lord *Bardolf* excepted) and strake off their heads. But the said Earle fled into France, from whence hee came afterwards into Scotland, where he was promised to be aided against the King. But (to prevent such mischies as those intendments did threaten) the Prince of Wales was sent into Scotland with an Armie, where he burnt and spoyled (without controulment) at his owne will and pleasure; and recovered to the kings vse, the Castles of Barwicke, and of Anwicke; and enforced the Scots to craue a truce, which was granted vnto them for a few moneths: & then the Prince returned to the king.

And now it chanced, that as king *Henry* passed over the Riuer of Thames, from Kent into Essex, vnder the conduct of the Lord of *Cambray*, hee was almost taken by the French Pirates: for which cause the said Lord was suspected, and attached as a Traytor, and receiued his due triall, by his Peeres; but was cleerely acquitted of that offence, and receiued into fauour.

In the ninth yeare of this kings reigne, the Earle of Northumberland, and the Lord *Bardolf* (animating the Scots to a new war) entred with them into Northumberland, and did much mischiese: whereupon king *Henry* leuied a strong armie, & (by great iournies) trauiiled to encounter them. But (before his coming forth) they were fought with, and ouerthrowne by Sir *Ralph Bokesby* then Sherif of that Countie, who took the said Lords and many others, and smote off their heads; and sent them (for presents) to the king.

In the eleuenth yeare of his reigne, he assembled his high Court of Parliament: in which he created his three yonger sonnes, *Thomas*, Duke of Clarence; *John*, Duke of Bedford; and *Humphrey* Duke of Glocester: and enacted many Lawes, which were helpfull, & profitable to this common-weale.

And from that time forth vntill hee died; he enioyed a happy peace; and rested from all hostilitie, and warres, both at home and abroad. And to expresse his thankfulnessse to God for all his goodnesse, and great bountie towards him: hee made grear and costly preparations, of men, money, victuals, and armour, and shippes, and all other things, requisite, and needfull; and purposed to haue waged warres with the Tarkes in the Holy-land. But whilest he busily imployed himselfe in those affaires, hee was attached by a deadly apoplexie: and being neere vnto his last end, hee caused his Crowne to bee placed by him vpon his pillow, least peraduenture in his extremitie of sickness, it might bee deliuered to some other

other, who had better right thereto than hee had. But when his attendants verily supposed, that he was dead: the yong Prince of Wales seized vpon his Crowne. Whereat the king started vp, and raising himselfe vpon his armes, he demanded who it was that had taken away his Crowne. The Prince answered, that it was he: and then he fell backe into his bed; and (fetching a deepe sigh, and sending forth many pensive groanes) My sonne (quoth he) my sonne, what right I had vnto this Crowne, and how I haue enioyed it, God knoweth, and the World hath seene. Comfort your selfe in God, good Father, said the Prince: The Crowne you haue, and if you dye, I will haue it, and keep it with my sword, as you haue done. And within a short time after, king Henry dyed, in the six and fortieth yeare of his age, when hee had reigned almost foureene yeares. And his bodie was carried to Canterburie, where (with all Princely, and due requisites) it was buried.

*The Prince
seized on the
Crowne.
The Kings
speech to the
Prince.*

*The Prince
his answer.
The King
dieth.*



THE

other, who had been right there, then the first. How
 his mind was only supposed, that he was dead: the young Prince
 of Wales, who was upon his throne. When the king died, and
 and riding him upon his arms, he was dead: who it was that
 had taken away his crown. The Prince answered, that it was
 he: and then he fell back into his bed; and, for a high
 and longing soul many penitence groans. My son, if you be
 some, what right I had in the crown, and how I have
 loved it, God knows; and the world knows. Come,
 you sit in God's good Father's hand: The Crown is
 mine, and I will have it, and will have it with me
 you know. And within short time after, the king died
 the six and fortieth year of his age, when he had reigned
 almost four hundred years. And his body was
 in Canterbury, where the Prince
 was buried.





THE
HISTORIE OF
KING HENRIE
THE FIFTH.



IT is well knowne, That King *Henrie* the fifth, whilest he was but a Prince, associated to himself diuers vnthriftie and lewd companions; by whose instigation (among many other vnworthy passages in his fathers daies) he smote the Lord Chiefe Iustice of England in the face: for which offence hee was imprisoned & dismissed of the Presidentship of the kings Councell; and (to his great griefe & disgrace) was succeeded therein by *Thomas*, Duke of Clarence, his younger brother. But when hee was crowned king, hee disposed himselfe into a new course, qualifying his behauiour with such heroicall vertues, as might besecme both his Person and his Honour, and banished from his Court his loose and base consorts, after he had enabled them to liue by such gifts as were proportionable to their callings. He also elected for his Councell, and into places of Iustice and publike Government, such as were wise, discreet, learned, and temperate; well able to rule themselves, and to command others. He painefully laboured to reforme Pride, Couetousnesse, and such other grosse abuses as were crept into the Church among the Clergy: and enioyned them strictly to frequent Praier & Preaching, to Hospitality, and to the sincere seruing of Almighty God.

X

And

I

1412

*A wilde
Prince, but a
wise King.*

*He banisheth
his loose com-
panions.*

*His good
choice of good
Counsellors.*

*He reformeth
the
Clergy.*

*He ruleth the
Latter.*

*He erecteth
Castles in the
frontiers of
Scotland, and
of Wales.*

*King Ri-
chards body
removed to
Westminster.*

2

1413

*A motion in
Parliament
to suppress
Religious
Houses.*

*The Clergies
policy to
quench this
fire.*

*The Kings
title to the
Crown of
France set
abroach.*

*The French
business si-
lenceth all
others.*

And (by the administration of his Lawes with moderate severitie) hee made the Laitie tractable in the performance of their duties. And (to settle his Estate in peace and in tranquillitie at home; so that neyther the Scots nor the Welchmen should molest him, when hee was busied in his Warres abroad) hee erected divers Castles, Bulwarkes, and other Fortifications vpon their frontiers; and so disposed of them, that with many thousands of able men, and skilfull Captaines to command them, hee was still ready and powerfull, with great violence and force, to suppress and qualifie such rebellious Insurrections as they might make.

In the first yeare of his Reigne, with great pompe and solemnitie, hee brought the body of king *Richard* the Second from Langley vnto Westminster, and buried it by *Queene Anne*, his first wife

In the second yeare, hee held his High Court of Parliament at Leicester: in which, hee was importunately petitioned, to suppress the Religious Houses of this Kingdome: because they being ill vsed, were made the Nurseries of Idlenesse, Gluttony, Lecherie, and of Pride; and were the Cages of vncleane birds. The Reuenues which belonged to those Houses, were proportioned to yeeld vnto the kings Coffers the annuall Rent of twenty thousand pounds: and would also (for the encrease of the Kings power and strength) maintaine fiftene Earles, fiftene hundred Knights, and more than sixe thousand men at Armes, besides, a great number of Almes-houses for the poores reliefe.

To diuert this streame into another Channell, the fat Abbots, Priors, idle Monkes, wanton Friars, and the paling Nunnies, procured *Henry Chicheley*, then Archbishop of Canterbury, in a very learned and excellent Oration, to discouer to the King his Right and his Title to the Crowne of France; to refresh him with confident hopes of good successe; to direct him into a course answerable to his hopes; and (in the Clergies behalfe, and for the furtherance of those Warres) to offer vnto the king an incredible masse of money as their free and as their franke gift.

This motion and this businessse was so much applauded by the King, his Nobles, and the inferior sorts of his people: and the great summe of money which was offered, so well contented them all, that the said Petition was thereby lulled fast asleepe; and nothing was now debated and spoken of, but the meanes how England might recouer France.

This Parliament being ended; the Duke of Exeter, Vncle to the king, the Archbishop of Dublin, the Lord *Gray* high Admirall of

of England, and the Bishop of Norwich (being attended with five hundred Horse) were sent Embassadors to the French king Charles the sixt. By these the king required the peaceable deliuey of that Kingdome, together with the whole Duchies of Aquitain, Normandy, and of Angeou; and the Counties of Poyrou and of Mayne: and made this offer, That if (without the effusion of their peoples blood) the French king would yeeld to his demands; hee then would bee pleased to take to his wife the Lady Katherine his daughter, and would endow her with all the said Duchies and Provinces, and would be tractable to all things tending to the French kings honour and estate. But if hee refused to deliuer him his Patrimony and Inheritance without blowes; then hee assured him, That hee would attempt the gayning of them by his Sword: and would, in those Countries, afflict those people with such oppressions as were too too rife and common in the Warre.

The v unexpected strangeness of this motion and quicke message, so amazed the French king and his Nobility, that (without sound and good deliberation) they were vnable to returne any answer: but craved a longer time; with promise, shortly to send his Embassadors, concerning that businesse, to the king. But the Dolphin despising the youth of king Henrie, and holding him vnfit to attempt a matter of so high a consequence; sent vnto him (as a present) a Tonne of Tennis Balls: ininuating thereby, that it was more agreeable to his yeares to sport himselfe among nimble lads in a Tennis Court, than to dreame of the winning of so potent a Kingdome as France was.

The king, although otherwise he would haue beene perswaded by reason, kindly to haue censured of the French kings request, and of his promise: yet, because the Dolphin so basely scorned him, protested in his angry moode, That ere many moneths should bee spent, he would (if God assisted him) tossle so many balls of yron within that kingdome, that the strongest Rackets in France should be too weake to returne them. For this purpose, he leuied a strong and a puissant Army: whereof, when the Dolphin had intelligence (because the charge of those affaires, by reason of the French kings weakenesse and infirmitie, was committed to his care and prouidence) he sent Embassadors to king Henrie, to informe him, That if hee would desist from his purpose, and would liue in amitie and in peace with that Nation, and would take his sister, the Lady Katherine, to his wife; hee then should haue and receiue with her a large summe of money, with some small Territories and possessions in that Kingdome.

Embassadors sent to require the Crowne of France. Charles the sixt.

The French king craueth further time to make his answer. The Dolphin scoffeth the King.

The kings courageous speech.

King Henrie leuieeth a great Armie. The Dolphins motion for peace.

*King Hen-
ries answer.*

Those Embassadours were honourably receiued, kindly enter-
tained, and royally feasted by the king, at his owne table. But for
an answer he returned, That except the French king (with his said
daughter) would giue vnto him the Duchies of Aquitaine, Nor-
mandie, Angeou, and all other small Seignories, to him, and to
his Crowne iustly appertaining, and belonging, he would not dis-
band his armie, nor waue his title to the Crowne of France; but
would attempt (by fire, and sword) to winne it if he might.

*King Henrie
fortifieth a-
gainst the
Scots.*

*The Queene
mother is
made Regent
of England.*

ANNO 3.

1454.

*King Henrie
defeth the
K. of France.*

*Treason a-
gainst King
Henrie.*

Assoone as the French Embassadours were departed, The king
(who proposed none other end to his endeouours, but an assured
trust in God, and in a thousand hopes of conquest and of victorie)
placed a strong power vpon the marches of Scotland, to keep them
in order in his absence. And, hauing throughly furnished himselfe
and his army, with all needfull preparations, and hauing made the
Queene his mother the Regent of his Kingdome, and assisted her
with a graue, and with a prudent Councell, hee sent his letters of
Defiance to the French king: and beganne with great alacritie and
courage, to proceed in this his royall iourney.

But as greatest dangers are then most frequent, when securitie
seemeth to banish all feare: so when king Henrie perswaded him-
selfe, that he was most sure, and safe, in the midst of his braue
armie: euen then hee was in a greater hazzard of his life, than if
hee had beene in France, among the throngs of his mortall, and
professed Enemies. For Richard Earle of Cambridge, brother to the
Duke of Yorke, & Henrie Lord Scrope, and Sir Thomas Gray (three
of the most approued Captaines of this Kingdome) being treache-
rously engaged by great rewards, conferred on them by the Dol-
phin of France: conspired to deliuer him into the French kings
hands; or else to murder him in his owne Tent.

*The treason
is discovered.*

Miraculously was this intended villany reuealed to the king;
who griued the more thereat, because hee should want the aide-
full assistance of three such valiant men of Warre, as gaue him
much assurance of good successe. But when they were apprehen-
ded, and brought into his presence, their open confession of that
conspiracie, and treason (which otherwise would fully haue beene
proued against them) hastned their publike sentence of death, and
(as Traytors) they were executed the next day.

*The traitors
are executed.*

*The King
landerth with
his army in
Normandy.
Harflew be-
sieged, and
taken.*

Assoone as the winde serued, the king transported his armie in
an hundred and forty shippes, and landed in Normandie before
Harflew, vpon the Riuer of Seyne, and besieged it on euery part for
the space of seuen and thirty dayes. And though the French army,
which was conducted by the Dolphin, made manie faire proffers

to

to raise the siege, yet durst they not come too neere. But the Towne hauing beene many times sharply assaulted, was yeilded to king *Henrie*: who sacked it, and ransomed the Inhabitants, and with great plenty of siluer, and of gold, and many costly things, he enriched all his owne Companies; and (hauing placed as Capitaine there, his Vncle *Thomas* Duke of Exeter; and as his Lieutenant *Sir Iohn Fastolf*, with fiftene hundred souldiers, and fise and thirty gallant Knights, he resolved to go vnto Callice by land; & to rest there, because the winter (being now more wet, & approaching sooner at that time than vsually it was accustomed) infected manie of his men with grieuous fluxes, and strange feuers: and occasioned the death of the Earle of Stafford, of the Bishop of Norwich, and of the Lords of Molines, and of Burnel, and of more than fifteen hundred men.

And (notwithstanding, that sicknesse and many wants afflicted his armie) yet king *Henrie* marched with great confidence and resolution through the bowels of those Countries, in despight of the French forces, who only made proud brags, and faire shewes of encounters: But (like vnto hunted, and affrighted Deere) gazed a far off vpon the English army. yet dared not by handy strokes, to make the least tryall of their valour, albeir king *Henries* strength did then consist onely of two thousand Horsemen, and of thirteene thousand Archers, and no more. Many of which number wanted health, meat, wood, and rest, and had not any plentie of anie thing sauing only of Siluer, and of Gold, which could not (in that place) supply vnto them such things, as most of all they needed.

The Dolphin of France to whom the mannaging of those wars was committed (hauing assembled more than thirty thousand fighting men) saw that hee was much dishonoured by his owne cowardize, and lest he should be infamous among his own people, hee determined to giue battaile to King *Henrie*: but his fainting ignoble heart, being terrified, and his courage passing in post out at his heeles, suffered him not to attempt any thing, so that king *Henrie* still marched onwards, burning, and spoyling, and doing in his passage whatsoeuer himselfe best liked.

The French king (who lay at Roan) was highly discontented, for that the English Armie (vnfought with) had proudly passed ouer the Riuer of Soame, wherefore hee entred into a serious consultation concerning those businesse, with fise and thirtie of his discreetest and wisest Counsellors: and the question was; *Whether it were better to giue Battaille to the English Armie, or (for that time) to giue King Henrie a free march, without resistance, vnto Callice?* By

*Great sickness
in king Hen-
ries Army.*

*The French
dare not to
encounter
with King
Henry in his
March.*

*Thirteene
thousand
men.*

*Siluer and
Gold did no
pleasure to
the English
Armie.*

*The Dolphin
braggeth, but
doth not any
thing.*

*The French
King taketh
Counsell.*

The question.

*The King is
defied and a
Battaile pro-
mised.*

*King Henrie
discreet an-
swer.*

*The Battaile
of Agencourt*

1414

*The number
of the French
Armie.*

*How the
French Ar-
mie passed the
night.*

*They recko-
ned without
their Hosts.
The English-
mens resolu-
tion.*

thirtie of that number, it was aduised, and concluded on, that they should be fought with, but the other five vrged many substantiall reasons and arguments, to maintaine the contrary. But they were not hearkned vnto. So the French king incontinently, by his Herald at Armes, sent a defiance to K. *Henrie*, and promised that within few dayes, hee would trie his best strength by handy strokes in the open field. King *Henrie* (with a Princely boldnesse and magnanimitie) returned him this answer, That because his army was afflicted with much sicknesse, and many wants; he bended his course directly to his Towne of Callice, where he would goe and refresh himselfe, and his companies, and would not therefore (at that time) seeke the French king. But if he endeaoured, and dared to interrupt him in his passage, hee was of sufficient force and strength to repell all violence, which the French Nation should oppose against him.

When this answer was returned, the French king (by his Proclamations) caused many thousand men at armes, and valiant Souldiers, to repaire to the Constable of France, to fight for honor and for their Country with king *Henrie*: who being informed, that the day drew neere in which the Frenchmen intended to giue him battaile; placed his Army in good order and array, betwixt the Townes of Blangie, and of Agencourt, within the Countrey of Saint Paul.

This being done, the Constable of France, being brauely accompanied with diuers great and honourable perfonages, well experienced Captaines, and lusty men of warre, to the number of three-score thousand on horsebacke; besides his Footmen, Pages, Waggoners, & other attendants; approched neere to the English armie; and placed them in good order of battaile, and in the night time they made great fires about their Standard, disposed themselves to extraordinary mirth, and iollity, and made such sure account of the Victory on the next day (by reason of their great numbers, and for that the English forces were so small, so weake, and sickly) that they fell to the casting of lots for such prisoners as they would take.

And on the other side, king *Henrie* and his people hauing humbly reconciled themselves to God, and by repentance, and by publicke and priuate prayer, purchased the happy contentment of quiet consciences, founded their trumpets and muscall instruments of all sorts, and were resolute to sell their liues deare, and to die like men, seeing that now they were vnable, by any meanes (excepting only by the sword) to worke vnto themselves any deliuerance from infamie, and from death.

Vpon

Vpon Friday being the five and twentieth day of October, the Lord *Dalabreth* High Constable of France, arranged all his companies into three battailes.

The Lord Dalabreth.

1. In the first, he placed eight thousand wel-armed Knights, and Esquires, foure thousand Archers, and fiftene hundred Cross bowes: and strongly guarded them with two wings. The one of them consisted of fiftene hundred men at armes; and the other, of eight hundred. And this battaile, and these wings, were commanded by himselfe, and by the Dukes of *Orleance*, and of *Burbon*, and by the Earles of *Ewe*, *Richmond*, and *Vandosme*, and by the Lord *Dampier*, Admirall of France, and by the Marshall *Bouciquart*, and many others.

The first Battaille of the French.

2. In the middle battaile were placed more men at armes, than in the former: and it was commanded by the Dukes of *Barre* and of *Alanson*, and by the Earls of *Vaudemont*, *Salings*, *Blamont*, *Grant-Prée*, and *Russie*.

The middle Battaille of the French.

3. And the third battaile (being composed of all the remnant) was marshalled; and guided by the Earles of *Marke*, *Damp-Martin*, and of *Faulconbridge*, and by the Lord *Lurrey* Captaine of the Towne of *Arde*.

The Rere-battaille of the French.

And on the other side the Vauntgard of King *Henrie*, which consisted of good Archers onely, was conducted by the Duke of *Yorke*: who being right valiant, and of an haury courage, by great entreary obtained that place; and with him, were the Lords of *Beaumont*, *Willoughby*, and of *Fanhope*.

King Henries Vauntgard.

The maine battaile was commanded by the King himselfe: in which were his strongest Bil-men, & some Archers: and with him were the Duke of *Glocester* his brother, the Earle Marshall, *Oxford*, and of *Suffolke*.

King Henries maine battaille.

And the Rereward was directed by *Thomas* Duke of *Exeter*, the Kings Vncle. And all the Horsmen (as wings) attended all these companies on both sides.

The Kings Rereward.

And to prevent by policie such breaches, as otherwise the French Horsmen might suddainely make vpon the English Army with their barred Steeds, whilst the Archers were busily performing their taske: King *Henrie* caused all his Foormen, to be environed with stakes of five or sixe foot long, which being well headed with sharpe Iron at both ends, were thickly pitched into the Earth, and easily might (vpon euery remoue) bee newly fastned into the ground, by such as were appointed to attend them.

Stakes driven into the ground behind the English Armie.

King *Henrie* (vpon his trust in the mercifull aide and assistance of

of

*This Ambush
of Archers
was a princi-
pall meanes of
the victory.*

*Valiant and
strong Ar-
chers.
The first Bat-
taile of the
Frenchmen is
ouerthrowne.*

*The maine
Battaile is
assaulted by
the English.*

*The French
Horses are
goared on the
stakes.*

of Almighty God, and vpon a strong hope which hee conceiued, of braue setuice to bee performed that day) had secretly placed a lustie crew of good Archers within a new cast hedge, by which the French Horsemen were to make way towards the English armie. And these were commanded to shoot wholly, and together, when a valiant and wel-experienced Knight, named Sir *Walter Harpington*, by the casting vp of his Gauntlet, should occasion the whole Army of the Englishmen to shout with a mighty cry. And this direction was so well obserued, that when the French Horsemen were passed within the danger of that ambush, and attempted to giue the first onser; vpon the said signe and shout, the said archers dimmed the aire with the thickest of their strong flying arrowes: and the French Horsemen by meanes of the height of the said banke, and depth of the ditch within it, were not able to come neere vnto them.

The English archers likewise, who serued in the Vauntgard, so strongly fixed their shot in the French Horses, that many of them being wounded, and the arrowes shaking in their flesh, threw off their riders to the ground; and other some of them, with violence ranne vpon such as rode next vnto them; and the rest of them, in such disordered troupes, and plumps, so furiously and so madly retired, that they thereby not only were disordered, but their footmen also; who were oppressed, wounded, and miserably slaine, and trodden to death by them. Which when the English army well perceiued: the archers threw away their Bowes, and with Malls, Axes, Swords, Gleaues, and Bils, they made an incredible slaughter vpon the first battaile of the Frenchmen: which by them were vterly discomforted, and put to flight. And (without breathing, or the least delay) they ranne fiercely vpon the middle battaile of the French army: who fought with great courage, and resolution; and for a while acquitted themselves as valiant men.

The French Horsemen of that battaile, scorning that so small a number of their Enemies should worke such wonders: and intending by sudden violence, to make quicke dispatch of them; beganne to charge vpon them with great courage. The Englishmen (the better to saue themselves, and to traine the French Horsemen within the danger of their stakes) seemed faine. Yet in good order they retired, and quickly slipped behind their stakes: so that the Frenchmen (who made more haste than good speed to ouerthrow the Englishmen) rushed ignorantly, and violently forward; not hurting their Enemies, but goring, spoyling, and killing of their Horses in great numbers. And thus was their maine battaile diminished

shed, and altogether put out of order, and good government. Which when the Englishmen saw, they hautilly aduanced their spirits, and confidently redoubled their strength: and with rude and hardy blowes, they rushed forth so eagerly vpon the Frenchmen, that they compelled them to flie. In this encounter, the king himselfe fought hand to hand with the Duke of Alanson, and was by him, well-nieere taken prisoner. But his high stomacke disdainig to stoop to fortune, and to loose the least iot of honour: he encouraged himselfe with a more constant resolution. So that (in the end) he slew two of the Dukes neereest attendants with his owne hand; and felled him to the ground. But whilst the king passionately laboured and strived to saue his life; hee was vnadvisedly slaine by his Guard.

As soone as these two battailes were thus overthrowne, the king (abandoning all lingring and delay, and setting his hopes vpon the assurance of an honourable victorie) made offer, with his whole Companies, to environ the third and last battaile of the Frenchmen: In which were the greatest number, but the worst men. But their courage was so cooled, that (like vnto Sheepe before the Wolfe) they cowardly ranne away, casting from them their armour and their weapons: and (being strangely amazed, and not knowing which way to runne to saue themselves) great numbers of them fell vpon their knees, and craued mercy, and the preservation of their liues; and were receiued as prisoners by the English army, with the kings consent.

But whilst king *Henrie* was thus busied, and (to puriue the Chase) had left his owne Campe, and Tents, meanly and weakly guarded & defended, by Waggoners, & by Lackies only: *Robynet* of Bonuile, with six hundred of those Horsemen who first of all acquitted the field, entred into the kings Campe; and rifled all things at their pleasure, and slew as many of the weake Guarders as they could: by meanes whereof, a strong out-crie was suddenly made there: which when the king heard, hee imagined, that fresh and new forces intended to giue him another battaile, and to trie him with another strength.

This conceit, and this fearing doubt, occasioned him forthwith to proclaime, that (on paine of death) all ordinary Prisoners should be slaine, lest (in the new conflict) they should bee troublesome and dangerous to his Army. Then was there seen a sorrowfull spectacle of much vnexpected crueltie. For some of their throats were cut: the bellies of others were so lanced, that their guttes fell out: the braines of others were dashed abroad with Malls, and Axes:

*The maine
battaile of the
French van-
quished.
The Kings
valour.*

*The Duke of
Alanson slaine*

*The third
battell of the
Frenchmen
flie.*

*An unfortu-
nate seruice
for the French
Prisoners.*

*The French
Prisoners are
miserably
slaine.*

*Fearre enfor-
ced this cru-
eltye.*

Axes: others with Daggers were stabbed, and with Swords thrust through; and finally, almost all of them (vpon a sodaine) were (with much enforced cruelty) put to death; whereat the king conceiued extraordinary grieft and forrow; and lamented it with many teares, when he perfectly vnderstood, that no fresh army was prepared to assaile him.

*King Henries
providence a-
gainst future
danger.*

*Another vi.
Etory did at-
tend him.*

The king, though hee perceiued well, and did perfectly know, that his Souldiers were much tired and wearied with the great trauels of that victorious day: yet (doubting of the worst) hee arranged his whole army into a new battaile, because hee was informed, that another enterprise against him was taken in hand. And as-soone as he was fully prouided to defend himselfe, hee was assailed by the Earles of *Marle*, and of *Faulconbridge*, and sixe hundred valiant men at armes, who had kept together, and had not fought one stroke that day. But as a small and a weake vessell, is quickly swallowed vp into a wrathfull Sea: so this poor handfull was by and by crushed and almost euery one of them was slaine.

*The King &
his Army
gine thanks
to God for
their great
victorie.*

The spoiles.

Afterwards, when King *Henrie* (by his Scoutes) receiued certaine intelligence, that euery Coast about him was cleere, and that such of his Enemies, as were couragious, and would fight, lay dead vpon the ground, and none were so hardy as to shew their faces: the king (about foure of the clocke in the afternoone of the same day) caused his whole armie (vpon their knees) to ioine with him in hearty prayer, and in thankfulness vnto Almighty God; who only, and alone, by his powerfull aide & assistance, had giuen to him, and them, a most incredible and a glorious Victory. This duty being thus deuoutly accomplished; the common souldiours, had franke leaue and licence granted them, to rife those whom they had slaine. By meanes whereof they not only waxed rich, but also stored themselves with all such necessaries, & prouisions as before they wanted: and then the king marched forward; and with much ioy, and great honour, was receiued into his strong towne of Callice. In this battell, were slaine *Charls* Lord *Delabreth* high Constable of France; *Iaques* of *Chastilion* Lord of *Dampier* High Admirall of France, *Iohn* Duke of *Alenfon*, *Anthonie* Duke of *Brabant*, *Edward* Duke of *Barre*; the Earls of *Marle*, *Vaudemont*, *Blammount*, *Grand-prée*, *Ruffey*, *Faulconbridge*, *Foy*, and *Lastrake*: twenty and five Lords; eight thousand Knights, and Esquires, and Gentlemen of armes, and name: and about sixteene hundred of the common sort: besides those who were taken, and remained prisoners: among whom these were the chief: *Charles* Duke of *Orleance*, *Iohn* Duke of *Burbon*, the lords of *Donuart*, *Fosseux*, *Humiers*, *Roy*, *Cawny*, *Hamecourt*, *Noel*,

*The French
Nobles who
were slaine.*

*Prisoners ta-
ken.*

Noell, Banciquale, and some others. And on the other part were slaine *Edward Duke of Yorke*, and the Earle of Suffolke; and of all others, not about fixe hundred persons.

When king *Henry* and his souldiers had a while refreshed themselves in Callice, they took shipping: & being enriched with Siluer, Gold, and braue and costly Armour, they all arriued safely in England; and the king was receiued into London triumphantly and with much ioy.

When the French king & the Dolphin were informed of the said great and insupportable ouerthrow, it is not to bee wondred at, if melancholy passions and much grieffe surcharged them to the verie heart, and made them doubtfull of the euent of this businesse. But the slaughter of the French prisoners, foolishly occasioned by the base attempt of *Robynet of Bonuyle*, and of his companions, who cowardly ransacked the English Campe and the kings Tents in the heate and fury of the aforesaid Battaile, perplexed them more than all the rest: but especially the Dolphin; who imprisoned the Ringleaders of that folly, and would haue sentenced them to death, if suddainely himselfe had not after dyed: whose death much amazed the weake and much diseased French king. But making a vertue of necessity, and intending by some prouident course to preuent such mischiefes which future attempts did threaten, hee made the Earle of Arminack (who was a stout and a warlike Captaine) High Constable of France, and placed in his other great martiall Offices none but such, as by their valour and good tryall had made best prooffe of their sufficiencie to performe them. These newly established Officers leuied manie companies of the most able and stoutest men in sundry places of that Kingdome.

And at the same time, the kings Vncle *Thomas Duke of Exeter*, and Captain of Harflew (intending to exercise his souldiours in feates of Warre, and by some suddaine seruice both to enrich them, to winne honour to himselfe, and to endamage his enemies) issued out of that Towne with three thousand men, well armed to the prooffe, and marched through those Countries, burning, rasing, and spoyling, vntill hee came almost to the City of Roan: where hee was encountred by the new Constable of France, who with five thousand horsemen (hauing a resolution in this exploit to winne his Spuries) so sharply charged the Duke and his Followers, that hee compelled him (though in good order, and with little losse) to retyre. But the Frenchmen (determining their vnder ouerthrow) pursued them still with eager spirits, vntill they came almost

*The slaine
Englishmen.*

*The King
with his army
arriue in
England.*

*Robynet of
Bonuyle, and
his complices,
imprisoned.*

*The Dolphin
dies.*

*The Earle of
Arminack is
made High
Constable of
France.*

*New French
Officers.*

*Thomas duke
of Exeter his
gallant ser-
uice.*

*The new Con-
stable is over-
throwne.*

almost to the Barriers of Harflew; which when the rest of the Englishmen, who were within the Towne, perceived, they issued forth in good order, ioyned with the Dukes companies: and then they all, with their entire strength, so furiously opposed themselves against the Constable and his Associates, that (with the slaughter of many of their horses and souldiers) they were enforced to flie away, and were chased by the English Victors more than two miles: and diuers of them, who were taken prisoners, could not obtaine their liberty, vntill they had procured it with large Ransomes.

*Sigismund
the Emperour
in vaine me-
diates a
peace.*

*The Duke of
Burgoyne is
suspected by
the French
King.*

*1415.
Harflew be-
sieged by the
French.*

*The English
Nauie doe
ouerthrow
the French
Fleet, consist-
ing of 500.
ships.*

*John Duke of
Bedford ray-
seth the siege.*

About this time, *Sigismund* the Emperour of Germany came into England, endeavouring to conclude a friendly peace betwixt England & France. His hearty welcome & his great entertainment liberally sortred with the high calling of so great a Prince. But his motion was barren and fruitlesse of good speeding. In his departure the King accompanied him to Callice; from whence hee returned home. And thither (vpon honourable hostages) repaired to king *Henrie* the Duke of Burgoyne; and betwixt them a friendly peace, concernig onely the Counties of Flanders and of Arthois, was concluded. For which matter, the Duke was had in great ialousie, and suspected to bee a secret enemy to the Crowne of France.

Not long after, the new Constable of France with a strong Armie vpon the Land, and *John* Vicount *Narbon*, Vice-admirall of France, with fife hundred ships, at the mouth of the river of Seyne, besieged Harflew on euery side; and made little doubt to winne it in few weekes. But when king *Henrie* was aduertized in what sort the Towne and his Subiects were distressed, with extraordinary care and expedition hee leuied a powerfull army, and transported it thither in two hundred warlike and strong shippes: of these hee made Generall his brother *John* Duke of Bedford, and associated to him (in that expedition) the Earles of March, Oxford, Huntingdon, Arundel, Salisbury, & Denonshire, and many Barons, Knights, and Gentlemen of great valour and much worth.

The Duke (shortly after his departure) being happily conducted by a pleasing wind, fel vpon the french fleet, who in the view of the Towne of Harflew fought courageously, as men resolved to winne honour. But being vnable to make good what they intended, they were at length utterly vanquished and overthrowen, with an incredible slaughter of their men: and great numbers of them being taken, were sent Prisoners into England. And thus was the Towne of Harflew happily rescued, and deliuered from the Frenchmen.

For

For when the Constable perceiued that all their Sea-forces were defeated, and, in a manner, consumed; hee rayed his Siege, and (with a heauie heart) marched dishonourably vnto Paris: and the Duke of Bedford (hauing new victualled, manned, and fortified the Towne) returned with great applause, and much honour, into England.

These disastrous misfortunes rushing euery day vpon the French Nation, rather animated the Nobility of France to seeke means to reuenge their private quarrels and grudges one against the other, than, as prouident and worthy Prerres, to vnite their forces for the defence and protection of their Countrey: by means whereof, a wide Gappe was opened to king *Henrie* (with lesler danger) to attempt great matters against the Peace and Estate of that Kingdome. And (so further his designes in those Negotiations) hee assembled his High Court of Parliament at Westminster: In which, he himselfe pitbilly and effectually discouered his Right and Title to the Crowne of France; the often iniuries which the Frenchmen had done from time to time to the English Nation; his blessed and fortunate Successes in those Warres; the new Dissensions and secret reuengefull Grudges which diuided the hearts & the strength of the Frenchmen; and his vndoubted hopes of winning both honour and profit: if by the sufficient disbursement of Money and of Treasure his preparations might be furthered and supported with all speed.

This Speech (being graciously and artificially contriued) was so plausible and pleasing, and the Kings heruicall intendments were so well receiued and digested by all sorts of people, who were then present, that not onely a great summe of money (with franke and free consent) was granted to him; but the same was quickly leuiued with great loue and much ease.

The King (being much encouraged in his French businesse, by the forward bounty of his louing subiects) prepared a strong Fleet; furnished it with men, and all things needfull; and embarked therein a strong Army of lusty experienced souldiers: but sent before him, to scowre the seas, *Iohn Earle of Huntingdon*, sonne to that Duke of Exeter, who was beheaded in the dayes of King *Henrie* the Fourth. This lustie Gallant being at all points readily prouided, met (luckily) with nine Carricks of Genoa, which (for money) were waged to serue the French King: with those hee encountred, and fought stoutly; yet (for a while) with variable hopes of the successe: but in the end hee sunke into the Sea sixe of them, and tooke the other three, being stored with great store

Secret quarrells among the French Nobility.

King Henrie fares the better.

A Parliament.

The Kings Speech.

Great sums of monie quickly and cheerefully raised.

Another victory as sea by Iohn Holland Earle of Huntingdon.

of mony and much Treasure, and brought them with his prisoners, to the King.

*The King
with his Ar-
mie landed in
Normandy.*

*Tonque is ta-
ken by assaults.*

*The Nor-
mans fle into
the walled
Townes.*

*The Citie of
Cane is be-
sieged.*

*The Citie re-
fuseth all
compositions.*

*Cane taken
by assaults.*

*Thanks given
unto God.*

This argument of good speed much encouraged king *Henrie*; who with his copious Army of gallant and lustie Lads, departed out of England, and landed safely in Normandie, before the strong Castle of Tonque: which by him was besieged and won by strong assaults; and yet hee receiued the besieged to his mercie.

When the Normans knew that king *Henrie* was arriued in their Country, and of his taking of that Castle, they fled as men amazed (with bagge and baggage) into their walled Townes; and so did all the souldiers which were placed euery where for the defence and protection of those Countries: so that (without resistance) king *Henrie* marched forth, and pitched before the City of Cane; which was exceedingly well manned, and throughly provided of Victuals, Armour, and Munition of all sorts, for many moneths. Diuers assaults were fiercely made, and the walls were oftentimes scaled, with desperate resolution, by the English; & the Normans with no lesse valour and stout courage defended the Towne, to the great damage of their Enemies, vntill, at length, King *Henrie* (to saue the liues of many valiant men, who otherwise must needs haue dyed in that Service) proclaimed Mercie to the besieged, if they would yeeld. But their hopes to bee relieved, and the trust which they reposed in their owne valour, perswaded them to refuse all compositions whatsoever. Whereupon many terrible assaults were fiercely made, and repulsed: The walls of the City were in many places vndermyned; the Englishmen, with vndaunted courage, rushed into the Towne, partly through the walls, and partly ouer them: so that in the end, although the Normans (to their continuall praise and commendation) performed the parts of worthy and faithfull souldiers: yet their Towne was wonne; and all of them forsaking their armour and their weapons, fell vpon their knees, and humbly craued mercie of the King. Which was not by and by granted to them, because they had obstinately refused it before; yet some refreshing words of comfort gladdened their heauie hearts, so that they hoped the worst was past.

Then the King caused all the Townes-mens Armour to bee heaped together in the Market place, and to bee defended by a strong Guard: which being done, with all the residue of his Armie, hee entred, with great solemnity and reuerence, into the chiefeft Church, and on their knees, with true humility and deuotion, they

they yeelded their hearty thanks vnto Almighty God for that Victorie.

This doctie being thus performed, and strong Watches being placed in euery quarter of the City; the king (vpon the next morning) assembled all the Inhabitants at their Senate or Councell-house; where he censured the principals of such as obstinately refused his fauour when it was offered, to sundry deaths; fined and ransomed others, and diuided the riches and the best things which were found there, among his souldiers: who, in those assaults, had made sufficient triall of their vndaunted courage and bold valour.

At this time the Earle of Arminack, High Constable of France, together with Charles the Dolphin (who was much grieved for his troubled Countrey) proposed to themselves sundry proiects for the defeating of king Henrie: and finding the want of money to be their chiefest impediment, the Dolphin (by the Constables aduice) tooke from the Queene, his mother, a great Masse of siluer and of gold, which for many yeares she had scraped, scratched, and hoorded vp together.

This act so inwardly vexed and enraged the Queene, that in her heart she vowed to bee reuenged vpon them both: and knowing that John, the Duke of Burgoine, was their capitall and greatest Enemy, especially to the Constable of France; and because the King her husband, by much sickness, was weakened both in his body and in his vnderstanding; she procured him to bee made and to bee established the Protector of the Kings Person, and the Regent of his whole Kingdome.

Now, when the said Duke had obtained this authority and power, he forthwith resolved to reuenge his old displeasures vpon the said Constable, and afterwards to bend his whole strength against king Henrie.

The Dolphin likewise and the Constable employed their chiefest care how they might enfeeble the new Regent and his adherents; and to oppose themselves against the English forces, it was their smallest thought. So blinde is Enuie, and so reuengefull is proud Ambition, that the Countries good is nothing at all respected; when men resolve to pursue their priuate hatred and contention: And hereby all men might plainly see, That these dissensions and these discords did more further the English Armie in their proceedings, than did their owne policie and their owne strength. For the Normans being vtterly dismayed, and hopelesse to be assisted, because the Malice which bare sway among the French Nobility

Townes-men executed.

The souldiers are enriched.

The Dolphin wanting money, takes it from the Queene his mother.

She voweth deep reuenge.

She procureth John Duke of Burgoine to bee Regent & Protector.

He intendeth reuengement on the Constable.

The Dolphin and the Constable arme their wits against the Regent.

This discord furthered King Henriers proceedings.

litie was too too great; fled as men amazed (and as not being the commanders of their owne wits) from place to place, from village to village, and from towne to towne: and, in the meane time, the English Armie commanded as it pleased.

*King Henries
Proclamation*

King Henrie beholding their feare, and setting rather to winne their Castles, Townes, and Cities by Policie, than by the Sword, proclaymed in all places, That such of them as would yeeld, and sweare to become his Subiects, should not onely enioy freely all their Lands, Goods, Liberties, and Liues, but should also bee protected and defended by his strength, and bee received into his Princely loue.

*The greatest
Townes in
Normandie
are yeelded to
K. Henrie.*

This practice quickly procured the surrendring into his hands, without blowes, the strong Townes of *Alanson, Argenton, Bayeux, Camboy, Conde, Crewly, Effay, Falays, Thorygny, and Vermoyle*: And vnto the kings brother, the Duke of Clarence, were quickly yeelded the Townes of *Amelyers, Barney, Bethelwyn, Chambroys, Courtton, Creuener, Fangermon, Fresney, Harcor, Lysieux, and Rangles*. And into the hands of the kings other brother, the Duke of Gloucester, were giuen vp and deliuered these Towns in the Countie of *Constantine*; that is to say, *Aurancies, Briquerville, Cuventon, Chiergurge, Constance, Hambery, Hay du Pays, Pontorson, Poutdone, S. Sautier, S. James, S. Clow Yre, and Valoignes*: in all which, the king and his brothers placed valiant English Captaines and strong Garrisons to defend them, if the French should attempt to regaine them to his owne power.

*King Henrie
fortifies all
those Townes.*

*Cane is repaired
and fortified.*

The Citie of *Cane* also was newly repaired, fortified, and inhabited by English souldiers & traders of all sorts, Sir *Gilbert Vmfreuyle* being made Captaine of the Castle, Sir *Gilbert Talbot* of the Towne, and Sir *John Popham* was made Bailiffe there.

*6
1417
Roan is wal-
led round.*

Whilest king *Henrie* and his companies were thus busied in *Normandie*; hee was informed, That the Citizens of *Roan* had compassed their Citie with a strong wall, and had strengthened it with extraordinary Fortifications, Towers, Bulwarkes, and Ditches. and that the whole Wealth and Treasure of a great part of the Countries round about it was brought thither. Whereupon hee marched with his whole Army towards that City: and in his passage, by strong assaults, he tooke *Pontarch, Lanyers, and Entaux*, and came before the strong Citie of *Roan* the last day of Iuly; and compassed it round about vpon the Land parts with a strong siege: And at *Pontarch* he placed ouer the Riuer, vpon Pyles, a mightie Chayne of Iron and a Wooden Bridge, which prohibited all succours (by water) to come vnto the Citie.

*The countries
treasure is
brought into
Roan.*

*Roan is besie-
ged by land
and by water.*

And

And the Earle of Warwick having the command of an hundred gallant shippes, well manned, victualled, and provided for the Warre; entred into the Riuer's mouth, and came before the Towne of Cawdebeck: and so fiercely pressed on it, that by way of composition they suffered him quietly to passe towards Roan, with faithfull promise to yeeld it into king Henries hands, if hee fortun'd to winne Roan: but if hee did not; then to giue the said Earle and his whole Fleete a safe and a peaceable returne. And for the due performance thereof, they sent him sufficient hostages; whom he receiued louingly, and carried them with him before Roan. Thus was this Citie girded round about on euery part, so that no man could passe in or out.

At this Siege, there repaired voluntarily to the king, the Lord of Kylmay of Ireland, with sixteene hundred tall, lustie, swift, and strong men of that Nation; they all being clothed in Coats of Mayle, and armed with Darts, whom the king entertained cheerefully, and was extraordinarily furthered by their help and assistance in those his Expeditions.

Daily the king gaue terrible assaults vnto the City, which with admirable resolution and manlike valour was brauely defended by the Normans. But when force and violence preuailed not, the king to spare his men (and because hee vnderstood, that there were aboue two hundred and tenne thousand men, women, and children within the Towne) determined, if he might, to game it by famine without blowes. For which purpose, hee cast a deepe Ditch about the Land parts of the Citie, and pitched it plentifully with sharpe stakes, and guarded them with his Archers, so that the Inhabitants could not issue out, either to offend him, or to relieue themselves.

Thus this Siege continued, from Lammes vntill the whole Christmas was ended: during which time, the Famine so grievously increased, that the Citizens dranke nothing but vineger and water, and multitudes of them were enforced to prolong their liues, by eating of Rattes, Mice, Cattes, Dogges, Horses, and such like. Great numbers also of the poorer sort vcharitably were thrust out of the City, because they spent their victuals, and could not fight: and because they were not suffered to passe through the English Army, they miserably perished for want of food betwixt the Gates and the Trenches of their Enemies. And upon New years day (after the City had bene long visited with this famine) there issued out at the Bridge-Gate certaine Commissioners, who craued conference with some man of authority in the English Ar-

*Cawdebeck
gives pass-
age to the
English fleet.*

Conditions.

Hostages.

*1600 Irish-
men repairs
to the King,
and doe him
great service.*

*The Towne
assaulted and
defended.*

*210000
souls in Roan.*

*The King in-
tends to win
Roan by fa-
mine.*

*The Kings
fortifications.*

*A great Fa-
mine.*

*The poore are
thrust forth,
and dye.*

*Commis-
sioners
conference
with the king.*

The commif-
sioners re-
paired to the
King.

mic: vnto whom, the Earle of Huntingdon (who was quartered in that part of the Citie) sent Sir Gilbert vnsfrenile: their errand was, To procure speedy accesse and free returne from King Henrie.

The King was well pleased, that twelue of them should be kindly entreated, if they came. So, the next morning, foure Knights, foure learned men, and foure of the choifest Burgesles of the Towne, being all clothed in blacke, repaired to the King; who beheld them, with a countenance beautified with extraordinarie Maiestie and Grace: and vnto him one of them boldly spake as followeth:

A proud Speech of a Frenchman to King HENRIE.

REnowned and great Prince, the world is taught to know by good Experience, that Kings and Noble Captaines do winne their chiefest Reputation for their valour and for their fortitude, by mastering and subduing of proud enemies and of vallant men by martiall violence, and with the Sword: and that it is, and ever hath been, a notorious Badge of cowardly hastenesse in a Prince, to make them seruite by Famine, and by the scarcity of food, in which kinde of crueltie there is neither sound Manhood so praise him, nor wit, which may in any sort commend him. To the end therefore, that your Highnesse may make your selfe equally famous with the greatest Princes for your generous disposition, in saving of vs, the Souldiery of this Citie, by the Sword, (I pray you) the multitude of our diseased and sicke folkes, and the weaker sort of our men, women, and children, safely and charitably to passe through your Army, and then (if you dare) assault our Fortresses and our walls: and if by your valour, you fortune to become our Lord, you may use vs at your pleasure, and make your selfe truly and heroically famous among great Men who doe come all last attempts, and can relish nothing but vnsuspected honour.

When the King (with a troubled mind) had heard and considered of this bold bragge, he slowly made this answer.

The King (with a troubled mind) had heard and considered of this bold bragge, he slowly made this answer.

The Kings discrete

ANSWER.

F Antisthickall and fond Frenchmen, thinke you, that I am so weak
 a Scholer in the Art of Warre, that I haue not yet learned the
 Principles in that Science. Are not the Sword, Fire, and Fa-
 mine, the three Instruments, with which worthy and renowned Kings,
 Princes, and the best Captaines ever haue done, and doe still endeavour to
 subdue their Enemies? Do not all Historias accord in one, That the grea-
 test Monarchs, and the Grand Commanders of the world, haue still at-
 tached their chiefest Conquests by those three? Is not either of them
 powerfull and able to torment and to afflict the proudest foes? And
 are they not (all three being ioyned together) of sufficient force to over-
 come and to overthrow the greatest Nation in the world? It was my
 clemencie and gentlenesse to forbear to assault your walls, because I
 would not willingly hasten the death of any, except they would wilfully
 further their owne destruction: Neither doe I intend to consume so
 faire a towrell, as this City is, in the fire, because I desire to preserve it, the
 same being mine owne Inheritance and my Right. If then I use the wil-
 dest of these three, namely Famine to correct you, and to frame and fa-
 shion you to my will, then may you redeme your selves from her seve-
 rity: if you bee so disposed, by surrendering of this mine owne City
 into my hands: which thing if obstinately you refuse to doe, then would
 I haue you know, That Kings may not be instructed in Martiall Poli-
 ticke by every bold companion, who dares hauppudently to speake: Neither
 may they permit a Raskill and inexperienced souldier to read unto them a
 Lecture of wantlike proceedings, especially if he be their Enemy, as you
 are mine: You desire, nay (sawcily) you require, That with my leane and
 famished, your sick and starved people may passe into the Countrey through
 my Army, and that then I should (if it dooed) by means assaults at-
 tempt the winning of your Towne. The world will wonder at your cruel-
 tie, who haue harshly & uncharitably thrust out of your Gates mul-
 titudes of harmlesse, poore, and distressed People, being of your owne
 Blood, Kindred, and Country, to the intent that I should mercilesly slay
 and consume them: yet such hath bene your cruelty and gentlenesse to-
 wards them, that oftentimes I haue relieved them with mine own Food.
 But because I doe now finde, that your obstinaty is not yet qualified and
 corrected, I will from henceforth abstaine from giving unto them any
 further comfort: and if a bea perill with extreame famine, as they
 merdes will doe, their blood will be required by God at your hands,
 who

who doe most wickedly expose them to those calamities; and not at mine, who would willingly preserve them, if my fauours in that behalfe, would not hinder mee from the recovering of my Right. Resolue your selues therefore, that seeing you remaine still forward, they shall not passe through mine Armie, but dye at your Gates; except (your hearts being mollified) you will relieue them, and suffer them to spend some part of your victuals: And when I shall see cause, your Towne shall be assaulted to your paine. But your aduice and directions shall not appoint the time, for it shall be and rest wholly and onely at my pleasure. And in the meane time I would haue you know, That he who dares to enter into, and thus to passe through all your Countreies; He who hath already taken, though not as large, yet as strong Townes as this; and he who by the destruction of your Nobles, Captains, and brasse Armes, hath opened the way thus to besiege your Towne, dares also to assault it, and little doubts to winne it when he will.

Thus when the King had spoken, and ended his Speech, he commanded, that those French Commissioners should dine among his great Officers of State, and with a frowning countenance hee departed from them, and went into his chamber.

When Dinner was fully ended, vpon a new consultation had betwixt themselves, the Frenchmen became humble Sutors to speake once more with the King; who gently admitted them to his presence, and then (with much submission and humilitie) they craued a stay from further violence, and a Truce for eight daies, that more deliberate aduice might instruct them to resolve what course was fittest for the Towne to take; the king (who loathed all severity, if mildnesse might obtaine him Victory) granted their request: and then they departed (being thereby much comforted) into the Citie.

Daily and hourly throughout those eight daies the Frenchmen resorted vnto the English Armie, and oftentimes consulted of those affaires with the Earles of Warwicke and of Salisbury, and with other Commissioners appointed by the king. Much was demanded; nothing granted; nor contended: and yet those eight daies were spent.

The Townes-men againe earnestly entreated, That the Truce might be prolonged one day more: which was frankly yeelded to them. The same day the Multitude and the baser sort of the people within the Citie, being informed that nothing was agreed on, with hideous shouts, and fearefull cries and exclamations, accused their Magistrates, Captaines, and Commanders, and threatned to

*They desire
to speake with
the King a-
gaine.*

*A Truce
granted for
eight daies.*

*The eight
daies are
spent.*

*One day more
of Truce gra-
ned.*

*The common
doe mutinie
in the Towne.*

to cut their throates, because (as murderers of their Country-men and brethren) they suffered them to starue like dogges; thereby supporting the stoumisse of their owne stomacks, and their owne particular estates.

The Magistrates and the Captaines fearing the euill euent of this vnruely tumult, entreated all the Citizens to repaire into the Market place. Which when they did, they then required of them what they would haue: With one consent and with one voyce they cryed out, That they were resolved to saue their owne liues, by yeelding of the City to king *Henrie*.

Vpon this motion, a new Petition was sent vnto the king, craving the continuance of the Truce for foure dayes more: Which request was granted to them: And in the fourth day, being about the nineteenth day of Ianuarie, all matters were so thoroughly concluded and agreed on, that the strong and faire Citie of Roan, the Inhabitants themselves, and all their goods and riches, were yeelded to the Kings mercie.

The rendring of this Citie, and of all the aforesaid Townes, and many more, did much perplexe & coole the courage of the Normans: and the Duke of Burgoine, who (with the discontentment of the Nobility) ruled both the King and his Countries, feared much lest these disasters would be layed vnto his charge. Wherefore, to prevent ensuing dangers, which (as hee suspected) did secretly threaten his Estate, he resolved, by his best meanes and endeauours, first to reconcile the two kings, if possibly he could, and then to auenge himselfe vpon the Dolphin, vpon the Constable, and also vpon all such others, as he supposed were most like ly to do him the greatest harme.

Vpon the Dukes motion, king *Henrie* with his Nobles and greatest Commanders, and one thousand brave and gallant souldiers, and the French Queene (because the King was weake and vnable) the Lady *Katherine* his daughter, and the said Duke, with some other Noblemen of France, accompanied with the like number, met oftentimes, and consulted much. But whatsoeuer king *Henrie* did demand, all was denied, and all their trauailes sorted to no end. Whereat king *Henrie* was much displeased, and taking leaue, he told the Duke, That hee would haue the kings daughter, the Ladie *Katherine*, for his Wife; with all such Seigniories, Provinces, and Countries as he required: Or otherwise, hee would (ere long) drine both his Master and him also, out of that Kingdome.

The Duke replied, That those words were spoken with great
cafe;

Roan is yeelded to King Henries mercie.

The Regent plotteth to make peace, and to be reconciled on his enemies.

Many parties, but nothing concluded.

King Henrie is angry.

The Dukes answer.

The Dolphin
and the Re-
gent outward-
ly reconciled.

King Henry
createsh
Earles in
France.
Longeuile,
Tankeruile,
Ewe.

Panthoyse
taken.

The Duke of
Clarence lay
before Paris
two dayes.

The Parisi-
ans are af-
fraid.

All Norman-
dun men by
King Henry,
except Mount
S. Michael.

7.
1418.

case; but that hee must take much labour and toyle to make them good.

Now, when this practice fayled, the Duke (vpon faire tearmes) reconciled himselfe to the Dolphin. And this their new amitie & friendship was by publike Notaries reduced into a formall Instrument in writing, confirmed with both their Scales; and was proclaimed with great solemnity in manie Towns in France: yet was it fained and vnfirm, as shortly after it appeared.

But this ourward Reconciliation contented not king Henry; because hee was right well assured, That their discord and their brawlings would haue given an easie passage to his attempts in those Countries; yet (like an vndaunted Prince) hee resolved to trie his further Fortunes with them all. And in hope of future service to be honorably performed, he created *Gaston de Foys*, Earle of Longeuile; *Sir John Gray*, Earle of Tankeruile; & *Sir John Bouchier*, Earle of Ewe. And then, in close and in secret manner, hee sent Captain *Bueff*, brother to the said Earle of Longeuile, with fiftene hundred approved men of Warre, to the strong Towne of *Panthoyse*; who (before the day appeared) with scaling Ladders resolutely entered into the Towne, and possessed the Market place without blowes. Which when the Lord *Lisleadame*, the Captaine of the Towne perceived, hee fled away, with eight thousand of the Inhabitants: who were receiued into Paris. And the next day king Henrys brother, the Duke of Clarence, came vnto the same Towne, with sixe hundred gallant and well prepared men of Warre; and having fortified it, and diuided the chiefest of the Spoyles thereof among the beaue attempters of this Exploit; hee marched vnto Paris, and lay before it two dayes. But being vnable with so small a number to assault, or much to trouble it, hee returned (vnfought with) vnto *Panthoyse*.

The winning of this Towne immoderately vexed and appalled the Parisians: because (now) the French king had not, in his possession, any strong Towne betwixt them and the English Armie.

The Duke of Clarence had also taken the strong castles of Gyfors and of Gallyard: And within few daies after, all the Towers, Cities, Castles, and Fortresses in Normandie (excepting Mount *S. Michael* onely, which neuer was besieged nor assaulted) were either taken by force, or were voluntarily surrendered to king Henry: who by Gods assistance, and his true valour, thus reduced the whole Duchie of Normandie to his Crowne; and did enjoy it, as his Inheritance and Right.

The

The foresaid *John*, Duke of Burgoine, surnamed the proud, perceiving that the Kingdome of France was too too weakly vnderpropped, by reason that the friendship lately contracted betwixt himselfe and *Charles* the Dolphin, was but superficiall, and not heartie; determined, in a more submissive manner, to humble himselfe vnto him, that thereby their loue taking the deeper root, might bring forth riper fruits of Vnitie and of Peace. But when they met, the Dolphin (whose malice was irreconcilable; and whom mistrustfull ieaousie did still perswade, that the Duke would not be faithfull) procured him treacherously to be murdered: as the said Duke himselfe (vpon the like enter-view, for friendship sake) had caused *Lewis* the Duke of Orleance to be slaine, in the tenth yeare of the reigne of King *Henrie* the Fourth.

This horrible Accident for a while tormented with insupportable griefe *Philip* Earle of Carolois, the son and heire of the deceased Duke: insomuch, as that (in his dumpish and melancholy passions, and in the heat of his fury) hee once determined to separate himselfe from the bed and company of his guiltlesse wife, onely because she was sister to the Dolphin. But (being more grauely aduised by his Counsellors) as his sorrowes waxed faint, so his affection towards her encreased strength; and shee was entertained with his best loue.

This new Duke of Burgoine, and Earle of Flanders, being very wise and politicke, behaued himselfe courteously and friendly to King *Henrie*; and practised all means by which he might conclude a firme and a settled Peace betwixt the Kings of England and of France. And in those his endeouours he was the more powerfull:

First, because his wife was daughter to the said French King.

Secondly, because his wines sister, the Lady *Katharine* (who could doe all in all with *Isabel* the Queene her mother) passionately longed to be espoused to king *Henrie*.

Thirdly, for that the said Queene (who by the Dolphin was deprived of all her Treasure, as formerly you haue heard) could not endure to heare of him, nor could abide his presence.

Fourthly, because the Dolphin was more subtil, cunning, crafty, and reuengefull, than politicke, wise, and valiant.

And lastly, because this late horrible and inhumane Murder made him odious and infamous, yea to his owne friends.

This Peace being againe and againe consulted and debated on, betwixt the Queene, the Duke, and diuers of the greatest Nobilitie in France vpon the one part, and the Embassadors of king *Henrie* vpon the other part; and being brought to some maturitie and ripe-

John the proud Duke of Burgoine newly seeketh reconciliation with the Dolphin.

The Duke is murdered.

A trust pmissment.

8

1419

Philip Duke of Burgoine.

Hee attempts to conclude a Peace.

His means to further it.

1

2

3

4

5

An inter-
view.

King Henrie
is guarded by
his Armie.
A peace is
concluded.
The King is
married: and
proclaymed
Regent and
Heire appa-
rant of France.

ripenesse) it was resolved, That King Henrie should meete with Charles the sixt the French King, Queene Isabel his wife, and with the Lady Katherine, and their Nobility and Councell, at Troys in Champaigne: which (with all expedition) he did; being accompanied with his two brothers, Thomas Duke of Clarence, & Humfrey Duke of Glocester, & with the Earls of Warwick, Salisbury, Huntingdon, Longeuyle, Tankeruyle, & Ewe, & diuers other noble and great men. But to prevent the worst, and to foresee dangers before they happened; hee was soundly guarded with fiftene thousand men. And within few dayes after their enter-view, a firme Peace was proclaymed: and the King (with honourable solemnitie and triumphant sportings) was married to the said Ladie Katherine; and was published to be the onely Regent and Heire Apparant to the Crowne of France, in both those Kingdomes.

The chiefest Articles (in brieft) were these.

The Articles on which the Peace was concluded.

1. **F**irst, That the two Great, High, and Mightie Princes, King Charles and Queene Isabell, should be entitled the Father and the Mother of King Henrie; and should bee by him and by his wife honoured and respected with that reuerence, which such an alliance did require.
2. Item, That the said King Charles, during his life, should hold and enioy (quietly, and in peace) his Royall Dignitie, Crowne, and Reuenues of all France: And that all Writs, Processes, Commissions, and all such like Proceedings, should passe vnder his Name and Seale as King: And that the said Queene Isabell (if shee suruiued her husband) should hold and enioy, during her life, her Title and Estate; and all such Lordships, Rents, and Reuenues in France, as of late were holden and enioyed by Queene Blanch, sometimes the Wife and Dowager of King Philip, great Grandfather to King Charles.
3. Item, That Queene Katherine should haue in England a Dower

Dower of twentie thousand markes by the yeare; vnto which she should be enabled and assured with all conuenient speede.

4. Item, That during the life of King Charles, King Henrie should not (in any wise) be stiled with the name and dignitie of the King of France; and that the French King, whilest he liued, should write him and entitle him in French thus: *Nostre trechier filz Henry, Roy Dengleterre, Heretere de France.* And in Latine thus: *Præclarissimus filius noster Henricus, Rex Angliæ, & Hæres Franciæ.*
5. Item, That after the death of King Charles, the Crowne and kingdome of France should wholly and entirely come, bee, and remaine, to King Henrie and to his Heires for euer.
6. Item, That in regard that King Charles (by reason of his manifold infirmities, occasioned by much sicknesse) was made vnapt and vnable to administer, by his owne directions, the affaires and busineses of his kingdome, King Henrie should bee Regent, and should rule and gouerne France as bee pleased, for the Kings honour, and for the profit and commoditie of that Region and Commonweale.
7. Item, That the Court of Parliament of France should bee kept and bee ordered in like sort, and should bee supported with the same Priuiledges, Customes, Estate, and Power, as in all former times had bene vsed and accustomed.
8. Item, That King Henrie should carefully and faithfully do his best endeouour to assist as well the Peeres as the People, in the attaining and getting of all such things, as in right, and by the Lawes and Customs that kingdome did belong vnto them: & should protect & defend all the Rights, Preheminences, Lawes, and Possessions of the Clergie of the Kingdome of France.

9. Item, That King Henrie should support and preserue all the subiects of France against all forraine Enemies; suppress and beat downe all intestine and in-bred Quarrells, Debates, Insurrections, and Ciuill Warres; encrease the prosperitie and peace of France, and administer Iustice, without partialitie, vnto all sorts and degrees of People whatsoeuer.
10. Item, That King Henrie should place into the Roomes and Offices of Iustice, and of Receits, and of Gouvernement, such persons as shall be wise, discreete, faithfull, and sufficient to minister and to manage those things, which should be committed to their charge.
11. Item, That King Henrie should speedily endeauour, with his best helpe, to reduce the Dolphin and the Earle of Arminacke, late Constable of France, to the obedience of King Charles; and all such others, as did with them rebelliously maintaine ciuill Dissentions in the Commonweale.
12. Item, That King Henry should cause all the Peeres, Nobles, Gentrie, Clergie, Townes, Cities, and Burgeses of France to take a corporall Oath for their obedience to king Charles during his life: And after his death, to King Henrie, and to his heires: And to admit none other Regent, or King; nor to conspire any thing against his or their Persons or Estates: but should reueale all mischiefes which should be contriued and practised for his or their hurt or destruction.
13. Item, That such Possessions as King Henrie should winne from any person disobedient to King Charles, (excepting onely in Normandie) should bee employed and conuerted vnto the onely use and benefite of the French King. But if the offendours doe voluntarily and chearefully take the aforesaid Oath, then the said Possessions to bee frankly and freely restored vnto them.

14. Item,

14. Item, That after the death of King Charles, the Duchie of Normandie, and all others conquered by King Henrie, should be obedient and bow vnder the command of the Scepter and Crowne of France.
15. Item, That King Henrie should not burden the subiects of France with any Taxes or Impositions, but in cases of great and urgent necessitie: and then onely the same to be assessed and leued according to the custome and manner of France, and not otherwise.
16. Item, That after the death of King Charles, the two Kingdomes of France and of England should alwaies separately be ruled and commanded by one Man, and not by two Kings: and that neither of those kingdomes should be subiect the one to the other, but each of them should still retaine, vse, and enioy their particular Customes, Liberties, Priuiledges, Prebeminences, Immunities, and Lawes.
17. Item, That all care should be taken, & all prouision made, that the subiects of each kingdom, as brethren and friends, should liue in mutuall loue, amitie, and peace, and each of them to procure, by their best meanes, the welfare and prosperitie of the other.
18. Item, That neither the said French king, nor king Henry, should conclude any Peace, nor make any Truce, with the falsely entituled Dolphin, except they both, and the said Philip Duke of Burgoine, did all three consent and agree in one voice.
19. Item, That none should be appointed to attend the Person of King Charles, but Frenchmen, and such as himselfe or his owne Councell should make choyce of: And that from time to time he should be resident and dwell at his pleasure in the most convenient places of his kingdom.
20. And lastly, That both the said kings vnder their Letters Patents, and all their Nobilitie, Clergie, Gentry, Cities, and Comminalties, by Instruments in writing vnder their hands

bands and seales, should ratifie and confirme the said Articles and Agreements: And that they all should solemnly sweare and vow to maintaine them in all points to the uttermost of their abilitie and power.

The Articles are proclaymed in England and in France.

They are ratified by severall Oaths.

The King warreth in Burgoyne.

The murderers of John Duke of Burgoyne are executed.

The Duke of Clarence is made Captaine of Paris.

King Henrie is proclaymed Regent and Heire apparant to the Crowne of France.

King Henry winneth the love of the Frenchmen.

These Articles and these Agreements being thus concluded, were ordered accordingly; and then, with all convenient expedition, were proclaymed both in England and in France. The two Kings, and all their Nobles, and other subiects of account, were solemnly iworne to obserue and to maintaine them. And then they both, being accompanied with *James* the young, but valiant King of Scots, the Duke of Burgoyne, the Prince of Orange, one & twentie Earles, fortie & five Barons, and a multitude of Knights, Gentlemen, and braue souldiers of France, of England, and of Ireland, wasted such Countreies, and besieged and tooke such strong and well defended Townes and Castles within the Duchie of Burgoyne, as sided and sorted with the Dolphin: As first of all, the Towne of Seyne, after it had bene besieged fiftene daies; and the Castle there, after it had held out six weekes: then Molyn, vpon the River of Seyne; which they tooke, after they had enuironed it full seven moneths; and in it were apprehended the Lord *Barbason*, the chiefe commander there, and diuers others, who were agents and actors in the murdering of *John* the Proud Duke of Burgoyne: all which were by the French king sent from thence vnto Paris, vnder the guardship of *Thomas* Duke of Clarence, who was newly made chiefe Captaine of that Citie by king *Charles*. And within few daies after, the said offenders were legally tryed, convicted, sentenced, and put to death for the said Murder.

Then the two Kings, with their two Queenes, and their Nobilitie and Companies, went vnto Paris; where king *Henry* was proclaymed Regent and Heire apparant to the Crowne of France: & so was he, not long after, in London.

In Paris the two Kings kept their *Christmas*. The French King (being very sickly and weake) maintained small hospitalitie. But King *Henrie* with such heroicall Magnificence, rich Plentie, and liberall Entertainement, so feasted the Nobles, Gentrie, and Citizens of both the said kingdomes, and was so open-handed to all sorts and degrees of people, that his State and Maiestie was admired: and his Princely courtesie fast bound vnto him the hearts of the Frenchmen, to yeeld vnto him all manner of obedience and of seruice.

Whilest

Whilest the two kings thus remained in Paris, a great Assembly (by their Authoritie) was conuocated thither: In which they both sate as Iudges, and before them, the Duchesse of Burgoine, late Wife to her slaine Husband, by her Aduocate appealed Charles the late Dolphin, and seuen others, as murderers of her Lord. But no defence was made for them. And not long after, a Court of Parliament was kept there: In which, a solemne Processe was awarded against the Dolphin, and the rest of the Accused, to appeare at the Marble Table in Paris at an appointed day. But they all failed to obserue that command: And thereupon they were (by the said Court) banished the Realme, and all the Territories of France; and were also deprived of all Honors, Names, Titles, Dignities, Preheminences, and Possessions whatsoever.

When the late Dolphin had intelligence thereof, hee went into Languedocke, and comforted himselfe with his old friend the Earle of Arminack, sometimes Constable of France: who not onely assisted him (in his great distresse) with Money, Munition, and with Men; but also (in his owne person) did him all reuerence, and tooke his part against all such as professed themselves to bee his Enemies.

These things being thus accomplished; the two kings, their Queenes, and Nobles, sorrowfully departed each from other: And king *Henrie*, with his Queene, went vnto Roan; where hee received Homage of all his Nobles in the Duchie of Normandie: And (among others) of the Earle of Stafford; to whom hee had giuen the Earledome of Perch: And of *Arthur* of Britaine; vpon whom he had bestowed the Country of Iurye.

Hee also made his brother *Thomas*, Duke of Clarence, Lieutenant Generall both of France and of Normandie: and of that Duchie, hee made the Earle of Salisburie Deputie to the said Duke: And then hee, with Queene *Katherine* his wife, departed vnto Amiens, and from thence to Callice, and so came into England: Where they were receiued and entertained with as much triumph and true ioy as could bee by subjects expressed towards the Prince. And in Februarie following, the Queene was crowned at Westminster, with great solemnitie and much honour.

The Noble and the valiant Duke of Clarence being aduertised, That the Duke of Alanson (entitling himselfe the Lieutenant Generall of the Dolphin) with diuers other Noblemen, had leuied

The Dolphin and the other murderers are hanged.

The Dolphin is aided by his old friend the Earle of Arminack.

King Henrie seales the State of France.

The Duke of Clarence is made Lieutenant General of France and of Normandy.

The King & the Queene come into England.

The Queene is crowned.

9

1420.

The Duke of Clarence is betrayed by his friend, and is slaine.

an Armie; assembled the greatest part of his garrisons in Normandie, and marched strongly into the Prouince of Angeou, & pitched not far off from the Citie of Angiers, and spoyled and burnt the Countrie round about it.

*Andrew
Forgusa.*

To performe this Enterprise with honour and with safety; the Duke of Clarence had strengthened himselfe with sufficient Forces and provisions, if they had beene well and wisely ordered. But hauing in his Armie a false and a trayterous Lombard, named *Andrew Forgusa*, whom hee too too much loued and trusted; hee sent the said Lombard to discover the preparations and the power with which hee was resolved to encounter: Who brought him word, That their number was but small, their provisions defectiue, and their order, orderlesse; and that the Duke of Alanfon was altogether vnable and too too weake to contend with him.

*The battaile
of Blaugy.*

The Duke of Clarence firmly and strongly relying vpon the faith and the trust which hee reposed in this Traytor; and being desirous with a small number to winne the honour of that day: marched forward with his horsemen onely, leauing behinde him his lustie and his strong Archers. But when hee was entred within the secret ambushments, which purposely were placed to distresse him; and saw, that his enemies were in number foure for one, and were well provided, well armed, and arranged in good order of battaile, and that no militarie discipline or art was wanting; and that himselfe was villaynously abused and betrayed by the Lombard whom hee trusted: hee could not flye, nor make any safe retreat; but was enforced to aduenture his fortunes, with too much inequalitye on his part. So the fight began: And though it was long maintained by the Englishmen, with as much constancie and resolute valour as any men liuing could performe: yet they being euerie minute oppressed with new supplies and multitudes, which still came rushing in vpon them, tyring, oppressing, spoyling, and hauocking of them wastefully on euery side; they were at length ouer-mastred and overthrowne.

*The English-
men slain and
taken priso-
ners.*

In this Battaile there were slaine on the French part more than twelue hundred of their choyfest men: and of the English there were slaine the braue Duke of Clarence, the Earle of Tankersyle, Sir *Gilbert Vmfrayle*, Earle of Kent; a prudent man and a worthy Commander; the Lord *Rasse*, and almost two thousand others: And there were taken prisoners, the Earles of Somerset, Suffolke, and Perch; the Lord *Fitz-water*, and many others.

Sir

Sir Thomas Beauford, surnamed the Bastard of Clarence (who had the direction of the Archers which were left behinde) being informed (but all too late) that the Duke of Clarence was betrayed; and that the numbers of the Frenchmen, and their Power, did farre exceede the Lombards report; and that the English were distressed: with incredible speede marched forth to succour them with his best helpe. But the French men perceiuing his approach, and contenting themselves with the honour of the day, and with their prisoners, as they had taken; with posting haste and speede fledde and ranne away as fast as they were able, leauing the new Forces of the Englishmen to performe sad Exequies for their slaine Friends: the bodies of whom they buried. But the Duke of Clarence was carried into England, and honourably interred at Canterburie, by his Father King Henry the Fourth.

The heauie newes of this v unexpected ouerthrow, and especially the death of the Duke of Clarence (occasioned by the aforesaid Treacherie and Treason) much grieved the king his brother. Who purposing to reuenge himselfe, if hee might, vpon the Duke of Alanson; and the late Dolphin, and his adherents; sent into Normandie the Earle of Mortaigne, brother to the late taken Earle of Somerset, and gaue to him the same Authoritie and Place which the Duke of Clarence formerly had. Hee also assembled his high Court of Parliament: In which hee substantially discovered in what sort the Estate of both his Kingdomes stood: and how conuenient, nay, how necessarie and how needfull it was, that the Dolphin and his adherents should speedily bee pursued. Hee likewise told them, That hee wanted neither Men, Munition, nor Courage; but that Money was too scarce with him to vndertake that business. Whereupon the Temporallie, with all cheerefulnesse and alacritie, gaue vnto him one Fifteene, and the Clergie gaue him two. And because much time would bee spent before it could be leuid; therefore the kings vncle, the Bishop of Winchester, disbursed vnto him in ready coyne twentie thousand pounds; which hee receiued againe out of the said Fifteenes.

The king hauing leuid a gallant Armie, which consisted of foure thousand men at Armes; and of foure and twenty thousand Archers; sent, and with all speede, prosperously landed them at his owne Towne of Callice, vnder the command of his worthy brother, John Duke of Bedford: whom, himselfe (in his owne person) followed. And vnderstanding, that the Dolphin

*Cowardly
Frenchmen.*

*The Earle of
Mortaigne
succeedeth
the Duke of
Clarence.*

*John Duke of
Bedford car-
rieth an army
into France.*

*The King
followeth.*

with

*He meeteth
his friend
Philip Duke
of Burgoyne.*

*The Dolphin
raised his
siege.*

*James the
King of Scots
winneeth Di-
vax.*

*The Dolphin
fled from
place to place.*

*Prince Henry
is borne.*

*The Kings
words.*

IO

1421

*The Dolphin
overeth his
the Duke of
Burgoyne
countrie.*

with seven thousand men, had besieged and much distressed the Citie of Chartiers, which was valiantly defended by the Bastard of Thyan; hee marched swiftly vnto Paris, and from thence toward his Enemies: and in his iourney he was met by his heartie and true friend, *Philip Duke of Burgoyne*, and Earle of Flanders; who brought vnto him four thousand men, and diligently attended him in that Negotiation and Seruice.

The king was now informed, That the Dolphin (distrusting his owne strength) had raised his Siege, and was retyred vnto Tours into Towrayne: Wherefore to repress the rage and violence of *Sir Iaques Harcourt*, (who wasted the Country of Picardie) hee sent the Duke of Burgoyne thither: And with other Forces hee caused the young and couragious *James*, the king of the Scots, to lay siege vnto the Towne of Direx: which he performed accordingly; and daily with such violence and valour so assaulted it for the space of sixe weekes, that with maine strength hee compelled it to bee yeilded into his hands, to king *Henries* vse.

And whilst this Siege did thus continue, the king himselfe passed ouer the Riuer of Loyer, intending to haue encountered with the Dolphin. But he (distrusting his own strength) fled from Tours vnto Burgys in Berry; and there expected a change of his frowning fortunes.

The king perceiuing his flight from place to place to bee so quicke and hastie; hee thought it not convenient, to tyre out his Armie to pursue him: Wherefore hee returned ouer the Riuer of Loyre; and tooke, either by force or by voluntary yeelding, many Townes and Castles, vnto his owne vse.

About the same time, *Queene Katharine* was deliuered of a Sonne at Windsor, who was named *Henrie*: Of whose birth, as soone as the King had notice, he said vnto the Lord *Fitz-Hugh* his Chamberlaine: *I HENRIE, borne at Monmouth, shall remaine but a short time, and gaine much; but HENRIE, borne at Windsor, shall reigne long, and lose all.*

The King, who (for many weekes together) had besieged the well-defended Towne of Meux in Bry; enforced it to bee yeilded into his hands; and thereupon all the Townes and Fortresses in the Isle of France, in Lannays, in Bry, & in Champagne, did the like.

When the Dolphin vnderstood, that the king, with his Armie, was departed farte away from him; hee raised another Armie,

me and entered into the Duke of Burgoines Countrie, walling and consuming it with Sword and with Fire: and strailly besieged the Citie of Cosney, which by composition was to be yielded to him, if it were not rescued within ten daies. Of this agreement notice was sent by the Duke of Burgoine to the king, with a request, That hee would send a power conuenient for the remove of the said Siege. Whereupon the King in his owne person, being accompanied with a gallant company, marched towards that Citie to set it free. But as he traualled on the way, hee fell so sicke, that he was vnable to trauaile any further. So the charge of that expedition was committed to his brother *John* Duke of Bedford: whose passage forth was noyled to the Dolphin to bee with such an high courage and souldier-like resolution, that the Dolphin fearing to grapple with him, raised his siege, and most dishonourably retyred himself and his Armie into Berry. And thus was that Citie rescued and deliuered by the English.

The king, by reason of his encreasing sickenesse, waxing more weake and feeble, was carried vnto Boys in Vyncennes; where, within few dayes, he was summoned by death to depart into another world.

But before he dyed, hee called vnto him his two brothers, *John* Duke of Bedford, and *Humphrey* Duke of Gloucester: the former, he made Lieutenant General of Normandie, and Regent of the kingdom of France; and the other, he made Protector of England, and of his sonnes owne person. Hee embraced his approaching end comfortably; in regard, that though his time had beene but short, yet it was beautified with matchlesse fame and honour, which longer continuance (beeing the professed enemy of stabilitie) might haue changed. He exhorted them and his Nobles, who then were present, to maintaine true and heartie loue and friendship with his noble and faithfull friend *Philip* Duke of Burgoine, & neuer to be in variance with him. Hee perswaded them to nourish and to cherish an vnseparable vnitie and faithfull friendship among themselves: to bee faithfull and louing to his young infant sonne, and their succeeding king *Henrie*; and by all meanes to bee helpful, ayding, and assisting to his most sad, dolorous, and mournfull Queene: to preferue and to maintaine by Wisedom, Policie, and Armes, those things which he by valour, and GODS furtherance had honourably wonne and gotten: Neuer to conclude any peace or amitie with the late Dolphin and Duke of Alanson, vntill they were enforced to submit themselves to his sonnes grace and mercie. Finally, he thanked Almighty God, who had made him Religious,

Cosney is besieged.

The King goeth to relieve Cosney.

The King falleth sicke.

The Dolphin flyeth.

The Kings Speech before he dyed.

The King
died.

1422.

gious, Verruous, Honest and Victorious: and dyed the last day of
August, in the year of our Lord God 1422, in the eight
and thirtieth year of his age, when hee had reigned but
nine yeares, five moneths, and foure & twenty daies.
And his body being conveyed into England, was laid
buried among his noble Progenitors at
Westminster, with extraordinary
solemnitie and great
pompe.

The king, by reason of his exceeding
weake and feeble, was carried to his death, where
within few daies, he was brought to his death, and
that world.

But before he dyed, he called unto him two brothers, James
Duke of Bedford, and John Duke of Lancaster: the former he
made lieutenant of France, and the latter he made lieutenant of
England, and gave them the keys of the kingdom, and the
of his honours, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
comfortably; in the of his honours, and the of his honours,
yet it was becomen, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
get comen, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
hans charged. He comen, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
pation, to maintain, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
noble and faithful, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
a variance with him, the of his honours, and the of his honours,
with an unquenchable, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
loines: to be faithful, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
and the of his honours, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,

tyding, and assisting to his most, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
Queen: to preferre and to maintain by, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
THE
had honourably wonne and gotten: Now to conclude my
or amide with the late Duke of Bedford, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
were ordered to be put to death, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,
die finally, and the of his honours, and the of his honours, and the of his honours,



THE
HISTORIE OF
KING HENRIE
THE SIXT.



HENRIE the Fifth dyed when his Son *Henrie* was but nine moneths old: Yet was hee so fortunate in his beginning, that his Youth and Gouvernement were worthily supported by his three Vncles, *Humphrey* Duke of Gloucester, who (when the king was crowned) was made Protector both of his Person & also of his Realme: *John* Duke of Bedford, who was established Re-

gent of France: and *Thomas* Duke of Exeter, who graced all his actions with much wisdom and great valour.

Needfull it was, that the new Protector and the Regent should make the utmost triall of their sufficiencies to the World. For whereas, in the end of the kings fathers dayes, the Nobilitie of France incorporated themselves to the English Nation, and heartily enuied the Dolphin: King *Charles* about this time dyed: & the vnconstant Frenchmen began to play an Irish game. For, on a sudden, many of those dissembling and fained friends renounced their duties and obedience to King *Henry*, and (utterly neglecting the performance of Oathes of Allegiance made vnto him) they revolted, and not onely adhered to *Charles* their new king, but by all sinister practises and meanes they endeououred to extirpe the English Nation among them, if they might.

The

1422.

*A young King,
but well go-
uerned.*

*France is un-
willing to re-
main English.*

*The Regents
Policies.*

The Protector at home (by the aduice and counsell of the Statists) plotted many proiects for the retaining of the kings inheritance in Normandie and in France : and for that purpose hee furnished the Regent with store of Souldiers, Siluer, and of Gold.

The Regent also leuied a strong Armie in Normandie among his choyselt and chieftest friends : whom (by substantiall arguments and sound reasons) hee perswaded to perseuere and to continue loyall to his master ; and not to be wearied with any labour, or daunted with any danger, because a peaceable and a blessed conclusion should make them rich and fortunate, and winne to them the loue and fauour of their yong king, as he encreased in wisdom and in yeares.

Pont-Melance taken.

And on the other side, *Charles* (the new king) spared not any paines ; but did the like : insomuch, that nothing but tyrannizing Warre, and the vnchristian effusion of much bloud, was thought vpon. And to beginne those troubles, the French king sent the Lord *Grandenyle*, with a selected companie, to Pont-Melance, which standeth on the Riuer of Seyne ; which he surprised, and slew the most part of them, whom hee found there, before any notice of his approach gaue any warning to the English Garrison to defend it.

*The Earle of
Salisbury a
famous man.*

Pont-Melance regained.

Thomas Montacute, the Earle of Salisburie, for his admired courage and expert managing of martiall actions, was (at that time) more fitly to be compared to a choyce Roman, than to any other who liued in his daies. To this Earle, the Regent commended the regaining of that Towne : in the siege whereof, hee spent three moneths ; but (at length) it was yeelded into his hands : and the Lord *Grandenyle* (by a sollemne oath) promised his faithfull and perpetuall seruice to king *Henrie* ; but reuolted as soone as he was set at large.

Sens is taken.

From thence, the said Earle marched into Champaigne, besieged and tooke the Towne of Sens, and deuoured the surprised souldiers with the Sword.

*The Parisians
came prote-
ction.*

The vnconstant Parisians (more coueting to make an outward shew of their fidelitie to the English, than to be true indeed) sent diuers of their greatest and grauest Citizens into England, to craue protection and defence against king *Charles* : Who were receiued, not onely with a cheerefull welcome, hearty thanks, and bountifull entertainment ; but also were promised the fruition of much happinesse, if they persisted loyall vnto King *Henry*.

About

About that time, the Regent meeting at Amiens with the Dukes of Burgoyne and of Brittain, renewed the League formerly concluded betweene them: And to make it the more firme and sure, hee married the Lady Anne of Burgoyne, sister unto the Duke.

The triumphant Shewes and Pastimes which were prepared to augment the honour of this Match, perswaded the Parisians in his absence, that the Regent attended nothing but folly and Mirth: Which conceits of theirs made them (treacherously) to induce their longed-for King Charles to come unto them, and to receive that Citie into his hands.

This newes brought comfort to his soule: So that hee appointed the day, when his desire should bee effected in that businesse. But, as it euer falleth out, where many are of counsell, nothing can be secret: So, some of those Conspirators acquainted the Regent with every particular of this Plot: Who (with his Armie) posted vnto Paris, with greater expedition than may well be credited, and entered into the Citie gates before any notice was giuen of his repaire thither. For this Conspiracy, many of the chiefeest confederates were executed publikely with sundry kinds of death: And from thenceforth he mastered the Parisians with English Garrisons, and replenished their Castle, Towers, Fortresses, and Places of defence and strength, with such English Souldiers, as solaced themselves in being froward Commanders and imperious Rulers of the inhabitants of that Citie.

And likewise (by strong assaults and enforced compositions) hee wonne the two Castles of Pacy and Courfay, which were not farre from it; both which hee strengthened in like manner.

Whilest these things were thus acted, the Lord William Steward, Constable of Scotland; the Earle of Ventadore, and manie others, with a strong Armie, besieged the strong Towne of Crauant, within the Territories of Burgoyne. But the Earle of Salisburie, with an Armie of fiftene thousand men, rushed fiercely vpon the besiegers, and with the losse of one and twenty hundred of his companies, and with the slaughter of eight thousand of his enemies, hee rayfed the Siege, and gained liberty to the Towne.

The Earle, vpon his returne to Paris, was substituted vice-Regent of the countries of France, Bry, & Champaigne: & Sir John Pastolfe (an approved Knight in Arms) was appointed to be Deputy in the Duchie of Normandie. Which worthy Captaines performed such

1423

2

A League renewed.

The Regent married.

The Parisians are unfaithfull, and conspire with the French King.

The treachery discovered.

The Regent subdueth the Parisians.

Pacy and Courfay wonne by the English.

The siege of Crauant is rayfed.

noble deedes of Chivalrie, and obtained such unexpected victories, as made them famous, their Followers rich, and their Countrey renowned in all Kingdomes.

In the meane time, whilst the Protector providently endeavouring to prevent the encreasing strength of the Kings enemies in France, and to secure the tranquillitie and peace of this Commonwealth at home, for a small ranfome hee enlarged James the young and martiall king of Scots, who for many yeares had beene a prisoner: And receiving of him in the kings behalfe, his homage and his fealty for Scotland, hee gave to him in marriage (by the consent of all the English Nobility) the Lady Jane, daughter to the deceased Earle of Somerset, and Cousin german to the king.

This gallant Prince, by meanes of his excellent Learning and Education in feare of Armes, under the last king Henrie, was better enabled to rule a Kingdome than any of his Progenitors did before him: In so much, that making the best vse of those heroicall vertues with which he was adorned, he reduced that Realme into extraordinarie Civility, made his souldiers expert in warlike discipline, and his Nation more learned than ever they had been before his dayes. Yet was hee altogether unfaichfull and vnthankfull to England, his nearest and his dearest friend.

The Protector (who was wise and industrious) never suffered the Regent in France to complaine of any want. For, as in former times, so now he sent vnto him an Army of tenne thousand men, with much Treasure. The Regent and his assistants daily wonne Townes, Cities, Castles, and Forts, with provident policie & true valour. But the French king, by grosse Flattery, cunning Deuises, secret Treachery, and covert Dealings (among others) possessed himselfe of the strong Townes of Crotoy, and some others, which were suddainly regayned: for true Manhood was encountred with Subtlety, and approved Valour with Treachery and Craft.

The Duke of Britaine fearing lest the Regent (growing strong) would at length be Lord of his Countrey, basely and perfidiously revolted to the French king. And so did his brother Arthur, Earle of Richmond; who by king Henrie the Fifth was created Earle of Yurye in Normandy, and made Gouvernor of that Towne. Whereupon the Regent besieged it; and with many secret Mynes, violent Batteries, and fierce Assaults, made it so subiect to apparant dangers, that the besieged concluded to yeeld it vp, if at an appointed day they were not relieved by the French king. For the Regent being thoroughly resolved to purchase his peace with a short and with a sharpe warre, determined to abide battell, what force soever should

The King of Scots ranfomed.

Hee doth homage for Scotland.

He is an excellent Prince, but unfaichfull and vnthankfull.

Provision for an Army sent into France.

Valour was encountred by treachery.

The Duke of Britaine and his brother doe revolt.

Yurye in Normandie besieged.

The Regents resolution.

should be sent to relieue the miseries of that distressed Towne. And to further his purpose in that behalfe, hee freely permitted messengers to be sent vnto his Enemies, to informe them of the conclusion which he had made.

Within few dayes after, the Duke of Alanson, with sixteene thousand Frenchmen, approached neare to the English Camp; who did put themselves into a readinesse to receiue him. But (according to the French fashion) he made many brageing shewes to performe much: but (on a suddain) he cowardly quited the place, not giuing any one blow; and pitched with his whole strength before the Towne of Vernoyke in the prouince of Perch: where he falsely informed the Inhabitants, That at Yurye hee had fought with the Regent, defeated his Armie, slaine thousands, taken manie prisoners, freed that Towne, and had compelled him (by swift riding) to prouide for the safety of his owne life.

This false report soone made the Duke owner of that Towne, and his Retreat made the Regent Lord of Yurye: and as soone as sound prouisions were made to strengthen it, the Regent with his whole Armie marched vnto Vernoyke, where (meeting with the French cowards, and with diuers Scots who did assist them) hee compelled them to engage their fortunes by a bloudy battaile in a pitched field. The fight was cruelly maintained for the space of three houres. But in the end, the Englishmen, with the losse of one and twenty hundred of their common souldiers, wonne the honour of that day, and slew of their Enemies five Earles, two Vicounts, one and twenty Barons, and more than seuen thousand other men; besides two thousand and seuen hundred Scots, who were sent thither by their King. But the Duke of Alanson himselfe, with many Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of Name, were taken prisoners. And the Towne of Vernoyke (without assault or battery) was surrendred into the Regents hands: who (having fortified it with a strong Garrison, commanded by their worthy Captaine Sir Philip Hall) marched to the City of Roan; where he was receiued with many triumphant Shewes. And from thence he came to Paris; where his kinde entertainment proclaymed his welcome and his honour.

This ouerthrow so weakened the French king, that none other Prouinces or Territories, but onely Burbon, Aluerne, Berry, Poyrou, Towrayne, part of Angeou and Languedoc, could giue vnto his Royall Person any warrant of safety and assurance. Yet (lest he should want the true honors belonging to a King) in the Citie of Poytiers hee established his High Court of Parliament, and his

*A cowardly
French Army*

*Vernoyke be-
sieged and
wonne by a
false report.*

Polacie.

Yurye wonne

*The battaile
of Vernoyke.*

*The French-
men are over-
throwne.*

*Vernoyke is
regained.*

*The English
doe preuaile.*

The French
King labou-
reth his owne
establishments

The Earle of
Salisbury
winneith
many Towns.

His name is
feared.

1425

4

The Siege of
Saint James.

Amiraculous
overthrow.

Apoore-
venge.

Chancery; with the publike vse of his broad Seale: and of all other things needfull and requisite for the due administration of his Lawes, and the distribution of Iustice.

The Regent taking the aduantage of his late Victory, sent into the Countrey of Mayne an Armie of tenne thousand men: which (with great resolution) were brauely conducted by the valorous and prudent Earle of Salisbury: who quickly wonne the strong Citie of Mauns, and the Townes of Saint *Sasau*, *le Fort Saint Bernard*, and many others. And from thence hee went into Angeou: where (with the Sword) hee performed such and so many wonders, that the very Name of *Salisbury* became terrible in all France.

The perfidious Earle of Richmond (whom king *Charles* had newly made High Constable of France) intending to make himselfe famous in the minority of his Gouvernement, raised an Armie of fortie thousand men; which consisted of Britons, French, and Scots: with which he besieged the strong Towne of Saint *James* in Beuyon; which was defended only by fixe hundred Englishmen: who hauing resolutely endured many sharpe assaults & hard bickerings, vpon a suddaine issued boldly out of the Towne, and proclaymed their approach with an hideous shout of Saint *George*, *Salisbury*; Saint *George*, *Salisbury*; and fell vpon the multitude of their enemies like a storme. This terrible cry, and the inconstolable feare and terrour, which made them thinke that the Earle of Salisbury, with his Armie, had secretly conueyed himselfe into the Towne for their rescue; so amazed and daunted the faint-hearted multitude, that (casting away their Armour, abandoning all Order, and entertaining nothing but Despaire) they leapt headlong into the Riuer: In which, many of them were drowned; more were slaine: some were taken prisoners: and the rest, who ranne away, left vnto this little handfull all their Tents, foureteene Pieces of Ordnance, fortie Barrells of Powder, three hundred Pypes of Wine, two hundred Pypes of Bisket and of Flower, and two hundred Pieces of Raisins and Figges, five hundred Barrells of Herrings, much Armour, and many other things.

The New Constable intending to redeeme his honour with some better fortune, recollected and furnished his Armie: with which hee marched into the Countrey of Angeou; where (without resistance) hee burnt a few of the smallest, poorest, and most vnworthy Villages of that Prouince.

This childish Seruice putt him vp with much pride, and made him to imagine, that he was now a warlike man, though his owne Nati-

Nation, and all others, did publickly mocke and scoffe at his grosse folly.

Whilest thus the Regent and his Capraines daily triumphed in France, a dangerous and unkind iarre brake forth at home, betwixt the Protector and his vnkle *Henrie*, Bishop of Winchester, & Lord Chancellor of England: which threatened the breach of the Peace and Tranquillitie of this Kingdome and Common-weale. For the appeasing whereof, the Regent having made the Earle of Warwick his Lieutenant Generall, and having set his affaires and businesse in good order, came into England: Where (in a Court of Parliament) the differences betwixt them were discouered, arbitrated, and the quarrell ended, to the great comfort and contentment of their friends. In honour whereof, the king kept a solemne Feast; in which, the Regent dubbed the King a Knight. The King also inuested many of his Great subiects with the same Dignity; and created his Cousin *Richard*, son to *Richard* late Earle of Cambridge, Duke of Yorke; and restored *John Mowbray* (who was Earle Marshall) to his fathers Duchie of Norfolk.

And in this meane time, the Earle of Warwick approued himself to be a worthy Commander ouer his great charge, and conquered many things in Mayne; and prepared to fight a set battaile, whereunto he was challenged by the French. But their threatnings were but brags, and their courage fell downe into their heeles: For, a little before the appointed time, they basely and cowardly ranne away.

When all things were thus quieted at home; the noble Regent (being accompanied with his vnkle the Bishop of Winchester) returned into France: And (vpon the request of his brother in law, the Duke of Burgoine) hee set at liberty the Duke of Alanfon for the ranfome of two hundred thousand Crownes: The most part of which money he would haue giuen backe againe, if the said Duke would haue sworne his homage to king *Henrie*: which hee refused to doe; and did affirme, That the whole world should not alienate his faith from king *Charles*, nor his dutie from his owne country.

At this time, the rich and proud Bishop of Winchester (being at Callice) according to his ambitious desires, was inuested with the Hat, Habite, and Dignity of a Cardinall; and receiued from the Pope a Bull: which gaue him meanes (in a short time) to heape together a great part of the Treasure of this Land: so that all men wondered at him for his Wealth, but no man had cause to commend him for his Learning, or to respect him for his Verrue.

Variation betweene the Protector and his vnkle the Bishop of Winchester.

It is appeased

The King is dubbed Knight.

Creation of Lords.

A French bragge.

1426

The Duke of Alanfon is ranfomed.

A worthy Duke.

Winchester is made a Cardinall.

He heapeth great treasure together.

*A notable
victory.*

After the Regents returne into France, the Lord *Rassan*, Marshall of Britain (hauing strongly fortified Pontorson) pitched with his Armie before the Towne of Auranches, in the Prouince of Constantine, within the Duchie of Normandie; purposing to haue besieged it. But such was the resolute valour of the English Garrison there, that (like vnto Lyons greedy of their prey) they issued suddainely out of the Towne, and set vpon the Marshall so successfully, that he was taken prisoner; and the greater part of his followers, as they fled, were slaine.

*Pontorson be-
sieged by the
English.*

This victory gaue fresh hopes of Good-speeding elsewhere: So that the Earle of Warwicke and the Lord *Scales* being sent with seven thousand men to Pontorson, besieged it a long time: where (being much enfeebled through many wants) the Lord *Scales* (for the reliefe of their necessities) taking with him three thousand of their companies, grievously foraged the Countries of his enemies. But in his returne with plenty of Prouisions, hee was encountred by sundry French Lords, and sixe thousand other fighting men: against whom, so luckily he preuayled, that most of those Nobles, and a thousand more, were taken prisoners, many hundreds were slaine, and the rest, by a quicke flight, procured their owne safetie.

*The Lord
Scales de-
feats the
Frenchmen.*

*Ramfort sa-
ken.*

The Garrison also at Saint Susan made such a suddaine roade into Angeou, that they surprized the Castle of Ramfort, before any newes gaue notice of their comming. But they no sooner possessed it, but that they were besieged by twenty thousand men, who were appointed to raise the liege at Pontorson. To these the Castle yeelded vpon composition: so that the Frenchmen (being much elated with this poore conquest) imagined, that they were braue men, and that they had done service sufficient for that time. And this conceit made them altogether carelesse to relieue the distressed estate of Pontorson: Whereupon it was yeelded to the Earle of Warwicke; who fortified it with good Prouisions, and with a strong Garrison; and came (with great honour) to the Regent.

*Ramfort re-
gained.*

*Pontorson
wonne by the
English.*

*Mouns is
betrayed.*

Whilest things were thus in handling, some of the Clergie, and some of the Magistrates of the Citie of Mouns (knowing, that the Duke of Britaine was revolted, and that his brother, the Earle of Richmond, now wholly adhered to the French King) offered, by treacherie, to yeeld it to king *Charles*, if a conuenient and an able Force might bee sent thither to worke that feate. This Citie was eagerly longed for on the French part. Wherefore, that it might be gotten, the Lords *Delabresh* and *Fayet*, Marshals of France, with
sundry

sundry more Barons, Captaines, Gentlemen, and old souldiers, to the number of five hundred, came (in the depth of the night) to the Castle walls; and then the Conspirators within (without any compassion, or manlike pity) massacred all such English Guarders as then maintained the first Watch: and setting wide open all the Gates, the Surprizors (armed with barbarous cruelty) entred into the Citie, murdering and killing their enemies as they pressed forth. Lamentable was the fearefull cry, which so suddainely amazed the English Garrisoners within the Citie. And it was the more full of terrout, for that the cause thereof was not vnto them perfectly knowne.

The Earle of Suffolke, who was chiefe Gouvernor of the Towne, and the greatest part of the English souldiers, entred into the Castle, and were (betimes in the morning) sharply assaulted by the Frenchmen. And though they were altogether vnprovided of all necessities for a long defence, yet their lustie courage (againe, and againe) gaue their enemies the repulse: who making no doubt, but through Famine, or by Violence, to be owners of the Castle; carelessly disposed themselves to all ease, iollity, and mirth. Whereof when the Lord Talbot was aduertised, hee forthwith marched thither in the night with seuen hundred men. The Earle of Suffolke (to whom secret intelligence was giuen of his coming) left the Castle, and with his companies (vnlooked for, and vnthought vpon) rushed into the Towne, lustily crying and shouting, Saint George, Talbot; Saint George, Talbot. Which vnexpected noyse so wonderfully amazed the lazie, sleepeie, and drunken Frenchmen, that some of them, vncllothed in their shirts, leapt ouer the Towne walls to saue their liues, but lost them: So that (within and without the Towne) foure hundred Gentlemen being slaine and taken prisoners, and the rascall peasants being enlarged, thirty Citizens, twentie Priests, and fiftene Friers (by whose conspiracy the Towne had beene treacherously betrayed) were, as Traytors, tortured with miserable deaths. And thus was the City of Mouns brauely regayned to king Henrie.

Not long before this time dyed the Tutor of the Kings Royall Person, the right Noble Thomas, Duke of Exeter: So that the Earle of Warwicke was sent for into England, to vndergoe that charge. And in his stead, the renowned and most valiant Capitaine Thomas Mountacute, Earle of Salisbury (whose former Seruices so appalled and daunted the hearts and courages of the Frenchmen, that they feared no man more) was sent into France with five thousand men. To which number, as many more were added:

Crueltie.

Mouns is recovered by the Lord Talbot.

Polacie.

Execution.

1427
6

A new Armie sent into France.

*Orleanse is
besieged by
the Earle of
Salisbury.*

*The Bastard
of Orleanse
defeated.*

*The valiant
Earle of Sa-
lisbury slaine.*

*The Earle of
Suffolke
maintaineth
the siege.*

*The French-
men are de-
feated.
Policie.*

added. And with them all, the said Earle marched to besiege the strong and warlike Citie of Orleanse, which standeth vpon the Riuer of Loyer. This Citie was newly fortified, and incredibly strengthened, by the Bastard, and by the Bishop of that place, with Towers, Bulwarkes and Forts: and the Suburbs, together with twelve other Parish Churches, foure Abbies, and all Houses and Vines, being within five leagues of the Towne, they caused to bee ruined, defaced, and cut downe; because they should not afford any helpe, sustenance, or succour to the Englishmen. When this siege was strongly planted, the Bastard of Orleanse, intending to make famous his haughty courage to his enemies, brauely issued out of a strong Bulwarke, which was erected vpon the Bridge. But (being vnable to maintaine his bold challenge) hee was compelled (with the losse of that Fort, and with the slaughter of the greater number of his Souldiers) to flye into the Towne. Within this Bulwarke there was raised an high Tower, with a window in it; at which the Englishmen vsually pried into the Towne, taking the view of the greater part of the City: And thereby (from time to time) did informe themselves, in what case, and in what plight the Townes-men stood. And at the same window (about two Moneths after the first besieging of the Citie,) the Noble Earle of Salisbury, looking into the Towne, was with a great shot vnfortunately slaine; and with his death, the Triumphs of the English Nation in France waxed more thinn; and the Frenchmen became more victorious than they had been.

He being dead, the Earle of Suffolke was made Generall in that siege: who finding that all prouisions waxed exceeding scant, sent Sir *Iohn Fastolfe* to the Regent for new supplies, who furnished him at the full; and dispatched him and his companies with all speede. But in his returne towards the siege, the Lord *Delabreth*, with sundry other Barons, Knights and common Souldiers, to the number of nine thousand at the least, intending their ouerthrow, presented themselves vnto their view: who (placing their Carts and Carriages furthest backe, their Horses next, and themselves before, and pitching their Stakes behinde their Archers, vpon the first encounter retyred behinde their stakes; On which the Frenchmen on horse-backe were receiued; goared and miserably slaine. And by these meanes, their Army (being disordered) began to flye: So that in the fight, and in the chase, the Lord *Delabreth*, & the Lord *William Seward*, Constable of France, with two thousand and five hundred men were slaine, and eleuen hundred were taken prisoners: with whom and with rich supplies, the

the valiant Knight and his companions repayed honourably vnto the siege. And this battaile was by the Frenchmen called the Battaille of Herrings, because the chiefest prouisions which those Englishmen then had, were Lenten stufes.

When the besieged heard of this newes, and were hopelesse of any succours to bee sent for their reliefe from the French king, by letters they entreated the Duke of Burgoine to receiue them into his protection, as his owne; who made them answer, That hee would so doe, if the Regent would thereunto agree. This motion pleased many of the Regents friends and counsellours, because thereby the Dolphin, surnamed the French king, should not onely be dispossessed of so rich and of so strong a Citie, but also because it should be enioyed by their chiefest friend.

But the Regent himselfe, and some others, were of another minde, and returned this answer to the Duke, That seeing (for so long a time) such great expences and charges had beene consumed by king Henrie, to bring that Citie into such extremities, as that the besieged became weary any longer to bee troubled; it would sound much to his dishonour & disgrace, if any Prince besides him should enioy the Lordship and the Seigniorie thereof.

This answer pierced the Duke of Burgoine to the heart: so that from thenceforth his affections daily waxed cold, and occasioned him, in secret, to become a well-willer vnto the French King.

When this Proiect was reuealed, and became fruitlesse, the Citizens of Orleance craued present succours from the Duke of Alanson; who did his best to inspire a new spirit of courage into the French King. And so sensible was he of their extremities, and so ready to relieue them; and so extreemely negligent was the English Army to attend their Watches in the night, because they daily expected the surrendring of the Citie; that (in the depth and darknesse of the night) he conueyed many thousand men, and store of all sorts of prouisions, into the Towne. And within few daies after, the besieged issued forth, being brauely resolved to attempt much: These men with strong blowes wonne the Bulwarke at the Bridges end, and one more, and slew six hundred men whom they found there. They also assaulted the Bastyle, wherein the Lord Talbot was. But with such a wonderfull courage and resolution hee issued out vpon them, that hee massacred their companies on euerie side, and enforced them to flye like Sheepe before the Wolfe: so that with much losses they hardly recouered into the Towne.

*The Battails
of Herrings.*

*Orleance is
offered to the
Duke of
Burgoyne.*

*The Regent
will not con-
sent thereto.*

*The Duke of
Burgoyne
falleth from
the English.*

*The Duke of
Alanson re-
lieueth Or-
leance.*

*The fond so-
curety of the
English.*

*The French-
men promaile,
and are bea-
ten.*

But

The siege of
Orleance as
bandoned.

But the next day the Earle of Suffolke quited the Siege, severed his Armie, and sent each companie to his owne Garrison. And in their returne, the Lord Talbot (by maine assaile) wonne the strong Castle and Towne of Lauall. And thus was the faire and the strong Citie of Orleance deliuered from a long and from a sharpe Siege.

The Earle of
Suffolke taken
prisoner.

And within few dayes after, the Duke of Alanson besieged and wonne the Towne of largeaux : wherein (among others,) he tooke prisoner the Earle of Suffolke, and one of his brothers, and slew Sir Alexander Poole, another of his brethren : All which prisoners (except the former two) were slaine by the Frenchmen : who contended among themselves, to whom those prisoners did in right belong.

1428
The English-
men are over-
thrown.

To the Dukes Army (which consisted of three and twentie thousand men) there repaired Arthur of Britaine, the Earle of Vandomme, and sundry other Noblemen, with great and strong troupes. All these fortun'd to meet with the Lords Talbot, Scales, and Hungerford ; who conducted five thousand men to fortifie the Towne of Meun. Berwixt them there were exchanged many bloody blowes : so that in the end the said three English Lords were taken prisoners, twelue hundred of their companies were slaine, and the rest, which escaped, hasted vnto Meun, and replenished that Towne with abilitie of Strength to resist future Dangers.

Prisoners.

Results to the
French King.

This vnfortunate disaster was accompanied with another mischiefe. For no sooner was it published and knowne abroad, but that diuers Cities, Townes, Castles, and strong Holds treacherously fell off and submitted themselves to the French king : whom these vnexpected good chances not onely elated and made proud, but also augmented his good hopes of a speedie end of all his troubles ; especially, because the Earle of Salisbury was slaine, and the Earle of Suffolke, and the Lords Talbot, Scales, Hungerford, and many other valiant English Captaines, were then his prisoners, and could not assist the Regents part.

English prisoners.

Rhemes.

The French king being thus stomacked and put in heart, would not any longer retaine any meane or base thoughts : but in stead of them, he now consulted and deuised how he might recover the Citie of Rhemes ; that in it hee might (with all Solemnities and Prince-like Requisites) bee crowned King, according to the manner and custome of his Ancestors, Kings of that Kingdome. And to effect those his desires with all conuenient speede, he forthwith passed into Champaigne with a great Army : where hee besieged, and

and by composition wonne Troye, the chiefest Citie in that Province. And the Inhabitants of Chailons being thereof informed, perfidiously did rebell, and compelled their Captaine to yeeld the Towne. By which example, the Citizens of Rhemes being induced, did the like. And thus King Charles obtayned his hearts desire, and was crowned there. And as by that high Title hee was chiefly dignified, so was hee thereby exceedingly furthered in all his future attempts. For upon the first report that hee was crowned King, it cannot easily winne credit, how many Forts, Cities, Townes, and Castles, were (without blowes) deliuered into his hands.

The Regent perceiuing that his proceedings would bee but vaine, except he speedily checked this good fortune; resolved, that a pitched Field should make him prosperous or vnhappy. For which purpose, hee marched with a strong Army from Paris towards the new king: and by his Heralds hee proclaymed Charles to be an Usurper, and a counterfeite King, and an arch-Traytour to King Henrie; and summoned him to a battaile; that thereby hee might receiue punishments agreeable to his deserts.

The French king not acknowledging any such offence, seemed willingly to accept of this Challenge: yet (for a while) he risted and lingered vp and downe; and in the end diuerted his course, and marched another way. But the Regent so closely followed after him, that (to defend himselfe) hee was enforced to marshall his companies, and to make bragging shewes of resistance. But outward apparances of valour were his best performances for two dayes space: For in the depth of the night (with great silence) he raysed his Campe, and ranne away. But when the morning had discovered this his cowardly departure, the Regent (with much trauaile and great paine) endeauoured to enforce him to looke backe. But because he alwaies fled, and would not aduenture the exchange of blowes, therefore he returned to the Citie of Paris, to shew himselfe carefull of his charge there: And so much the rather, because those Citizens were euer vnconstant, variable, waueing, perfidious, and vntrue.

Daily (after the Regents returne) his eares were filled with fresh reports of trayterous Reuolts; which made him (once more) to attempt to make his estate more stable and more sure, by exposing of himselfe and his vnto some present danger. For which cause, he marched againe towards the French king with an Army of ten thousand gallant men: who met him with more than that double number. But when all outward appearance presented good as-
surance

*Troye won.
Chailons,
Rhemes, &c.
yeelded.*

*Charles is
crowned king
of France,
and is thereby
furthered in
his future
attempts.*

*The Regent
brings resolution.*

*The Regent
summoneth
the French
King to a
pitched field.*

*The French
King departeth
and is
pursued.*

*He runneth
from the Re-
gent.*

*The Regent
hunteth him,
but in vaine.*

*The French
King once
more runneth
away.*

King Henrie
is crowned.

1459

8

Revolts to
the French
King.

The Regent
establisheth
Normandie.

The French
King wooeth
the Duke of
Burgoyne.

The French
King assaulteth
Paris,
and is beaten.

rance of a deadly fight, the French king did (once more) shame-
fully runne away. And next about the same time, king Hen-
rie (with all Princely Honoure and Solemnity) was crowned
King.

And albeit, that daily experience made it manifest, that king
Charles was a dastardly and a fearefull coward: yet the Townes of
Champaign, Senlys, Beauois, Gaylard, & many others, treacherously
yeeled the selves into his hand. Whereupon the Regent resolued
to cast his anchor in Normandy, and to secure the fidelity and
loue of the Inhabitants of that Prouince, howsoever the game
should chance to runne elsewhere. For which purpose hee went
thither, and in an honourable and full Parliament he related Arti-
ficially the Lineall Descend of his Lord and Master king Henrie the
first, from Rollo the Hardie, who was the first Duke of that Coun-
trei. He also minded them of those miseries, which too too com-
monly, and with ouer-much severity, had beene inflicted on their
Nation by the Natiues of the kingdome of France. And remem-
bered them of those Immunities and Royall Præiudges, which
(vnder the English Government) they had long and liberally en-
ioyed, by which they were made fortunate and rich: Whereof he
promised them, not onely a sure and a firme continuance, but also
a daily enlargement, with all fauour. Thus, and by these means, he
confirmed and ratified to king Henrie, and to himselfe, the affec-
tions and friendship of that people.

But whilest the Regent thus busily employed himselfe in Nor-
mandie, the French king attempted (by all subtile and cunning
meanes) to lessen and to weaken his power. For the effecting
whereof, first of all he endeauioured to dissolue that knot of Loue
and Amitie which conioyned the Regent and the Duke of Bur-
goine in an indifferent liking of each other, by excusing himselfe
to the said Duke touching the murdering of his Father: and (by
solemne Promises and Oathes) vowing to giue vnto him moun-
taines of Wealth, many Honours, and his inward fauour, if hee
would be firmly reconciled, and become his friend. And albeit,
that the Duke was not well pleased, for that the Regent would
not consent, that the Citie of Orleance (when it was besieged and
griuously distressed) should bee yeeled into his hands: yet in a
friendly manner hee acquainted the Regent with this cunning
Plot. So, when king Charles perceiued, that this deuice was fruit-
lesse, hee brought his whole Army before the Citie of Paris: of
whose reuolt (if the Multitude had dared) the Regent had beene
right well assured. But when hee perceiued, that nothing but
blowes

blowes could make him hopefull of good successe : Hee battered and scaled the wals, and assaulted the Citizens with sharpe furie : But (by the braue valour and courage of the English Garrisons, which were well assisted by such of the Townesmen as were faithfull to King *Henrie*) hee was repulsed many times with great losse, and slaughter of his men ; and at last, was compelled shamefully to depart from thence.

The Regent (at his returne) thanked, and praised them exceedingly : but especially such of the Parisians, as had well testified their faith & loyaltie to King *Henrie*, in his absence. Whereat they seemed publickly to take so much ioy, that (hypocritically) they stiled themselves, thus ; *Friends to the English, and friends to the Parisians ; Enemies to the English, and enemies to the Parisians* : yet were they trecherous, and vnconstant ; as in this future discourse it shall manifestly appeare.

The Parisians flatter, and are trecherous.

It will be too tedious, to make an ample Relation of euery light skirmish that was made, and of euery Reuolt, and Marshall gaigning ; which strengthened the English in some places, & weakned them in others : Wherefore, it shall suffice, that we be well informed, that either part did sometimes winne, and sometimes lose. But to say the truth, The English forces and strength in France did not encrease ; because such was the inconstant leuitie of the French Nation, That they gladded their hearts at euery opportunitie, which enabled them to reuolt, and yeeld to King *Charles*. By meanes whereof King *Henrie* (as hee was counsailed) sayled with a puissant Armie from Douer, and arriued at Callice : And taking Roan in his way, Hee marched vnto Paris, where hee was (with all becomming requisites) annointed and crowned King of France, and receiued homage and fealty vpon the Oathes of the Nobles, Gentlemen, and common People of that Citle.

1431
10
King Henry crowned in Paris.

These French warres were famous in all the Westerne parts of the world. And the more were they spoken of, because men generally did wonder, how it was possible, that so small an Iland, as England was, should (for so many yeares together) so gricuously torment and scourge so large, so populous, and so potent a Kingdome, as France was, and put it to the worst.

England admired at.

At length, and after frequent mediations, vsed by *Eugenius* the Fourth, then Pope of Rome, and by many other Christian Princes, Such great hopes, as made the fairest shew of an happy Peace, vanished quite, and came to nothing : sauing that an vpperfect Truce for sixe yeares was consented vnto, which lasted but a while :

An vpperfect Truce.

The Regent's
wife dyeth.

The Regent
newly married.

The Regent
loses a good
friend.

1432
11
The Truce
broken.

Treason dis-
covered.

1433
12
Talbot's name
was terrible
in France.

The French-
men would
not fight.

A Rebellion
in Normandy

a while : For shortly after King *Henries* returne into England, Vnfortunately it hapned, that the Ladie *Anne*, wife vnto the Regent, and sister to the Duke of Burgoine, died : And not long after, hee married the faire and fresh Ladie *Jaquet*, daughter vnto *Peter*, Earle of *S. Paul*, and thereby allied him selfe to the ancient and honorable Family and House of *Luxembourg*, and from thenceforth the great loue, which for many yeares had made the Regent and his brother in law, the Duke of Burgoin, fortunate & happy, waxed faint and feeble : by meanes whereof the Duke won nothing, and the Regent became lesse powerful than hee had beene in former times.

The solemnities of this marriage were no sooner finished, but that the six yeares Truce, which was so lately concluded, was quite broken, and warre began to threaten the effusion of much blood : For the aduerse part (by secret vnderminings and trecherous perswasions) possessed it selfe daily of many of the Regents Castles and Townes ; and iustified that manner of proceeding, by affirming ; That politike gainings without blowes, infringed not any Truce : and so far off were the Frenchmen, from restoring those things, which by those subtilties they had gained ; that to procure more, they secretly conueyed two hundred Souldiers into the Castle of *Roan*, hoping to haue surprized it ; but the treason was reuealed, and the Conspirators were (with maine strength) beaten into the Dungeon : From whence they were sentenced ; some to the Gallowes ; others to death by cruell torments ; others to sharpe imprisonment ; and such of them as sped best, were (for great ransomes, and summes of money) set at large.

These coales quickly kindled the fire of rage, in so much that either partie made it selfe strong, by the speedie supply of a new Armie. And the Regents forces were much augmented, by *John Lord Talbot*, who was of late redeemed out of Prison ; who though he brought with him out of England but only eight hundred chosen men at Armes, yet his name and his presence more terrified the Frenchmen, than halfe the English Armie besides. Oftentimes the two Armies by their neare approach, strived to our face and to daunt each other : And twice the Regent boldly challenged the Frenchmen to entertaine the fight : but they only made faire shewes to performe much ; and seemed as if they thirsted to make themselves famous by their manhood : yet in two severall places, and at two times, they fled in the night, and would not in any sort hazard their Fortunes in the field.

Now, whilst the Regent was thus carefully employed abroad, the

the Rustickes of Normandie treacherously attempting to shake off the English yoke (which was neuer burthen some vnto them) rudely armed themselues, and marched towards Can; exercising much violence and cruelty in all places where they did preuaile. But they were speedily encountered and ouerthrowne by the Earle of Arundell and the Lord Willoughby; who slew more than a thousand of them, and tormented their rebellious Leaders and Captaines with sundry sorts of deaths, but permitted the baser sort to return home.

This noble and couragious Earle purposing to re-seize for King Henrie the Towne of Rue, which grieuously punished the Countreies of Ponthew, Arthois, & Bolois; perceiued (as he marched) that an old decayed Castle, called Gerbory, neer vnto Beauois, was newly re-edified and made strong. This Castle he assaulted with great courage: but being mortally wounded on the ancle with the shot of a Canon, he was taken Prisoner from the ground, but within few daies after he dyed.

About the same time, the Duke of Burbon, who about eighteen yeares before was taken prisoner at the battaile fought at Agencourt, paid his ranfome of eightene thousand pounds, but dyed in London the same day; in which hee intended to set forwards towards France.

In the end of the reigne of king Henrie the Fifth, we may reuiue or remember, what a precise charge and command that king gaue to his Brethren, and to his Nobles, neuer to lose the amitie and friendship of Philip Duke of Burgoine; and this Historie maketh mention how carefull they haue beene ever since, to obserue his counsell in that behalfe: but the busie tongues of Tell-tales, and of foisting Fatterers, obtaining credit where reprehension was more fitting, preuailed in such sort, That the said Duke causlessly waxed icalous, and his loue was cold towards the Regent; yet through the perswasions, and by the mediation of their honorable friends, an enteruiew to reuine their friendship was procured, and S. Omers was the place appointed for that purpose. But when they both had made their entrance into that towne: the Duke of Bedford, because he was Regent, and the sonne, brother, and Vncle vnto Kings, expected the prioritie of visitation by the Duke: but he, because he was the Lord and Soueraigne of that Towne, supposed that he should be checked for dishonourable basenesse, if he should first repaire to the Regents lodging. These conceits touching their preheminence and superioritie, were very likely to distemper their humours, more than formerly they had beene. For the preventing whereof, their friends endeououred to perswade

*The Rebels
are subdued.*

*The Earle of
Arundell
slaine.*

*The Duke of
Bourbon is
ransomed,
and dyeth.*

*The Regent
and the Duke
of Burgoine
haue stom-
acks.*

*Tale-bearers,
or Tale tel-
lers.*

*The Duke of
Burgoyne
forakes the
Regent.*

1434
13
*Saint Dennis
treacherously
betrayed.*

*Saint Dennis
is recovered.*

*Ponthois re-
uolteth.*

*The Regent
dyeth.*

*He was bur-
ied in Roan.*

*His Sepul-
chre ruined.*

*A Kingly
Speech.*

them both to meete together in some indifferent place. But the Regent refused to yeeld thereunto. So they departed, and left the Towne; being both displeased and discontented with each others haughtinesse of spirit and great stomacke. And forthwith the Duke of Burgoine entred into league and friendship with the French King, who had before murdered his Father. Which falling off from the English, aduantaged not him, nor founded to his honour.

About the same time, the Towne of Saint Denny (neere vnto Paris) was treasonably yeilded to the French king, by the secret practice of the Bastard of Orleans; who was surnamed the Earle of Dumoys. But the Lord Talbot, and some other Lords, accompanied with five thousand men, compassed it round about with a strong Siege. Whereof when the Earle of Dumoys was informed, to remoue the Siege, he collected a strong power of chosen horsemen. But ere he came thither, the Towne (by composition) was surrendred; and the Walls and Towers thereof were beaten to the ground. And though in this place the English gained; yet the inhabitants of Ponthoys (which standeth on the Riuer betwixt Normandie and Paris) did rebell, and thrust the English Garrison out of the Towne: which from that time forward animated the inhabitants of Paris to thinke on nothing more, than how they might (by treason, or by violence) reduce themselves to the subiection of the French king.

But behold; a greater mishap than the losse of many Townes and Cities, did (vnexpectedly) weaken king *Henries* part. For now the most renowned, wise, politike, and worthy Regent of France, dyed; and was (with all Princely Ceremonies and Solemnities) buried in a stately Monument, which was erected for him in our Ladies Church, within the Citie of Roan. Wherat the mutable and vnconstant Nobilitie of the Duchie of Normandie (who had receiued from him many benefits and fauors) much repined. And within few yeares after, they instantly requested the French King *Lewis* the Eleuenth (who was the sonne of King *Charles* the Seuenth) to plucke it downe, and to cast the Regents carkasse into the open fields; alledging, That it was much dishonourable, and a great disgrace for them, to suffer such an enemy (as hee was to them and to the kings of France) to bee so richly interred within the Metropolitan Citie of that Prouince. But king *Lewis* (who worthily withstood their base attempt) affirmed, and did publikely protest, That a more sumptuous Sepulchre was too too bad to couer the dead corps of him, who in his life time scorned (vpon any occa-

occasion whatsoeuer) to step one foote backe for all the power and souldierie of France: and who, in all his proceedings, & in all his Gouernment, had approued himselfe to be so wise, politike, faithfull, and hardie, that all heroicall and generous spirits should rather endeuour to immortalize his Fame, and with the Trumpet of Honor to proclaime his manlike acts, than (in the least measure) labour to shadow or to eclipse them with Enuie or Disgrace. And that there was no stronger an argument or prooofe of basenesse and of cowardise, than to insult ouer the dead bodie of him; who (whilst hee liued) was amiable and courteous in time of Peace, but bold and terrible in Armes.

The death of this renowned Prince was the cause of infinite alterations and changes within the kingdome of France, and elswhere. For after his death, *Richard Duke of Yorke* was made Regent, against the liking and good will of *Edmund Duke of Somerset*, cousin to the King; who (for himselfe) inwardly affected that authoritie and place.

The treacherous Citie of Paris also, and many other Townes, Castles, and Forts, rebelliously yeelded themselues, and wholly became French. And not only so: but villainously they muredred, taunted, and scoffed the English Nation; whom (in outward shew, and with faire words) they seemed, not long before, to honor, and extraordinarily to respect.

The Normans also reuolted, and tyrannized ouer the Englishmen; whom with the Sword, and by a thousand meanes, they consumed, vntill (by the slaughter of fise thousand of their companies) they were subdued by the Lord *Talbot*, the Lord *Scales*, Sir *Thomas Kyriel*, and by some others.

When Paris, Saint Denny, Saint Germans in Ley, and many more Cities and Townes were lost; the new Regent, with eight thousand souldiers, landed at Harflew; and from thence came to the Citie of Roan: where his Presidents for Iustice were much admired and commended. But in the whole course of his Gouernment he effected nothing else to be wondered at; by reason that the Duke of Somersets secret grudgings hindered those Expeditions, which might haue made him famous, and his Countie fortunate and happy.

The reuolted Duke of Burgoine (who not long before had falsified his Oath and Promise to King *Henry*; and to his Father) pretending a rightfull Title vnto the Towne of Callice; besieged it with an Armie, which consisted of fortie thousand men.

1435

14

Richard Duke of Yorke made Regent.

Paris reuolted, and is cruell to the English.

The rebellious Normans are subdued.

Private enuie hindered the publike good.

The Duke of Burgoine besieged Callice.

This Towne was newly strengthened with many hundreds of braue souldiers ; who by *Henrie*, Earle of Mortayne, and by the Lord of Cammoys, from England were brought thither. The Duke attempted to winne the Towne by three terrible assaults : but hee was a great loser by them all : And the incredible strength of the place, and of his enemies, depriued him vtterly of all hope to winne it by any other meanes, than only by Famine and Scarfitie of Food. But that course he was not able to pursue ; because the English Nauie was Master of the Sea . But yet to shut vp the Hauen, and then for a while to attempt what might be done ; hee prepared foure great Hulkes, and filled them with square and masse stones, semented and ioyned close together with Iron and with Lead, because they should (as a Rock) remaine together, and not be beaten in sunder by the Sea. But so vnskillfull were they, who had the charge to sinke them, that they missed the Channell : So that when the water was at an ebbe, the shippes lay dry, and were by the Callicians torne all abroad : and the Stones and Timber being taken in, serued for the prouision and fortifications of the Towne.

*The Dukes
Bastyle taken
by the English.*

The Duke also built a strong Bastyle, which he furnished with foure hundred fighting men : Which, though for a few dayes it preiudiced the besieged, yet it did them no memorable harme. For (not long after it was erected) certaine Troupes of horsemen issued out of the Towne , who fought proudly with the Dukes Forces : and in the meane time the Bastyle was assaulted and won by others ; who tooke all such prisoners as were not slaine therein, burned the Fort, and returned (with very little losse) into the Towne.

*The Duke of
Burgoyne
fleeth in the
night.*

The Duke of Burgoyne (who seemed much to reioyce, because the Protector had promised to attempt the raising of the Siege within few dayes) made great preparations to withstand it. But being surprized with a suddaine feare, to be swallowed vp betwixt the English Armie and the Towne, he remoued from thence in the night ; leauing to the Protector (who landed with his companies the day before) all his Tents, Ordnance, Armour, and Prouisions, being of great worth.

The Protector (who brought with him thither five and twentie thousand men) entred into the Dukes Countries of Flanders and Arthois : where he slew, burnt, ransacked, and wonne rich booties at his owne pleasure. And (without resistance) hee returned vnto Callice ; and (with such superfluitie as he had gotten) abundantly and plentifully hee supplied it with all things which they wanted :
and

and then hee returned into England ; where hee found the State much troubled. For *James* the first, being king of Scots (forgetting quite the manifold fauors and princely education, which, being a prisoner, he found within the kingdome of England) with thirtie thousand men, had (for many weekes) besieged the Castle of Rosborough : which was valiantly defended by Sir *Ralph Grey*. But the Earle of Northumberland (as he was appointed) prepared to giue him battaile, and to remoue the siege. Whereof when notice was giuen to the Scottish Armie, they remoued, and fled with extraordinary speede into their owne Countrie.

About the same time dyed *Queene Katherine*, mother to the King : who, after her husbands death (fancying more her owne pleasure and contentment, than the supporting of her high and honorable estate) married a goodly Gentleman, named *Owen Tudor* : who (though his meanes were but small) yet was he descended from *Cadwalader*, the last king of the Britons : And by her he had issue two sonnes, halfe brothers to the king ; that is to say, *Edmund*, and *Ispar*. This *Edmund* was (by king *Henrie*) created Earle of Richmond ; and tooke to wife the Ladie *Margaret*, sole Daughter and Heire vnto *John Duke of Somerset* ; and begot on her King *Henrie* the Seuenth. And *Ispar* was created Earle of Pembroke.

Likewise, the Ladie *Jaquet* (sister vnto the Earle of Saint Paul, and Duchesse Dowager to *John Duke of Bedford*, the late Regent of France) contrary to her friends liking (yet to please her selfe) married a gallant Gentleman (who was much inferiour to her estate) named Sir *Richard Woodville* : whom (afterwards) the King made Baron Ryuers, and then Earle Ryuers : And by him (among many other children) she had issue *Elizabeth* ; who was (after) the wife of King *Edward* the Fourth ; and was mother to the Ladie *Elizabeth*, whom King *Henrie* the Seuenth espoused and tooke to wife.

It pleased the kings Councell of this Realme to discharge *Richard*, Duke of Yorke, of his Regencie in France ; and to establish the Earle of Warwick in his place. Who embarked himselfe seuen times, before he could set one foot in Normandie. But (at last) his arriual was fortunate and happy. And hauing intelligence, that the Duke of Burgoine, with tenne thousand men, lay strongly entrenched before *Crotoy* ; he sent the Lords *Talbot* and *Fawcembryge*, Sir *Thomas Kyriel*, and many other valiant Captaines, with fve thousand Englishmen, to raise that siege. But the Duke (fearing with his double number to encounter with his enemies) fled with

Rosborough
besieged by
the Scots.

The Scots flee

1436.
15.

Sir Richard
Woodville
made Baron
Riuers : and
afterwards
Earle *Ryuers*.

The Earle of
Warwicke is
made Regent.
1437.
16.

Crotoy is
besieged.

*The Duke of
Burgoyne will
not fight.*

with his whole Armie vnto Abbeuyle. From whence hee beeing eagerly pursued, and hourly dared to make a stand, and to play the man; he posted vnto Amiens: where the Englishmen (who daily hunted after him) found him and his companies strongly enclosed within the wals. But because he played the Coward, & would not fight, the Lord *Talbot* entred into Picardy and Arthois: where (vnresisted) he wasted and consumed the whole Countrie (the walled Townes, Castles, and Forts only excepted) and enriched all his Armie with Cattell, Money, Plate, and many other things of great worth and value.

*Sir Thomas
Kyriels valour.*

Sir Thomas Kyriel also surprized the Dukes Carriages and his Ordnance: all which booties were brought vnto Crottoy, with as much victuals as would maintain sixe hundred men for one whole year. And all the residue of those spoyles hee sent to the Earle of Warwicke; which abundantly supplied his great wants.

*Periurie pun-
ished.*

The Earle of Mortayne, son to *Edmund* Duke of Somerset, by violent assaults tooke the Castle of Saint Auyan in Mayne, & slew therein three hundred Scots, and hanged all the Frenchmen whom he found there; because (hauing once been sworne to king *Henry*) they reuolted, and became French.

*The French
King winneth
by treacherie,
not by valour*

Thus Fortune euery day turned her Wheele, making him who yesterday wonne much, to day to lose all; and suddenly aduancing those to great honour, whom former disasters had made miserable and bare. But the Frenchmens Treasons and Treacheries daily betrayed more Cities, Townes, and Castles, to the French king, than either the Englishmen could hold by Policie, or gaine by Strength.

*The Dolphin
rebelletb a-
gainst his fa-
ther.*

1438
17

And albeit that by reason thereof he comforted himselfe; and prosperous successe accompanied most of his Attempts: yet was hee (on a suddaine) checked by the open Rebellion of his eldest sonne, the Dolphin of Vyenn: Who (being assisted by the Dukes of Alanson and of Bourbon) vsurped the gouernment of France; and by publike Edicts divulged the insufficiencie of his Father to rule that kingdome.

*The rebellion
is appeased.*

This Cloud threatned a shrewd storme; and begat this Question in his Father and in his Councillors of State: *whether it were better to attempt the curing of this Maladie by Ciuill warre, and by letting of Blood; or by Discretion and by Policie, without blowes?* The later Proiect being entertained, publike Proclamations were made in the French kings Name; by which he prohibited all his subiects (vpon the paines of death) to yeelde any subiection to the Dolphins Commands, and pardoned all such, as (by his perswasions) had

had deuoted themselues to his seruice. And moreouer, sundry Letters were written, diuers messengers were sent, and many powerfull Mediators so preuailed, that the Dolphin, with his confederates, were quickly reconciled, and ioyfully receiued into the Kings fauour.

Whilest these vnnaturall broyles breathed fresh hopes into the English Nation, that Paris might be regained; they prepared a great Armie for that purpose. But by meanes of the said reconciliation and agreement, those their designes were strangled in their birth: their Armie was dissolued; and, being enforced to saile by a smaller Compasse, they endeououred to effect such things as were proportionable to their strength, and to winne those things which were within their reach.

About the same time (the ground being couered with a thicke Snow, which was much hardened by a sudden Frost) *John Lord Clifford* (clothing himselfe and his followers all in white) passed in the night season ouer the Ditches of *Ponthois* (which not long before was trecherously yeilded to the French king: the Walls they scaled; entred in; slew the Watch; wonne the Town; killed the greater part of all the men found there; and tooke many prisoners, which yeilded them good ransomes in a short time.

This bold attempt so passionately vexed the French King, that (in his owne person) hee came before the Towne with a great Armie: with which; and with many Trenches, Bastyles, Forts, and Rampiers, hee compassed it round about, and gaue vnto it many fierce assaults. In all which he lost much, and was scorned by the besieged.

And whilest he thus lay before the Towne, *Richard Beauchampe*, Earle of Warwicke, & Regent of France, dyed: and *Richard Duke of Yorke*, was the second time made Regent of that kingdome. Who (being accompanied with the Earle of Oxford, the Lord *Bourchier* Earle of Ewe, the Lord *Talbot*, and many others) raised a great Armie, repaired to the siege, and dared the French king into the field. Which hee refused: and leauing his Ordnance in the strongest Bastyle of *Saint Martyn*, which he had erected; he raysed his Siege in the middest of the night, and went vnto *Poyisy*. But in the morning, when the English Armie perceiued, that their enemies had searefully abandoned the place, and had left their Tents behinde them; they possessed them with much ioy, and found much riches, and store of all prouisions; with which they comforted themselues and the Towne. And leauing there Sir *Gernase Clifton*, with a thousand valiant men, to defend it, and

The regaining of Paris attempted.

Ponthois surprized.

1439
18
Policie.

The French King besiegeth Ponthois

Arms Regent.

He runneth away in the night.

neg-

*He is dared,
yet plays the
Coward.*

*Ponthoys be-
sieged the se-
cond time.*

*It is valiant-
ly defended.*

It is taken.

A Parley.

neglecting the Bastyle, which neither could without much losse be suddenly gotten, nor was able to doe any harme : The Regent, with all his companies, directed his iourney towards Poysie : and being come thither, he set his Armie in a warlike manner; nothing doubting, but that the French king (whose strength was much encreased, by the repaire of the chiefeft Lords, and gallantrie of France) would haue answered him, in the open field; but hee kept himselfe close within the towne. In so much that when the Regent perceiued that no bold bragging, nor scornfull tauntings, could moue his patience, nor make him valiant : He left him there, and by easie Marches he came to Roan.

The French king, as soorie as hee heard that the English Armie was so farre off; entred into a serious consideration of his estate. And (being mindfull that the Parisians, by often scandals, had reproued his faint heart) and that the Towne of Ponthoys was an euill enemy to that Citie : To regaine his reputation and honor, by winning of that Towne, hee vsed extraordinary expedition, and with a puissant Armie he besieged it round about : And (because hee feared, lest small delayes might deprive him of his hopes) he assaulted it, almost euery houre, and lost before it aboue three thousand men. But in the end he wonne the Towne, and slaughtered foure hundred Englishmen; the rest of them were taken Prisoners, and ordered according to the French kings will. And when he had thus preuailed, diuers other Cities and Townes (greedily embracing all reports of their kings valour) treacherously revolted, and became French.

Naturalists haue taught vs, that when two Lions haue by combat tyred themselues, they doe depart proudly each from the other, neither of them seeming to yeeld; and both of them expressing many signes of much triumph. And our Histories doe report, That both King *Henric*, and king *Charles*, being wearied with the infinite vexation of their Warres, and with their daily trauailes, seemed both of them to be Conquerours : yet were they both easily perswaded to hearken to such indifferent motions for a Truce; as were proposed by their friends. For this conference, Callice was appointed the place to meete in : which towne was chosen before any other, because *Charles* the noble Duke of Orleance (who euer since the battaile of Agencourt, had continued a Prisoner in England) was to bee conueyed ouer, thar (for his Ransome of three hundred thousand Crownes, if it could be gotten) hee might be enlarged and set free. The Ambassadors which met there about this businesse, consulted oftentimes, but at length they ad-
iourned

iourned those negotiations vntill some other time, because the demands of King Henrie were thought to bee vnreasonable in three points.

*King Hen-
ries demands.*

First, in regard of the ouer-great summe of Money; which was demanded for the Dukes Ransome.

Secondly, for that the peaceable, and the quiet possession of the whole and entire Duchesse of Aquitaine, and of Normandie, was required, and to be enioyed freely, without any acknowledgement of Homage, or of Soueraigntie of the Crowne of France.

And thirdly, because the surrendring and yeelding up into King Henries hands, was vrged of all such Cities, Townes, Castles, Forts and Territories in France, as the English Nation had enioyed, at any time within the space of thirtie yeares then last past.

*The Parly is
dissolued.*

Yet (not long after this meeting was dissolued) Philip Duke of Burgoin, pitying the enthrall'd estate of the Duke of Orleance, and remembring John his father, had cruelly murdered Lewis the father of the said Duke: paid his Ransome, and (at his own charge) transported him, with honourable attendance into France.

*The Duke of
Orleance is
Ransomed.*

And now the Regent (purposing to preuent the Frenchmens Warres, with which they intended to disturbe the Peace of the Duchie of Normandie) diuided all his companies into foure Troupes, which were seuerally commanded by himselfe, by the Duke of Summerset, by Robert Lord Willoughby, and by John Lord Talbot. All these (in seuerall places) inuaded the Territories of France and of Britaine; and preualled euery where: sauing at the Towne of Deepe, which though they long besieged, yet was it cleared in the end. And in the meane time the French king with his sonne the Dolphin of Vyenn, with the Bastard of Orleance, surnamed the Lord Dunoys, entred into Aquitaine and Guyan, with an Armie of threescore thousand men, and receiued many Castles, Townes and Cities into their hands: which voluntarily, and without blowes, were yeelded vnto them; but they were not long enioyed. For the French Armie (being very great, and pinched with extreme Famine and diuers wants) was broken vp. And immediately after their departure into France, the Englishmen recouered whatsoeuer was formerly gotten by the French king.

1440.
19
Cruell Wars.

*A huge Ar-
mie.*

*Much is gat-
ten and lost
again.*

About

1441

20

*Dissention
betwene the
Protector and
the Cardinall.
No redresse.*

*The Prote-
ctor's wife
condemned
for witch-
craft.*

1442

21

*John, created
Earle of
Shrewsbury.
A worthy
Captaine.*

*A marriage
offered to
King Henry.*

*The King is
offered the
Earle of Ar-
minacks
daughter.*

*The King re-
fuseth her.*

1443

22

About the same time, the good Duke of Glocester, Protector of the kings person, and of this kingdome, disliked much the vndue proceedings of his Vncle, the rich Cardinal of Winchester, & of the Archbishop of Yorke: Who (without his consent; or the kings Warrant) attempted, and did many publike things for their own profit and priuate gain. For the reformation wherof, he preferred vnto the king, certaine Articles against them: The consideration of which, was referred to the Priiue Councell. But because the most of them were Clergie-men, they afforded no manner of redresse, whereat the Protector was much displeased. But to requite him with more vexation, and a greater trouble, they caused the Ladie *Eleanor* his wife, to bee accused, and conuicted for conspiring of the Kings death with Witches, and such like gracelesse people: for which shee was enforced three times to doe publike Penance in the Citie of London, and afterwards she was committed to perpetuall Imprisonment. But diuers of her condemned associates were executed, and put to sundrie kindes of death.

And now to returne to the French Warres: King *Henrie* (in regard of former seruices, and of future hopes of the like performance) created the Lord *John Talbot* Earle of Shrewsburie, and sent him into Normandie, with three thousand selected men, for the better securing of that Duchie. In which expedition, he worthily demeaned himselfe, and won much honour.

This yeare the Countesse of Coming in Guyen, dyed without issue: and her inheritance was claymed by the French King. And likewise the Earle of Arminacke pretended himselfe to be her next heire. And to strengthen himselfe the better to gaine his right, he offered his daughter in marriage to king *Henrie*, with the gift of much money, and with the surrendring into his hands, of all such territories & possessions within the Duchie of Aquitain, & Guyen as (either by conquest, or by descent) did belong vnto him.

This offer was willingly hearkned vnto, and accepted by the king, who (by his Ambassadors) was publikely offered to the said Lady. But the French king, minding rather to prevent dangers before they come, than to remoue them after they were hapned) so suddenly inuaded the said Earles Countries and Dominions with an Armie: that (with small or no resistance) he quickly made himselfe the Owner of them all. The newes whereof, so altered & changed the minde, and the affections of king *Henry* towards his offered Ladie, that he would neuer after be perswaded to hearken vnto, or to thinke vpon that match.

The grieued compassion, which forraine Princes tooke vpon the

the lamentable distresse of poore France, because the bloud of Christians was so vnmeasurably and so vnmercifully shed in those warres, incited them to mediate both these kings to make a friendly peace: which was not effected according to their endeavours and desires, but a Truce onely was concluded for eighteen moneths. In the handling whereof, the Earle of Suffolke (not warranted by his Commission, nor making his associates acquainted with his purpose) sollicitied a marriage betwixt his Lord and Master king Henry, and the Lady Margaret cousin to the French king, and daughter vnto Reyner Duke of Angeou, being the Titularie king of Sicilie, Naples, and Ierusalem. With her he made no demand for any money, because her father was but poore; nay, (which was much worse) hee consented, that if the said marriage might bee effected, king Henry should freely and frankely release vnto her father all his right and title to the said Duchie of Angeou, and to the Country of Mayne.

The Lords of France were quickly wonne to hearken to this motion, and king Henry was glad at the heart that hee should haue for his wife such a faire and fresh Lady, as the Earle of Suffolke could neuer praise enough. But the Protector strongly opposed himselfe against this match, terming her descent to bee but Titularie, and vrging much the pouerty of her father; and told the king, that his honour and reputation would receiue many scandals, if he should reiect the Earle of Arminacks daughter, vnto whom with all due ceremonies he was publikely affied: and also, that his losse would be lamentable, if he released his lawfull and iust title to the Duchie of Angeou, and to the Country of Mayne, according to the Earle of Suffolkes vnaduised offer. But all his reasons (as triuolous) were reiectied, and his counsell was not cared for. But the king, to gratifie and to please such of his Noble-men as therein enclined themselues to his humour, bestowed on them new Dignities and Honours. For John Lord Holland (Earle of Huntingdon) was created Duke of Exeter, as his father had beene: Humfrey Earle of Stafford was made Duke of Buckingham: Henrie Earle of Warwick was made Duke of Warwicke, and the said Earle of Suffolke was created Marquesse of Suffolke. Which Marquesse (being very honourably accompanied with great troupes of Lords, Ladies, and other personages of great worth and honour) went richly provided into France, and according to his condition, receiued the Lady Margaret from the French king, and from Reyner her father, and conueied her with great pompe and Princely magnificence into England, where (within few daies after) she was married

*A truce for
eighteene
moneths.
The Earle of
Suffolke solli-
cietb ano-
ther marriage
for King
Henry, with-
out authority
giuen to him.
A dishon-
rable match
propounded
and conclu-
ded.
Reasons why
this match
was disliked.*

1
2
3
4

*Creation of
Lords.*

1444
23

*The new
Marquesse
fetcheth the
young Queen.
The King is
married.*

1445
24

*A Parliament.
The Marquesse of Suffolke oration.
His motion.*

A Record made of his acts.

He is made a Duke.

Humana caduca.

1446
25

The causes of the losse of France, Normandie, and Aquitaine.

to the King, and crowned Queene. Now as the prefixed time for the Truce drew towards an end; so king *Henry* perceived, that this his new alliance with the French king promised him not any certainty that it should bee enlarged, or that he should haue peace. For in France fresh supplies were hourly provided to reuue the former warre, and euery day offered euident demonstrations, that nothing was more to be expected than blowes. Wherefore to encounter those preparations with the like prouisions, the king assembled his high Courtof Parliament: in which the Marques of Suffolke (in a powerfull, glozing, and tedious Oration) extolled his owne deserts about the skies, as well in his seruice in the French warres, as also in mouing and in concluding the late Truce, and the kings marriage. Hee also admonished his Highnesse, and the two houses there assembled, what preparations for warre were made in France, and how behoouefull it was for the king to do the like. And vpon this motion (proceeding from his haughtry pride and ambitious minde) the whole assembly became humble suiters to his Maiestie, that not only his said admonition and aduice, but also all his said former seruices and doings, might in most ample sort be registred among the Rolles of Parliament, for the perpetuallizing of his Honour and of his Name: which with wonderfull applause was consented vnto; and shortly after hee was created Duke of Suffolke. Yet for all this, before many yeares were expired, hee was in the same place accused, conuicted, and condemned for sundry treasons, misprisions, and offences; for which hee was exiled, taken, and without law put to death, as hereafter we shall see.

Such is the continuall vncertainty, and the assured instability of worldly glory, and the vanitie thereof; that when men doe imagine, that they doe securely sleepe on the bed of honour, then is their rest most diseasefull, and their soundest sleepe is but an vnquiet slumber, troubled with fearefull and strange dreames; rather informing them of approaching dangers, than ascertaining them of the long continuance of that supposed felicity, which so vnmeasurably they doe desire.

It will bee worthy of our labour, in this place to obserue, that from henceforth the affaires of France proceeded worse & worse: so that within few yeares that whole kingdome, with the Duchies of Aquitaine and Normandie, were vitterly lost. The causes of which misfortunes are principally noted to be these.

1. The first was, the releasement of *Lewis* the noble Duke of Orleance for his ranome. For his wisdome instructed the weak

Coun-

Counsell of France. His perswasions reconciled all such iarres as were too too common among the Nobility of France : and his valour was put into execution with such excellencie of discretion, that by his example the French cowards became valiant.

2. The second was this vnhappy and this vnfortunate marriage betwixt the King and his Queene : for by meanes thereof the Earle of Arminack, his kinsmen, and his friends, became mortall enemies to the English Nation; hating them for their kings sake, because hee had vnfaithfully forsaken his affied wife. And besides that, the king had not one penny with the Queene for her marriage portion; but spent on her many thousand pounds before he enioyed her as his wife. And by this match also the king did not strengthen himselfe with any new friends: for her fathers penury and wants enforced him to liue almost as a priuate man.

3. Thirdly, the releasement of king *Henries* right to his Duchie of Angeou, and to the Countrey of Mayne, which bordered vpon Normandie, so weakned the kings Army in that Prouince, that shortly after hee was driven out and expelled from that Duchie, and all Aquitaine by reason thereof was quite lost.

4. The fourth was the guiltlesse death and murder of the most noble & good Duke of Glocester, whose aduice and counsell were the sinewes of those wars.

5. To these also may bee added the diuers dispositions and qualities of the King and of the Queene. For king *Henrie* was exceeding milde, courteous, and gentle, patient in all aduersities, moderate in prosperity, a despiser of couetousnesse, an hater of oppression, a louer of quietnesse and of peace. Hee loathed warres, and the toile and troubles of the world: hee spent much time in his priuate studies, and in his religious exercises vnto God. He was not desirous to meddle much with publike affaires, nor with the gouernment of his kingdome. He desired not to reuenge any wrong which was done vnto him. He was more mercifull to such as transgressed, than willing to extend the rigour of Iustice against such as had offended his lawes: yea, so little respectfull was hee of his owne gtearnesse, and of his knigly dignity and honour, (in regard of his soules health) that hee loued rather to bee ruled than to gouerne as a king.

The description of King Henry.

But the young Queene (who was faire and beautifull, strong and lustie, proud and haughtry, stout and reuengefull, crafty and politicke) was not well pleased with the soft nature and flexible disposition of the King: neither could her ambitious spirit endure,

The description of Queen Margaret.

*The Queen
dismisseth the
Protector of
his office and
charge.*

*He is called
the good
Duke of
Glocester.
He is mur-
dered.*

*The French
warres are
neglected.*

*A weak
Councell.*

*The truce is
broken.*

*Fongyers is
taken.*

that he being more than of full yeares, should (as a pupill) be ruled and directed by another man. Being therefore clearly resolved to dismiss the Duke of Glocester of his Protectorship and command, and making a publike shew of her inward intention to supply his place, shee was encouraged and furthered therein by her trusty friends the Duke of Buckingham and the Duke of Suffolke, who (by the secret instigation of the rich Cardinall of Winchester, and of the Archbishop of Yorke, who mortally hated the Protector) not onely removed him from his place, but called him to a strict account for the expence of the Treasure of this kingdome: which iustly and honestly was disbursed by him, for the maintenance and furthering of the French wars.

And when they perceiued that they were vnable by that course and practice to attaine vnto their purpose, they procured the Queene (in the kings name) to assemble his high Court of Parliament at Burie, where the said Duke (surnamed for his surpassing and heroicall vertues, with which he was adorned, *The good Duke of Glocester*) was attached, and arrested for high treason, and committed vnto prison: and the next day he was found dead & breathlesse in his bed, being cruelly and inhumanely murdered, without doubt. As soone as he was thus dispatched out of the way, *Richard Duke of Yorke* secretly conspired with his great allies and trusty friends, to set on foot his title to the Crowne. And likewise the Duke of Suffolke (who with the Queene ruled all the royst) respected more his owne profit, than the benefit of the common-weale, and vsed sundry deuices and cunning practices to oppresse the people, that with their coine hee might fill vp his owne purse. By meanes whereof, no prouision of money was made for the supporting of the kings wars in France; no Army was newly raised to assist such as were then abroad; no wages were paid to souldiers, or vnto Captaines: which made them discontentedly to murmure. Neither was the kings Councell of Estate sufficiently able to rule and to direct as was needefull and necessary for the kings profit at home, or for his honour or aduantage abroad.

Before the last prefixed time of truce was ended, *Sir Francis Surrayne* (an Arragonoys, but a Captaine ouer some English troupes) by a sudden surprisall in the night, tooke the Towne of Fongyers, which standing in the Frontier of Normandie, belonged to the Duke of Britaine, where hee slew the Inhabitants, and rifled all at his pleasure: for which no recompence was yielded to the Duke; for hee was answered, that the fact was committed by a priuate Captaine, without the consent of the King, or of the Duke

Duke of Somerset, who was then Regent or Lieutenant of the Duchy of Normandy, in which the said *Sarrayn* at that time lived.

The Frenchmen likewise, by the subtile policie of a Waggoner, (who with his Cart stopped the Draw-bridge vntill they were entered with their Companies) tooke from the Englishmen the towne of Pont-larch, which is distant from Roan about twelue miles, and is the Key of entrance from France ouer the Riuer of Soame into Normandy, where the Englishmen were slain without pity or compassion: and the goods and substance of the Inhabitants was taken away in like sort, as it was done at Fongyers.

Pont-larch taken.

Thus was the Truce violated on both Parts: And thus were those bloody warres renewed, which were daily fed with the slaughters of the brauest, and of the most valiant men. The French king (perceiuing that the Englishmen were not now as puissant in those Countries, as they had beene in former times: and being minded to hold fast his good Fortune, which drew him by the hand into great hope of prosperous successe) diuided his huge Armie into three parts, with which in few daies he tooke the townes of Louyers, Gerbory, and Vernoyle. The Inhabitants also of Constance, Gysours, Castle, Gayllard, Ponteau-du mere, S. Loy, Fesampe, & many others in Normandy, & in Guyan, who were swayed by their Garrisons, surrendred themselves into his hands. The Duke of Somerset likewise, & the Earle of Shrewsbury (being therunto violently enforced by the Roanists) by composition yeelded vnto him that City, and departed with all their goods & substance to the City of Cane: vpon Hostages left behinde them; that sundry other Castles and Townes (according to their agreement and promise) should also bee giuen vp without blowes to the French king. So that within few daies, the Castle and Towne of Harflew, and many others, became French.

The French King preuaileth.

1448.
27

Roan is yeelded to the French king.

Harflew is yeelded.

1449
28.

A Rebellion in Ireland.

The vnhappy newes of daily losses in Normandy, and in Aquitaine, much appalled king *Henrie*, and troubled his Councell, who (being vnable to direct, as they had done, whilst the good Duke of Glocester liued, and did assist them) knew not what course was best to bee taken: and they were the more perplexed in those affaires, by meanes of a lewd and dangerous Rebellion, which (at the same time) hapned in Ireland. For the speedy suppressing whereof, king *Henrie* was constrained to transport the Duke of Yorke with an Armie thither. In which seruice hee so successfefully preuailed, that hee not onely appeased that tumult, but (by his wisdom, courtesie, and valour) won the fauour, and the hearty loue of that Nation.

The Duke of Yorke appeaseth it.

This Expedition much hindred the kings preparations for the defence of his Duchie of Normandie; yet he sent thither Sir *Thomas Kyriel*, a prudent, and a valiant man, accompanied with foure- teene hundred Souldiers, who (with so small a handfull) did as much as could in reason bee expected. For hee recovered diuers Townes and Castles which had beene lost: And (had his strength consisted of a greater number) hee would assuredly by his valour, haue performed much more.

*Cane is besie-
ged.*

*The English
are ouer-
throwne.*

*The first vi-
ctory in open
field which
the French in
many yeares
obtained.*

*Cane is bat-
tred, assaul-
ted, & stoutly
defended.*

This worthy Captaine, finding himselfe to be too weake, to encounter many thousands of his enemies, Vnited his forces with *Matthew Gough*, *Sir Henrie Norbery*, *Sir Robert Vere*, and some others: So that their Army consisted of five thousand approued valiant men, all which (with haughty courage and resolued minds to winne honour) encountred with an Army of seven thousand of their Enemies, as they marched strongly to the siege of the Citie of Cane. In the beginning of this fight the Englishmen preuailed according to their hearts desire: But in the middest of all their hopes, they were deceiued. For being grievously oppressed by *Arthur Earle of Richmond*, high Constable of France, *James of Luxenburgh Earle of Lualt*, and by many other Noblemen of France, (who traauiled with many Cornets of Horsemen towards the same siege) and finding their Countie-men beaten downe, fainting, and on the point to runne out of the field, relieved them with their fresh supplies, and so furiously assaulted the tyred English Armie, that it was quickly ouerthrowne, foure thousand of them being slaine, *Sir Thomas Kyriel*, *Sir Robert Norbery*, with eight hundred more were taken prisoners: but *Matthew Gough*, and *Sir Robert Vere*, and the survivors of their Companies, saued themselves by flight.

Thus were the Englishmen ouerthrowne and miserably wasted: and this was the first Battaille in open field, which the Frenchmen wonne of the English in many yeares before, whereof their Historians doe not a little bragge. This victory being thus obtayned, the city of Cane in Normandy was closely besieged by the French king: and oftentimes her walls were aduenterously scaled: The assaylants made many braue and bold attempts, but were manfully repulsed and beaten backe, with the losse of their limbs, and of their liues: Then were the walls daily battered, and the Frenchmen eagerly endeaoured to enter in: but their presumption was sharply checked by the besieged, who did cast them off as fast as they enterprized to come in. Thus euery man contended to buy Honour, but none other payment for it (but blood) was currant in

in that place. The Duke of Somerset (being daily importuned by the fearfull exclamations of his wife and children to surrender the towne) debated thereof seriously with Sir *David Hall*, who was appointed to bee the chiefe Captaine and Commander of that Citie, by the Duke of Yorke, whose Towne it was. But the courageous Knight would not in any sort consent to the Dukes will, whereat he was much displeased, and demanded whether the kings Lieutenant Generall of that Duchie had not sufficient authority and power of himselfe (without his leaue) to dispose of the Towns and Castles of that Prouince? No, quoth the Knight, the kings Lieutenant here may not, nor can sell, or yeeld vp any mans right, but his only, whose person he doth represent: & this City being my Lord the Duke of Yorkes, quoth hee, you haue no power to surrender it to the French king, nor shall, on any composition whatsoever. The Duke being highly displeased with this bold and peremptorie answer, informed the inferiour Captaines, common Souldiers, and the poorer sort of the Inhabitants, of the approaching dangers, which would vndoubtedly be the destruction of them all: and aduised them, not to be deprived of their liues, and of their liberties, through the desperate folly and wilfulnesse of their obstinate and indiscreet Captaine. This cause made them clamorous, and this counsell so hardned their hearts against Sir *David Hall*, that they resolved (in despight of him) to yeeld the City (vpon composition) to the French king. Thus was the peoples obedience seuered and diuided from him: and thus was their courage conuerted into feare: and on a suddaine (vpon certaine Articles agreed on) the City was abandoned, and became French: so that Roan and Cane (being the chiefe Cities of the Duchie of Normandy) being lost, all the whole Duchie (in a short time after) reuolted from king *Henry*, and was lost likewise.

The noble Captaine Sir *David Hall*, being thus wronged and disgraced, forsook Normandie, & sailed into Ireland, where he informed the Duke of Yorke what the Duke of Somerset had done; whereat he was so highly displeased, that he neuer ceased priuately and openly to practise, vntill the said Duke of Somerset deservedly had lost his head. For this insupportable and vnfortunate losse of the Duchie of Normandie, the Queene and the Duke of Suffolke were first secretly blamed by the whispering common people of this Kingdome, who afterwards by open slanders, and with publicke reproachfull speeches, exclaimed, and accused the said Duke of many notable treacheries and grosse treasons, which chiefly consisted of these particulars.

Treasons

The Duke of Somerset would surrender Cane. Sir David Hall will not suffer it. A valiant Knight.

A Mutinie.

Cane is lost.

All Normandie is lost, and so is France.

The Duke of Yorke maliciously accuseth the Duke of Somerset.

1450

29

Treasons objected against the Duke
of SUFFOLKE.

First, That by his wicked and vngodly meanes, the Duke of Glocester was deprived both of his Protectorship and of his life.

- 2 Item, That by his appointment such Counsellors of State were placed about the King and Queene, as aduised all things for their gaine, and not for the profit of the Commonweale.
- 3 Item, That the Queene and the said Duke ruled the whole Kingdome as they listed: so that (by reason thereof) all things succeeded ill and hurtfull to this Kingdome.
- 4 Item, That the said Duke was the meanes and occasion that the Kings right to Aquitaine and Guyan were yeilded up, which weakned, and at length lost all the Duchies of Aquitaine and of Normandie.
- 5 Item, That he had married his son Iohn to the Ladie Margaret, sole daughter and generall heire to Iohn Duke of Somerset, and had reported, that she was the next heire to the Crowne of England, if King Henrie hapned to dye without issue.
- 6 Item, That hee had perswaded the Earle of Dumoys, and other great Lords and Officers of France, to transport an Armie into this Realme, to destroy the King, and consequently to make his said sonne Iohn successor to this Crowne and Kingdome.
- 7 Item, That hee procured the Duke of Orleance to bee set at libertie for a ransome, contrary to the commandement and the last Will and Testament of King Henry the Fifth: by whose meanes afterwards the affaires of France were made more powerfull and fortunate than formerly they had beene, and King Henries forces were daily enfeebled, and made more weake thereby in those Countreies.
- 8 Item, That he had counselled the said Duke (before his departure

parture out of England) to perswade the French King to augment and to increase his Armie, and to make sharper warres both in Normandie and in France against King Henry; who so did: by which meanes the King lost all his possessions in those Countries.

9 Item, That assoone as he came Ambassadour into France, he secretly informed King Charles of the chiefe points of his Commission, and Instructions: by meanes whereof hee grew obstinate, and refused to conclude any peace.

10 Item, That the said Duke (at his last being in France) revealed to the French King the weaknesse of King Henries provisions to withstand him: by meanes whereof the Frenchmen became more bold and hardy in those wars.

11 Item, That boastingly and foolishly he had reported, in the presence of manie noble and honourable personages, that hee had as high a place in the Councell house of France as hee had in England, and that by reason of his especiall interest in the French Kings loue, hee could dispossesse the neereft and the greatest of the French Kings Counsellours, if hee were disposed so to doe.

12 Item, That when men, money, and munitions were in a readinesse to be transported into France, to aide and to assist King Henries forces there, the said Duke (being wickedly corrupted, and being a secret friend to the kings enemies) caused them to be kept at home, by meanes whereof the Kings Armies in those Countries wanting due and necessarie supplies, were vanquished both in Normandie and in France.

13 And lastly, That by meanes of his great fauour with the Queene, hee had deceitfully and fraudulently enriched himselfe with the Kings lands and treasures, and had procured to himselfe a Monopolie of all the greatest offices for his owne gaine.

These and many more foule and treasonable Articles were (in full Parliament) publickly objected against him, and laid vnto his charge:

*The Queenes
policy to help
the Duke of
Suffolke.*

*The Com-
mons are dis-
pleased.
A rebellion,
but appeased.*

*The Parlia-
ments request*

*The Duke is
exiled.
He is taken
at Sea, and
beheaded.*

*The Duke
of Yorke in-
tendeth to
claime the
Crowne.
His practises
to further it.*

1
2
3
4

charge : all which hee fairly denied, but could scarce cleare him-
selfe of one of them.

The Queene (to prevent the Duke of Suffolkes further perill and
danger, because she entirely loued him) caused him to bee commit-
ted to the Tower, where he had liberty at his owne will : and then
concluding the Parliament vpon a sudden, shee not onely enlarged
him, but restored him into high fauour with the king ; so that hee
proudly ietted and swaggered, as formerly he had done.

The common people repined much thereat, and spake scanda-
lously and reproachfully of the Queene, and of her gouernment :
& some of them wickedly rebelled, making a turbulent mate (nick-
named *Blew-beard*) their chiefest Capitaine. But this Insurrection
was quickley nipped in the bud : their Ring-leaders were put to
death, and the rest of them receiued friendly admonition, and the
kings gracious pardon.

The King and Queene intending to reconcile all discords, and
to giue some better contentment to the Commons, held a Parlia-
ment at Liecester. But their purpose failed them : for the lower
house instantly importuned the king that Iustice might bee done
vpon the Duke of Suffolke, and also vpon his associating Conspira-
tors, *James Fines* Lord Say and Lord Treasurer of England, *John*
Bishop of Salisbury, and vpon some others.

The king (to pacifie this broile, and to weaken their importu-
nirie, by doing of some thing wherewith hee thought he should
please them) exiled the said Duke for five yeares. But as he sailed
towards France, he was taken by an English man of war, who lan-
ded him vpon Dover Sands, and chopt off his head on a boats side.
And thus was the guiltlesse bloud of *Humfrey* the good Duke of
Glocester in some measure reuenged : and the rest of those delin-
quents were sequestred from their Offices, and imprisoned by the
king.

Whilest these things were thus in handling, the Duke of Yorke
(albeit resiant in Ireland) solicited and procured his allies & friends
in England (by some secret plottings, pretending some other ends)
to set on foote his claime and title to the Crowne, hee being line-
ally descended from *Philip* the daughter & heire of *George* Duke of
Clarence, who was the elder brother of *John of Gunt*, great grand-
father to king *Henrie* the Sixth. And first of all it was whispered,
& priuately reported, that the Kings wits were weake, the Queenes
heart ambitious, the kings Councillors of State not wise enough
to rule : and that all France, Normandie, & Aquitaine were lost, be-
cause God blessed not the vsurped succession of king *Henrie*.

Vpon

Vpon these speeches, too too commonly divulged, a Kentish Rebell named *Jacks Cade*, but falsly nominating himselfe *John Mortimer*, made an Insurrection in that Countrey, and with his rudely-armed crew, and banners displayed, he marched towards the king, who was then at Greenwich. But before hee came vnto him, by messengers he informed him, that hee intended not any hurt against his Royall Person, but would displace and punish some of his euill Counsellors, who were his flatterers, & partiall to their owne friends, bitter to their enemies, enrichers of themselves, oppressors of the common people, greedy of too much honour, and who for rewards corruptly ordered (or rather disordered) all things as they pleased.

When the King and his Councell had maturely considered of this vndutifull and insolent message, he was aduised to encounter them, not with faire words, which might breed further contempt, but with the Sword, for ensamples sake, that others might (by their punishment) afterwards take better heede. And thereupon a strong Armie was suddainely prepared; of which when the Rebels were informed, (to gaine aduantage by their valour, vnder a false pretence of cowardly feare) they retyred manie miles. The King (who was resolu'd that this retreat rather proceeded from basenesse, than from policie and wit) sent after them *Sir Hamfry Stafford*, and *William Stafford* his brother, they being accompanied with many lustie Gentlemen & braue Souldiers. But most of them were quickly slaine by the Rebels, who boldly and couragiously confronted them when opportunity and place gaue them good aduantage to returne.

This Victory being thus obtained, *Jacks Cade*, (to whom multitudes of rude and gracelesse people from many shires daily resorted) pressed forth againe, and boldly came into Blacke Heath, and from thence to London, where they did much harme. But at length the Kings Generall Pardon was proclaimed by the Archbishop of Canterbury, and by the Bishop of Winchester, to all such as were not the Ring-leaders of that vngodly rebellion: by means whereof the inconstant and fearfull multitude left their Captaines, and returned home. Then was *Jacks Cade* proscribed by the king, and proclamation was made, by which a reward by the gift of one thousand markes was promised to him that could take him aliue or dead. The hope of this payment occasioned very manie to make good inquiries and narrow searches after him: so that in the end being found, he was slaine as he fought desperately for his life, and his head was presented to the King, who willingly, paid the reward

*A Rebellion
in Kent.
Jacks Cade.*

*His message
to the King.*

1
2
3
4
5
6
7

*The Kings
Armie pur-
sues the
Rebels.*

*Some of the
Kings forces
are over-
throwne.*

*The Rebellion
is appeased.*

*A good po-
licie.*

*Jacks Cade is
proscribed
and slaine.*

ward which was promised. Thus was this cattiffe destroyed, and thus was this commotion appeased, which threatened destruction to the King and Common-weale.

Such of the Nobility, and such of the Commons, as could no longer endure or digest the euill gouernement of the Queene, and of her adherents, aduertised the Duke of Yorke (who remained in Ireland) that a Parliament was nere at hand, and prayed him to consider what was fittest to bee done for the redresse thereof, and for his owne good. Whereupon he left his deputation in Ireland, and returned home, and openly conferred with his best friends, *John Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, Richard Earle of Salisbury, Richard Neuill his sonne Earle of Warwick, Edward Brooke Lord Cobham*, and with diuers others, how and by what meanes he might soberly, without vsurpation, or treason, set forth his right and title to the Crowne.

After this matter had beene long debated, it was concluded, that the Duke of Yorke should raise an Armie, vnder pretence to remoue the Duke of Somerset from the King and Queene, because hee ruled them both, and the Common-weale too: and against him it was publickly alleaged, that he was an oppressor of the people, a deceiuer of the King, a secret friend to his enemies, a principall occasion that England had lost France, Normandie, and Aquitaine, and had (by his manifold treacheries and treasons) deserued ill of the Prince, and of his Countrey.

The King also (fearing the worst) raised another Armie; but being certified from the Duke of Yorke, that he intended nothing against his Royall person, nor against his State, but onely craued that in a Parliament the Duke of Somerset might receiue his triall, he committed the said Duke (for a shew onely) to the Tower: and thereupon the Duke of Yorke (expecting fitter opportunity) dissolved his Armie, and priuately repaired to the King, where (contrary to his expectation) hee met with the Duke of Somerset, who accused him of treason, for that (without the kings leaue or commandement) hee had raised an Armie, with which he intended to haue murdered the king, and to make himselfe the inheritor and possessor of his Crowne. And though the kings ieaousie (being grounded vpon strong presumptions that it was true) caused the king to detaine and keepe the Duke of Yorke as a prisoner, yet within few dayes after he was enlarged, because it seemed vnlikely to the kings Councell, that his aime was directed to the Crowne, seeing that (without compulsion) hee had dissolved his Armie vpon the Duke of Somersets commitment vnto prison, when he was strong

1451
30
*The Duke of
Yorke com-
meth into
England.*

*The causes
for which he
leuied an
Armie.*

1
2
3
4
5

*The King
raiseth an
Armie.*

*A dissembled
pacification.*

*The Duke of
Somerset ac-
cuseth the
Duke of
Yorke of high
Treason.
He is impris-
oned, and
enlarged.*

strong enough to haue made his party good against the king by force of Armes in the open field.

This businesse was the more easily passed ouer by the king, because that in the midst of those disturbances the Lords of Aquitaine (vpon whose fidelities, the French king being departed into France, king *Henry* much relied) by secret messengers had made offer to surrender all that Duchie again into his hands, if he would speedily send vnto them a conuenient Armie to defend and keepe it as his owne. And thereupon the Lord *Talbot*, Earle of Shrewesburie, was sent thither with three thousand selected & valiant men, who receiued that Duchie to the kings vse, as it was promised. But alsoon as the French king had notice of this reuolt, he marched thither with an Armie of two and twenty thousand men, fought with the English, slew the most renowned and braue Earle, and almost all his followers, and in few daies regained all Aquitaine, and almost all Guyan into his owne hands.

The Queene was now deliuered of a faire sonne, who was afterwards named *Edward*, and liued vntill almost hee came to a mans estate. And neere about the same time king *Henry* created his two brothers by the mothers side, *Edmund* *Tutbar*, who was father to king *Henry* the Seuenth, Earle of Richmond, and *Jasper* *Tutbar* Earle of Pembroke, but he died without issue.

France, Normandy, and Aquitaine being all lost, and no warres now busying the Nobility of this Realme, franke and free libertie was thereby giuen to the Duke of Yorke, grieuously to complaine to diuers Lords of the greatest power, of the manifold treacheries & treasons of the Duke of Somerset, as formerly he had done. And at the same time *Richard* Earle of Salisbury, being the second sonne of *Ralph* *Neuil* Earle of Westmerland, whose daughter the Duke of Yorke had married, and *Richard* his son, who hauing married *Anne* the sister and heire of *Henry* *Beauchampe*, first Earle, and afterwards Duke of Warwicke, and in whose right he was created Earle, were men of prime honour, and of great power, and for their valour and their vertues were especially obserued and regarded both of the Nobles and also of the Commons of this Kingdome: but chiefly *Richard* the sonne, Earle of Warwicke, whose courtesie, wisdom, and true manhood, had gained him much loue.

These two Earles (among others) faithfully ioyned themselves and their fortunes with the Duke of York, and his: and chiefly by their meanes and good assistance he preuailed, as in the sequell of this History it shall appeare.

When the Duke of York had thus strengthened himselfe with

Did

these

1452

31

Guyen and
Aquitaine
yelded to
King Henry,
but regained
by the French
King.

John Earle of
Shrewsbury
slaine.

Prince Ed-
ward borne.

Creation of
Lords.

1453

32

The Yorkish
Conspiracy.

1454

33

The Duke of
Somerset is
arrested for
treason.

The Parlia-
ment broa-
keth off sub-
dentity.
The Duke of
Somerset is
enlarged and
made Cap-
taine of Cal-
lice.

The Duke of
Yorke leueth
an Army.

The King
meeteth him
with an Ar-
mie.

The battaile
of S. Albons.
The King is
ouerthrowne.

He is taken
prisoner.

The King is
used venge-
rently.

A Parlia-
ment.

The Duke of
Yorke is made
Protector.

these noble and powerfull friends, he caused the Duke of Somerset to be arrested of high treason in the Queens great Chamber, from whence hee was drawne and conueied to the Tower: and shortly after in the Parliament the Duke of Yorke accused him of all those treasons which are formerly mentioned.

But because the king indeed fell sicke, or fained himself (for the Dukes good to bee diseased) the Parliament was suddenly adiourned, and the king by many protestations faithfully promised, that he should answer those accusations at some other time. But within few dayes after hee was not onely by the Queene set at liberty, but was graced with the kings especiall and publike fauour, and was made chiefe Captaine of the Towne and Castle of Callice, where the Nobility & the common people grudged much, and exclaimed vpon the vnjust proceedings of the King and Queen.

The Duke of Yorke and his associates supposing that their proiect would still be crossed if they remained quiet, & expected faire proceedings against the Duke of Somerset by the ordinarie course of Law; resolved once againe to shew themselves with an Armie in the field, and by open warre not only to reuenge themselves vpon their enemies, but also to settle the Crowne vpon the Duke of Yorkes head. For which purpose they raised a puissant Army within the Marches of Wales, and confidently directed their march towards the City of London.

The King and his Councell hearing lest the Duke of Yorke and his complices would finde too many friends if they came thither, met them with another Armie at S. Albons: and betwixt them a doubtfull and a bloody battaile was fought, from which the Duke of Buckingham, and James Butler Earle of Ormond & of Wiltshire, fled: and Edmund Duke of Somerset, Henry the second Earle of Northumberland, Humphrey Earle of Stafford, sonne and heire to the Duke of Buckingham, John Lord Clifford, & more than eight thousand Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, and common Souldiers, were slaine on the kings part, and the king himselfe was taken prisoner and brought to the Duke of Yorke.

And albeit hee might then haue put him to death, and by that meanes might quietly haue possessed himselfe of the Crowne, yet because his rising in Armes pretended none other thing but the reforming of some great abuses in the Common-weale, hee reuerenced him with all duty, & brought him with great honour vnto London, where he prayed him to assemble his high Court of Parliament; which he did, & by that great Councell & honorable estate the Duke of York was made Protector of the kings Royall person, and

and of his Realm, the Earle of Salisbury was made Lord Chancellor of England, and his son the Earle of Warwicke was made Capitaine of Callice.

And thus all the Regiment of the ciuill estate of this Common-weale was settled in those former two, and the disposing of warlike affaires and businesse was conferred on the third. In the administration of which Offices, they shewed no iniustice, vsed no bribery, oppressed no man, were indifferent to the poore and rich, and ordered all things in a most commendable and praisefull fashion, to the good contentment of most of the Nobility, Gentry, and Commons of this Realme.

But *Humphrey* Duke of Buckingham, who in the battell at *S. Albons* had lost his eldest sonne; and *Henrie Beauford* the new Duke of *Somerset*, who then also lost his father; with reuengefull mindes and iraged spirits informed the Queene, that this faire and glozing shew was vsed but as a subtile meane to set the Crowne of England vpon the Duke of *Yorke* head: That the Kings life and his sonnes was secretly conspired: That her vnfortunate miseries approched neere vnto her: And that all would bee starke naught, except the subtriky and cunning of those three Lords were wittily preuented, and their haughty and ambitious stomackes were with force and violence subdued and beaten downe.

Hereupon the Queene and they assembled a great Councell at *Greenwich*, by the authority whereof the Duke of *Yorke* and the Earle of *Salisbury* were removed from their gouernment. This sudden alteration bred many broiles in the Common-weale. For the English Merchants in *London* perceiuing that the Common-weales gouernment was vssettled, quarrelled with the Venetians and Italians who dwelt among them, and by their trading in merchandizing, and by their parsimonie and sparing waxed rich, and depriued them of their chiefeft meanes to liue. Those strangers they rifled and robbed: for which offence (not without much trouble and difficulty) the principall offenders were corrected or put to death.

The Frenchmen also being diuided into many warlike Fleets, landed, robbed and burnt some Frontier Townes within this Realme. And the Scots (being conducted by *James* their king) did much harme to the Duke of *Yorke* Countries in the North. Against whom the Duke himselfe marched with a braue Armie. But the Scots (fearing the sequell of their vnaduised inuasion) suddenly fled, and returned into their owne Countrey.

Dd 2

The

The Earle of Salisbury is made Chancellor.

The Earle of Warwicke is made Capitaine of Callice.

Their good gouernment.

1455

34

The Duke of Yorke and the Earle of Salisbury are removed by the Queene. A spoile on the Merchant strangers in London.

1456

35

The Frenchmen land and burne.

The Scots inuade.

They flye home.

*The Queen
dissembleth
with the Yorkish
Faction.*

*A subtle
policy, but
discovered.*

1457

36

*The King la-
boureth for
unity and
peace.*

*How both the
Factions met
at London.*

The Queene (who now ruled the King and almost all other things at her pleasure) could not bee contented vntill the said three great Lords (either by strength or policie) were cut off: yet outwardly shee seemed in some measure to affect them, and with her cheerefull countenance and smoothing words shee made them a little to be credulous of her loue.

But to effect what earnestly shee intended, shee caused the King (for recreation, and for his healths sake) to make his progresse towards the North, hunting, hauking, and vsing many other pastimes and delightfull sports: in the midst of all which (pretending busineses of great import) shee caused letters to bee written to those three Lords, requiring them to come to a speedie conference with the king: whereupon those Lords (not suspecting any guilefull treachery to bee conspired against them) did as they were commanded, and were with all cheerefull familiarity receiued by the King and Queene. But being secretly informed by their friends, that their destruction was neere at hand, the Duke of Yorke fled from thence into Wales, the Earle of Salisbury to his own Countrey, and his sonne (the Earle of Warwicke) vnto Callice: and yet by their daily messengers and letters sent mutually the one to the other; new proiects were deuised and put in practice shortly after.

The king being aduised by his Counsellors, that these mortalliares at home would incite his enemies abroad to attempt much mischief against him and his kingdome, endeaoured by gentle perswasions to reconcile his discontented Nobles, and to vnite their hearts in true friendship and in loue.

For this purpose hee appointed a generall meeting of all his Lords at London, whither they resorted, but were attended on by multitudes of their meniall seruants, and by such as for that time were desirous and willing to strengthen them with their best seruice.

The Lancastrian Faction lodged themselves in the Suburbes, and consulted daily what course was best for them to take. The Yorkish Confederates sojourned within the walls of the City, and met daily, and aduised themselves how all things should bee ordered in this businesse. But neither of the aduersie parties came neere vnto the other. And the Citizens of London being Neuters, and fearing the euent of blowes, furnished euery streete with armed men both by day and night, to maintaine and to preserve the kings peace.

Thus whilst euery houre bred much suspicion, and when iea-
lousie

lousie among the Noble-men made the hearts of the Commons to be vnstable; the Archbishop of Canterbury, and sundry other Clergie-men (by fitting perswasions, and arguments of great force and consequence) so preuailed, that the King, the Queene, and all the Lords were pleased, in friendly and in kinde sort to meet and to entertaine each other; and all iarres and discontented humours were outwardly in words, but not inwardly in heart, reconciled: and instruments in writing (for future amity and loue) were mutually subscribed, sealed, and deliuered. And for the greater solemnity of this new friendship, a religious procession was made thorough the Citie of London; in which the Kings head was adorned with the Imperiall Crown, and whereon the Duke of York oftentimes looked with a scornefull eye. And one Lord of either Faction marched together hand in hand. The Duke of Yorke lead the Queen, and with great familiarity and gracefull honour seemed to be highly respected & esteemed by her. The king likewise reioyced much at this Vnion: the Lords made shewes of much applauding: and the multitude, being ignorant that secret rancour was dawbed ouer with counterfeited dissimulation, skipped, leaped, and gaue great shouts for ioy.

But within few daies after it hapned, that vpon a sudden debate and falling out betwixt one of the kings seruants and a Gentleman belonging to the Earle of Warwicke, an affray was made neer vnto the kings Court, in which the kings seruant was grieuously wounded, and the other fled. Hereupon the Ycomen of the kings Guard with Halberds and Swords, and the Skullerie with Spirs and Forkes, assaulted the Earle and his followers as he came from the Councell Boord to take his Barge. Betwixt them manie a rude blow was giuen, much bloud was shed, but no man slaine. The Queene, who was forward to picke a quarrell to the Earle vpon any small occasion, and knowing that in a whirrie he was passed into London, gaue strait command for his apprehension and commitment to the Tower. But by reason that his secret friends had forewarned him to looke vnto himselfe, hee passed with all expedition into Yorkeshire, where he discovered to his father and to the Duke of Yorke, the great iniury and wrong which was done vnto him by the Kings seruants, and the intention of the Queene, notwithstanding the late reconciliation and friendship which was concluded with great protestations and much solemnity betwixt them.

And lest some Carpet-favourite might expulse him for his place of trust and Captainship of Callice, he forthwith sailed thither

*A dissembled
friendship.*

1458
37
*A dangerous
affray.*

*The Earle of
Warwicke is
assailed.*

*He passeth
into York-
shire.*

*He saileth
vnto Callice.*

*An Army
raised.*

*Bloar-heath
field.*

*The Lord
Ardley is
overthrowne
by the Earle
of Salisbury.*

1459

38

*The Duke of
York raiseth
an Army,
and claimes
the Crowne.*

*The Kings
armie.*

*Andrew
Trollop and
John Blunt
flye into the
Kings armie,
and discover
all.*

ther : and as soone as he was gone, his father the Earle of Salisbury marched towards the kings Court with an Armie of five thousand men, to complaine vnto his Highnesse, not onely of the violence and wrong which his meniall seruants had done vnto his sonne, but also of the sugered and secret dissimulation of the Queene. But when the Queene had certaine notice of his resolved purpose, shee commanded the Lord *Ardley* to encounter him on his way with ten thousand men which she had leuied : and peremptorily she required him to bring vnto her the said Earle quicke or dead. Her selfe also with another Armie came after him, and in Shropshire in Bloar-heath the said Earle & the Lord *Ardley* met each other, where the one fought for honour, but the Earle for his life, neither of them intending to yeeld, or to steppe backe. But at length the Earle and his followers (being in despaire of good successe, or pardon if they maintained not the encounter with bold hearts and strong armes) fought with such resolution and vnconquerable stomackes, that the Lord *Ardley*, with foure and twenty hundred of his souldiers and associates, were slaine : the rest fled, and the Earle of Salisbury was Lord and master of the field.

By these practices the Duke of York perceiued plainely, that the liues of him and of his Complices were secretly hunted for : and therefore hee now determined no longer to hide and couer his purpose, as formerly hee had done, but by armes in the open field to maintaine his claime and title to the Crowne. And therefore himselfe with the Earle of Salisbury marched into Wales, and thither the Earle of Warwicke repaired to them, and brought with him for their assistance, *Andrew Trollop* and *John Blunt*, two of the most approued English Captaines which then liued, and had been best exercised in the warres of France. And when they had plentifully increased their Army, partly in Wales and in the Marches thereof, and partly by such companies as resorted daily out of the North vnto them, they set on wards, and came vnto a litle Towne called Lud-low, where the King and diuers of his Nobility presented a strong Armie to the view of the Yorkish Faction, so that they lay not farre asunder that night. But in the euening the two braue Captaines (*Trollop* and *Blunt*) surueying the kings forces, espied a certaine way and meane to endanger the king and all his, so that it was resolved by the Duke and Earles, that their aduice & counsell should secretly bee executed the next morning before the king should bee able to set his Armie in a readinesse to fight. But in the first watch those two Captaines (making it a matter burdensome

to their consciences, not onely to fight against their Soueraigne Lord and King, but also to betray him into the hands of his owne Subjects) secretly fled, and came vnto the King, to whom they plainly discovered the proiect and the intencion of his enemies, and aduised him of the best and chiefeſt meanes, how not onely they might be reſiſted, but driuen to the worſt. And for this ſeruice they were gently receiued, and pardoned, and rewarded by the King.

The Duke and Earles being certified of their Reuolts, beganne to be diſſident of their good ſucceſſe: and not daring to ſet vp their reſt on the next dayes fight, they determined to expect another time, which might afford them more ſurety and better hopes. And taking aduantage by the darkneſſe of the night, they departed from their Armie into ſeueral places: for the Duke with his younger ſonne *Edmund* Earle of Rutland, retired into Wales, and from thence they ſailed into Ireland. The other two (with *Edward* Earle of March, eldeſt ſonne to the Duke of Yorke) came into Deuonſhire, and being ſafely ſhipped in Ex-mouth Hauen, by the fauour and procurement of a worthy Gentleman named *Iohn Dynham*, they ſailed to Callice, where (notwithſtanding their miſfortunes) they were receiued with much ioy.

*The Lords
flee in the
night.*

The King (who reioyced much at their departure) coaſted the Countries with multitudes of Horſemen to ouertake them: but all their labours were in vaine. For the preſent feare which alwayes remained with them, gaue them wings to flye. Hee alſo pardoned the ordinary ſouldiers of the Yorkiſh Faction, which were forſaken by their chiefeſt guides, and as ſheepe were expoſed to a ſlaughter. But their Captaines who were deliuered vp into the kings hands, were executed in ſundry places within this Realme.

*The Lords
are proclai-
med Traitors.*

Hee alſo proclaimed the ſaid Lords to bee Arch-traitors to him and to his Kingdome, confiscated their goods, offices, and their lands, committed the gouernment of the Northerne parts to the Earle of Northumberland, &c to the Lord *Clifford*, his truſty friends, and made *Henry* the young Duke of Somerſet Captaine and chiefe Commander of his Towne and Caſtle of Callice, and of the Marches thereof, who ſailing thither with a purpoſe to take poſſeſſion of his new charge, and not ſuſpecting that his enemies were there, was on his firſt aſſuall well beaten and battered with the great ſhot and Ordnance which from the Caſtle played on him, and by thoſe means he was compelled to retire and to keep off.

*Henry Duke
of Somerſet is
made Cap-
taine of Cal-
lice.
Hee was
courſely enter-
tained.*

The Queene hauing intelligence of this rude and vnkind entertainment of her new Captaine and great fauourite, reſolved to ſend

ſend

*John Dyn-
ham taketh
some of the
Kings ships.*

*The Earle of
Warwicke
saileth into
Ireland.*

*He returneth
to Callice.*

*A Parlia-
ment.
Attainders
for Treason.
Preparations
against the
landing of the
Lords.*

*The Kings
Fleet taken in
Sandwich.*

*The Lords
doe land at
Sandwich.*

send vnto him fresh and new supplies: for which purpose some ships of the Nauie Royall were made ready within the Hauen of Sandwich. But the before-named *John Dynham* disposing himselfe to all seruices which might support the Yorkish Faction, and being furthered by the Mariners, who highly fauoured and inwardly loued the young and lustie Prince *Edward* Earle of March, and being accompanied with many gallant spirits, and braue men, boorded the said ships as they lay there at anchor, took the Lord *Ryuers*, who was appointed Admirall to conduct them, and carried him & those ships to Callice; from whence the Earle of Warwick sailed in them into Ireland, and conferred largely with the Duke of York concerning those affaires. But in his returne the Duke of Exeter being Admirall of the Seas, and hauing vnder his charge a warlike and a strong Fleet, making no doubt to haue taken him, was much deceived: for his owne Mariners more adhered to the Yorkish Faction than to the Kings, and shewed themselues to bee exceeding cold and sparing in the performance of their dueties, when neede required their seruice; so that the Earle of Warwick returned back againe safely vnto Callice.

And now the king vpon good aduice assembled his high Court of Parliament, in which he caused all the Lords of the Yorkish Conspiracie to bee attainted of High Treason. And lest this Realme might bee disturbed by their inuasion or secret entrance, diuers Capitaines with their companies were lodged in all Townes and Ports which neere adioyned to the Sea, and were the best likely places for their landing. Sir *Simon Mountfort* likewise, who was a right worthy and a valiant Knight, hauing vnder his charge diuers of the Kings ships, was appointed to keepe and to defend the Cinque-ports.

But nothing was done in the kings Chamber, or in any other place of greatest secrecie or counsell, whereof the said Earles had not certaine and quick Intelligence at Callice: wherefore they provided, furnished, and strongly manned such of the kings ships as formerly by the said *John Dynham* had bene brought thither, in which they sailed and safely arriued within the Hauen of Sandwich, and suddenly they tooke Sir *Simon Mountfort* prisoner, vanquished the Towne, and carried away with them such of the kings ships as they found there. And hauing receiued good intelligence from their friends, that nothing was more expected than their returne into England, they prepared for their iourney, and arriued the second time at Sandwich, & were within few dayes assisted by the Lord *Cobham*, and by many Gentlemen and braue souldiers, in somuch

inſomuch that their Armie conſiſted of more than five and twenty thouſand men, with which they marched towards London. But the Lord *Scales* was ſent againſt them with a ſmall companie to that City, to defend it, and to ſecure the king of the fidelity of the Inhabitants thereof when time ſhould ſerue. But the Lord Maior refuſed to receive them, & told the Lord *Scales*, that he was able enough (without his helpe or counſell) to keep that City, which by the king was committed vnto his charge; whereat he was much diſpleaſed, and went to the Tower, from which he much wronged and damniſied the inhabitants of London.

Their Army.

The Londoners reſuſe to receive the Lord Scales.

The King marcheth towards the Lords.

The king, to defend himſelfe, and to maſter his rebellious enemies, being accompanied with the Dukes of Somerſet and of Buckingham, and many other Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, and a ſtrong Armie, marched towards them. And though the king himſelfe (for neceſſities ſake) was perſonally preſent, yet his minde and cogitations were more religiously bent to his prayers, and his deſires affected nothing more than quietneſſe and peace.

The Queen encourageth and threatneth.

But the Queene (whoſe heart was manly, and whoſe anger threatned death) with ſouldier-like termes and ſpeeches cheared vp her followers, debaſed their enemies, promiſed rewards if they deſerued well, and the ſeuereſt of all puniſhments to ſuch as fled.

The Armies doe meet. The battaile of Northampton.

At length neere vnto the Towne of Northampton the two Armies met: the Earle of March, being very frolicke, and in the heate and flower of his youth, by the aduice and counſell of the Earle of Warwicke, ordered his Army for the battaile. The Queene and her adherents did the like.

The King is overthrowne. Ten thouſand men ſlaine. Slaughter.

The fight quickly beganne, and fiercely continued ſomewhat more than two houres: but at length the Earles became Victors, ſlew more than two thouſand men on the kings part, among which were *Hamfrey* Duke of Buckingham, *John Talbot* Earle of Shrewſbury, *Thomas* Lord *Egremont*, *John* Viſcount *Beaumont*, and many others.

Flight.

The Queene, with the Duke of Somerſet and diuers others, taking with them the young Prince, fled into the Biſhopricke of Durham, where they hoped to raiſe a new Armie, or reſolued (in default thereof) to goe into Scotland, and to remaine there vntill fortune and their friends ſhould inable them to recouer what they had loſt.

The King taken priſoner.

The Tower is deliuered to the Lords.

The king (who was left behinde) was taken priſoner, and conueied by the Earles with great pompe and much honour, vnto London, and at their comming thither the Tower was deliuered into their poſſeſſion by the ſouldiers, againſt the liking and good will

The Lord
Scales be-
headed by the
Watermen.

The Thorpe
taken and
imprisoned.

The Duke of
Yorke com-
meth into
England.

A Parlia-
ment.

What the
Duke of
Yorke did
and said in
the Parlia-
ment house.

The Duke of
Yorke's title.

England's
plagues.

1

2

3

4

5

6

1460

39

The title to
the Crowne
settled by act
of Parlia-
ment.

1

2

3

will of the Lord *Scales*, who attempted to flye from thence disgui-
sed in a Whirrie. But being discovered by the Water-men, he was
by them taken, and made shorter by the head, and his body was
negligently left vpon the sands. And *Thomas Thorpe*, the second
Baron of the Exchequer, who mortally hated the house of York,
purposing in the habit of a Monke with a shauen Crowne, to flye
vnto the Queene, was taken, and brought to the Earle of War-
wicke, who sent him to the Tower, where hee remained long
after.

The Duke of York being speedily informed of this victory, left
Ireland, and came to London, and procured a Parliament to be as-
sembled in the Kings name: and in the presence of all the Lords in
the Vpper House, hee sate himsele downe in the Imperiall Seate,
and in an eloquent and powerfull Oration hee discovered to the
Nobles his rightfull claime and title to the Crowne; he being the
sonne and heire of *Anne* the daughter and heire of *Roger Mortimer*
Earle of March, sonne and heire to *Philip* the sole daughter and
heire of *Lionel* Duke of Clarence, the third sonne of king *Edward*
the Third, and elder brother to *John of Gaunt*, who was father to
the Vsurper king *Henry* the Fourth, who was father to king *Henry*
the Fifth, who was father to the king who was vntuly named
king *Henry* the Sixth.

He also related vnto them, that because God blessed not his vn-
lawfull gouernment, therefore the Common-weale of England
had beene plagued with many mischiefes: As first, by the murde-
ring and by the execturing of many honourable and great Lords.
Secondly, by the slaughter of thousands of the common people
in France, Normandie, and elsewhere. Thirdly, by ciuill and blou-
die wars at home. Fourthly, by the losse of all Territories beyond
the Sea belonging to the Crowne of England, excepting Callice &
the Marches thereof. Fifthly, by sudden incurfions made by the
Frenchmen and by the Scots. And lastly, by all maner of violence,
extortion, and oppression practised vpon the poorer sort. And in his
conclusion he craued no fauour, vnlesse that Iustice gaue them war-
rant, nor quiet possession of the Crowne, except they found his de-
scend and title to be infallibly true.

When the Lords and the Commons there assembled had with
mature deliberation and good aduice debated soundly of this im-
portant businesse, it was by them all enacted, that king *Henry*
should so long as he liued retain the name and honour of a King,
and that the Duke of York should bee proclaimed to be the heire
apparrant of the Crowne, and should be the Lord Protector both

of

of the kings person, and also of his dominions and countries; and that the said Duke should have the present possession of the Crowne of this Realme delivered vnto him, if at any time king *Henrie* or his friends, allies, or fauourites, in his behalfe attempted the infringing of the said Acts, which were agreed and confirmed by their oathes.

The Duke of Yorke having by these mennes gotten the government of the kings person, and of all his dominions into his hands, dispatched his letters into Scotland in the kings name, requiring the Queene, the Dukes of Somerset and of Exeter, the Earle of Devonshire, the Lords *Clifford* and *Rosse*, and such other great men as were fled, and remained in that kingdome, to repaire with all expedition to the kings presence. But they all not onely refused to obey this peremptory command, but with an Armie of eigh- teene thousand Englishmen & Scots they marched boldly towards the kings Court.

Whereupon the Duke of Yorke, with his younger sonne the Earle of Rutland, and the Earle of Salisbury, leaving the king in the custodie of the Duke of Norfolk, & of the Earle of Warwick, and being accompanied with no more than five thousand men, directed his iourney towards the Queene, and met her neere to the Towne of Wakefield, where no perswasions or good aduice could preuaile, but the Duke of Yorke, who euery houre expected the approach of *Edward* Earle of March, his eldest sonne, with a strong Armie, would forthwith fight; which vnforgunately hee did: for in lesser time than the space of one houre, himselfe, with almost three thousand of his company were slaine; and his younger sonne, *Edmund* Earle of Rutland, being but twelue years old, kneeling vpon his knees, and desiring mercie, was cruelly and wickedly stabbed to the heart by the Lord *Clifford*, who horribly did sweare, that by that act hee would be reuenged for his fathers death. And the rest of that small Armie being discomfited, confusedly ranne away, and saved themselves by flight.

The Queene, who had taken the Earle of Salisbury prisoner, caused his head to bee stricken off, and executed many others, all whose heads (to despight the Yorkist Faction) shee caused to be set vpon the Walls of the Citie of Yorke. Which reuengefull deed not long after was requited by the ruine and destruction of the King, the Queene, the young Prince, and of the greater number of such as fauoured and assisted the house of Lancaster, and opposed themselves against the rightfull and iust claime of the Duke of Yorke, as hereafter we shall heare.

4

The Lords in Scotland refuse to come to the Duke of Yorke.

They come on with a great Armie.

They are encountered.

The battails of Wakefield. Haste made waste.

The Duke of Yorke overthrown and slaine. A bloody fild.

The Earle of Salisbury beheaded.

The

The new
Duke of
York's
Archie.

Owen Tu-
shar be-
died.

The Queens
Archie pre-
miled.

The King is
enlarged.

The Queens
Archie of
60000. men.
The Duke of
York's Ar-
chie of 49000.
men.

Towton field.
36000. En-
glishmen
slaine.

The Dukes
villages.

Barwicke de-
livered to
the King of
Scots.

Execution.

The new and braue Duke of York being informed of this ouerthrow, and of his fathers death, augmented his Armie, which was but small, and consisted only of three thousand men, with which he fought with the kings halfe-brother *Jasper* Earle of Pembroke, *Owen Tushar* his father, *James Butler* Earle of Ormond & of Wiltshire, and their companies. And almost at their first encounter those two Earles fled, foure thousand of their friends were slaine, many others were taken prisoners, and among them *Owen Tushar* (father-in-law to king *Henry*) was one, who with some others were incontinently put to death. But the Queens Armie neere about that time hauing fought with the Duke of Norfolk and all his forces, compelled them to flye, & to leaue king *Henry* behinde them, whereat she conceined much ioy.

This victory at the first made her insolent and proud: but when she vnderstood how well the young Duke of Yorke had preuailed, and that his Army was now winged with the Earle of Warwicks Regiments and Companies, she with her adherents retired backe into the Northerne parts of this Realme, and raised a huge Armie of threescore thousand men: and neere vnto a Towne called Towton, *Edward* Duke of York, the noble & victorious *Richard* Earle of Warwicke, and almost nine and forty thousand men, met with the Queens Armie, where they fought a cruell and a fierce battaile, in which more than sixe and thirte thousand Englishmen were slaine; among which were the Earles of Northumberland & of Westmerland, the Lords *Dacres*, *Welles* and *Clifford*, Sir *John Neuill*, *Andrew Trollop* and many others. The two Dukes of Somerset and of Exeter saued themselves by flight: but the Earle of Deuonshire with sundry moe were taken prisoners.

The King and the Queene, with Prince *Edward* their onely son, fled to the Castle of Barwicke, & from thence into Scotland, where they were courteously receiued and friendly entertained by the young king.

In recompence of which fauours, and in hope of future assistance, king *Henry* deliuered vnto him the Castle and Towne of Barwicke, which the Scots not only much desired, but with exceeding great losse and detriment had oftentimes (but still in vaine) attempted to make their owne.

This victory being thus happily obtained, the Duke of Yorke rode triumphantly to the Citie of Yorke, from whose Walls hee tooke the heads of his deceased father, and of his friends: and causing the Earle of Deuonshire and some others to be executed, he set vp their heads in the same places.

King

King *Henrie* being hopelesse of all other helpe & assistance, sent the *Queene* his wife, and the young Prince their sonne, to her father *Keyser*, the Titularie King of Sicilia, Naples, and of Ierusalem, praying to vse his best endeuours & diligence to procure him aide and succour from the French King. And in the, meane time he himselfe remained in Scotland, patiently expecting the euent of his future Fortunes.

*The Duke of
Yorke com-
meth trium-
phantly into
London.*



E c

THE

PLATE I

King Henry VIII. of England, who was the first of the
the House of Tudor, was born at Greenwich, London, on the 28th
of January, 1509. He was the first of a new race of Kings, and
praying to visit his father's tomb, he was the first of a new
race and the first of a new King. He was the first of a new
dynasty, the first of a new race, the first of a new King.



PLATE II



THE HISTORIE OF KING EDWARD THE FOURTH.



EDWARD Duke of Yorke hauing overthrowne the King and Queene, and hauing slaine and executed many of his greatest enemies at Towton Field, returned triumphantly to the Citie of London, and was proclaymed king of this Realme the fourth day of March, and was crowned the nineteenth day of Iune then next following.

In the beginning of his Reigne he removed from all Offices all such as were voyced to be the oppressors of his people, and carefully provided that all things might bee ordered well for their comoditie & profit. And in his high Court of Parliament many things were established & enacted for the peace & welfare of the Commonweale. And the former Statutes which had bin made by the last king (and especially those and his adherents of High Treason) were defaced, cancelled, and made void. The Earle of Oxford, & Sir Ambrey were his first Counsellors, and other Counsellors to King Henry the Sixth, being straitened of sundry reasenable practices, lost their heads.

And to strengthen his party with powerfull and with faithfull friends, he created his two brothers, *Edward Duke of Clarence*, and *Richard Duke of Gloucester*, and Sir *John de Neill*, brother to the Earle

Et c.

1461.

I.

Edward the Fourth proclaimed and crowned King.

A Parliament.

Acts for treason repealed.

Execution.

Lords crowned.

of Warwick, he created Lord *Montacute*: & *Henrie Bourchier* (who had married the Ladie *Elizabeth*, Aunt vnto the King, and was brother vnto *Thomas Bourchier* Archbishop of *Canterburie*) was created Earle of *Essex*: and *William Lord Fauconbridge* was made Earle of *Kent*.

1462.

2.

Some of the Kings enemies submit themselves, but afterwards doe renolt.

The Queen landeth, and flyeth into Scotland.

The Queen rayseth a new Armie.

The Kings resolution.

The Lord Montacutes braue victory.

The Lord Montacute setteth on the Queens Armie.
Exhamfiel &

The Duke of *Somerset*, *Sir Ralph Perce*, and diuers others, being the Kings indetermied enemies, perceiving this settlement of the State, and finding no hope for reliefe, but onely in the Kings grace and mercie, voluntarily and humbly submitted themselves to his Highnesse; whereupon they receiued his pardon, and were entertained with his loue. *Queene Margarete* (who with the Prince her sonne was abiding in France) by her fathers meanes procured from the French King certaine ships, and an aide of five hundred men, with which she arriued safely in England at Tyne in the North Country. But her successe was vnfortunate: for by the Kings friends foure hundred of them were taken prisoners, and ransomed, and the rest were slaine: and the Queene her selfe fled, and with much difficultie went into Scotland, where shee found such fauour and such friendship, that many a lustie Scot accompanied her, the King, and the Prince their sonne, to the Castle of *Barwick*, where she left her son, and with the King began once more to leuy a strong Armie in *Northumberland*, and in the Bishopricke of *Durham*; whereof when the Kings reconciled enemies, the Duke of *Somerset*, *Sir Ralph Perce*, and some others had intelligence, they treacherously flanke away, and came vnto the Queens aide.

Now when King *Edward* perceiued, that neither his estate nor his succession could be established without blood, he sent a gallant and a strong Fleet of ships well furnished into the Northern Seas: and raising a puissant Armie, hee sent the Lord *Montacute* with some part thereof before him, and with the rest he himselfe speedily followed after. The said Lord boldly seeking adventures, and longing much to make himselfe famous by his valour, courageously did set vpon the Lords *Hungerford* and *Ross*, and vpon *Sir Ralph Perce* and their troupes. These Nobles (in the beginning of the fight) fearing their owne shadowes, quickly ran away: but *Sir Ralph Perce* and some others (preferring an honorable death before a cowardly and a shamefull flight) discomfited their harkes, fought stoutly, and were slaine like valiant men of warre.

From this victorie the Lord *Montacute* (with much confidence and true magnanimitie) marched towards the King and Queens Armie, and met with them in *Exhamshire*. Many prouocations he vied

used to dare them to the fight, whereof they seemed to take no notice: whereupon he furiously pressed them in their owne Campe, so that despaire depriving them of all good hope, except they fought like men, they confronted their assailants with such courage, that nothing (for a while) was more vncertaine, than vnto whom the honour and victorie of that day would fall. But in the end the Lord *Montacute* determining to enlarge his fame with the hazzard of his life, before king *Edward* should enter into the field to succour him, rushed with such violence into the kings battaile, that he disordered it wholly in a moment.

Then blowes were exchanged (with desperate resolution) on both sides; and either partie fought in bloud. But in the end the Kings Armie was discomfited and overthrowne, and such as were vassaine, fled. But in the pursuitt there were taken these prisoners, *Henry* Duke of Somerset, *William Taylboys* (who entailed himselfe Earle of Kent) the Lords *Roos*, *Malynes*, and *Hungerford*, Sir *Henry Neuil*, Sir *Thomas Wentworth*, and Sir *Richard Tunsall*: all which were beheaded in sundry places, and seven and twentie others suffered the like executions shortly after. But King *Henry* with fast riding escaped into Scotland: so did his halfe brother *Jasper* Earle of Pembroke, Sir *Ralph Grey*, and some others. And king *Edward* when he came forth with his Armie, and vnderstood perfectly what was done, humbly thanked Almighty God, and then praised the Lord *Montacute* and all his followers for this honourable and great victorie: and with part of his Armie he sent the Earle of Warwick and the Lord *Montacute*, *Fawconbridge*, and *Scrope* into Northumberland, for the reconery of such Forts & Castles as were detained and kept from him: where they wonne the Castles of Alnewike & *Dustanburgh*, with the Castle of *Bambrough*, in which was Captaine Sir *Ralph Grey*, who had formerly sworne his seruice to king *Edward*. Him they beheaded, when they had degraded him from the honour of knighthood, by hewing off his spurs, renting in pieces of his Coat of Armes, and breaking his sword over his head. The king, to despight the Earle of Northumberland, who fought against him, dignified the Lord *Montacute* with his Title, and gaue the Earldome of Pembroke from *Jasper Tuther* vnto *William Lord Herbert*. But within few daies after, the said late Earle of Northumberland in all submissive manner reconciled himselfe to the kings fauour, and was by him restored to his possessions and estate. And lest hee should disgrace and wrong the Lord *Montacute*, by taking from him so quickly that dignitie which so lately for his great seruice he had bestowed on him,

Ee 3

*The King and
Queene are
overthrowne.
Great Pri-
soners taken.*

*A terrible
execution.*

*An Armie
sent into the
North.*

*Sir Ralph
Grey degra-
ded and exe-
cuted.*

he

The Lord
Montacute
is created
Marquesse
Montacute.

1463

3

Captaines
and souldiers
rewarded.

The Kings
care of his
Common-
weale.

He pardoneth
offenders.
He fortifieth

King Henry
is taken and
imprisoned.

The King in-
tendeth to
marry.

The Earle of
Warwicke
obtaineth the
Duke of Sa-
uoyes daugh-
ter.

he created him Marquesse *Montacute*, and gaue him full contentment in that behalfe.

After this victorie was thus obtained, the king bestowed many rich and princely gifts vpon his Lords and Gentlemen, which serued him faithfully and valiantly in his warres: and with such familiaritie and kindenesse demeaned himselfe among them, that they were confidently assured of his loue. He also shared and diuided the lands and goods of his slaine enemies among his souldiers, and wonne their hearts by his great bountie. He augmented some of his coynes of siluer, and of gold; and with new stampes and inscriptions he minted others. Hee published sundry proiects, and effected them for the commoditie and welfare of his people. Hee pardoned such as had borne Armes against him in the field, or elsewhere, vpon their humble submission and contrition for their offence. He builded strong Forts, Castles, Rampiers, and Bulwarkes, vpon the Sea-coasts, to prohibite his enemies landing within this Kingdome. And on the maine land hee did the like, to hinder all traiterous Rebels from collecting of new forces to do him harme.

And whilest king *Edward* was thus disposing of his affaires, and ordering the busineses of the Common-weale, king *Henry*, who in a disguised fashion (for some secret purpose) was travelling towards London, was taken in the North, and brought vnto king *Edward*, who committed him to a strait imprisonment within the Tower of London. And when he had settled and ordered his estate and kingdome, because hee was young and lustie, about the age of foure and twentie yeares, hee was entreated by his Councell and Nobilitie, to consider of his succession, and to take a wife, whereunto he willingly gaue consent. There were nominated vnto him the Ladie *Margaret*, sister to the King of Scots, and *Elizabeth* the sister and heire apparant to *Henry* King of Castile. But the former of those two was thought to be vnfit, because she was continually diseased and infirme. The latter also was not liked, because shee was not seuen yeares old. But the Ladie *Bona*, daughter to *Lewis* Duke of Sauoy, and sister to Queene *Carlot*, the wife of king *Lewis* the Eleuenth of France, was most of all desired. And for that purpose the kings best friend, *Richard Neuil* Earle of Warwicke, was sent Ambassadour into France, with an honorable traine, where (in the behalfe of the king) he wonne his sute, and with much ioy on all parts obtained his request. But in his absence, the king (as hee hunted in Wich-wood neere to Stony-Stratford) came (for his repose) into the Lordship and Manour of Grafton, where the Lady *Jaquet* (daughter to *Peter* of Luxenburgh, late Earle of *S. Paul*, and some-

sometimes the widow of *John* the renowned Duke of Bedford and wife to Sir *Richard Woodville* Lord *Ryuers*) then lay : vpon whom there attended her daughter, the faire and fresh Ladie *Elizabeth*, the widow of Sir *John Grey*, who was slaine as he fought for king *Henry* at *S. Albons* in the last year of his reigne. This Ladie was on the sudden so liked, so loued, so fawned and doated on by the lustie and young king, that (for dalliance sake) hee resolved to make her his wanton play-fellow if he might. But her constant modesty and amorous denials repulsing him from his vnchaste hopes, he (to obtaine the fruits of his desires) without any further delay, aduice, or counsell, tooke her to his wife ; and created the Lord *Ryuers*, her father, Earle *Ryuers*, and made him high Constable of England. Her brother *Anthony* (whom he had made Lord *Anthony*) was by his procurement married to the sole and onely daughter and heire of *Thomas* Lord *Scales*, and was in her right dignified with that honour. Her son, Sir *Thomas Grey*, was created Marquesse *Dorset*, and was (by the kings motion) married to the Lady *Cicilia*, the only daughter and heire to the Lord *Bonnyle* and of *Harrington*.

And though this his marriage with the Queene were pleasing for a time, yet was it most vnhappy and vntfortunate in the end. For it occasioned his expulsion out of this Realme. Secondly, the deaths of his true friend *Richard* the most eminent and valorous Earle of *Warwicke*, and of the Marquesse *Montacute*, his brother. Thirdly, the slaughter and execution, and the murdering of many Nobles, Gentlemen, and braue souldiers. Fourthly, the destruction of the kings two sons, and almost the vtter ruine and destruction of the Queenes kindred, and of her bloud, as hereafter in this Historie it shall appeare.

When the sudden newes of king *Edwards* hastie marriage was published in France, euery person whom it concerned was highly displeased at this trumpe which thereby he gaue to his worthiest and dearest friend the Earle of *Warwick* : and the Earle himselfe (by reason thereof) conceiued such an inward hatred against the King, that in his heart he resolved (when time should serue) to depole him if he might : yet notwithstanding he made faire weather, and at his returne seemed rather to make sport at his own disgrace, than to take any discontented notice of it.

The king also (who chiefly by this Earle was seated and settled in his Throne) endeouored secretly to abridge him of his authority and power, because hee feared lest his greatnesse might doe him harme. And the Earle, although hee staid a while at the Court after his returne out of France, yet as long as he remained there

The King in
his absence
marrieth the
Ladie *Eliza-
beth Grey*.

Creation of
Lords.

Enill effects
of the Kings
marriage.

1
2
3
4
5

1464.

The Earle of
Warwick
hateth the
King.

He dissem-
bleth for a
time.

The Lady
Elizabeth
borne.

1465.

5

A Truce with
the Scots.

English Sheepe
sent to the
Kings of Ca-
stille, and of
Arragon.

1466.

6

The Duke of
Burgoyne
marrieth the
Kings Sister.

1467.

7

The Mar-
quesse of Mon-
tacute, was
still a secret
friend to king
Edward.

The Duke of
Clarence ioy-
neth with the
Earle of War-
wicke against
his brother
the King.

there, he imagined that he stood on thornes. Wherefore hee asked leaue of the king to depart vnto his Castle of Warwick for his repose, and for recreations sake: But being come thither, his head was busied with new proiects, and all his thoughts were employed, how, and by what meanes hee might subdue and depose the King. And at this time was borne the Ladie Elizabeth: who was afterwards the wife of King Henrie the Seuenth, and mother vnto king Henry the Eight.

The king (purposing to gaine the loue of forraign Princes, that by meanes thereof, hee might with the more securitie defend himselfe against Lewis the French king, who threatned to be reuenged for the iniurie which by King Edwards marriage was done to him, and to the sister of his Queene) concluded a Truce for fiftene years with the king of Scots: Notwithstanding that (by the deliuey of the Queene Margaret) hee detained from him his strong Castle of Barwicke. He also sent vnto Henrie King of Castiell, and vnto John King of Arragon many Cotshall Sheepe, which neuer before vpon any entreatie, or request, they, nor any other Prince could obtaine. From which Sheepe, such a multitude haue encreased, that it hath since turned to the vnspeakeable preiudice, and hurt of this Kingdome and Common-weale.

The king also (contrarie to the opinion, and good liking of the Earle of Warwicke) contracted and afterwards married his Sister the Lady Margaret vnto Charles the Duke of Burgoyne, as formerly hee had done two other of his sisters, to the Dukes of Exeter and of Suffolke. The Earle of Warwicke (who secretly thirsted for reuenge; and thought the time to bee long before he had restored king Henry the sixt to his libertie, and Crowne) by faire promises, and insinuating perswasions, wonne his two brothers, the Archbishop of Yorke, and the Marquesse Montacute, to take his part. But the Marquesse (who was exceeding hardly induced to giue his consent to so ill an intended action) performed all things with an vnwilling minde: which in the end turned to his owne ruine, and to the destruction of his brethren. The Earle likewise (beeing right well assured, that the kings brother George Duke of Clarence secretly enuied the king, because hee had preferred Anthonie the Queenes brother in marriage with the sole daughter and heire of the Lord Scales; and Sir Thomas Grey her Sonne, in marriage with the sole daughter and heire of the Lord Bonnile and Harrington; and the Lord Hastings, to the sole daughter and heire of the Lord Hungerford, and was carelesse of his aduancement by such a match) watched a fit opportunity to complaine to the Duke of Clarence of

of the kings sullen vngratefullnesse towards him. Why, quoth the Duke, can you (my Lord) think that the king will bee thankfull to his friend, who is too vnkinde to his owne brethren? Thinke you that friendship or good deserts, can worke in him more vertuous effects, than nature hath afforded him? Is hee not now so highly mounted, that he vouchsafeth not to cast downe an eye vpon such as are of his owne blood? Nay, who lay in his owne Mothers wombe? Are not the allies and kinsfolkes of his Wife preferred by him to all Promotions, Dignities, Offices, and good places? And are not his owne brothers, and his truest friends (who haue fought in many assaults, skirmishes and battailes, to make him a Soueraigne King) neglected, vnrewarded, and vncourteously shaken off? Were my brother of Glocester of mine humour and disposition (my Lord) we would (with your assistance and aide) make him to know himselfe better, and to set a difference betwixt his ancient and truly dignified Nobilitie, and such new Gentlemen, as vnworthily doe rule and gouerne all, to our dishonour and reproach.

The Earle of Warwick (finding the Duke of Clarence thus tractable, and inclining to his humour) consulted with him oftentimes, touching this businesse. And to tye him vnto himselfe by a fast bond of friendship and of loue, He offered to him in marriage one of his daughters, who was named *Isabel*, with halfe the inheritance of his wife. Whereof the Duke in all kindly and friendly sort accepted.

And thereupon the plot was contriued thus. The Earle himself, with the Duke of Clarence, would goe vnto Callice, where the yong Ladie (who was there) should be married. And (in their absence) as if it hapned without their knowledge or consent; the Earles two brothers, the Archbishop of Yorke, and the Marquesse *Montacute*, were appointed with their friends, to raise a Rebellion in the Countie of Yorke. And this proiect was put into Execution in this manner.

The Husbandmen of Yorkshire (by an ancient custome) in the end of Haruest, vsed yearely to giue a certaine quantitie of Corne and Graine, towards the maintenance and reliefe of diuers poore people, who liued in the Hospitall of Saint *Leonard* within the Citie of Yorke. Now, the Earles friends, scandalously, and falsly reported in the Countie thereabout: That the said poore people were not reliued by the said Almes; but that the Gouernour and Priests of the said Hospitall, enriched and fattened themselves therewith. So (when the Proctors, according to their wonted fashion,

*The plot is
strengthened
by a marriage.*

*The plot a-
gainst King
Edward.*

*The cause of
the Rebellion.*

came

*This was done
by him, in
fauour of the
King: as it
seemes after-
wards.*

*Sir Iohn
Conyers cap-
taine of the
Rebels.*

*The Lord
Stafford
overthrowne.*

*The King
overthrowne.*

came abroad, to collect the peoples deuotion in that kinde; they were shrewdly beaten by the Rustickes, and mis-used beyonde measure. Hereupon, many Religious and well disposed people tooke part with the Proctors, and with rough words and some blowes, they requited the iniurie which was done vnto them. From this beginning, sprang forth a dangerous Insurrection: So that (within few dayes) there were vp in Armes, more than fiftene thousand men. Who (with their Ring-leaders) came proudly before the Citie of Yorke, and (with vnciuill and rude tearmes) they threatned the ruine and destruction of it. But (in the darknesse of the night) the Marques *Montacute*, beeing accompanied with many lustie and braue men, set vpon the Rebels, slew many hundreds of them: and strake off the Captaines head; and strongly fortified that Citie.

When the king (who was truely informed of this Rebellion) was told this newes, hee rested doubtfull whether his old friend the Marques had done this seruice, to make an amends for his reuolt, or else to colour his ill intendements thereby. The Rebels (who still encreased) perceiuing that they should lose their labour to linger about the Towne, left the Citie, and marched towards London, being then conducted by *Sir Iohn Conyers*, a worthy and a valiant Knight.

The King (being hereof aduertised) commanded the Lord *William Herbert* Earle of Pembroke, and *Humfrey* Lord *Stafford* of Southweeke (who was nominated in hope of future good seruice, but not indeede created, Earle of Deuonshire) to leuie a strong power in Wales, and with all expedition to fight with the Rebels: And he himselte promised to assist them with a faire Armie.

These Lords, with eight or nine thousand men, right well ordered and appointed, marched towards these Rebels: And (as they drew neere to Northampton) they vnderstood that they were not farre off. Whereupon the Lord *Stafford*, and *Sir Richard Herbert* (a valiant Knight, and brother to the Earle of Pembroke) taking with them out of the whole Armie, two thousand strong & skilful Archers, plotted a secret ambush, to take a view of the Northren Rebels as they passed by, but as soone as they were gone beyond them, these Archers rushed violently vpon their Rereward. But the Rebels (who were nimble, and well ordered by their carefull Generall) turned about, stucke to their tacklings, and with their greater numbers, slew most of those Welchmen; and the rest fled hastily to their owne Campe.

And the next night by reason of an vkind diuision which hap-
ned

ned betwixt the Lord *Stafford* and the Earle of *Pembroke*, who at *Banburie* remoued him from a common *Inne*, where hee vsed to lodge with an vnchaste Queene, the Lord *Stafford* with his Archers departed from the Armie, and left them to their fortunes among their foes.

This froward slinking away nothing at all dismaied the noble Earle, though (as he had iust cause) he were much displeased thereat; but made him to resolue with the more alacritie and courage to set vpon the Rebels, with whom he fought the next day, and with his Welchmen saw many tokens of victorie neere at hand.

But suddenly a Gentleman named *John Clapham*, and seruant to the Earle of *Warwicke*, hauing his Masters Banner with the white Beare, trouped towards the battaile with five hundred men, who were by him collected of the off skumme of the rascall and basest sort of the inhabitants of the Towne of *Northampton*, and of the villages thereabout. All these presenting themselves as farre off, and aduancing their Standard, and crying, *A Warwicke, A Warwicke*, so incredibly daunted and confounded the Welchmen, who supposed that the Earle of *Warwick* was come thither with another Armie, that they began to flye, and were on the sudden ouerthrowne, and more than five thousand of them were slaine. And *Sir Richard Herbert* and eight others being taken prisoners, were beheaded at *Banburie* by the Rebels.

This fortunate successe animated sundry lewd and ill disposed people of *Northamptonshire* to enter into new broiles, inso much that they (making a notorious Rascall, named *Robin of Riddisdale*, their Captaine) entred into the Manour of *Grafton*, where they apprehended the Earle *Ryvers*, whom they loued not, and *Sir John* his sonne, carried them to *Northampton*, and without questioning with them, or any legall proceeding, smote off their heads. And the Lord *Stafford*, being by the kings directions taken at *Brentmarsh* in *Somersetshire*, was caried to *Bridgewater*, & was there executed, because he treacherously departed with his companies from the Earle of *Pembroke*, as formerly we haue heard.

The king (notwithstanding these troubles) was so full of courage and heroicall magnanimitie, that hee was not any thing at all dismayed with any crosse or ill newes, but marched confidently with his Armie against the Northerne Rebels, to whom the Earle of *Warwick* had ioyned himselfe with a great power; and likewise the Duke of *Clarence* brought all his forces to the Earle: so that now a seasonable expectation of vnchristian crueltie disquieted the vast and great body of the Common-weale. But to prevent that mischief

Banburie field.

A policie.

The Kings forces are ouerthrowne, 5000. men slaine.

The Queenes father is beheaded by the Rebels.

The Lord Stafford beheaded.

The King marcheth towards the Rebels.

The Duke of Clarence and the Earle of Warwicke do ioyn with the Rebels.

*A parly for
peace.*

*This parly
made the
King too se-
cure.
The King is
taken in his
Bed.*

*He is sent
Prisoner to
the Archbi-
shop of York.*

*The King e-
scapeth.*

*The King
commeth to
London.*

mischiefe, many of the Nobilitie endeuoured day and night, to mediate, and to conclude a Peace : so that Letters were written from the one part, to the other : Herald of Armes were sent, and the word of Peace was so pleasing to them all, that euery circumstance seemed to giue warrant that all things should bee qualified, and set in tune.

By meanes of this parlee, King *Edward* became more carelesse of himselfe, & of his charge than was fitting. Whereof, when the Earle of Warwicke was informed, he resolued (though disloyally, and dishonestly) to make an aduantage thereby vnto himselfe : So that in the midit of the night, when securitie suspected none euill, the said Earle, being accompanied with many of his friends, well armed, and thorowly appointed, rushed into the Kings Campe, slew his Watches, and rooke him in his Bed, and (as secretly as he could) he sent him as a Prisoner to the castle of Middleham in Yorkshire, there to be safely kept by the Archbishop his brother ; who either repenting what hee had done against the King, or beeing wonne by large promises of great fauour, and good rewards, suffered him (with his Garders) to hunt and to hawke at his pleasure. By meanes whereof, fit opportunitie for a rescue was giuen to Sir *William Stanley*, Sir *Thomas Burgh*, and some others of his faithful friends, who not onely did set him free, but also by their carefull helpe, and assistance, conueyed him from place to place, vntill the Earle of Warwicke was certainly informed, that he was within the Citie of London.

This his deliuerance much encumbred the said Earle, the Duke of Clarence and their confederates, with new troubles, and daily consultations, what course was fittest for them to take. For they had dissolued their Armie, and permitted the kings to depart from them vntouched, when he was taken, supposing that by his Captiuitie there had bin a finall end of all those Ciuill wars.

But at length, they resolued to raise another Army vnder colour of some Rebellion in the North, and the King (on his part) was determined by one meanes or other, to make them better minded, and more dutifull: or else to roote them and their posteritie out of the Land.

Thus, whilest all things were in a combustion, and nothing but Ciuill warre was threatned in euery place : the Common Lawes were neglected, Iustice was laid asleepe, Robberies and Oppressions were too too rife : and open violence (without correction) was practised vpon the weaker sort. The Lords and Gentlemen of the Land, once more endeuoured to procure the King to his Bed, and vpon

and vpon solemne oathes receiued for a quiet and friendly enter-
uiew, the King and the confederated Lords met kindly in the
great Hall at Westminster, where the obiections of good deserts &
of vnthankfull requitals, were with such proud and bitter words
repeated, and maintained by the Earle of Warwicke, that in a great
furie they all departed one from another. Whereupon the King
went to Canterbury, & the confederated Lords into Lincolnshire,
where they raised an Armie, of which they made Captaine Sir
Robert Welles, sonne and heire apparant to the Lord *Welles*, because
hee was a man right valiant, and of good direction and iudgement
in the Art of War. The king (who was inwardly vexed with this
new preparation) was by necessity enforced to leuie another Army;
which when he had done, he sent for the Lord *Welles*, who with his
brother-in-law Sir *Thomas Dymocke*, comming towards the king,
took Sanctuary at Westminster, because their hearts failed them to
go forward, for that they heard that the king was exceeding angry.
But vpon the kings solemne word and promise that no wrong
should be done vnto them, they came into his presence, & were by
him required to command the Knight to desist from his rebellious
purpose, and to repaire to the kings Armie for his seruice: and
they accordingly took much paine and trauell to that purpose. But
as the king marched forth towards the Rebels, he was informed,
that the said Sir *Robert Welles* was resolved to perscuere in that
action: whereat the king was so exceedingly enraged, and so for-
getfull of his princely promise, that in his vnaduised furie he cau-
sed the heads of the said Lord and Knight to bee smitten off; for
which cruelty he was euilly spoken of by many Nobles and inferi-
our men, who otherwise wished him good successe in all his affaires
and actions.

When both these Armies had pitched themselues neere to each
other, Sir *Robert Welles* for a while doubted whether hee should be-
gin the fight, or stay till the repaire of the confederated Lords,
who were within a daies iourney of him with an Armie. But in the
end, deepe harrted to reuenge his Fathers and his Vncles deaths,
and an ardent desire which inflamed his heart, with a small num-
ber to win much honour, bred in him a constant resolution to be-
gin the fight, which forthwith hee did, and for a long time main-
tained it with great discretion and true valour. But the kings
numbers being farre the greater, so tyred out their Rebels by their
fresh supplies, that they began to flye, and the king by violent pur-
sue followed after, vntill he clearly wonne the honour of that day.
This morning was called the battail of Loose-coates, because the

FF

Rebels

*An enter-
uiew.**The party
broken off.
An Armie
raised by the
Lords.**An Armie
raised by the
King.**A cruel deed**The Rebels a-
part browne.**The battail
of Loose-coates*

10000. men
slaine.

Execution.

1469.

9.

Clarence and
Warwicke
doe flye from
their Army,
and come be-
fore Callice.

Warwicke is
exceedingly
beloued by the
common peo-
ple.

Warwicke is
ennied by the
Duke of Bur-
goine.

1

2

3

Clarence and
Warwicke
beaten off at
Callice.

The Duchesse
deliuered of a
sonne in the
ship.

Monsieur de
Vaucor
made Captain
of Callice.

A pension is
giuen him.

Rebels threw off their coates, that they might thereby make them-
selues more actiue and more nimble to runne away. In this battaile
were slaine aboute 10000. men. And Sir Robert Welles, with some o-
thers of good account, being taken prisoners, lost their heads.

The Duke of Clarence & the Earle of Warwick being informed
of this mishap, although they were guarded with a huge Army of
desperate and wilfull people, yet fearing lest this ouerthrow would
make them faint-hearted, mutable, and vnconstant, they left their
charge, and secretly fled to the City of Exeter, and from thence to
Dartmouth, where they shipped themselves, and came before Cal-
lice with their friends. The king was much grieved, because they
had not been slaine, or taken; but especially the safety of the Earle
of Warwicke perplexed his minde, because he knew him to be ex-
ceeding gracious & in much fauour with the common people, who
indeed were perswaded, that the Sun shined not cleare any where,
but where he was; and that they could not miscarry in any danger
if he himselfe were present.

Now to preuent his future landing in England with a forraine
power, the king by his letters intreated his brother in law Charles
Duke of Burgoine, to prohibite his subjects and his friends from gi-
uing to the said Earle any aide, helpe, or succour, and with a Nauie
to surprise him. The Duke willingly consented to the kings re-
quest: First, because the said Earle opposed himselfe against his
marriage with the Ladie Margaret the kings sister. Secondly, be-
cause the said Earle loued Lewis the French king, whom the Duke
mortally hated. And lastly, because the Earle was so generally belo-
ued of the English Nation, that when he was at home, hee clipped
the wings of the kings authority in his owne Kingdome.

When the Duke of Clarence & the Earle of Warwick came be-
fore Callice, hauing their wiues and many other Ladies & Gentle-
women with them, in stead of friendly entertainment, the Earles
vnkinde Deputy, Monsieur de Vaucor, kept their ships off with the
great Ordnance of the Castle. And though the Duchesse was in
ship-boord deliuered of a sonne, yet would hee not permit that it
should bee landed or Christned there; neyther would hee affoord
any thing needfull and necessary in that extremity to the said di-
stressed Lady. The king tooke so much ioy to heare of this good
newes, that forthwith by his Letters Patents, he granted the
chiefe Captainship of that place to the said Deputy. And the
Duke of Burgoine so thanked him, that he gaue him an yearly pen-
sion of one thousand Crowns. Yet for all this Monsieur de Vaucor
was so vnconstant in all his dealings towards the king, that he ad-
vised

used the said Earle to direct his course to the king of France, and promised to yeeld vnto him a good account for Callice, when time and opportunity should it require. This counsell gaue some hope & contentment to the Earle, who intending to do as he directed, lanchd his ships into the sea; where he met with diuers of the Duke of Burgoyne's subjects, fully loaden with great variety of rich merchandises of all sorts, all which he rifled and rooke away, & landed at the Towne of Deepe: and from thence (by the French kings invitation) they came to the Castle of Amboys, which standeth vpon the river of Loier, where he met them, receiued them cheerefully, feasted them with great bounty, supplied their present wants; and faithfully promised to aide and to assist them (when time should serue) with his best meanes: all which he did, nor in regard of any grōunded love towards them, but because he knew them to be enemies to his enemies, king Edward and the Duke of Burgoyne. Queen Mary and Prince Edward her sonne, together with Iussar some times Earle of Pembroke, and some others, who with him had broken prison in England, & were fled into France, vnderstanding that the Duke of Clarence, the Earle of Warwick, & others of their friends, were friendly entertained in the French Court, repaired to them; where they entred into new conferences and communications for the restoring of king Henry to his Crowne and Kingdome, and solemnly rooke their oathes, neuer voluntarily to leaue each other, untill they had done their best to effect the same. And the Earle of Warwick (to make his own part the stronger) gaue his second daughter in marriage to Prince Edward; whereof when the Duke of Clarence had deliberately considered, and thought what might be the sequell of this businesse, hee evidently foresaw, that this marriage and their newly intended warres would bee the vrier confusion of him and of the whole family and house of Yorke. For kings doe alwayes looke with a ialous eye vpon all such as by any possibility may lay any leuell towards their Crown. This consideration (not without good cause) made him very distrustfull of his owne fortunes. And to prevent a great mischicfe, which (as hee thought) began to threaten him and his estate, his liue & his heart began forcibly to forsake the Earle of Warwick and that Faction, in so much that hee gaue private intelligence to his Brother king Edward, that at their landing within the Kingdome of England, he would bee but a faire and a weak enemy in those affaires. Thus when those Lords had concluded to returne, they were with all expedition well furnished with men, munition, money, ships, and all things fitting. By the French kings invitation of Iussar they

The Earle of Warwick taketh the Duke of Burgoyne's subjects at Sea. The French King is gracious to the Lords.

New plotting against K. Edward.

Prince Edward married to Warwick's second daughter. This marriage maketh Clarence a secret enemy to Warwick.

Clarence his message to the King.

The Lords presse forth for England.

The Burgundians drowned.

The Lords doe land at Dartmouth.

The King was too secure.

Warwicks Proclamation.

He hath a huge Armie.

But being in a readinesse to passe out of the River of Seyne, the Burgundians met them with a strong Fleet at the mouth of that River, and purposed to defeat them if they might. But an evening storme approaching with vnwonted rage and furie, compelled the Burgundians to runne into the Sea, where many of them were drowned, some were driuen into Scotland, and the rest, being all dispersed, laboured and toiled hardly to saue themselves.

The Earle of Warwicke, who by letters some few daies before receiued from his friends, was certified that his landing was hourly expected, and sufficient strength provided to backe him and his, although they came destitute of all other helpes and succours, determined to lose no time: but making a present benefit to himselfe and his of the Burgundians mishap and hard fortune, and leaving the Queene and the Prince her sonne behinde him, the next morning entered into the Sea, and with much speede and safety he landed with all his companies and friends at Dartmouth in Devonshire; from whence hee gaue speedy notice of his arrivall to his dearest and nearest friends.

The king so much relied vpon the bold seruice intended by the Burgundians Fleete, and not knowing what shipwracke and damage it had receiued, made no preparation at all, eyther to withstand their arrivall, or to encounter them after they were landed: but hawked, hunted, and solaced himselfe (according to his humour and wonted fashion) in the societic and company of young Ladies and faire maidens, to whom his affections were more obliged than to the wars.

But the Earle of Warwicke marshalled his small company in good order, and by publike Proclamations which he made in King *Henries* name, hee required all men to repaire vnto his aide, with money, victuall, armour, and all things needfull for that purpose, and valiantly to fight against the Duke of Yorke, who (as hee affirmed) by mere vsurpation and bloody tyrannie, vntuly and falsly called himselfe King. This politicke practice within few dayes increased his small companies to a huge Armie, with which they marched towards London.

And such were the quicke endeouours, and so industrious was King *Edward*, (who was compelled by necessity to make prouision for his owne safety) that hee leuied a strong Armie, and went forth with a high courage, and with Princely valour, against the Rebels of his Country. But being informed, that all the Countreies, Cities, Townes, and places thorow which his enemies passed, were aiders to their fortunes, and hearing them oftentimes

with

with loud voices to crie King *Henrie*, King *Henrie*, A *Warwicke*, A *Warwicke*, and distrustful vterly the inconstant mindes and dispositions of his owne souldiers, his heart failed him, so that in secret manner, and in the night, with eight hundred of his best friends, he left his Army, and coasted into Lincolnshire: and when all his hopes of helpe and succour there, were spent in vaine, they being altogether destitute of money, and other prouisions needfull for a journey into a forraigne Countrey, tooke shipping, and sailed into Holland, purposing to remaine with the Duke of Burgoine, vntill they might haue good meanes for their returne, and to bee reuenged on the Earle of Warwicke, and of all other their mortall enemies.

As soone as it was certainly knowne that king *Edward* was fled, a rude multitude of factious Kentishmen (delighting tumultuously and in a braine-sick maner to fish in troubled waters) came to the Gates of the City of London, and would haue entred it: but being resisted in their purpose, they rised and robbed the Suburbs, burnt diuers houses, murdered many people, and at Radcliffe and Limehouse they did the like. But by the Earle of Warwicks power and endeouours, they were quickly ouerthrowne, and punished sharply for their offence, which won him much fauour and loue among the better sort of the common people.

The Earle afterwards came to the Tower, where hee not onely enlarged the deposed king *Henry*, but in most triumphant fashion conducted him thorow the City of London to *Pauls Church*. And when he had concluded his deuotions, and performed his offerings, as the Kings of this Realme haue beene accustomed to doe, he was brought to the Bishops Palace, where he kept his Court with great magnificence and much bounty.

He also assembled his high Court of Parliament at Westminster, in which the late king *Edward* the Fourth, and all his principall adherents were attainted of High Treason, and all their goods & possessions were confiscate and given to the King.

The Duke of Clarence was by the same authority published to be the next heire of the deceased *Richard*, late Duke of York, his father. And albeir that hee was but his second sonne, yet all that Duchie was setled in him and in his heires. The Crowne also was entailed to king *Henry*, and to the heires males of his body: and for default of such issue, to the said Duke of Clarence, and to his heires. *Jasper* Earle of Pembroke was also restored to his honour and his lands, and so was *John* Earle of Oxford, and many others. And the Earle of Warwicke, and the Duke of Clarence, who were

*The K. flieth
in the night.*

*A rebellion in
Kent.*

*Warwicke
subdueth
them.*

*K. Henry is
enlarged.*

*A Parliam.
Attainders.*

*The Duke of
Clarence ad-
uanced.*

*The Crowne
entayled.*

The Queene
dares not so
put into the
Sea.

The Duke of
Burgoyne
furnisheth
K. Edward
with money,
men, munition,
and ships.

1470
10.
King Ed-
ward landeth
in England.
A small hope.

He only slay-
meth his Du-
chie of Yorke.

Her swearth
is to the Citi-
zens of York.
They receive
him, and re-
lieve him.

enslaved friends to the King, and friends to the Common-wealth) were established and made chiefe rulers in all things vnder the King.

When these affaires were thus ordered, Queene *Margaret* with the Prince her sonne, and their whole traine, shipped themselves. But so violent were the raging stormes, and so furious was the troubled sea, that albeit manie proffers were made, yet durst they not to adventure for that time. Whereupon the common people of this Realme (of whom the Queene was not beloved) murmured and muttered, saying, that God was not pleased that such a woman as had occasioned so many battailes, and such slaughters and executions in England, should return thither to plot more treachery, and to devise more mischief.

The Duke of Burgoyne, although he entreated king *Edward* and his friends kindly, yet because hee himselfe had warred with France, and feared lest the Earle of Warwick would busie him with a new warre, sent word to king *Henry*, that hee would not in any sort assist his enemy for his return into England. Yet not long after, when hee vnderstood that king *Edward's* friends by daily messengers and by letters importunated his returne, and had by their faire promise strengthened him with good hopes of fortunate successe, he deliuered to him fiftie thousand Floreines of gold, and furnished him with eighteen tall and warlike ships, in which he had only two thousand souldiers for seruice on the land.

With these small forces hee sailed into England, and landed at Raven-spurre in the Countie of York, where his expectation failed him very much. For few or none resorted to him for helpe; but all men there acknowledged themselves to be the friends and subiects of king *Henry*. This checke, though it much troubled him, yet was he not utterly dismayed thereby: for meere necessity and danger enforced him to march to the City of Yorke. And in his passage thither, he published to the people, & to the inhabitants of that City, that he came not to lay any claime or to make any challenge to the Crowne, but intended only to possesse himselfe of his Duchie of Yorke, of which vniustly he was deprived: wherein he affirmed, he ought by the lawes of equity and right, to be assisted and succoured by them, and by all good men.

The Citizens at his first repaire denyed his entrance: but by reason of a solemne oath which he rooke before them, that he only intended the regaining of his Duchie, and would remaine a true, faithfull, and an obedient subiect to king *Henry*, he was received, entertained, and monied at his owne will. But when hee had staid

in

in that City a day or two, hee forgot the oath which so lately hee had sworne: for hee placed a strong Garrison within the Towne, and enforced the inhabitants to furnish him with many requisites and provisions for an Armie. And then leaving the Citie (which was by strength referred to his use) he hired souldiers every where for money as he passed by towards London. And in his march, he came within foure miles of the Marquesse *Montague*, his old familiar and trustie friend, who being accompanied with brave troupes and companies of valiant men of warre to encounter him, gave vnto him free passage (without resistance) to march forth; so that by easie iournies hee came to Nottingham, where diuers Nobles and Gentlemen (who fauoured his proceedings) made him liberall offers and tenders of their seruice, if he would resolutely take vpon him the stile and title of the King, which he then did. And thus as ariuer by running farre is still augmented by the accesse of other brookes and streames which fall into it; so king *Edward*'s small forces still increased as hee marched forwards, vntill they were indeed a strong Armie.

The Earle of Warwick (hauing in his company the Earle of Oxford, many other Nobles, and a puissant Armie) came to the Citie of Warwicke, and intending to giue battalle to king *Edward*, directed and sent his letters and messengers with all speede to the Duke of Clarence, certifying him of his purpose, and praying him quickly to come forward with his forces, and to ioyne with him. Yet for all this the Duke passed on with a lingring pace, so that the Earle (suspecting his fideliry) went with his Armie into the City of Couentry, & king *Edward* with all his Companies came before the Towne, and dared the Earle into the field. But because hee purposed to make some triall what the Duke of Clarence would do, he therefore kept close within the Walls.

The king perceiuing that hee would not fight, bent his course towards his brother the Duke of Clarence, who (with his Army) did the like towards the king; so that a great thew was made betwixt them, that many blowes should be giuen. But the Duke of Gloucester being brother to them both, became an earnest mediator to reconcile them each to other: wherein he so well preuailed, that (being vnharmed) they courteously met, and publikely proclaimed, that they and their Armies were good friends.

The three brothers hauing thus combined themselves, made triall whether they could by any faire meanes and liberall promises allure the Earle of Warwicke to their loue. But he (who with many carres and disgracefull speeches published the Dukes periu-
ric,

*He breaketh
his oath.
He getteth
money and
wages sould-
iers.*

*He had neuer
risen by all
likelihood, if
he had bene
defeated by
the Mar-
quesse.*

*He stealeth
himselfe
King.
He hath a
powerfull
Armie.*

*Clarence fau-
leth Warwicke
on his need.*

*Warwicke
keepeth close
in Couentry
with all his
Armie.
The King
and his bro-
ther & their
Armies are
made friends.*

*Warwicke wil
not be allu-
red to loue
by faire pro-
mises.*

His answer.

rie, in forsaking his Confederates, and friends, returned them answer, That hee would rather dye like himselfe, than cease to make ciuill warre, vntill hee had confounded them, as his mortall Enemies.

*The causes
why London
recovered King
Edward.*

1

2

3

4

1

2

3

4

5

*Inconstant
multitude.
King Henry
againe is im-
prisoned.*

*Warwicke
last resolu-
on.*

*The Kings re-
solution.*

Barnet field.

The king/who knew well enough that the Earle was as valiant as he himselfe was resolute) feared not his power, but wisely considered, That the daily encreasing of his owne strength, would bee his best meanes, to winne the victory: Wherefore hee departed from Couentry, & marched towards London, where (for a time) he was kept out: But when the Citizens had duely considered of the Rightfulnesse of his Title to the Crowne, Of his skill, & noble courage in seats of War, Of his discretion, which enabled him (of himselfe) to rule wisely; And of his puissant Army, which he then commanded: And on the other side, when they had meditated vpon the soft Nature of king *Henry*, his small reach, shallow wit, insufficiency to reign, and of the continuall dangers which would still assaile them, if the Lancastrian faction were maintained; They opened their gates; ran out in troupes to meet him; Saluted him for their King, and brought him triumphantly into the Citie, where he seized againe vpon king *Henry*, and committed him to the Tower. Thus may we see, vpon what vnsecure foundation they build, who doe relye vpon the Peoples loue, and that nothing is more variable and vnconstant than the Multitude, who (like vnto Weather-cocks) are turned about with every winde.

The Earle of Warwicke, when he perceiued, that king *Edward* was gone from Couentry, followed after him with his Army, purposing to haue set vpon him, before hee should haue recovered London. But when hee perceiued that his intrendments were preuented, hee resolved to set his whole fortunes vpon one battaile. For which purpose hee marched forth vntill hee came to the towne of Barnet, which by an equall distance of ten miles, lyeth betwixt London and St. Albons; there hee stayed, rested, and refreshed his Army for a while.

The king also (being perswaded, that nothing could better procure his future right, and safety, than once more to trye his manhood in the field, and taking king *Henry* with him) marched with his Armie (which by the City of London was frankly furnished with all things needfull) vnto Barnet, and encamped himselfe neere to the Earle all that night; and early in the morning the Earle of Warwicke diuided his forces into three parts: The right wing was commanded by his Brother, the Marquesse *Montague*, (whom by necessity hee was enforced to trust) and by the Earle of Oxford

Oxford. The left wing was directed by himselfe, and by the Duke of Exeter. And his maine battaile was led by the Duke of Somerset and some others. All these the Earle manfully encouraged, by telling them, that they were to fight for their soueraigne and lawfull King, for a good man, and for their native Countrey, against an Vsurper, a Tyrant, a merciless and an vngodly wretch, whom neither respect of Conscience, Iustice, Obedience, nor Honestie could reclaime; and against such a one, as (if he liued) would be the confounder and the destroyer of them all.

The king (on his part) made the Duke of Gloucester chiefe leader of his Vant-guard: himselfe and the Duke of Clarence ordered the Maine Battaile, in which king Henry the Sixth was: and the Rereward was conducted by the Lord Hastings, Chamberlaine to the king.

What the king said by way of encouragement to his souldiers, we may easily coniecture: for as hee had a wit and a tongue which neuer did deceiue him; so he wanted not matter nor arguments to maintaine his quarrell to be good.

The Fight (after it was begunne) was so desperately continued on either part for the space of fve or six houres, that no man could coniecture to whom the victorie would incline: so that some of those horsemen who were lookers on, and fought not, gallopped amaine to the City of London, and affirmed that king Edward was ouerthrowne. But among them by and by some others posted with countermanding reports, and assured the Citizens, that the Earle of Warwicke had lost the Field. And thus many men (in few houres) related what they wished for: and in the meane time, such as were most valiant, soonest lost their liues, and the best men lay breathlesse vpon the ground. But when the Earle perceiued, that fresh supplies continually oppressed and pressed vpon his wearied and tired friends and souldiers, who would not yeeld because he could not then be safe, hee dismounted himselfe quickly from his horse, and making an incredible slaughter of his enemies, he pressed so farre into their battaile to be reuenged on his chiefeft aduersaries, that hauing no power nor meanes to retorne againe, he was slaine: and the Marquesse Montacute (who euer honoured King Edward, and was his secret friend) rushing into King Edwards Arme, not to doe it any harme, but to rescue and to relieue his brother, met with the like fortune. Thus both of them being dead, their whole Armie ran away, and king Edward was master of the Field. And in the after noone of the same day (carrying with him king Henry as his prisoner) hee returned triumphantly like a Conquerour

*The Earles
encourage-
ments to his
Armie.*

1
2
3
1
2
3
4
5

*The victorie
was over-
tawne.*

*The Earle of
Warwicke is
slaine.*

*So is the
Marquesse
his brother,
whom King
Edward lo-
ued.*

*The King
bath the
victorie.*

*A thanks gi-
uing to God,
10000. men
slaine.
Sir Humphrey
Bourchier.*

*The dead
bodies of the
two breibren
laid open in
Pauls
Church.
Queene
Margaret
landeth too
late.
Noble men
doe repaire
to her.*

*They raise a
new Armie.*

*The King
preuenteth
them.*

*The Duke of
Somerset
resolution to
fight.
Tewkesbury
field.*

querour into the Citie of London; and in *Pauls Church* hee offered vp his Standard, and rendred thanks to Almighty God for his victory thus happily obtained: In this battaile there were slaine at the least ten thousand men: but none other of any noted name, sauing onely on the kings part Sir *Humphrey Bourchier*, sonne to the Lord *Barnes*, who was a tight valiant and an approued man in Armes.

The king sorrowed much, and was grieved exceedingly at the death of the Marquesse *Montacute*, because he had lost a faithfull and a deare friend. Yet to assure the people that those two brothers were dead indeed, hee caused them to be brought into London in one coffin, and for the space of three dayes to lie open faced in *Pauls Church*: and then among their honourable Ancestors in the Priorie of *Bissam* they were both buried in one graue.

Queene *Margaret* (not hearing of this newes, but intending to bring some succors to the Earle) landed at *Waymouth*, where these tidings appalled her senses, and deprived her of all future good hope or good hap. Wherefore in the Abbey of *Beawly* in *Hampshire* shee, with the Prince her sonne tooke Sanctuary: and thither repaired to her the Duke of *Somerset*, *Ispar* Earle of *Pembrooke*, *Thomas Courtney* Earle of *Deuonshire*, *John* Lord *Wenlake*, & diuers others. And when the Queene and they had thorowly debated what course was fittest to be taken, they resolved, once more to aduenture their fortunes in the Field: for which purpose, every one of those Noblemen resorted into their own Countries, where they prepared such men and furnitures for the warre as they could get. The Queen and the Duke of *Somerset* leuied an Armie about *Bristow* & *Glocester*, and from thence they endeouored to goe into *Wales*, to ioyne their forces with such companies as the Earle of *Pembrooke* had raised there.

The king, who was more strong than they, purposed to preuent their meeting if he might, and so closely followed them, that though the Queene and most of her associates supposed it to be best to flie disordered into *Wales*, yet the Duke of *Somerset* would not consent thereunto, by reason whereof, both those Armies met neere vnto *Tewkesbury* in *Glocestershire*, & after a long fight, which with a small company the Duke of *Somerset* had maintained against the Duke of *Glocesters* battell; he (not being seconded by the Lord *Wenlake*, by whom their middle Ward was commanded) retired towards the said Lord, and with cursed words hee bitterly reuiled him for his base cowardlinesse, and with his Poleaxe he suddenly strake off his braines. But within one houre after,

ter, king *Edward* ouerthrew them all, hauing slaine about three thousand of them; among whom were the Earle of Deuonshire, the Lord *John*, brother to the Duke of Somerset, Sir *John Lewknor*, Sir *John Delues*, and many others. There were also taken prisoners the Queene, the Duke, the Prior of *S. Iohns* of Ierusalem, Sir *Geruase Clifton*, Sir *Thomas Tresham*, and twelue others of eminency and of note: all which (*Queene Margaret* only excepted) were beheaded the next day. And the young Prince *Edward* (who was taken prisoner by Sir *Richard Crofts*) was presented to the king: and because he answered him stoutly to some questions which hee demanded of him, hee was slightly stricken by the king, and suddenly murdered by the Dukes of Clarence and of Gloucester, & by *Thomas Marquess* Dorset, and the Lord *Hastings*. And this was the last Ciuill Battaille which was fought in England in king *Edwards* dayes.

When the king had thus obtained this victory, he returned to London, carrying with him *Queen Margaret* as his prisoner, and was with triumphant ioy receined into the City, from whence hee sent one *Roger Vaughan*, a powerfull Gentleman, into his Countrey of Wales, requiring him, by some secret traine or other to entrap the Earle of Pembroke, & to behead him if he could. But the Earle being informed of his coniming, and of his errand, caused him suddenly to be apprehended and put to death. And then the said Earle, with his nephew *Henrie* the young Earle of Richmond, who was but ten yeares old, sailed into Britaine, and were courteously receined, and louingly entertained by *Francis* the Duke of that Prouince.

Not long after, *Reyner* the Titulary king of Naples, Sicilie, and of Ierusalem, with the sale of the kingdomes of Naples & of Sicilie for money, ransomed *Queene Margaret* his daughter: and vpon that Title, and none other, *Charles* the Eighth, king of France, conquered Naples, as in the History of those wars it appeareth.

Now, when no man (by reason of king *Edwards* peace and prosperity) thought of any euill tidings, suddenly it was noised throughout the City of London, that king *Henry* was found dead in his chamber within the Tower; and so hee was indeed, being cruelly and wickedly murdered and stabbed with a dagger, by *Richard* Duke of Gloucester, brother to king *Edward*, as the report commonly went. And his body was brought into *Pauls* Church, where his face lay vncouered one whole day, that thereby the people might bee assured that hee was dead. And thus was king *Edward* freed from his great enemies. But his two brothers, of Clarence and of Gloucester

The King
getteth the
victory.

Great prisoners.

Execution.
Prince *Edward*
cruelly
murdered.

Queene
Margaret
is a prisoner.

Roger
Vaughan is
discovered
& beheaded.

Queene
Margaret
is ransomed.

King Henry
is found dead
in the Tower.
The Duke of
Gloucester
murdered
him.
King Henry
brought open
face into
Pauls
Church.

1473

13

The Duke of
Burgoyne
animateth
K. Edward to
warre for his
title to
France.

Reasons mo-
ving the
King so to
doe.

A benevo-
lence craued
by King Ed-
ward.

Amerry iest.

1474

41

The King
transporteth
an Armie
for France.

Glocester, being for their periuries, murders, and euill courses, punished by Almighty God, embrewed their hands in their owne bloud not long after.

When king *Edward* for two or three yeares had enioyed an happy peace, his brother-in-law, *Charles* Duke of Burgoyne, heartily detesting the French king, & secretly intending to worke him some despight, perswaded king *Edward* to renew his French warres, for the recouering of his right and title to that Crowne and Kingdome.

The King and his Councell thereupon quickly resolved to vndertake that businesse, principally for these reasons.

1. First, because the Crowne of France was not ambitiously, but iustly desired by the king, who thought hee had good right and title thereunto.

2. Secondly, because French wars enriched English souldiers.

3. Thirdly, because those wars kept them at home, and gaue them not any liberty to innade this Realme.

4. Fourthly, because the French king had assisted Queen *Margaret*, the Earle of Warwick, and their Complices, against king *Edward* in the late Ciuill Wars.

5. And fifthly, because the said French king made warres vpon the Duke of Burgoyne, who had formerly aided king *Edward* for the regaining of his Crowne and Kingdome.

But because money wanted for the defraying of so great a charge, king *Edward* (without a Parliament) craued a beneuolence to bee freely enlarged to him by his Subiects, who gaue him some money, but with an euill will. Yet among others, a rich, yet a sparing and a nigardly widow, did cheerefully giue vnto him twenty pounds. The king himselfe (who was present, but to her vnkowne) perceiuing that vnexpectedly shee had bestowed vpon him so good a summe, did not onely giue her thanks, but merrily came and kissed her, telling her, that for her money shee should kisse a king. The old woman was so much gladdened with that courtesie, that shee told the King his kisse was worth more money, and therefore she added twenty pounds more to the former summe.

The king hauing in a readinesse before Douer a Fleet of five hundred shippes and boates, and hauing a puissant and a compleat Armie of fiftene hundred men at Armes on horsebacke, and fiftene thousand tall Archers, besides all such as attended for other needefull seruices, departed from England, and landed safely at Callice, where hee was receiued with great honour and state. But

he

he was much grieved, because the Duke of Burgoine (vpon whose motion, and at whose entreaty and promise to bee met by him at Callice with two thousand men at Armes, hee came thither) trifled with his whole Army in the siege of Nuyce, which he was not likely to winne, and at length (after much time spent in vaine) had sent all his forces to Berroys in Lorrayne, to be reuenged vpon *Reynier*, *Queene Margarets* father, Duke of that Prouince, for that hee had vsed foule and vascemly words towards him, when hee lay at the siege of Nuyce; whereas if the said Duke of Burgoine had ioyned with king *Edward* against the French king, and with the Duke of Brizaine, who sided with king *Edward*, they would have put into hazzard of winning the whole Kingdome of France.

Yet king *Edward* with his owne Companies marched by Bollen to Perone, into the Duke of Burgoines Countrey, where the said Duke had not made any manner of prouision for the refreshing of the English Army, according to his promise, but suffered them to lye without his Townes in the cold and in the open fields, whereat they were all displeased. From thence king *Edward* (with the said Duke) marched towards *S. Quintens*, which was secretly promised to be deliuered to him, by *Lewis* of Luxenburgh, great Vncle to king *Edward*'s wife. But when they came before it, their entrie was not onely denied, but sallies were made vpon them, and the great Ordnance plaied from the Towne vpon the kings Armie, so that plainly he perceiued, that nothing was to bee obtained there without blowes.

To these breaches of promise was added one vnkindnesse more by the Duke of Burgoine, who to visit his Army, which then lay in Berroys in Lorrayne, vnexpectedly left king *Edward*, and rode thither, leauing word behinde, that he would come vnto him with his whole Armie as soone as he should be able.

The French king being pollicke and wise, and knowing that if all those his enemies should ioyne their strengths against him, they would put him in hazzard of his estate, and being informed that king *Edward* was highly discontented, by reason of the Duke of Burgoines vnfaithfull vsage, and knowing that he beganne to feele the extremities of a winter warre, mediated a friendly conference and a firme peace, which by their Commissioners was effected for nine years, in this sort.

Gg

The Duke of Burgoine breaketh promise, and aids him not.

He breakes his promise againe.

He was Earle of S. Paul, and Constable of France.

The King is kept out of S. Quintens.

A peace is concluded for nine years.

1

2

3

4

The Articles of peace.

First it was agreed, That the French King should forthwith pay to King Edward towards his forepassed charges, threescore and fiftene thousand Crownes: and also the summe of fifty thousand more for an yearly pension so long as King Edward lived.

2. Secondly, That the French King within one yeare should send for the King of Englands daughter, the Ladie Elizabeth into France, and marrie her to the Dolphin, for whose maintenance the French King should for nine yeares space pay yearly to them fifty thousand Crownes, and at the end of those yeares should deliuer to them the quiet and peaceable possession of the Duchie of Guyan.
3. And thirdly, that the Lord Howard, and Sir Iohn Cheney master of the Horse, should stay (as Hostages) with the French King, untill the whole Armie had quitted France, and were landed in the Kingdome of England.

To these propositions king Edward and his Councell consented for these reasons.

1. First, as the Duke of Burgoines promises were seldome or neuer honestly performed, so with the King (whom hee had drawne into those Countries, and into those Warres) hee did but gloze and faine.

2. Secondly, because the Earle of S. Paul, Constable of France, did but dissemble when he protested to deliuer to king Edward the Town of S. Quintens, which he did not, but offered violence to his Armie in stead thereof.

3. Thirdly, because the winter (which approached sharply) would have enforced him for that time to haue returned dishonorably into England.

4. And last of all, because the late Ciuill Wars had consumed most of his best souldiers and chieftest Leaders, and the greatest part of his treasure; so that king Edward was hardly able to maintaine a great Armie any long time.

But the Duke of Glocester and his friends (who mortally hated the

Reasons moving King Edward to conclude this peace.

the French king) strived much to dissuade king *Edward* from these conclusions, but all in vaine: for those Articles were sealed & published, the mony was paid, both the kings in a familiar and kind enteruiew, by their solempne oathes had sworne to obserue and keepe them, and hostages were deliuered accordingly.

It is to be noted, that within this peace the Dukes of Burgoine & of Britaine were included; if they would consent thereunto. But when this newes was told to the Duke of Burgoine, hee with all celerity & speed possible hasted to king *Edward*, & in his melancholy mood he told him, that it was in a high measure dishonourable for him, to returne into England, not hauing burnt in France one poore cottage, nor hauing slaine as much as a flie with his whole Army. Hee told him also, that his Ancestors, king *Edward* the Third, and king *Henry* the Fifth, neuer passed into France to demand their right, but that they obtained and wonne it victoriously with their swords; and swore, that king *Edward* had lost more glory and honour by his infamous peace made with France, than he had wonne by all his victories in nine battailes which he had fought; and that he himselfe so scorned the French kings malice and his power, that he would and did absolutely refuse to be included in the said dishonourable league, vntill six moneths were fully ended after king *Edward*'s Army was landed againe in England.

The king seeing the vnfaithfull Duke so angry, made him this replic: That king *Edward* the Third and king *Henry* the Fifth entred into France with their Armies of their owne accord, to gain their inheritance, and not otherwise, nor for any other purpose, which they performed with true valour and wisdom: And that hee himselfe would neuer haue departed out of that Kingdome, vntill he had done the like, if hee had come thither in that manner of his owne accord. But (quoth hee) I vnderooke this iourney vpon your request, for your aide, and to assist you and your Territories, by plucking downe the pride of France: and the claime which I made to that Kingdome, was at this time onely published, to giue mee some colour to helpe you. And albeit you vaunt much of your owne strength, and doe seeme little to regard the French king and his anger, yet me thinkes you cannot well forget, how by his strength and power he hath wonne from you the faire City of Amyens, and the strong pile of S. Quintens, and other Castles and Townes within your dominions; which (notwithstanding all your crakes and brags) you neither dare to attempt, nor can againe winne. You know likewise, that your selfe and mine Vncle of Luxenburgh (to traine me into France) promised to mee

*The Duke of
Burgoyne
sworneth at
this peace.*

*His obedi-
ous.*

*The Kings
answer.*

mountaines of gold, but they quickly changed into snow, and are now dissolved into water. If your faith, your offers, and your promises had beene honestly performed, I would sooner haue lost my life, and haue aduentured for you my Crowne and Kingdome, rather than I would haue beene found vnfaithfull or vnthankfull to you. But if any thing be amisse, you your selues haue beene the occasioners thereof, and therefore you may thank none others. And so farewell.

Hereupon the angrie Duke in a pelting chafe, tooke his horse, and rode away. And from that time forward they neyther loued nor saw one another.

*The French
Kings bounty
to the English
Armie.*

After the aforesaid Articles were concluded and sealed, and a little before the enteruiew betweene the two kings, the French king (of his owne bounty) sent into the English Armie one hundred Wagons loaden with the best wines which he could procure, and licenced the souldiers for the space of three or foure dayes to disport and recreate themselves within the City of Amiens: and at their comming thither they found many Tables thorowout both sides of the streets richly and plentifully furnished with great store of costly dishes both of flesh and fish, and many Gallants and Bon-companions of purpose were choosen to makethem mirth, and to attend them; so that nine thousand English armed men were within the same Citie at one time.

But when the French king was informed how great a number of them were within the walls of so strong a Towne, he reprobued and condemned his owne kindnesse, and feared lest hee might lose it by reason of his great loue, and by that meanes might occasion more iarres betwixt England and his Kingdome of France.

*The French
Kings bounty
to the English
Captaines.
The King ar-
riues in
England.*

1475

15

But the Englishmen disdainig to be found false or vnthankfull, merrily passed away the time with the Frenchmen, and hauing sufficiently solaced and refreshed themselves, they departed out of the Citie, and quietly returned to their owne Campe. And the French king being well pleased with this their honest and plaine dealing, sent vnto the English Captaines rich presents in plate and in coined siluer and gold. And then king Edward with his whole Armie returned to Callice, & from thence into England, where he was cheerefully receiued with much ioy. And thereupon the aforesaid Hostages (receiuing great gifts and honourable vsage) were set at liberty, and returned home.

The French King (if hee might) would faine haue excluded the Duke of Britaine out of the former league. But in regard that the

young

young Earle of Richmond was in his possession, and whose return into England to make challenge to the Crown King *Edward* euer feared, he would not in any sort agree thereunto.

And not long after, King *Edward* (by his Ambassadors) with much entreaty, rich gifts, and vpon solemne protestation that he only intended to marry one of his owne daughters to the said Earle, obtained his deliuerie to those messengers, who being glad at the heart that they had obtained what King *Edward* so instantly desired, tooke their leaue of the Duke of Britaine, and brought the young Earle of Richmond to S. Malloes, where they were enforced to stay, expecting a faire and a good winde.

But in the meane time, the Duke being informed by *John Cheuelet* his true and faithfull seruant, that the said marriage was but colourably pretended, to get the young Earle into King *Edward*'s hands, and that his death was certainly intended if hee could bee brought home; and being also told, that his honour would perpetually be obscured by so foule a deede: the said Duke could neuer be at rest, vntill *Peter Landoy*, his chiefest Treasurer, attempted the repossessing of him with the said young Earle. Whereupon the said *Peter* repaired to S. Malloes, and pretended much loue and familiarity with the English Ambassadors, with whom hee pleasantly conuersed and spent his time. But in the meane season the seruants of the said *Peter* (being thorowly instructed for that purpose) conueied the said Earle into a Sanctuarie, whose priuiledges might not by any meanes bee infringed. The Englishmen vnderstanding what had hapned, were much displeased, and condemned the said Treasurer for this vnfriendly practice and too much skill. But hee (on the other side) assigned the whole fault to their owne negligence and folly. And by this meane, the harmelesse and fillie Sheepe was deliuered from the Wolfe. And thus was King *Edward* defrauded and beguiled of his money, and of his hopes. But vpon the Dukes faithfull promise that the said Earle should euer remaine with him as a prisoner, the King was somewhat pacified, and neuer after attempted to haue him in his owne power.

King *Edward* being now at ease, and enioying a blessed peace both at home and abroad with all forraine Princes, did manie things which highly aduanced his honour, and were very profitable to the Common-weale. But the Duke of Burgoine (who by nature was vnconstant, hastie, turbulent, and wholly addicted to the war) was in this yeare ouerthrowne in three fencerall battailes which he fought against the Swisles.

Henry Earle of Richmond deliuered by the Duke of Britaine to K. Edwards Ambassadors

Good counsell

Peter Landoy reconcurreth the Earle of Richmond into the Duke of Britains possession,

1476.

16.

The Duke of Burgoine is thrice in one yeare ouerthrowne.

1. In the first at Granson, where hee lost his honour and his wealth.

2. In the second at Morrat, where hee lost his honour and his men,

3. And in the third at Nancie, where he lost his honour, his riches, his men, and his owne life.

1477.

17.
*The Duke of
Clarence im-
prisoned and
murdered.*

About this time the Duke of Clarence, brother to king *Edward*, was suspected, accused, and condemned of high Treason, for that hee (with many others) had secretly contrived the Kings death: and thereupon hee was returned a prisoner to the Tower. But within few daies after, hee was wickedly drowned in a Butte of Malmesie, not without the kings notice, as most men did suppose. Hee left behinde him but two children, *Edward* and *Margaret*, which *Edward* was created Earle of Warwicke, and was executed for High Treason in the reigne of king *Henry* the Seueneth. And *Margaret*, who being wife & Dowager to *Richard de la Poole*, Earle of Salisbury, was put to death for Treason in the reigne of king *Henry* the Eighth.

1479.

19.
*The King
changes his
forme of go-
uernment of
the Common-
weale.
Penall lawes.
Hee lost the
loue of his
Subiects.*

The king in the five last years of his reigne vterly changed his former humours. For whereas before that time he had been bountifull and liberall, loued magnificence and honourable hospitality; he now began to be so wretched, couetous, and miserable, that to get money, and to augment his treasure, he extraordinarily vexed and troubled his subiects, by inflicting vpon them the execution of penall lawes: by meanes whereof, hee as quickly extinguished and quenched their hearty loue and good affection towards him, as water doth the fire.

1480.

20.

*Lewis the
eleuenth.*

In the twentieth yeare of his reigne, hee much desired that the marriage which the French king had promised, betwixt the Dolphin and his daughter, might be consummate: for which purpose he sent an honorable Ambassage into France, willing them to tell the French king, that he had broken his promise and his oath, for that hee had not sent for the said Lady into France within one yeare after the concluding of the said former Articles. But *Lewis* the French king returned friuolous excuses, and promised verie shortly to send for her, when as indeed hee meant nothing lesse. For such was his nature, and such were his euill qualities, that where he might procure any benefit or aduantage to himselfe, hee would pleasantly flatter, plentifully reward, and assuredly deceive.

1481.

21.

*A marriage
intended
with Scot-
land.*

About this time, *James* the Third, king of Scots, seeming earnestly to desire that the Lady *Cecilia* (one of the kings daughters) might be giuen in marriage to *James* his eldest sonne, sent his Ambassadors

bassadours into England: And king Edward (supposing that he had meant plainly, & knowing that by such an alliance his owne estate would be the better secured) did not onely grant his request, but forthwith (to supply his present wants) he disbursed to him great summes of money for part of his said daughters portion, but yet vpon this condition, that the same should be repaid if afterwards king Edward disliked, and would dissolve that match.

When all those things were concluded, security given, and the money paid, the king of Scots (very treacherously) sent an Army into the Northerne parts of this kingdom, which burnt, spoiled, and slew in every place as it passed by: whereupon king Edward (as well to repress his furie, as also to correct his infidelitie, and folly) sent against him the Duke of Gloucester with a strong Army of one and twenty thousand men, who first of all by force entered into the Towne of Barwicke, and then besieged the Castle, which was valiantly kept and defended by the Earle Robert.

The Duke (not purposing to imploy his whole strength in that place) left the Lord Stanley there with foure thousand men, and with the residue of his forces he retired into Scotland, whither the Scottish king was for feare retired, killing, burning, and spoiling in all places at his pleasure, and compelling the king to hide himself in the strong Castle of Maydens within the Citie of Edinburgh.

The Nobilitie of Scotland perceiving the miserable estate of their wasted and poore Countrey, sent vnto the Duke, and craved peace, which he granted vpon these foure conditions:

1. First, that full amends and restitution might bee made and giuen to king Edwards subjects for all such damage, iniurie, and wrongs, as by their last incursions they had sustained.

2. Secondly, that the Scottish king would againe restore his own brother the Duke of Albanie (who was in the English Army) vnto his especiall fauour, and to all his honours, dignities, offices, and possessions in that kingdom.

3. Thirdly, that the Castle of Barwicke should be yielded vp, or not rescued from the siege wherewith it was then compassed.

4. And lastly, that repayment might bee made of all such sums of money as king James had receiued of king Edward vpon the motion for marriage with his daughter to the son and heire apparant of the king of Scots: or that good security might be giuen by the Prouost and Citizens of Edinburgh for the said repayment, if (before a prefixed day) king Edward did giue them notice that there should not bee any further prosecution concerning the said marriage.

Money is
conditionally
disbursed.

1483.

22.

The Scots in-
made the
Northerne
parts.
Gloucester
marcheth
with an Ar-
my against
the Scots.

The Earle of
Barwicke is
besieged.

Gloucester en-
tereth Scot-
land, and
spoileth at his
owne will.

Peace is
granted on
certain con-
ditions.

The

The Nobility of Scotland, knowing the state of that kingdome to be vnable to performe the first demand, to pacifie the Duke of Gloucester, and to preuent the ruine and destruction of their native Kingdome, yeelded vnto the latter three. And for the due obseruing of them, they sent vnto him such an Instrument, sealed and subscribed by the King and them, as he had required. And to the Duke of Albanie was sent a free pardon, and restitution was made vnto him of all things accordingly as the Duke of Gloucester had desired. Whereupon the said two Dukes, taking a friendly farewell each of other, departed, the one into Scotland, and the other vnto Barwicke, where the Earle of Arhol (being of nothing more assured, than that by his King and Countymen he should neuer be relieued) by composition surrendered the Castle into the Dukes hand, who making the Lord Stanley the chiefeft Captaine and Commander thereof, returned ioyfully with his whole Armie, and was much praised and thanked by the King.

The Castle of Barwicke is delivered to the Duke of Gloucester.

The French King breaketh all the Articles of Peace.

1483.
23.
K. Edward resolued to goe with an Armie into France.

His sickness. He dieth.

This good newes from Scotland was quickly checked with a bad out of France. For the French king not only refused to pay vnto king Edward the foresaid tribute of fifty thousand Crownes by the yeare, which was granted to him during his life, but also married his son the Dolphin to the Lady *Margaret*, daughter to *Maximilian* the sonne of *Fredericke* the Emperour, thereby breaking his oath, and infringing those Articles, which (vpon the last conclusion of peace) he had sworne solemnly to obserue and keepe. Whereat King Edward iustly conceived such an high displeasure and hatred against King *Lewis*, that (after long and serious consultation with his Counsell, Nobility, Clergy, and Commons) he did resolue to passe againe with a royall Army into France, and to reuenge himselfe of all those iniuries and wrongs.

But whilest those preparations made manifest to the world the Kings intention to make warre, hee being either surcharged with deepe melancholy, or with some surfeit, (for excesse of diet and of pleasure did oftentimes disquiet him) waxed exceeding sicke, and shortly after dyed, when he had reigned more than two and twentic yeares.

Profitable



Profitable Notes extracted out of the troublesome Reignes of King HENRY

the Sixth, and of king EDWARD the Fourth.

He whole Kingdom of France was lost in the Reuen & twentieth years of king Henry the Sixth. And the next yeare after all Normandy was lost. And in the one & thirtieth year of his reigne the Duchie of Aquitaine was quite taken from him. It is likewise to be observed, that whilst he governed and enjoyed Normandy & France, these heroicall Nobles lost their lives there: That is to say, *Thomas Mowbray* Earle of Salisbury, who was slaine at the siege of Orleans; *John* Earle of Arundel, who was slaine at the siege of Rue; the noble and renowned Lord *John* Duke of Bedford and Regent of France, and *Richard Beauchampe* Earle of Warwicke, both which dyed of a grievous sicknesse, and *John* Lord Talbot Earle of Shrewesbury, who was slaine at the battaile of Chastillon.

Besides many braue skirmishes and strong encounters, there were fought during his Reigne, betwixt the two Factions & Confederates of the houses of Lancaster and of Yorke, five cruell and fierce battailes.

1. The first was called the battaile of St. Albons, wherein the Yorkish did preuaile; and (among others) *Edmund* Duke of Somerset, *Henry* the second Earle of Northumberland, *Maurice* Earle of Stafford, and *John* Lord Clifford, were then slaine.

2. The second was termed the battell of Boar-heath, in which the confederated Lords wonne the victory, in which the *Queenes* Generall the Lord *Arundel* was slaine.

3. The third was the battaile of Northampton, in which king *Henry* was ouerthrowne. In this battaile there dyed above twentie thousand men; among which were these Nobles, *Maurice* Duke of Buckingham, *John* Earle of Shrewesbury, *Thomas* Lord Egremont, *John* Viscount Beaumont, and the Lord *Scales* was beheaded.

4. The

294

27.H.6.

28.H.6.

31.H.6.

6.H.6.

11.H.6.

14.H.6.

18.H.6.

31.H.6.

34.H.6.

37.H.6.

38.H.6.

39.H.6.

4. The fourth was the battaile of Wakefield, in which the king was victorious. In this battaile there were slaine almost three thousand men, among which was the renowned and most valiant *Richard* Duke of *Yorke*, and many others. And certaine prisoners were then taken, and lost their heads, among which *Richard* Earle of *Salisbury*, & father to *Richard* Earle of *Warwicke*, was the chiefe. And at the end of that battaile, the young Earle of *Rutland*, named *Edmund*, being of the age of twelve yeares, and second sonne to the slaine Duke of *Yorke*, was cruelly murdered by the Lord *Clifford*.

39.H.6.

5. The fifth battaile was called the battaile of *Towton*, in which the new Duke of *Yorke* preuailed: and in the same there were slaine almost 37000. Englishmen, among which were the Earle of *Westmerland*, *Henry* Earle of *Northumberland*, the Lords *Dacres* and *Welles*, and many worthy Gentlemen and Knights. And the Earle of *Deuonshire*, with some of his Complices, being taken prisoners, lost their heads.

39.H.6.

Whilest this King liued, there were also executed for diuers Treasons touching the said two Factions, *William de la Poole* Duke of *Suffolke*, and *James Fynes* Lord *Sey*, High Treasurer of England.

35.H.6.

And *Hunfrey*, surnamed *The good Duke of Glocester*, being Vncle & Protector to the king, and being vniustly committed to the Tower, for furnished, but not for approued Treasons, was cruelly murdered in his chamber.

King EDWARD the Fourth.



IN the Reigne of king *Edward* the Fourth there were principally fought five batailles betwixt the houses of *Lancaster* and *Yorke*.

2.E.4.

1. The first was the battaile of *Exham* in the North, in which king *Edward* obtained the victory, & tooke these prisoners among many others, *Henry* Duke of *Somerset*, *William Taylboys*, who named himselfe Earle of *Kent*, the Lords *Ross*, *Molynes*, and *Hungerford*, all which were within few daies after put to death.

8.E.4.

2. The second was called *Banbury Field*, in which were slaine about 8000. men.

8.E.4.

3. The third was called the battaile of *Loose-coats*, because the souldiers

souldiers threw off their coates to runne away the faster. And in it aboute ten thousand men lost their liues.

4. The fourth was Barnet field, in which more than ten thousand dyed, among which were the most renowned *Richard Neust* Earle of Warwicke, *John Marquess Montacute* his brother, whom king *Edward* entirely loued. And on king *Edwards* part there was slaine a noble and a valiant Gentleman, named Sir *Humphrey Bourchier*, son to the Lord *Barnes*.

10.E.4.

5. And the fifth was called Tewkesbury Field, in which 3000. Englishmen were slaine, among which were the Duke of Somerset, and the Lord *John* his brother, and the Earle of Devonshire.

10.E.4.

In this kings Reign there were beheaded the Lord *Stafford*, who left the Earle of Pembroke (vpon a priuate falling out) in the Field, and carried from him part of the kings Armie.

8.E.4.

The Lord *Wells*, and Sir *Thomas Dymocke*, without any offence at all by them done.

8.E.4.

Richard Woodville Earle *Ryuers*, and father to Queene *Elizabeth*, king *Edwards* wife, was taken by the Rebels, and lost his head.

8.E.4.

And the Lord *Wenlocke* was murdered by the Duke of Somerset, because he came not to his rescue with his Companies in the field.

10.E.4.

The young Prince *Edward*, eldest sonne to king *Henry* the sixth, (to please king *Edward*) was cruelly murdered by the two Dukes of Clarence and of Gloucester, and by some others.

10.E.4.

King *Henry* the sixth was himselfe stabbed with a dagger, & slain in the Tower of London by the said *Richard* Duke of Gloucester.

10.E.4.

And not long after, the Duke of Clarence was found dead in his bed, he hauing beene drowned in a Butte of Malmesie, not without the kings consent, as it was supposed.

10.E.4.

And thus open and ciuill warres by the sword, and the common Executioner with his axe, and inueterated enuie and malice, with bloody hands, bereaued and tooke away the liues of the greater number of the most renowned and valiant Noblemen, Captaines, and Gentlemen of this Realme.

land, they off their coats to run away the faster, and in
thousand thousand men for their lives.

4. The fourth was Robert, in which more than ten thousand
landed, among which were the most renowned knights, when
Earl of Warwick, was Alured's Master his brother, whom
king Edward cruelly loved. And on king Edward's part there was
thine noble and valiant Gentleman, named Sir Henry de
Barkley, son to the Lord Barkley.

5. And the fifth was called Towkesbury Field, in which more
fighting men were killed, among which were the Duke of Somerset
and the Lord de la Beche, and the Earl of Hereford.

In this king's reign there were beheaded the Lord de la Beche, who
left the Duke of York, a young prince, falling out of the Field,
and carried from him out of the king's Arms.

The Lord de la Beche and Sir Henry de Barkley, without any offence
at all by them.

Edward was a king, and father to Queen Elizabeth,
king Edward's wife, was taken by the Rebels, and fell in death.

And the Lord de la Beche was murdered by the Duke of Somerset,
because he came not to his rescue within the Countess of the Duke.

The young Prince Edward, which I have told you was the king's
son, he was cruelly murdered by the Duke of York.

Clarence and of other others, and by some others.

King Henry the fifth was slain, the Duke of York, and
in the Tower of London by the Duke of Gloucester.

And not long after the Duke of Clarence was found dead in his
bed, he being beheaded in a house of Almoners, not with
out the king's command, as it was reported.

And thus open and still waters by the sword, and the com-
mon executioner with his axe, and increased came and ended
with bloody hands, beheaded and took away the lives of the

greater number of the most renowned and valiant No-
bles, Captains, and Gentlemen

of this Realm.



THE HISTORIE OF KING EDWARD THE FIFTH.



F our memories be pleased to take a reuiew of the life and actions of the late deceased king *Edward* the Fourth, we may thereon make this pretty abbreuiate & short collection : That hee was of a goodly personage, and of a kingly presence : That hee was very strong, and passing valiant; not proud in prosperitie, nor dejected with aduerse fortune : That hee was moderately pleasant and merry : That hee was

pleasing to his Nobles, familiar with his Souldiers, and amiable to his inferiour Subiects : That he was mercifull to offenders, and fauoured all such as did well : That hee was very wise, discreet, prouident, and soundly aduised in all his actions. Yet was he somewhat too credulous, and too wanton, and in his latter daies more couetous than formerly he had beene.

By many worthy endeouours hee expressed how much he longed for his peoples loue : and by one action hee more particularly declared it, than by all the rest. For in the next Summer before he died, hee required the Lord Maior of London and his brethren to repair to his Castle of Windsour, where he then lay. And when they expected some extraordinary imployment in State affaires,

Hh

because

1483

I
*Edward the
Fourth de-
scribed.*

*His affabi-
lity.*

because so many of them were called thither, not troubling them with any businesse, either great or small, priuate or publike, nor requiring of them any supplies from their plenty, he royally feasted, banqueted, and entertained them, not only with the choicest, best, and most costly delicacies that could bee gotten, but also he gladdened them vnspeakeably with his own presence and companion-like behaviour. Hee afterwards carried them into his Parke, where the thicke fall of fat Deere (besides many other things) gaue them warrant of their kind welcome. And at their departing from him, hee sent such great store of Venison into the City, for the friendly feasting of their neighbours there, that nothing euer won him more hearty loue among his subiects of that place.

He left behinde him two sonnes; *Edward*, who being of the age of thirteene yeares, vnfortunately succeeded him in this Kingdom; and *Richard* Duke of Yorke, who was two yeares younger; & five daughters, namely *Elizabeth*, who afterwards married king *Henry* the Seuenth, and was mother to king *Henry* the Eighth, and *Cecillie*, *Briget*, & *Katherine*, whose fortunes seldome laughed, and *Anne*, who married *Thomas* Lord *Howard*, who after was created Earle of Surrey.

*Richard
Duke of
Glocester
described.*

The said noble King (when hee died) left behinde him but one brother, namely *Richard* Duke of Glocester, who was (by common report) a monster in nature. For he had many teeth when he was borne. Hee was exceedingly deformed in the composure of his body: for of stature he was but low, crooke-backed; his left shoulder was much higher than the other: his visage was vncomely, his complexion swart and browne: hee was exceeding strong, yet much withered in his left arme: he was violent, fierce, and bloudily cruell; a good souldier, discret to order well, and politicke to rule. Hee was very hastie and forward in great expeditions and weightie actions; yet wise, and well aduised before hee would attempt to fight. He was ambitious beyond measure, and his desires for soueraignty had no bounds. What he contriued, were it good or bad, hee would by one meanes or by another assuredly effect it. Hee made his conscience in all things to serue his will, though his will could not bee obtained without the effusion of guiltlesse blood. He would oftentimes make himselfe poore by his lavish bounty to such as wickedly serued his turne: and would againe quickly enrich himselfe by pilling and by polling of ciuill and of honest men. Hee was so cunning a dissembler, that he would accompany most familiarly, and iest pleasantly with such as hee inwardly hated in his heart. Hee spared no mans death, whose life

resisted

resisted his vngodly purposes; nor punished any man for any offence, if his wickednesse might be applied to his seruice. This ambitious, this fierce, and this cruell man, in his brother king *Edward* daies (as wise men did coniecture) directed his aime to make himselfe a king. For he with others murdered Prince *Edward* the eldest sonne of king *Henry* the Sixth: and with his owne hand he slew the same king when he was a prisoner in the Tower; and was consenting (as the world blabbed) to the death and destruction of his elder brother, *George* Duke of Clarence, in the same place.

King *Edward*'s death, and the minority of his two sonnes, gaue him fit opportunity to worke mischief, which first of all he resolved to prosecute by the reuiving of old grudges betwixt the *Queenes* kindred and the *Kings*, although the last King in his death-bed had reconciled them, and made them all friends. For hee knew, that where malice and hatred are of counsell, there no good action or sound conclusion can bee expected. And by this practice he endeouored first to make himselfe equall with the best, and then to be the best of all.

Wee must also now obserue, that at the time of king *Edward*'s death the young Prince in his owne person kept his residence and Court at *Ludlow* in the dominion of *Wales*, that by his presence he might restrain the *Welshmen* from such outrageous enterprises as oftentimes their licentious & bad manners incited them to commit. And the protection of his person was by the last king appointed to *Anthony* Earle *Ryours* the *Queenes* brother, and by the mothers side Vncle to the said Prince. And her allies and her kinsfolkes did now possesse all roomes and offices of honour and of profit about him, hee being king: which the Duke of *Glocester* much maligned, and so scorned it, that in his conceits he contriued how he might thrust them all out of those places. For which purpose hee oftentimes secretly and seriously conferred with *Edward* Duke of *Buckingham*, & *Richard* Lord *Hastings*, who was Chamberlaine to the last king. To them hee discovered the meane descent of the *Queene*, and of her kinsfolkes in respect of theirs, and told them plainly, that if those Vptarts remained so neere vnto the king in his youth, they would (through his fauour) be so powerfull when he came to his full age, that all their honours, their possessions, and their liues, would be in danger to be made subiect to their wills. And therefore hee aduised them to ioyne with him for their remoue, and to diuide and share betwixt themselves all such benefits as by those meanes should be atchieued.

These faire perswasions, and their owne ambitious humours,

H h 2

quickly

10.E.4.

10.E.4.

10.E.4.

Richard aimed
at the
Crown.

*His practice
against the
Queenes
kindred.*

quickly wrought the said two great Lords, not onely to hearken willingly to this discourse, but also to bee confederates with the Duke of Glocester in that practice; which quickly was attempted in this manner,

The Queene with the Earle Ryers her brother, and with her sonne Richard Lord Grey, and with her other friends being guarded with a strong power of armed men and souldiers, intended to bring the young king from Wales towards London to be crowned. And the Duke of Glocester knowing that if his feat were not wrought before that time, it could not easily be effected after, and considering likewise, that if he with his confederates should come armed against the king to meet him, and by open violence attempt to get the kings person into their possession, their said enterprife would bee censured and adiudged to be a rebellious action, and no lesse than Treason. Wherefore hee cunningly disguised and sent his letters to the Queene, and called to her remembrance the hearty loue and friendship which the late king her deceased husband on his death-bed had ratified and confirmed betwixt the Lords of his owne blood and alliance, and the kinsfolkes of the Queene. He likewise informed her, that it was commonly reported, that her brother and her friends which were next about the Kings person, intended with a strong power and with many armed men to conduct his Maiesty (for his Coronation) from Wales to the City of London. He promised and swore vnto her, that his humble duty to his Soueraigne, and his vnfaigned loue to her and to her kinsfolkes and children, incited him seriously & earnestly to aduise and counsell her and them, to dismisse those companies of armed men, for that he feared much lest the gathering of them together would be the occasion of new broiles, and of ciuill wars. For seeing (quoth he) that many former battailes triumphing in blood, haue now made peace, and seeing that the state of the whole Kingdome hateth Armes, and seeing that the King hath no Competitor for his Crowne, and that loue and friendship hath vnited and knit together the mindes and the hearts of all his Nobles, and seeing that perfect tranquillity and a secure reconciliation hath quieted and gladdened all the people; certainly the Kings comming towards the City of London with an armed traine, will make the Lords of the deceased Kings blood, and many others, exceeding iealous of their intencion, and to be fearfull lest some secret plot be cunningly contriued to surprisethem, when in duty and for seruice they shall make their accesse vnto the King; and that such feare and iealousie will occasion them (for their defence

and

and safety) to raise the like forces, whereof might ensue much danger, discontentment, and perhaps blowes.

The Queene and her friends (who meant none ill) taking much comfort in this aduice, because she supposed it sprang from hearty loue, and also because the Duke of Gloucester had at the same time with all respectiue duty and reuerence likewise written vnto the King, and louingly to the Earle *Ryvers* her brother, and vnto *Richard Lord Grey* her sonne, caused all such strength of armed men as was provided for the kings conduction towards London, to be dismissed and sent away. And the said Earle, and Lord, and some others of their friends, brought the King forth in his journey to the Citie of Northampton, and the next day to Stony Stratford, being ten miles from thence. And because that little town was not capable of the whole traine, the Earle *Ryvers* and his private followers remained that night in Northampton. But on the sudden & vnlooked for, the Dukes of Gloucester and of Buckingham (being strongly accompanied with great store of resolute attendants) dismounted themselves in the Earles Inne, and with all complements of loue and friendship they passed the time with him, and by reason of their extraordinary familiarity, he secured himselfe of their hearty and vsained loue. But as soone as their companies were in their beds, the two Dukes seised vpon all the keyes of the same Inne, and caused all the waies betwixt those two Townes so to be watched and warded, that no person (of what degree or qualitie soeuer hee were) could haue any passage there. And they reuealed, that the pretence of their so doing was because no man before them should in the morning prevent them for diligence to attend vpon the King. Whereof when the Earle *Ryvers* had intelligence, necessitie compelled him to dissemble, and to seeme as if hee suspected none euill, although he knew that by the Dukes policie and crafty cunning he was ouertaken and beguiled. Yet in friendly and in a iocund maner hee came vnto the two Dukes, and asked them why they had so done. But suddenly they entred into a needlesse and causelesse quarrell with the said Earle, surprised his person, and committed him to safe keeping. And then in good and quiet maner the two Dukes rode to Stony Stratford, and humbly presented their duties and their seruice to the King, who being altogether ignorant of that which so newly had hapned, receiued them with a cheerfull countenance and with much ioy. But presently they also seised vpon *Richard Lord Grey*, the Kings halfe-brother, & vpon *Sir Thomas Langham*, and some others, all which they sent (vnder a strong Guard) to the Castle of Pomfret in the

*The Kings
strength is
sent away.*

*The Queenes
kindred are
betrained.*

*They are im-
prisoned.*

*The Kings
servants are
removed.*

*The Queen
with her chil-
dren take
Sanctuary.*

*The King is
brought to
London.*

*The Duke of
Glocester is
made Pro-
tector.*

*Hee possesseth
himselfe of
the Kings
brother the
Duke of
York.*

North, where without any iudiciall sentence, or legall proceeding against them, they were beheaded vpon the same day that the Lord Hastings Lord Chamberlaine (who conspired in that action with the two Dukes) did lose his head.

The two Dukes also and the Lord Chamberlaine removed from the King all his other Officers, and most of his meniall servants; informing all men which attended the King, or expected the sequell of this businesse, that the said Earle, Lord, and Knight, with some others, had resolved to destroy all the Lords of King Edwards blood, and to rule both the King and Common-weale according to their owne will.

When the Queene (who at that time lay, with the Kings brother, the young Duke of Yorke, and with her five daughters, at Westminster) heard of these tumults, and what had hapned to her brother, sonne, and friends, it repented her much that she had advised them (vpon the Duke of Glocesters cunning letters) to dismisse & to discharge their souldiers and men of war. And because she had good cause to feare the event thereof, shee with her children entred into the Sanctuary there. The young king also mourned grievously to see the wofull tragedie wherein his friends misfortunes were so vunexpectedly asked. But the two Dukes recomforted him with the expression of their humble duties and seruice, and with a thousand protestations of their fidelity and troth towards his Highnesse during their liues: and then they brought him with great honour neer to the City of London, where he was met by the Lord Maior, and five hundred graue Citizens more: in whose presence the Duke of Glocester vsed such humble duty and reuerence to the King, and so discreetly demeaned himselfe towards him, that none of them suspected that any thing was done but for the Kings preservation, and for his good: yea the Nobility and Counsellors of Estate were so inwardly perswaded to rest in the same beliefe, that (by their generall consent) they forthwith made him the Protector both of the Kings royall person, and of his Kingdome.

When the Duke of Glocester had procured and obtained this high place which his heart infinitely desired, (the same being an office of greatest honour, of confidence, and of trust) he made no doubt but that his purpose would quickly (though wickedly) bee brought to passe as himselfe wished, if he could also get the young Duke of York into his hands. And to the end that his desires might not remaine fruitlesse, hee grievously complained to the Kings Counsell of the froward obstinacie of the Queene, who detained the

the

the said young Duke dishonourably in the Sanctuarie as an offender, and in prison, causing thereby the gouernment of the whole Kingdome, and the Nobles and Officers thereof, to be exceedingly blamed and taxed, not only at home, but also in all other Christian Prouinces and Kingdomes. He urged also, that his Grand-master the young king was infinitely wronged and disheartened, for that he was not permitted to enioy the society and the company of his owne and only brother, whom about all other creatures in the world he respected and longed for.

The Lords hauing considered of the Dukes motion, resolved that he had spoken well, and that it was fitting it should bee hearkened vnto. And thereupon, they made especiall choice of the Cardinall Archbishop of Yorke (vpon whose fidelitie and loue, the Queene did not a little relye) to goe to her, and to pray her (without further trouble) to send the young Duke her Son to the king his brother: that he might be comforted with his sight, and bee made merrie and iocund with his company. And withall they required him to tell her, that for many reasons the young Duke might not be detained there.

1. First, because the whole estate of this kingdome would be slandered at home and among forrain Nations, if it should permit so young a childe, by birth so noble, so neere vnto the king, and so innocent, to liue in prison: (for cuery Sanctuary is a prison.)

2. Secondly, because none could claime the benefit of such a place, but he whose conscience did accuse him of some offence, for which he feared to be punished by the law. But the conscience of this young Duke cannot be so burdened, because his infancie and his innocencie doe excuse him of any such fault, and therefore hee needed no protection there.

3. Thirdly, that none might enioy the priuiledge of a Sanctuarie, but such a one as is enabled by true discretion to demand it. But the young Duke (by reason of his infancie) hath not sufficient discretion to require it, and therefore hee is not capable of it, nor may enioy it.

4. And last of all, hee was required to assure her, that any person might be taken out of a Sanctuary; if it bee for his good and welfare, and not to his hurt; or to punish him: and that therefore if the Queene did obstinately refuse to deliuer him, it was resolved and determined, that hee should bee taken from thence, and from her without her leaue; and the rather, for that great suspicion and feare was iustly conceined, that her frowardnesse or her ialousie would perswade her to send him beyond the Sea, as

*Reasons why
the young
Duke ought
not to be in
the Sanctu-
arie.*

if

if hee should bee more safe there than in his brother the Kings Court.

When this round message was done vnto the Queene, though it so nipped her at the heart, that willingly shee would not let him goe, alleging that none but his owne mother was more fit to tutor him, or to attend him, he being so young, sickly, and very weak; and that each of those two brethren was the others safety so long as they were kept asunder, and that the life of the one was maintained in the bodie of the other, and that if one of them did well, the other was in no perill or danger, and that nothing was more hazzardous than to keepe them both in one place together: yet when shee perceined which way the game went, and that it was resolved by the Protector, and by his friends, that argumenes should not preuaile, shee embraced the lovely young Duke in her armes, she kissed him many times, she wept bitterly, and praying Almighty God to preserve and to defend him from all iniurie and dangers, shee deliuered him to the Arch-bishop, telling him, that shee would require that poore and innocent childe at his hands. And thus vnwillingly and sorrowfully shee did let him goe.

*A monstrous
dissembler.*

When the harmlesse infant was by the Arch-bishop deliuered into the Protectors hands, who with many other Lords attended the Queenes answer in the Starre-chamber, hee tooke him (before the whole assemblie) in his armes, hee hugged and embraced him, and kissed him once and twice, and againe and againe, protesting vpon his soule, that no worldly thing (his Maiestie only excepted) was so deare vnto him as that young childe, when as indeede hee meant nothing more than the destruction and ruine of them both. And having brought him to the King, who was infinitely ioyed with his presence and company, hee conuied them (within few daies after) with princely pompe and attendance thorow the City of London to the Tower, vnder the pretence of an especiall care and prouidence that they should in safety remaine there untill the Common-weales troubles were thorowly quieted and appeased, whereas in truth and in deede nothing was out of frame, nothing was ill ordered, but by himselfe, and by some other great Lords who wholly applied themselves to his will.

*The King
and his brother
sent to
the Tower.*

*A bloudie
conspiracie.*

When the Protector had thus couped vp those two young Princes, hee then began more seriously to determine how hee might speedily make himselfe a King. And though for a while hee staggered whether or no hee might make the Duke of Buckingham acquainted with his purpose, yet in regard that hee stood assured of his loue, and knew that his project could not bee effected without his

his priuie and assistance, because he was so mighty and so powerful, therefore hee found a fit time and a secret place to conferre with him about that businesse: and with small perswasions, and by the offer of his sonne to the Dukes daughter in marriage, with the gift of the whole Earledome of Hartford, wherunto the Duke pretended a rightfull title, but neuer could obtaine it from king Edward the Fourth, and by the diuiding and sharing of the greater part of the kings treasure among themselves, hee wonne him not onely to consent vnto his villanie, but also to assist him in that plot.

The Lord Hastings (whom the Protector for old acquaintance, friendship, and loue, had newly settled in the office of Chamberlaine to the young king) was euer faithfull and trustie to king Edward the Fourth, & had vowed his heart to the seruice of his new master: in so much that the Protector was not assured whether he might attempt to winne him to ioyne with himselfe and with the Duke of Buckingham in his conspiracie, or no. But in the end hee fearing lest he could not doe that mischief safely, except the said Lord were either wonne or destroyed, hee resolved vpon one of them. Wherefore first of all by liberall gifts, and by large promises of extraordinary aduancement and preferment, hee wonne to his will one Catesby, who was both wittie and well learned in the Lawes of this Realme, and was the most inward of all others with the said Lord Hastings, from whom hee had receiued his best fortunes, and his chiefeest meanes to gaine. Him the Protector employed and instructed, that by darke speeches, and by some mysticall propositions, he should as farre off seele and vndermine the inclination of the said Lord his dearest friend touching that matter. Which when he treacherously and craftily had done, he informed the Protector that there was no possibility euer to winne him thereunto.

Hereupon the Protector resolving to cut him short, called a Grand Counsell of the Lords at the Tower of London, proposing to them for their taske the consideration of all fitting preparations for the speedy Coronation of the king, when as indeed hee intended no such thing.

The Lords being assembled, and set downe in their places, and all of them long expecting the repaire of the Protector, who staid long, at length he came in, tooke his chaire, saluted them all kindly, excused his long absence, merrily iested with some of them, & was more than ordinarily pleasant with them all. But as soone as he had proposed some method to their present conference, he told

Doctor

The Lord Hastings could not be wonne.

A plot full of villany.

Doctor *Morton*, Bishop of Elic, whom hee loued not, that he was informed that hee had store of Straberies in his Garden in Holborn, & intreated him to send for some, which with all expedition he did, being much gladded that he found the Protector (as hee conceived) so kinde towards him. But (behold) vnspectedly and vpon a sudden the Protector (faining some necessity of a short absence) rose vp, and requested the Lords to proceede in the matter which then they had in hand, and promised to make a quicke returne, which within one houre after hee performed accordingly. But being placed in his chaire, the Lords perceiued that some things were amisse: for he bent his browes, bit his lippe, cast his eyes vpon the ground, wrung his fists, looked fiercely, sighed deeply, and by euery vnpleasing gesture he openly expressed the disquieted passions of a troubled minde. The Lords (who looked on him sadly, and were perplexed with sudden perturbations) wondred much at this sudden change, but knew not what it meant. And when a profound silence had prepared them all to hearken what would be said, the Protector by way of questioning proposed what they desired who wickedly had intended and practised his destruction, hee being Viceroy and Protector to the King: The Lords (who were all free and absolutely guiltlesse of any such crime) sat still as men amazed, and not one of them spake a word. But at length the Lord *Hastings* (who by reason of his great familiaritie with the Protector, imagined that hee was highest in his fauour) answered thus: My Lord, such as haue so transgressed the Law, deserue the severest punishments which by the Law may be inflicted vpon them, and all the Lords assented thereunto. Then quoth the Protector, that Sorceresse (meaning the Queene) and that Strumpet *Shores* wife, haue conspired together by witchcraft to deprive me of my life: and that you may bee right well assured that it is true, behold (I pray you) and see how their villany hath already seised vpon my body. For by it my left arme is already wasted and consumed, and therewithall hee stroke vp his sleee, and shewed his arme naked before them all. Thus dared hee to doe, albeit that all such as were there present were well assured that his arme had neuer been otherwise from his mothers wombe. And moreover, no man was so full of folly to beleeeue that if the Queene had intended such a mischief, shee would haue consorted with *Shores* wife about all other women, because she was the Concubine of king *Edward* her deceased husband. And besides all this, they all knew that the Queene was religious, temperate, milde, charitable and vertuous

in

*A likely
matter.*

1.

2.

*Shores wife
was King
Edwards
Concubine.*

3.

in all her actions, hating to reuenge although meanes and opportunity were offered vnto her to doe mischief.

The Lord *Hastings* (who after King *Edwards* death, conuersed with *Shores* wife, vsing her as his Concubine; and but the same Morning leauing her in his owne bed) being desirous (if he might) to appease the Protector's rage towards her: And (in some sort) being willing to excuse her, Replied thus, My Lord, if the Queene and shee haue so done, and therewithall the Protector's indignation (waxing intemperate) interrupted him, thus: Thou Traitor (quoth hee) tellest thou mee of Iffs and Ands; I tell thee they haue done it, and as he spake those words with a lowd voice, hee clapt his hand rudely vpon the Table board, vpon the noyse wherof, the whole Chamber was suddenly stuffed and filled with Armed men. And one of them (at his first entrance) strake with his Holbard at the Lord *Stanleys* head: who preuenting the violence, but not all the blow, to saue his life fell vnder the Table, but did lose much bloud. The Protector himselfe arrested the said Lord *Hastings*, and accused him (by generall termes) of high Treason: and forthwith without any other proceeding or iudgement, caused him to be carried out into the Greene, and his Head vpon a Logge to be chopped off.

And it is to be noted, that this execution was thus done on him the same day, and at the same houre, that the Earle *Ryuers*, the Lord *Richard Grey*, Sir *Thomas Vaughan*, and their other friends, were executed without legal proceeding in the Castle of Pomfret: which Execution was appointed by the Protector, by the Duke of Buckingham, and by the said Lord *Hastings*, who little dreamed that he should in the like maner haue died at the same time.

This Execution being thus dispatched, the Protector caused those Armed to seise vpon the Cardinall Archbishop of Yorke; and vpon the Bishop of Elie, and vpon the Lord *Stanley*, and some others, all which were seuerally committed to seuerall Prisons in that place.

And presently the Protector and the Duke of Buckingham, thrusting themselues into vile and vncomely harnesse, as if necessity had compelled them to shift themselues into the first and worst that came vnto their hands: They sent for diuers worthie Citizens of London, and required them with all posting speed to repaire thither, which they did. And vnto them the Protector passionately related, that his death was conspired, and that his life should haue beene taken from him as he saue that morning in Counsell with the Lords, by the Lord *Hastings*, and by his wicked

The Lord Hastings punished for his whoredome.

Armed men.

The Lord Hastings beheaded.

Murder punished.

A bad shift.

ked complices, if by sudden force and violence he had not preuented that mischief: and so much they were required to tell their friends, that they might haue true notice of the cause of this sudden broile and execution in the Tower. And within two houres after that the Lord *Hastings* was deprived of his head, a solemne and a long Proclamation written with a faire hand in parchment, and being vnder the Great Seale of England, was brought into the Citie, and with great solemnitie proclaimed there by an Herald of Armes. But by all circumstances it was coniectured by all wise men, that the same was indited, written, and sealed some daies before.

Doctor
Shas's Ser-
mon.

Thus when the wicked Protector had impiously cut off the heads of those Lords, who would still haue kept him backe from doing of too much mischief if they had liued, hee caused Doctor *Shas* (a man more learned than vertuous, and as wicked in practices as the Protector was, who did instruct him) in a Sermon the Sunday following at *Pauls Crosse*, to blazon the honourable birth and parentage of the Protector, to relate his vertues, to commend his valour, to weaken the fame and honour of the deceased king *Edward* by reason of his lasciuious wantonnesse with *Shores* wife, and with many others; to bastardize all his children, as being borne in adultery, and out of lawfull marriage, for that king *Edward* was solemnly contracted (as he affirmed) vnto the Lady *Elizabeth Lucie* (whom he begat with childe) before such time as he married with the Lady *Elizabeth Grey*; and also because he was in the person of *Richard* the great Earle of Warwick (before his said marriage) affied vnto the Lady *Bona*, sister to *Carlot* the wife of the French king.

Hee also accused the Protectors owne mother of great incontinencie, when king *Edward* and *George* Duke of Clarence (his two elder brothers) were begotten. And thus he strived to make euery one crooked besides himselfe, who was most crooked of all. And (in conclusion) the Doctor applying his speech to the worthinesse and goodnesse of the Protector, he supposed that the people could not chuse but receiue him for their vndoubted Soueraigne Lord and King; and therefore hee strived to prepare the multitude to haue shouted out when the King came in, and to haue cried, King *Richard*, King *Richard*: but he failed of his purpose; for euery man was silent, and more surprised with wonder than with applause, to see and to perceiue how cowardly, how vnnaturally, & how wickedly these affaires and businesses were carried, not to continue the Protector to be a Subiect any longer, but to be a King.

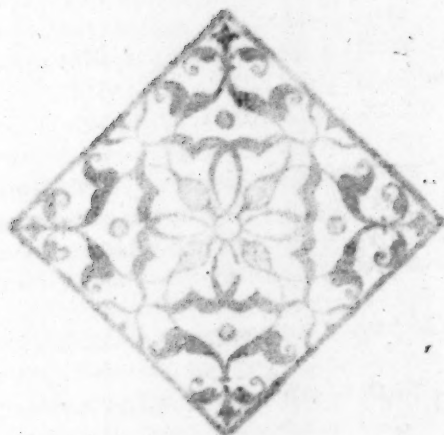
And

And the next day in the Guildhall of London the Duke of Buckingham by like arguments endeoured to make the Protector the rightfull and vndoubted heire and inheritor of the Crowne. And albeit that the Townesmen tooke no contentment in this message, nor did by their voices assent to that which to them was declined, yet (against their wills) the Duke of Buckingham procured them the next day to goe with him and with many other Lords to Baynards Castle to the Protector, where they offered to receiue him for their lawfull King, and praied him to vndergoe that burden. But oftentimes he refused to grant them their request. But at last he granted it. And thus he gained and wonne (by their persuasions) his hearts desire.

*The Duke is
now King
Richard.*



And the next day in the Guildhall of London the Duke of York
 fighting by like arguments endeavored to make the Protector the
 rightful and vnderdoubted heir and inheritor of the Crowne And
 albeit that the Towre men took no contentment in this matter
 yet not did by their voices assent to that which to them was de-
 livered yet against their will the Duke of Buckenham presented
 them the next day to go with him and with many other lords to
 Barnard Castle to the Protector, where they offered to receive
 him for their lawfull King, and prayed him to vndergoe that
 burden. But otherwise he refused to grant them their
 request. But at last he granted it. And thus he
 gained and wonne (by their pe-
 titions) his heart
 desire.





THE
HISTORIE OF
KING RICHARD
THE THIRD.



When king *Richard* had taken vpon him the gouernement of this Kingdome, and was crowned, instead of noble and Prince-like courtesie, hee applied himselfe to all basenesse, striving thereby (but all in vaine) to winne the loue and fauour of his people. And not seeming to take any notice that the Lord *Strange*, sonne and heire apparant to the Lord *Stanley*, intended to raise an Army in the North, because his father had been wronged, and was then imprisoned

by the king, but pretending that he loued him when he might punish him, he did not only set him at liberty, but also made him the Steward of his owne house.

He also enlarged the Archbishop of York, but committed Doctor *Morton* Bishop of Elie as a prisoner to the Duke of Buckingham, who was afterwards a principall meanes of his confusion, and of

1483.
1.

Cowardly dissimulation.

D. Morton committed.

Nobles created.

The French King despised King Richard.

The two young Princesses are murdered.

Sir Robert Brakenbury.

Lancelot Trillem.

King Richards destruction, as in the sequell of this History more particularly it shall appear.

The King, to make himselfe strong, by conferring of great honours upon others, created his onely child Edward (who was of the age of ten years) Prince of Wales: and John Howard (who was both valiant in the field, and wise in counsell) was by him created Duke of Norfolk. And Sir Thomas Howard (his eldest sonne) was made Earle of Surrey. The Lord William Barkley was advanced to the Earldome of Nottingham. And Francis Lord Laue (whom he entirely loued) was made Viscount Laue.

And when hee had (as he imagined) so surely settled his estate, that froward fortune could not change it, by his Ambassadors he made offer to Lewis the French King to conclude a peace. But Lewis so much detested his bloody cruelties and his murders, that hee would not vouchsafe to see the Ambassadors which hee sent, nor to heare the message which they brought.

This froward and some others so pinched him at the heart, and the Deuill tooke such an advantage of him, by reason of his ambitious and wicked minde, that he supposed he could neuer be reputed and truly honoured as a King; so long as his two harmelesse and poore Nephewes drew any breath; as though so horrible and so execrable and bloody a murder could winne him loue and reputation among his discontented people.

Thus whilest his head forged this vile and villanous conceit, he made his progresse towards the Cite of Gloucester, as if he onely intended by his presence to honour that place from whence his former title of digniry was deriued, strongly perswading himself, that if this ungodly and hainous fact were committed in his absence, no man would then repute him to bee guiltie of that mischief.

Wee must be informed here, that because from a meane estate hee had raised Sir Robert Brakenbury to the dignity of Knight-hood; and had made him Lieu-tenant of the Tower, he considered that these his fauours, and many more which hee might hope for, would haue incited him (for his sake) to haue committed any villany whatsoever. But the loue which this vertuous and good Knight bare to vertue, and the great care which hee had to keepe a quiet and a guiltlesse conscience, made him to refuse to perpetrate that murder, which by the Kings letters he was peremptorily enioyned and commanded to performe.

Whereat when the King had stormed, sworne, and cursed like a Fiend, hee called to his remembrance, that in the Tower there lodged

judged one *John Terril*, a man who was needy both in ventury and of good meanes, to support his haughy and his ambitious mindes, and who was likely (for rewards and promotions like) to kill his owne father and his friend. To him the king by his letters disclosed the earnestnesse of his desires, and promised larger recompence if the fact were done, than such a hellish feruor could desire. When he had made this plott to his will, hee then by his letters required the Lieu-tenant to deliver to him the keyes of the Tower, which he forthwith did. And this evoy thing being fitted according to his desires, the next night *John Terril* sent *Miles Forest*, *John Dighton*, and two other gracoless and cruell Executioners, into the poore childrens chamber, where they wickedly smothered them in their beds, and buried them in the staires foot, from whence they were remoued, and obscurely bestowed in some vaulted place.

The newes which proclaimed that the two young Princes were victoriously found dead in their beds, amazed the Nobles and the common people of this Kingdome, and so inwardly perplexed the dying Queen, that every place returned Battiles of lamentations and of sorrow, and every mannet sent forth streames of teares in token of their gricfe. Only the Tyrant and his Confederates, for a few moneths, solaced themselves in this, that *Richard* was now a compleat King, and with admited policie had surely settled himselfe and his posterity in this Kingdome.

But wicked and bloudie Tyrant, let such as hate thy vices, demand of thee some questions; and then thou shalt plainly see, and be thine owne Judge, whether this land did ever breed a more vngodly monster than thy selfe.

1. Could not the infancie and the imbecillitie of those tender and sweet babes (who were vnable to resist or to doe thee harme) perswade thee to suffer them to live?

2. Could not their innocency incline thine heart to pite and to take compassion on them?

3. Could not their proximity of blood with thine, induce thee to spare them?

4. Could not the confidence which by the Common-weale was reposed in thee, make thee faithfull, being trusted?

How came it to passe, that thou (by violence and by villanie) shouldst dare to take away the life of thy Master, nay of thy Soueraigne Lord and King, the annointed of the Lord?

5. Could not the shame which the world would spot thee with,

wish, which thou haddest done it, deterre thee from consoling
 toinidmzid hnt yndgord zid moqul or, zomam booz to hnt

7. Diddest thou not foresee how hatefull thy selfe, nay how
 odious thy name would be vnto all good men, when thy wicked-
 nesse should be revealed?

8. By Gods Commandement thou wast prohibited to doe
 murder. What then made thee so to neglect and to contemne the
 precept of thy God, that (in despite of him and of his Law) thou
 committedst this execrable murder?

9. Could not the gastly examples of Gods severe iudgements,
 wrathfully poured downe vpon such murderers, make thee afraid
 to kill thine owne kinsmen?

10. Why should the Denill and boundlesse ambition carry thee
 headlong into such a Sea of wickednesse, to thine owne ruine and
 destruction?

11. What couldst thou desire to haue, which thou haddest
 not?

12. Diddest thou want riches? Why then the whole treasure of the
 Kingdome was to be disposed of as thou listest.

13. Diddest thou want lands and linings? Thou couldst not
 haue wished for any that the King had, but with a word thou
 mightest haue had thy share therein.

14. Diddest thou want authority to command, and to make
 thee great? No, thou diddest not: for thou swaiedst the Kings per-
 son and his whole Kingdome at thy will and pleasure.

15. No, no. But thou wast destitute of the grace of God,
 which made thee capric of all goodnesse. From henceforth when
 thou art named, the paper, the tongue, and the eare shall sharply
 accuse thee of innocent blood, yea thine owne conscience shall
 condemne thee; and (as a hangman) torment and torture thee
 with paines and punishments which shall not quickly end.

Every man already seeth, and reioycest to see how thou art per-
 plexed, and canst not be in rest. Thou fearest lest thine enemies
 will subdue thee. Thou distrustest thy friends, lest they will be-
 tray thee. Thou eatest little, because nothing can doe thee any
 good. Thou sleepest vnquietly in thy bed, because visions, fanta-
 sies, and fearfull dreames doe tell thee, that (except thou speedily
 doe repent) thou must expect vengeance for the guiltlesse blood
 which (like a monster) thou hast spilt. Thou art vnpatient with
 all men, because thine owne heart is still troubled. Thou bleest
 thy lippe, because thou deuilest how thou maiest doe greater mis-
 chiefes. Thou settest thine hand furiously vpon thy daggers, pur-
 posing

The punish-
 ments of a
 murderer.

- 1.
- 2.
- 3.
- 4.
- 5.
- 6.
- 7.

posing to kill other, because thou art surprised with continuall feare lest every man will kill thee. Thou bendest thy browes, and lookest silently, because no good mans endeauours can content thee. What shall wee more say? The shortnesse of thy life, thy sorrowes whilst thou breathest, and the assurance of thy shamefull death, doe tell vs, that these bloudie factis of thine doe make the earth loth and vnwilling to sustain so heauie and so bad a burden. And therefore to Gods mercie we must leaue thee, but cannot leaue (as yet) to speake of thee, vntill the blood of thy two innocent Nephewes, and of all others whom vniustly thou hast slaine, be reuenged in this world by thy shamefull death.

Now when king Richards progresse was ended, and hee returned vnto London, he endeauored by the making of good Lawes, and by executing of them with fauour and with mercy, and by his bounteous liberality to the poorer sort, and by his humilkie, gentlenesse, and courtesie, to insinuate himselfe into the loue and fauour of his people: But God (who would not suffer him long to enioy his worldly dignitie and honour without crosses) deprived him of his only childe, the young Prince of Wales, for whom he was much grieved.

Now must wee know, that as Doctor Morton Bishop of Elie, was singularly well learned, so was he exceeding witty, politicke, and cunning. And of all those his qualities he made such vse, that in the end he obtained his liberty, occasioned the Duke of Buckinghames ouerthrow, procured the destruction of king Richard, conioyned (by marriage) the two Houses of Lancaster & York, aduanced the Earle of Richmond to the Crown, and also preferred himselfe to great honour, as hereafter it shall appeare.

The Duke of Buckingham (to whom he was a prisoner) was not only great in regard of his high dignitie and large possessions, but by his learning and much applauded courtesie hee also wonne the extraordinary loue and fauour of all sorts & degrees of people in this Kingdome. But his witty prisoner perceiuing that hee was ambitious, and greedie of his owne praise and commendation, as commonly great men are, insinuated himselfe into his especial loue and fauour, by applying his talke and conference to those humours, in so much that within a short time the Dukes heart conceived nothing which his tongue reuealed not to the Bishop, yea they beganne to speake their mindes freely each to other touching the bloudie villanies and tyrannie of the King.

This craftie Bishop likewise, to prouoke the Duke not onely to a further detestation of those cruelties, but also to a resolued purpose

8.

9.

10.

11.

12.

*Good fruits
from an euill
tree.*

*K. Richard is
made child-
lesse.*

1484.

2.

*Doctor
Morton.*

*He applieth
himselfe to
the Dukes
honour.*

*They begin
to be inward-
ly familiar.*

*Morton ral-
lieth on the
Vsurper.*

1.

2.

3.

4.

5.

6.

7.

Mortons
motives.Buckingham's
resolution.

pose to depose him, first of all recounted how suddenly the Vsurper had rewarded the Duke himselfe: without whose aide and countenance he could neuer haue advanced himselfe (as he did) to the Crowne. Then he minded him of the instability of the kings word, who restored not to the Duke, nor to his sonne, the Earldome of Hartford, according to his promise in that behalf. Next vnto that he remembred him of the ieaiousie which the king conceiued of the Dukes greatnesse, so that he rather diminished, than in any sort graced or augmented his authority & power. Fourthly, the vilifying of the honour and reputation of his owne mother, making her a chaste, and such a woman as prostituted her bodie vnto strangers, in the conception of his two elder brothers, King Edward and the Duke of Clarence, to make himselfe more legitimate than they. Fifthly, his vnlawfull and bloudie exheriting of *Anthony Lord Rivers, Richard Lord Grey, Sir Thomas Mowbray*, and of the Lord *Hastings*, chiefe Chamberlaine to the two last kings. Sixthly, his horrible murdering of Prince Edward, the eldest son of king *Henry* the Sixth, and of the same king, and of the Duke of Clarence his owne brother. And last of all, and the worst of all, the bastardizing, deposing, and murdering of his poore, innocent, and guiltlesse Nephewes, which gaue him (by wicked usurpation) his passage to the Crowne and Scepter of this Kingdome.

All these things when the Bishop had recounted, then (for a full conclusion to all that had bene spoken) hee aduised the Duke of Buckingham, for the safety of his owne life, and for the preservation of his Countrey, either to make vse of his owne vertues and greatnesse, and of the extraordinary fauour and loue which all the people bare him, and to make himselfe their king, or otherwise to further the vniing of the two Houses of Lancaster and of York, by marrying of king Edwards eldest daughter, the Lady *Elizabeth* with the Earle of Richmond, the sonne and heire apparent of *Margaret Countesse* of Richmond, daughter and heire to the Duke of Buckingham's great Vncle *John Duke* of Somerset, son to *John of Gaunt* the fourth sonne of king *Edward* the Third, and so to make the said Earle a true and a lawfull king, by meanes whereof the Crowne of this kingdome should not only be settled where iustly it ought to bee, but also all future occasions of Factions and of Ciuill warres would bee taken cleane away, and the world should be quitted of such a Monster, who was loathed and hated by all good men.

The Duke of Buckingham, although he were ambitious beyond measure, and liked well to be stiled by the great name of a King, yet

yet because vsurpation must needs haue beene his best title, (and vsurpers neuer wanted chauce) hee therefore imployed his wisdome to conclude that match, and to make the Earle King.

When the Bishop (by often disputes) had thorowly confirmed the Duke in this his resolution, hee made him a solemne protestation, that if he would permit him to goe into his Ile of Elie, he then would quickly furnish the said Duke with store of money and of men. But the Duke was most desirous of his company for two reasons. First, because his escape would undoubtedly be laid vnto his charge, and reuenged if that project were not supported with sufficient strength. And secondly, because by his absence he should be deprived of such a friend; as was right well able to aduise and counsell him at his neede.

The Bishop knowing that whilst he was a prisoner, his head was subiect to King Richards command, and that his great familiaritie with the Duke cleared him of all suspicion vnmanerly to depart, watched his fittest time of opportunity, and being disguisefully apparrelled in base clothes, he secretly stole away, and came to Elie, where hee furnished himselfe among his friends with store of money and other necessaries, and then (without lingring) he sailed into Flanders, where by his counsell and best meanes he animated the Earle of Richmond, who was in Britaine, to return into England, to take to wife the Lady Elizabeth, King Edwards eldest daughter to depose the Tyrant, and to make himselfe a true and a lawfull King. He also sollicitied by his letters, and by secret messengers, diuers Noblemen and Gentlemen of this Realme, to bee aiding and assisting to the said Earle at his returne. And the Earle himselfe so preuailed with Francis Duke of Britaine, that albeit King Richard by his Ambassadors had strived by the disbursement and gift of much money, rich jewels, and by franke promises, to make him a new Prisoner, and consequently to depriue him of all good hope, yet the Duke of Britaine (as his faithfull and constant friend) began to succour him with his best helpees.

And albeit that this plot (denied by Morton) was exceeding secret, as all the Conspirators did imagine, yet was King Richard acquainted therewith as well as they. And therefore, to cut off the Duke of Buckingham from that Faction by violence, or else to win him by faire promises to take his part, he courteously importuned his company at the Court. But he hauing a guilty conscience, and knowing that King Richard was not nigardly in shedding of blood, nor vsed to spare any man of whom hee doubted or feared, submissiue and with humble termes excused his not comming,

Morton would faine be at libertie.

2.

Morton escapes.

He flieth into Flanders.

His motion and encouragement to the Earle of Richmond and to others.

K. Richard practiseth to get the Earle of Richmond.

1485.

3.

K. Richard knoweth Mortons plot. Buckingham refuseth to come to the Court.

by

*Armies are
raised.*

by reason of his indisposition to travell, occasioned by the infirmie of his weake bodie. The King (who could skilfully cast his water) perceiued that he was not sicke in bodie, but in minde towards him: wherefore by letters and sharpe threatnings, hee peremptorily commanded and required him to come. But the Duke rather desiring to haue a publike enemy than a dissembling friend, boldly returned him this answer, that hee repured him to bee a monster, a tyrant, a murderer, his enemy, and an valawfull King; and therefore that hee would not come vnto him. And knowing that his life was neere ended, except he would maintaine what hee had said by strength of armes in open field, hee went hastily into Wales, and raised a powerfull Army; and in Devonshire, and in Cornwall, Sir *Edward Courtney*, and *Peter Courtney* his brother, being Bishop of Exeter, did the like. So did Sir *Richard Guilford*, and some other Gentlemen in Kent. And *Thomas Grey* Marquesse Dorset, who forsaking the Sanctuary, rode into Yorkshyre, leuied there much people. Wherefore King *Richard* (to support his owne state, and to preserve his life, and to vanquish his stout and bold enemies) raised another Army.

These preparations being thus made, King *Richard* marched against the Duke, because hee accounted him to be the head of this conspiracie, and did perswade him selfe that he should bee quitted of all feare, if hee could vanquish him before hee ioyned his forces with his friends.

*This flood
hasteth the
Dukes death,
who consen-
ted to the
murder of
the two young
Princes.*

The Duke perceiuing the kings intention, resolved brauely to confront him, and to dare him face to face, for which purpose he determined to lead his whole army thorow the River of Seuerne at a low foord not far from the City of Gloucester. But in the night before he should passe over, such an incredible abundance of raine fell, and the showres so mainly poured down for ten daies following, that not onely the River was made vnpassable, but also the whole Countrey thereabout was surrounded with an excessiue flood, insomuch that grounds, villages, townes, and people were drowned or carried away, to the great hurt and preiudice of the inhabitants, who grieuously bewailed and sorrowed for their losse.

This enforced lingring, together with the Dukes wants of victuall, money, and of other necessities, so discomforted the waucering & vnconstant Welshmen, that when he thought him selfe sure of their helpe, they then ran away, and left him alone: and he him selfe (by perillous & hard shifting) was enforced to harbour himselfe neer vnto Shrewsbury in the house of one *Humfrey Banaster*, who

who was his seruant, and whom from a low degree hee had raised to a faire estate, authority, and worship. And the rest of the Dukes friends in other Prouinces (when they heard the certaintie of the Dukes ill speeding) vpon a sudden dispersed all their companies, and every one of them carefully shifted for himselfe, and many of them (by meanes of their diligence and good fortune) entred into the Sea, and arrived safely in the Duchy of Britaine, among whom were Sir Edward Courtney, Peter Courtney his brother Bishop of Exeter, Thomas Marquesse Dorset, John Lord Welles, Sir John Bourchier, Sir Edmund Woodville the old Queenes brother, Sir Robert Willoughby, Sir Giles Danney, Sir Thomas Arundel, Sir John Cheney, his two brethren, Sir William Barkley, Sir William Brandon, Sir Richard Edgewood, and some others.

The King having dispersed this cloud, which threatned a terrible storme, proscribed the Duke of Buckingham, and proposed the gift of a thousand pounds to him that should be the meane to take him: whereupon his faithlesse, treacherous, and vnthankfull seruant *Humphrey Basset* betraied him to *John Minton* Sheriffe of Shropshire, who with a strong Guard of armed men conueied him to Shrewsbury to the king, who being examined, confessed all in hope of fauour, but forthwith and without any legall proceedings or iudgement he lost his head.

In the meane time, whilest these things were in doing, the Earle of Richmond (who neither heard of this misfortune, nor of the arriual of his worthy friends, who flying out of England came into Britaine) having in his company almost five thousand men, entred into the Sea, and directed his course for this Realme. But in the evening after his departure out of Britaine, hee was so cruelly beaten with an hideous storme, which so suddenly assailed him & his, that some of his shippes were driven backe to the place from whence they came, others into Normandie, and only one of them (besides that in which himselfe was) remained at the Sea. The next day as the Earle came before Poole, he perceived that all the Coasts and Hills adioyning were thickly sprinkled with armed men, who eagerly attended his arriual by the commandement of King *Richard*: and diuers practices were vsed to traine him in. But because he feared the worst, as hee had good cause, taking the benefir of a faire winde, hee returned, and landed safely within the Duchy of Normandy, from whence he sent to the new and young King of France, *Charles* the Eighth, desiring that by his free leaue and licence he might safely passe thorow that Prouince into Britaine, who not only granted his request, but also (pitying his wants

The Duke is proscribed.

His seruant betraieeth him

He is beheaded.

Richmond saileth for England.

A storme taketh him, and he returneth.

He is relieved by the French King.

He taketh an
oath.

He is attain-
ted of trea-
son.

Collingborne
executed.

Richard gave
a Hogge for
his Supporter.

He attempt-
eth to get
Richmond
into his
hands.

Peter Lan-
doy a base
flame.

and euill fortune) relieued and furnished him with much money. So he hauing collected his dispersed ships, sent them into Britaine, and himselfe by land went thither, where (to his exceeding comfort and great ioy) hee met with his distressed friends, all which were valiant men, and great Commanders in the times of warre. With these Captaines hee entred into new consultations, and giuing to them his solemne oath to take to his wife the Ladie *Elizabeth*, eldest daughter to King *Edward* the Fourth, if his successe were fortunate, they all became his subiects, and honoured him as their King: and all of them (by the Duke of Britaines aide and succours) endeaoured to make readie a new Fleet, and such souldiers as they could get, for his returne. In the meane time King *Richard* by sundry executions shortned the number of the Earles friends, and procured him and his associates by an act of Parliament to be attainted of High Treason, and thereby hee enabled himselfe to seize vpon all their lands and moucables which he could finde. But his cruelties were so inhumane and barbarous, that they were condemned in the opinions of all his people, who sharply accused Sir *Richard Ractiffe*, Sir *William Catesbie*, and the Viscount *Loael* his three minions, and wicked counsellors, as furtherers and abettors in those mischiefs: so that (among others) one *Collingborne* was executed as a Traitor for making and dispersing of this short ryme:

*The Rat, the Cat, and Loael the Dogge,
Rule all England vnder the Hogge.*

Now though the Duke of Buckingham could not hurt king *Richard*, (for a dead dogge biteth not) yet he resolved by new friendship and alliance to make himselfe more strong, for which purpose he not only concluded a peace with *James* then King of Scots, but also a marriage between a neece of his, named the Lady *Anne*, and the Prince of Rothsay, the eldest sonne of the said King. Hee also attempted once more (by lauish prodigality) to get into his hands the worthy & braue Earle of Richmond, and for that purpose hee sent his Ambassadors into Britaine to the Duke, to offer to him great store of siluer and of gold, and all the Rents and the Reuenues of the said Earle & of his Confederates, if he would be pleased to giue him the quiet and the safe possession of him. The Duke at that time was exceeding sicke, so that his High Treasurer *Peter Landoy* (who at *S. Maloes* had freed the said Earle from the Ambassadors of king *Edward* the Fourth, as formerly we haue heard) ordered and disposed of all the affaires and businesses of that Countrey: wherefore those bribes and promises were made and

and tendred vnto him, and hee (being greedie of so great a prey) did vndertake with great expedition to effect all things according to their desire. But notwithstanding all this secret practising and cunning iuggling, this mischieuous plot and intended villany was by secret messengers reuealed to Doctor *Morton* Bishop of Elie, he being in Flanders, and he with all celerity & posting speed aduertised the Earle of the danger which he was in, by meanes whereof, and to saue themselves, he with his chiefeft friends and followers as priuately as they could departed from Vannes; and passing thorow the Country of Britain in great haste, they came into France, and presented themselves to the French king, who not onely receiued them ioyfully as his friends, but promised sufficient aide & succour to the Earle for his reliefe. But in the meane time *Peter Landoy* (supposing that the Earle of Richmond and his associates had left Vannes but for a few daies to visit some inward friends) prepared certaine troupes of resolued souldiers well armed at all points, pretending in outward shew that they were by him provided to goe into England for the Earles aide; but (to say the truth) they were only fitted to haue surprised him and his Confederates, and to haue transported them all to king *Richard*. But when hee was certainly informed of their escape into France, he was sore troubled and vexed at the heart, because he was discouered to be so treacherous, and yet could not effect the mischiefe which by him was intended.

Now when it was voiced abroad, that the young French king and his Counsell would assist the Earle in his enterprise to gaine the Imperiall Crowne of this Realme, Sir *James Blunt* Captain of the Castle of Hammes, & Sir *John Fortescue* Porter of the Towne of Callice, and *John Vere* Earle of Oxford, who was a prisoner with the said Sir *James*, secretly repaired to the Earle, who (because they were valiant men at arms, and skilled much in martiall discipline) receiued them courteously, and with much ioy.

When king *Richard* was by his owne Ambassadours truly assured in what strange maner the Earle of Richmond and his friends had saued themselves, by flying into France, and that he was preparing of new forces to trie his fortune when he should land, and that the French King and his Nobles both fauoured and assisted him, and that the Earle of Oxford, with the other two, were with him; his continuall feare gaue him no rest, vntill hee had (in some sort) pleased himselfe by a new deuice. And his plot was thus: By subtil and craftie messengers hee made large proffers of massie silver and of gold, besides his earnest promise of much aduancement

*D. Morton
discouers
the danger.*

*Richmond
and his
friends escape
narrowly.*

*Another vil-
lanous pra-
ctice of King
Richards.*

ment and especiall fauour to the mother Queene, conditionally, that shee would commit vnto his custody and keeping her five daughters, so that by means thereof the Earle of Richmond might vtterly be deprived of all hope to match with the Lady *Elizabeth* as he intended: for hee strongly perswaded himselfe, that if that marriage were by craft and subtiltie preuented, few men would then engage themselues to depose him and make the Earle King.

The vnconstant and the vnprouident Queene, whom couetousnesse and ambition had made credulous, and willing to beleue him, who in the field had formerly slaine Sir *John Grey* her first husband, vnjustly had executed her brother and her sonne, and who had not only bastardized her two other sonnes, but had wickedly and villanously caused them both to be murdered in the Tower, accepted of those his gifts and promises, and deliuered vnto him her five daughters:

And no sooner had hee gotten them into his custodie, but (to make his title to the Crowne more sure) he longed in his heart incestuously to marry with his own brothers daughter, the said Lady *Elizabeth*. But the life of Queene *Anne* his wife, who was the daughter of *Richard* Earle of Warwicke, and the former wife of Prince *Edward* the sonne and heire of king *Henry* the Sixth, and whom himselfe & his brother the Duke of Clarence had murdered in king *Edward*s presence, was the onely impediment to that match.

It must now bee diligently obserued, that suddenly vncertaine Authors made report that Queene *Anne* (who was not sicke) was dead: and moreover king *Richard* himselfe forooke her companie and her bed, pretending much discontentment and great dislike because she was barren, and not likely to haue any more children to establish his succession in the Crowne. The Queene (who shrewdly ghesled at the wicked intention of her gracelesse husband) much grieued and vexed her selfe thereat: and whether her priuate conceits that her death was conspired, or whether any poison (as many did imagine) thorned her daies or no, it was vncertaine; but within few daies after shee was suddenly found dead indeed.

The King so little regarded the death of his said Queene, that presently he began to make loue to the Lady *Elizabeth* his owne Neece, who being discreet and modest, and hating his detested villanies, and well considering what perill and danger her selfe and all her sisters were in, if the Tyrant should rashly be reiected, tempered her denials with tempting and alluring lookes, and prettily

The old
Queens folly
and couetous-
nesse.

K. Richard is
possessed of
K. Edwards
five daugh-
ters.

His incestu-
ous purpose.

The Queene
suddenly
died.

He maketh
loue to his
owne Neece.

She makes
him hopefull.

fed his fancie with the musicke of her sweet tongue, and instantly requested him, not to vrge his sute with too much loue, vntill he had defeated the Earle of Richmond of all his hopes, and had finished his owne troubles, and that he would with carefull diligence make good prouision to defend himselfe. Thus liuing in hope of her liking, and pleasing himselfe by yeelding to her request, hee disposed himselfe wholly in making all needefull preparations to resist. But whilest he was thus busied, hee was informed by such Flatterers as neuer ceased to abuse him, that his Arch-enemy the Earle of Richmond & his co-adiutors receined such small comfort of the French King, that all their hopes were vanished, and that they were so infinitely oppressed with many wants, that hee needed not to feare any opposition which they could make.

This newes was by him so quickly credited, that too much security made him carelesse to proceed; nay, he discharged all his Garrisons, which formerly (with great charge and trauaile) he had placed neere vnto the Sea-coasts: so that we may by the way make this profitable vse therof, That such is the strength of Gods iudgements and iustice, that wicked & vngodly men are euermore least heedfull and vigilant for their own safety and good, when punishments are neere at hand to correct them for their grievous offences and transgressions against God. Whilest these things were thus acting in England, the Earle of Richmond was informed that his Lady and her sisters were by their mother deliuered into king Richards hands, that his own Queen was suddenly found dead, and that the old Lecherer made loue and daliance to the Ladie Elizabeth, who was the anchor and the stay of all his hopes. Wherefore it is not to be wondred at, that now (with more than wonted importunity) hee sollicitated the young French king and his Counsell for present aide. And (to say the truth) so graciously was he fauoured by them all, that he obtained a quicke supply of money, ships, armour, artillerie, and two thousand men, to make triall if his fortune had determined that he should weare a Crowne. With this little (but resolued) company hee arriued and landed at Milford Hauen in Wales, when he was least thought on, where he saw no great appearance of such succours as he hoped for.

But when the Welshmen were put in mind, that (being the son of Owen Tudor) hee was of their owne bloud, and would bee an especiall fauourer of them all, & that his marriage with the Lady Elizabeth would settle the whole estate of this Kingdome in perfect vnity and in peace, they flocked vnto him, and thronged about him with resolued mindes and willing hearts, vnder their skilfull

Falso newes makes him secure.

A note.

Richmond saileth into England, being aided by the French King.

He landeth.

The Welshmen do stick vnto him.

More aide.

*K. Richards
people revolts.*

*K. Richard is
desperate.*

*John Duke
of Norfolk.*

1485.

*Bosworth
field.*

*K. Richard
is valiant.*

and hardie Capitaines, among which *John Savage, Arnold Butler, Richard Griffith, John Morgan, and Rice Ap Thomas*, were the chiefe. To him also repaired *Sir George Talbot*, who conducted the power and strength of the young Earle of Shrewsbury, (he being then in ward) which consisted of two thousand men. *Sir Walter Hungerford* and *Sir Thomas Bourchier* (two valliant and worthy Leaders of many a lustie man) presented vnto him their seruice: so did *Thomas Lord Stanley*, father in law to the said Earle of Richmond, who was accompanied with five thousand fighting men. All these forces were first leuied and provided for king *Richards* aide: but God (who purposed to correct and punish him for his forepassed wicked deeds) converted their hearts, made them to reuolt from a Tyrant, and to submit themselves to a more lawfull power; whereat king *Richard* grieved and tormented himselfe in vaine. Yet hauing leuied an Army of more than twenty thousand, (few of which, besides his true friend *John Duke of Norfolk* & his followers, remained firme and faithfull) he marched against his enemies, fully resolving to cast all his fortunes in the aduenture of one battaile, thereby to establish himselfe without further feare in his Kingdome, or else (by his death in the open field) to conclude the wofull tragedie of his wicked life.

And albeit that manie practices were daily vsed to haue withdrawn the Duke of Norfolk from king *Richards* seruice, yet none of them pretailed. Wherefore to make him iealous and diffident of the case wherein he stood, the night before the two Armies ioyned, this ryme was fixed vpon his chamber doore:

*Iacke of Norfolk be not too bold,
For Dickon thy master is bought and sold.*

Yet for all this he persisted loyall vntill his death: and the next morrow, being the two and twentieth day of August, and in the third yeare of king *Richards* reigne, at Bosworth in Leicestershire the two Armies met and encountered each other, and fought for the space of two houres.

But when king *Richard* perceiued that the smallest number of his souldiers contended to winne the victory, and that the residue of them either cowardly left the field, or reuolued to his enemy, or stood as Neuters, intending to ioyne with him who was best likely to puercome, despairing of his fortune, and knowing that death was readily prepared to attach him, hee left his owne Army, and dashing his spurres into his horses sides, he rushed furiously into the

the Earles battaile, and with his sword he desperately made himselfe a free passage, vntill he was strongly encountred by Sir William Brandon, who was Standard-bearer to the Earle: him he slew valiantly. And then singling out Sir Iohn Cheney, a right hardy man in armes, by meer courage and fine strength he tumbled him to the ground, & came to the Earle of Richmond, with whom he fought with desperate resolution hand to hand, vntill he was by him slain. And thus by his death this mortall quarrell ended, the Earle hauing lost in this battaile not aboue one hundred men, and king Richard about one thousand; among which the Duke of Norfolkke was the chiefe.

When king Richard was thus slaine, his carrion carcase being found starke naked in the field, and being wounded and filthily polluted with dirt and goarie bloud, was cast vpon a horse backe behinde a Pursuiuant at Armes, to be carried to the Town of Leicester, his head and his hands hanging downe on the one side, and his legges on the other side like a Calfe: and there it was interred with as base a funerall as was bestowed vpon his two Nephewes in the Tower.

His Crowne being found among the spoiles and dead men in the field, was brought to the Earle of Richmond by his father in law the Lord Stanley, who with the generall acclamations of the people, who shouted for ioy, and cried King Henry, King Henry, crowned him therewith in the open field.

And then the Earle with all his Armie in the field gaue heartie and humble thanks to Almighty God for this great victory: and (with promises of large rewards) the whole Armie was dissolved, and the Earle and his Nobles departed to their rest.

Thus liued, and thus dyed king Richard, when he had reigned as a Tyrant two yeares, two moneths, and one day.

The Earle of Richmond slayeth King Richard.

His bodie rudely vsed.

Gods iudgement on a wicked murderer.

The Earle of Richmond is crowned in the field.

He thanketh and praiseth God.



THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE THE SEVENTH



After a sharpe Winter, men do receiue the sweet comforts of a pleasant Spring, and like as Aduersity is fully recompenced with more ioyfull ridings when abundance of Prosperity doth follow; so the hearts of all such as were sad and heauie by reason of the ciuill wars, were now cheered and made iocund by the happie peace and concord which at this instant blessed

all England in the succession of King *Henry*, who being crowned King, according to his oath and promise, married the faire & vertuous Lady *Elizabeth*, eldest daughter to King *Edward* the Fourth, ioyning thereby in one the two great Families of Lancaster and of Yorke, betwixt whom (for Principality and for the Crowne) infinite contentions and mortall warres had formerly consumed and destroyed many thousands of braue and valiant men.

Now that the state of this Kingdome might be confirmed in its happinesse, by the safetie of the Kings person, and by other requisites, King *Henry* (taking his President and ensample from the Kings of France) selected a certaine number of warlike men in all places to attend vpon him, whom he termed the Yeomen of his Crowne. He also rewarded with great bountie all such as for his sake had beene eminent in his seruice; and created his Vncle *Ispar* Earle

1485.

1.

*The King
marrieth the
Lady Elizabeth.*

*The King
chooseth a
Guard.*

*Rewards
giuen.
Noblemen
created.*

Earle of Pembroke, Duke of Bedford. His father in law, *Thomas Lord Stanley*, was made Earle of Darbie. He also made his faithfull and firme friend and fauourite, the Lord *Chandew* of Brittain, Earle of Bath. Sir *Giles Dawbeney* was made Lord *Dawbeney*, Sir *Robert Willoughby* Lord *Brooke*, and *Edward Stafford* the eldest son of *Humphrey* Duke of Buckingham (who in his quarrell lost his head) was by him restored to his fathers dignity and possessions.

A Parlia-
ment.
Acts repea-
le l.
The Crowne
is entailed.
New Lawes.
His Pardons.

Then he assembled his High Court of Parliament at Westminster, in which hee frustrated, cancelled, and made voide all former Acts which conuicted him and his adherents as guilty of High Treason. The Crowne of this Kingdome was entailed to him and to the heires of his bodie. Hee also caused such Lawes and such Statutes to bee made, as were behoouefull and beneficiall to this Common-weale. Hee pardoned all such as (hauing conspired or borne armes against him) submissiuely by their oathes acknowledged and receiued him for their true and lawfull King.

His Coun-
sellors.

The Duke of
Brittaine is
recompenced.

So is the
French King.

Hee elected the most noble, graue, and wise men of this Kingdome, to be of his Priuie Counsell, by whose direction and aduice the gouernment of this Realme was established in prosperitie and in peace. He bountifully recompenced the Duke of Britaine for all his former courtesies towards him, and also paid vnto him all such summes of money as at any time hee had disbursed for his maintenance and reliefe. The like hee did to the French king, and thereby redeemed his two Hostages, the Lord Marquesse *Dorset*, and Sir *John Bourchier*, whom hee left there.

1486.

2.

A Rebellion.

Thus whilest king *Henry* was carefull, willing, and endeouored to please all men, and by his vertuous imployments laboured to settle things in peace, the malignant spirits of such as tormented themselves at his happinesse, and placed their owne hope for preferment in rebellious attempts and seditious courses, would not permit him to liue at rest, and quietly to performe the duties of a gracious king. For *Francis* Lord *Lowel*, *Humphrey* *Stafford*, and *Thomas* his brother, leauing the Sanctuary at Colchester, which for their safetrie they had taken, seduced and animated much people in the North against king *Henry*, and caused them (vpon vntrue surmises) rashly and without aduice or counsell to put themselves in armes.

The Kings
celeritie in
raising an
Arme.

The king (who was not farre away from them) being somewhat troubled with this newes, began to raise an Army to withstand them; and such was his strange and wonderfull celerity and expedition to preuent the increase of their further strength, that hastily hee sent against them his Vncle the Duke of Bedford with three

three thousand men, whose breast-plates were made of tanned leather, for want of other armour: and he himselfe trauailed day and night to second his souldiers with a better strength. But when the Lord *Louel* and his associates perceiued that king *Henry* resolved to make them fight before they were sufficiently prepared, and that fresh forces would giue them a second onfet, if at the first they should happen to bee victorious, their courage failed, their hearts fainted, so that in the darknesse of the night they fled, and left their vnarmed Armie to the mercie of king *Henry*, the two *Staffords* taking Sanctuary in the Abby of Culnham, not far from Oxford, and the Lord *Louel* being shrowded by Sir *Thomas Broughton* in the North.

The next day the poore distressed Rebels (being destitute of their Leaders) humbly submitted themselves to the Kings mercie, and receiued his free pardon. But because no Sanctuarie could protect malefactors in cases of High Treason, therefore the two *Staffords* were by violence seized on, and the said *Humfrey* (being indicted, arraigned, found guiltie, and condemned) was put to death: but his younger brother was preserued by the Kings fauour, because it was conceiued that his transgression was not hatched by his owne malice, but by the peacelesse instigation of his brother.

No sooner was this flame quenched, but a greater fire was presently kindled by a Priest, whose name was Sir *Richard Symond*, a man very lewd, but well learned, and in all his actions vniust, craftie, and too cunning. Hee knowing that *Edward Plantagenet* Earle of Warwicke, and sonne and heire vnto *George Duke of Clarence*, brother to king *Edward the Fourth*, being now of the age of seuentene yeares, had from his infancie been kept as a Prisoner by the two last kings in the Castle of Sherry-hutton in the Countie of Yorke, and that king *Henry* had secretly remoued him to the Tower, got into his tutorship a young boy, prettie and witty, yet borne of a base parentage and stocke, whose name was *Lambert*. Him hee instructed with as much variety of learning, Court-like complements, and Gentleman-like behauiour, as his yeares would suffer him to comprehend; and then hee informed him, that by his birth and linage hee was not onely noble, but descended of the royall blood: that hee was the onely sonne of the Duke of Clarence, & the first heire male of the house of York, and therefore inheritable to the Crowne. This lesson, with the daily repetitions of his hericall Pedegree, hee so inculcated into his young Schollar, that hee was as able and as ready to discourse thereof,

The Rebels
flee.

*Humfrey
Stafford* is
executed.

1487.
3.
Richard Symonds counsels
facte against
King.

Lambert the
counterfeit
Duke of
Yorke.

*The Irish
were too cre-
dulous.*

thereof, as if by inspiration that knowledge had beene infused to him from above.

Thus when this subtil Priest had prepared his Pupill for his purpose, he transported him into Ireland, where hee first vented and spred abroad this false and vntrue noveltie, among the wilder and more barbarous sort of that fickle and busie Nation, who (being too too credulous and flexible to any change) gaue to the youth all honour and reuerence, as vnto their Soueraigne & Liege Lord. And within few daies after, diuers of the Nobility of that Countrey were taken in the same net of folly, and beleueed as the Commons did, among whom the Lord Chancellor, *Sir Thomas Gerardine*, was the chiefe, who hauing had much familiar conference with the young counterfeit, and finding his amiable aspect, the trim composure of his bodie, his Princely presence, his pregnancie of wit, his sufficient learning, his ingenuous capacitie, his quicke spirit, his discreet speech, and seemely complements, to be answerable and fitting to a Prince, not onely censured him to bee the true and the vndoubted sonne and heire of the Duke of Clarence, and pitied his estate, but (endeauouring to doe him good) disbursed vnto him for the enlargement of his expenses, traine, and honour, diuers and sundry great summes of money, and perswaded many other great Lords of Ireland to doe the like. He also with great speed and secrecie informed the Lady *Margaret*, sister to king *Edward* the Fourth, and Duchesse Dowager vnto *Charles* the deceased Duke of Burgoine, and the supposed Aunt of this counterfeit, of his being there. And albeit that she was well assured that this newes was false, yet because (being of the house of Yorke) shee mortally hated and enuied king *Henry*, who was the head and the chiefe of the Familie of Lancaster, she not only gladdened her heart to heare thereof, but also pleased her conceits with infinite delectation, that now an opportunity was presented to her to execute her fury vpon king *Henry*, and that shee might by this plot (if it succeeded well) enlarge her true Nephew the young Earle of Warwicke, and make him King. First of all therefore she caused the false report of this young counterfeit to be noised thoroughout England, that thereby shee might vnsettle the mindes of such as were credulous, and might be inclined to take his part. She also published, that the Irish Nobility and Nation had not onely receiued him for their Lord and Soueraigne, and would take his part, but also that shee her selfe would strengthen his attempts with money, men, and armes to the vntermost of her power.

These vaine and fabulous reports carried vnto her into Flanders

Francis

*The malice of
Margaret
Duchesse
Dowager of
Burgoyne to
K. Henry.*

1.

2.

3.

Francis Lord Louel, and her Nephew the Earle of Lincolne, sonne and heire to *Iohn de la Poole* Duke of Suffolk, and of *Elizabeth* one other of the sisters of king *Edward* the Fourth, *Sir Thomas Bronghton*, and some others: and after many speeches and much conference touching those affaires and businesles, the Duchesse caused to be leuied in her Country about two thousand men, which were conducted by *Martin Sward* an approued Captaine of great resolution and much skill. All these (with quicke expedition) sailed into Ireland, & ioyned with *Sir Thomas Gerardine* the Chancellor, who was in a readinesse with more than two thousand men of his owne Nation: and they all determined to transport themselves into England with all speed.

*The Traitors
land in Eng-
land.*

Wee may not imagine that king *Henry* (who was valiant, prudent, and wise) was secure, carelesse, or negligent in these affaires and weighty businesles. For (to the end that certainly it might bee knowne that *Lambert* was but a counterfeir) hee caused *Edward* the young Earle of Warwick to be publicly brought thorow the streetes of London from the Tower vnto *Pauls* Church, where infinite numbers of the Nobilitie, Gentry, and Commons of this Kingdome had the sight and view of him, and many of them spent some time in conferring with him. He also made great preparations to repell and to subdue all such as (in *Lamberts* aide) should either attempt any ciuill warre, or inuade his land. And thus (when hee had ordered all things well) these forraine powers arriued neere vnto Lincolne, where they expected more succour than they found, or were in any possibility to haue. But when the king was informed that they were come, he marched towards them with a constant resolution to trie the vnmortall of his fortune in the field, insomuch that it was now too late for those Inuaders to step backe: for vrgent necessitie did require, that either they must flie, fight, or yeeld. But the truth is, though they were not strong, yet they were no cowards. The Irish people were strangely actiue, and passing valiant, but they wanted Armes: and their braue resolution so animated their courage, that with haughtie stomackes and Lions hearts they ioyned in battraile with the King. But within lesse space than one houre, the vnprouided and vnturnished Irish with their Captaines, the Earle of Lincolne, *Francis Lord Louel*, *Sir Thomas Gerardine*, *Martin Sward*, and *Sir Thomas Bronghton*, were all slaine, and the rest submitted themselves to the King, who pardoned their offence, and committed the Priest, *Sir Richard Symond*, vnto perpetuall imprisonment: and his counterfeited Pupill (being first abased in the Skulcery) was within

*A politicke
act.*

*The King
prepareth
against
Lambert.
Lambert
landeth in
England.*

*The battaile
of Stoke.*

*Lambert is
ouertrowne.*

*Lambert is
made a Skul-
lian, and then
the Kings
Faulconer.*

few

*The Queene
is crowned.
D. Morton
made Arch.
bishop of
Canterbury,
and Lord
Chancellor,
and a Cardi-
nall.*

*The French
King quar-
relleth with
the Duke of
Britaine.*

1488.
4.
*King Henry
mediateth a
peace.*

*Some English
doe aide the
Duke.*

few yeares after chiefe Faulconer to the king. Then was the kings wife with all honour and Princely solemnities crowned Queene, and *Thomas Bouchier* Archbishop of Canterbury died, and was succeeded by *John Morton* Bishop of Elie, who was also made Lord Chancellor of this Kingdome: and not long after he was dignified with the Hat and Habit of a Cardinall by Pope *Alexander* the Sixth.

Now though king *Henry* (through the benefit of a generall peace at home) was made fortunate and happie, yet forraine iarrs among his neighbours prouoked him to new employments, vpon this occasion.

Charles the French king hauing warred successefully against *Maximilian* king of the Romans, complained that he was much wronged by *Lewis* Duke of Orleance, who had married the Lady *Jane* his sister, and was his next heire apparant to the French Crowne, for that hee with some others tooke part against him with his enemy. But in the end when king *Charles* had affied himselfe to the Lady *Margaret*, daughter to *Maximilian*, and had concluded a peace betweene themselues, the said Duke of Orleance and his complices fled into Britaine to Duke *Francis*, who gaue them courteous entertainment, and kindly supplied all their wants.

The French king (apprehending this as a fit occasion offred to him to quarrell with the Duke of Britaine, because hee longed to possesse his Countrey) without any parley or conference touching that matter, proclaimed warres against him. And before it was notified that he had raised an Armie, he entred into Britaine, and planted a strong siege before the strong and faire City of Nantz. And by his Ambassadours hee importuned king *Henry* either to take his part, or (as a Neuter) to giue aide vnto them both. But king *Henry* being at the first doubtfull what course to take, because hee had receiued much comfort and many courtesies from them both, resolved at the last to requite some part of both their loues, by mediating of a friendly peace, which (with his vtmost endeours) he laboured to effect.

The French king (who was both wittie and craftie) made an outward shew as if he seemed heartily to desire it, and was thankful for it, although in truth and in deede he intended nothing lesse. But the Duke of Britaine (following the directions of his French guests) refused plainly to consent vnto that motion. And within few daies after, *Edward* Lord *Woodville*, Captaine of the Ile of Wight, & Vncle to the Queene, without the kings knowledge or licence, being accompanied with foure hundred of his most ex-

pert

perrand skilfull souldiers, sailed into Britaine for the Dukes aide. And soon after his arriual, and neere vnto Fongiers, a battaile was appointed to bee fought betweene king Charles and the Britons. And (the more to haue terrified the French) seuentene hundred Britons, being clad in coats with red crosses, as if they had beene Englishmen, were ioyned to the Lord *Woodvile* companies, and were subiected to his command. But the contrary was to the Frenchmen too well knowen. Then (at the appointed time and place) the two Armies met together, and fought fiercely for a season. But in the end the poore Britons, being found counterfeits as they were, and their whole Army being vnable to resist so great a puissance as encountred them, were slaine, together with the Lord *Woodvile*, and the greater number of his associates, and the victorie fell to the French part.

Within few daies after, in England it was concluded by Parliament, that albeit king Henry had louingly beene aided by the French king for the recouerie of his Crowne, yet in regard that the Duke of Britaine for many years together had in all friendly, gentle, and liberall sort, entertained, protected, and maintained him when he was vnable to relieue himselfe, and likewise because it was considered, that if king Charles should winne and annexe that Duchy to the Crowne of France, himselfe and his posterity might and were likely to proue bad neighbours to this Kingdome, king Henry should take part with the Duke of Britaine.

This businesse being so determined, the king sent into that Prouince an Armie which consisted of eight thousand men, vnder the conduct of the Lord *Brooke*. And for the maintenance of those warres, a Taxe (by the same Parliament) of the tenth penny of the value of all the moueable goods and chattels of the Subiects was granted to the king.

No sooner was the English Armie arrived in Britaine, but the Duke (who had beene long sickly) died: and therefore (vpon a composition made betwixt his Nobles and king Charles) hee was affied to the Ladie *Anne*, the sole daughter and heire to the deceased Duke, who was formerly betrothed to *Maximilian* king of the Romans, & so was the said French king likewise assured to the Ladie *Margaret* daughter to *Maximilian*. And thus the British warres were at an end: and the Englishmen hauing only seene that Countrey, and done nothing, returned safely into England.

Now must wee vnderstand, that the Rustickes and rurall Swads of the Countie of Yorke, and of the Bishopricke of Durham, not onely refused peremptorily to pay any part of the Taxe which

*The Britons
are over-
throwne.
The Lord
Woodvile
is slaine.*

*K. Henry ad-
des the Bri-
tons against
the French
King.*

*An Armie is
sent into Bri-
taine.*

*A Taxe
which occa-
sioneth a Re-
bellion.*

*A sudden
peace is con-
cluded.*

1449.
5.
A Rebellion.

The Earle of
Northum-
berland is
murdered.

was killed at

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

the battle of

was granted to king *Henry* for the maintenance of the British wars, but also that in a most rebellious fashion they boldly rushed vpon & cruelly murdered *Henry* the fourth Earle of Northumberland, who by the king was appointed to cause the extracts of that Subsidie to be levied by distresse vpon the goods of all such as he found slacke or obstinate in those payments: which when they had done, trusting to their owne strength and numbers, they began a ciuill warre, so that as they passed thorow those Countries, they forcibly compelled Gentlemen and others to take their parts.

The King (to repress and punish the Ring-leaders of this tumultuous insurrection) sent against them a strong and a well provided Armie, vnder the especiall command of *Thomas* Earle of *Surrey*, who hauing beene taken prisoner as hee fought for king *Richard* at *Bosworth* field, was now enlarged, and deliuered out of prison, and receiued into the Kings fauour: and the King himselfe in his owne person followed after him. But the foolish Rebels (as men amazed, wideffe, and wanting counsell to direct their actions, and cowardly distrusting their owne power and abilitie to resist) threw off their armour, shifted hardly to save themselves, and fled every man to his owne home. But the King (who resolved by severe executions to terrifie such others as otherwise were likely to contemne him, and to despise his government) by exquisite and sharpe enquiries, found out and apprehended the chiefest authors of this mischiefe, who (in sundry places of this Realme) were punished by death. But the multitude and the baser sort obtained the Kings gracious fauour.

The British Nobles calling to minde that their young Duchesse was espoused first vnto *Maximilian* king of the Romans, and secondly to *Charles* the French king, and perceiuing (vpon more sound consideration) that the French king would alwaies beare a heauie hand ouer them, it indeed he were once married to her, began to reuolt from their promise, and to resist his intention and desire by strength of armes.

But the Frenchmen (according to their custome) being more victorious by their prodigall gifts than by their true valour, corrupted the British Nobility, and such Matrons as daily attended vpon their young Duchesse, in such sort, that king *Charles* got her into his possession. And then he published, that his owne former contract with the Lady *Margaret*, daughter to *Maximilian* king of the Romans, & also that the other contract made by the said *Maximilian* with the said Duchesse of Britaine, were nullities, voides, and frustrate in the Law, for that the said two Ladies (at the times of those

They are pu-
nished.

1498.
6.

those affiances made) were too young, and wanted good discretion to make their choice. And thereupon king *Charles* returned the said Lady *Margaret* to her father, and was forthwith married to the said Duchesse: and by this meane he ioyned that Prouince to the Crowne of France.

The king of the Romans (scorning and disdaining thus to bee disgraced, and that his daughter should so vnkindly bee sent home) seemed eager, and resolved to reuenge those iniuries and wrongs: and finding his owne strength to bee too weake for so great an enterprife, solicited king *Henry* (by his Ambassadors) to assist him in those warres. Whereupon king *Henry* (partly in regard of the loue which he bare to the said king *Maximilian*, and partly because hee saw that the French king was not only become Lord of Britaine, but attempted likewise to bring the Low Countries vnder his subiection) concluded so to doe, by the generall assent of his Nobilitie and Commons in full Parliament at Westminster assembled. And because the poorer and the inferiour sort should not be griued with any Taxe to support those warres, the King solicited his Nobles, Gentry, and rich men only, by way of a Beneuolence to enlarge their bountie towards that charge, as formerly (in the like case) they had done to his Predecessor king *Edward* the Fourth. By this motion and deuice he gathered much money, but lost more loue: for many men gaue somewhat with their hands, whose hearts were vnwilling, and repined to depart with such gifts.

The King (for the expediting of this waighrie businesse) caused a gallant Fleece of warlike ships to bee apparrelled, and furnished them with all things needfull for the transporting of his Army which hee had raised, and committed them to the generall command of his Vncle *Jasper* Duke of Bedford, and of *John* Earle of Oxford.

But when all things were prepared, and the Armie readie to be imbarked, the King (by his owne Ambassadors which were in Flanders) was informed, that *Maximilian* was altogether vnprovided of armour, men, money, munition, victuals, and of all other things requisite for the warre, and that king *Henry* might not depend to be aided by him with one man.

This newes vexed and perplexed him at the heart: for wisely hee considered, that if suddenly hee should desist from his enterprife, and dismisse his Armie, then these inconueniences would ensue.

First, his enemies (being elated thereby) would deride, mocke,

The King of the Romans craveth aide, and obtaineth it of K. Henry

A beneuolence.

1491.

7.

Maximilian is unable to performe his promise.

I.

2.

*King Henry
saileth with
an Armie
into France.*

*K. Henry
besiegeth
Bullen.*

*K. Charles
desireth
peace.*

*An honoura-
ble peace con-
cluded.*

and scorne him, and perhaps endeauour to brand him with the infamous title of a coward.

And secondly, because his owne people might thereby imagine and suppose, that by a cunning shift, and by a craftie trick (vnder a fained pretence to make warre, which by him was not intended) he had picked their coine out of their purses to enrich himselfe.

These cogitations perswaded him to take sound aduice of his Nobles in this businesse, and to purge himselfe, which in such a fashion, and with such a martiall resolution he did, that in the end (according to his owne hearts desire) it was concluded by a Parliament, That hee alone, with his owne Nation, should warre vpon the French king, to reuenge many disgracefull wrongs which of latter times he had offered to king *Henry*.

When this newes was diuulged, and publicly knowne, and the valorous determination of the king by certaine demonstrations notified to his people, they not onely applauded his courage, and reioyced in it, but (by the ready and voluntarie proffers of their best seruice) they much increased his Armie, with which king *Henry* himselfe landed safely at his Towne of Callice. And (to set his Armie in an order answerable to his minde) hee marshalled his whole numbers into foure battailes, and marched from thence vntill hee came before Bullen, which hee girded about with a strong siege, and daily battered and assaulted it without ceasing.

We must now know, that the French king, though hee were the absolute Lord of the Duchie of Britaine by his late marriage, yet the Nobles and the Commons of that Prouince disliked and grudged at many things which he attempted (against their wills) to innouate among them, because they tended much to their dishonour, detriment, and wrong, insomuch that king *Charles* feared lest they (ioyning with king *Henry*) might shake off his yoake, and set vp another Duke. Wherefore by his Ambassadors hee proposed to king *Henry* certaine Articles of peace, which were both honourable and also profitable vnto him.

This vnexpected newes crossed the humours of most men in the English Armie, whose hopes were confident that the French warres would make them rich. But when king *Henry* had thoroughly considered that the right to the Duchie of Britaine was so inseparably vnited and knit by the said marriage to the Crowne of France, and that no possibility appeared to diuide them, and that in regard that hee alone had vndertaken those warres chiefly for the preservation of his name and honour, he should immortalize his

his fame, if vpon kinde intreaties, and termes of credit and of gaine, he should returne, hee not onely hearkened attentiuely to that motion, but within few daies after he concluded a peace with the French king, to continue during both their ioynt liues, and receiued (to defray his charge) seven hundred forty and five thousand Ducats, which in our sterling mony amounteth to the summe of one hundred fourescore and six thousand and two hundred pounds, or thereabout, besides an yearely pension of five and twenty thousand Crownes, which were alwaies duely paid so long as king *Henry* liued. Thus the king (hauing concluded all things for his honour and profit, and to his owne good liking and contentment) raised his siege, returned to Callice, and safely from thence into England.

About the time in which king *Henry* assumed to take part with *Maximilian* against the French king, the Lady *Margaret*, Duchesse of Burgoine, his ancient enemy, as we haue heard, neuer ceasing to contriue hurtfull and malicious practices against king *Henry*, not for any wrong or iniurie which euer he had done her, but onely because hee was the highest of the house of Lancaster, which was opposit to her linage; had gotten into her possession a young Dutch boy, who was very comely, learned, and wittie, but descended from base and vnworthy parentage. His true name was *Peter Warbecke*, but hee was nicke-named in scorne by the English, who called him *Perkin*, which in the Dutch Tongue signifieth weaknesse, or such a one as is vnable, impotent, or infirme.

*A new pra-
ctice by the
Duchesse
Dowager of
Britaine a-
gainst King
Henry.*

*Perkin War-
becke.*

This youngling did perfectly speake the English tongue, and was by this Lady receiued into great fauour, and not onely instructed by her prouision in literature and good maners, but he was also diligently & carefully trained vp in the imitation of all Princely entertainment, complements, and behauiour, so that all such as beheld him and his Heroicall Qualities, pronounced their sentence, That he was descended of a Noble Familie, and that some extraordinary Fortune was at hand, and attended to make him more happy than a thousand others.

Thus when this Lady had procured her counterfeited Idoll to bee adored and wondered at, by reason of his maiesticall carriage and behauiour, shee informed him, that vnder the name of *Richard Duke of Yorke*, second son to king *Edward* the Fourth her brother, she intended to aduance him to the Crowne of England, and to make him King; which that shee might with the more ease and facilitie effect, shee secretly and so substantially taught

him in the whole Pedigrees of the Houses of Lancaster and York, that within few daies no Englishman was more expert and cunning therein than he.

*Perkin is
aided by the
Irishmen.*

When shee had thus furnished him according to her will, shee caused him to be transported into Ireland, where he made himselfe knowne among those Nobles to bee by his birth a great Prince, and therein he so artificially demeaned himselfe, that by the whole Nation of the Irish he was receiued, reuerenced, and maintained as their Soueraigne and rightfull Lord.

*The French
King sendeth
for Perkin
Warbecke.*

About the same time the French king (who daily expected the landing of an English Armie within his Duchie of Britaine, or in some other place subiect to his dominion, as formerly we haue heard) intended to disturbe the intencion and purpose of king Henry, by setting vp of another King in this Realme; for which purpose hee sent for *Perkin Warbecke* into France, and promised with all kinde of friendly entertainment to receiue, helpe, relieue and succour him, vntill hee had inuested him into his right and Kingdome.

*Perkin flieth
out of France
The Du-
chesss honou-
reth and
maintaineth
him.*

No sooner was this mock-prince come to the French Court, but such was the generall applause of the Frenchmen, and so extraordinarie was their madnesse and braine-sicke ioy, that the poore Swad could in no wise chuse but imagine strongly that hee was borne to be a King. But in the middest of his flattering, vaine, and foolish hopes, the aforesaid peace betwixt the two kings of England and of France was concluded, and this young Nouice (fearing lest he should be deliuered to king Henry) ran secretly away, and came to his Titulary Aunt the Duchesse of Burgoine, who receiued him with great ioy and much honour, giuing vnto him princely entertainment, filling his purse with gold, clothing his bodie with costly and with rich apparrell, and appointing thirty Gentlemen of worth and quality (as his Guard) to giue their daily attendance vpon his fantastickall person.

*Her practice
for assistance
in England.*

Then shee caused it newly to be published in England, that her Nephew *Richard Duke of Yorke* was yet aliue, and liued in her Court, and that he (according to his right and title to the Crowne of England, as being the heire male of the House of Yorke) expected the assistance of all his true and louing subiects towards his attaining thereof.

*Perkin is fa-
moured in
England.*

No sooner did this newes waxe common among the Vulgar, but it was generally beleueed by them, and also by diuers others of better ranke and fashion, insomuch that many for malice onely, and for grudge which they conceiued against the House of Lancaster,

ster,

ster, others because they deemed themselves not to be sufficiently rewarded for their adventures in king *Henries* warres against king *Richard*, others because they were ambitious, and saw none other meanes to raise their fortunes, others because their fancies were easily deluded by nouelties and deuised newes, and others because they delighted to fish in troubled waters, determined to take his part. And vpon that resolution the Conspirators (by secret combination) sent Sir *Robert Clifford*, a man of much valour, wisdom, and great discretion, into Flanders, to enquire and to search out the truth of the conception, birth, and parentage of this new-found Duke.

This Knight, after his arriual, and when hee had conferred againe and againe with the busie-headed Duchesse of Burgoine touching this businesse, and with an obseruing eie had beheld the young counterfeit, and had continued oftentimes with him, perswaded himselfe that he was the very true, naturall and youngest sonne of king *Edward* the Fourth, and so he certified his friends in England by his letters, and by meanes thereof, euery day fresh reports gat greater strength & credit among such as were willing to be partakers in his fortunes. Wherefore as a sharpe Feuer suffieth not the Patient to take any rest, so this fantastickall dreame and vaine imagination troubled king *Henry* aboue measure; and wisdom made him prouident to prepare for future stormes, so that he strongly guarded and fortified all places which bordered vpon the Sea, and by his letters hee informed the Burgundians and Flemings of the vanity and falsity of this deuised foolery, and of this fained king, vsing his best meanes both to preuent all ciuill wars, and also to withstand all inuasions which might bee attempted against his Crowne and Kingdome.

And to make himselfe more strong, hee selected and appointed diuers men of wisdom and of worth, secretly to flie out of England into Flanders to the Duchesse, and to this fained Duke, that by their meanes and endeauours hee might haue true intelligence of such as (being of name and qualirie) conspired to ioyne with this ignoble counterfeit; vpon whose information, and after legall trials, the chiefeest actors in that businesse (as Traitors) were put to death.

King *Henry* also recounting how that by the late breach of promise *Maximilian* the king of the Romans failed to assist him in his warres against *Charles* the French king, and finding that his sonne *Philip*, Arch-Duke of Austria, and Duke of Burgoine, secretly favoured the attempts of the Ladie *Margaret* concerning *Perkin Warbeckes*

2.

3.

4.

5.

6.

Sir Robert Clifford.

King Henries preparations against Perkins inuasion.

1493.

9.

A wittie policie.

*The English
Mart is re-
moued from
Flanders to
Callice.*

*A restraint
of wares and
merchandi-
zes.*

*An assault on
the Flemings
in London.*

1.

2.

3.

1494.

10.

*Sir Robert
Clifford for-
sakes Per-
kin War-
becke.*

*A notable
politic.*

Warbeckes conspiracy, remoued his Mart of English merchandizing from Flanders to his own Towne of Callice, & also he prohibited all men whatsoeuer to bring any Flemish commodities or wares into this Kingdome. This restraint notwithstanding, the bribing Easterlings were vnder hand permitted to bring into England what they would. And likewise King *Maximilian* and his son by strong Edicts forbad and published the confiscation of all English commodities, as leather, tallow, wooles, lead, tinne, and such like, if they were brought into those Countries.

This restraining of the Kings owne Subiects, and that libertie which was allowed to those strangers, vexed and grieved the English Merchants at the heart, and so it did many others: for by meanes thereof a great part of their trade (which in former times supported their charge, and maintained their houses and families) was taken from them. And thereby they were also disabled to entertaine such and so many Iourney-men, couenant seruants, and apprentices as they had formerly done. Neither could or would they giue to such as they had, such large and liberall wages, pensions, and rewards, as was expected by them for their paines and seruice.

These extremities occasioned multitudes of Apprentices and of Iourney-men (without the procurement or allowance of their Masters) to runne with great violence and furie to the Stilliard in London, where they brake vp and robbed many Ware-houses and Shops, and rifled whatsoeuer did come athwart their hands. And besides all this, they offered much violence (in a strange manner) to the Easterlings, being the owners of those commodities and wares, vntill the coming thither of the Lord Maior with a band of armed men both terrified them, and also made them flee. Of these malefactors some were taken and imprisoned in the Tower, and (due examination being taken of them, and of their offence) the principall Ring-leaders among them (being in number about fourescore) were continued prisoners for many weekes. But in the end they all were freed, and receiued the Kings Pardon.

About the same time the before named Sir *Robert Clifford* (vp-on his repentant motion, and by the mediation of his friends at home) procured leaue for his returne, and pardon for his offence, so that when notice was giuen of his landing, the King appointed him to meet him at the Tower, that there before him and his Nobility hee might discouer plainly and at large the whole practice, deuice and purpose of the Lady *Margaret*, and of her base nephew *Perkin Warbecke*, and of all other the Conspirators in that business.

And

And this place of meeting (aboue all others) the King in policie appointed, because if any of his Lords or great ones were by the said Sir Robert Clifford accused as being guilte of that offence, they might (withour blowes or ciuill warres) be apprehended and committed in the same place.

The Knight (at his first appearance in the Kings presence) humbly kneeled downe, confessed his transgression, exprest many true signes of heartie and vnfeined repentance, and receiued the Kings fauour.

Among the great men attending on the King, he onely accused Sir William Stanley, whereat the King much maruelled, because he not only entirely loued him, but also had by his bounteous liberallitie increased his possessions, made him honourable, and Lord Chamberlaine to his owne person.

Sir William Stanley is accused by Sir Robert Clifford.

This fault was so plainly and so particularly discouered before the King, that the accused Gentleman (not being able to excuse himselfe) was forthwith committed to prison, and within few daies after, being by the due course of Law condemned, (for examples sake vnto others) he lost his head.

Sir William Stanley is beheaded.

Yet for all this, so desirous were many of nouelties, others of spoiles, some of reuenge, and others of ciuill warres, that they began to speake contumeliously, despightfully, and too too lewdly against the King. But for this maladie he quickly prouided a double remedie: First, by making of himselfe strong with such Forces as he had leuiued, and secondly by taking of a strait account, and by seuerer punishing of some of those, whose tongues (as Rasours) had deeply wounded his honour and his good name. And by their examples he reduced the rest to more conformity, and compelled them to obey.

He also sent an Armie into Ireland, vnder the command of Sir Edward Poyninges, to correct and punish with great seuerity such of the Irish Nation, as two yeares before had giuen aide and assistance to Perkin Warbecke. But the offenders being for the most part wilde, rude, barbarous, and saluage people, delighting in war, and being neuer better contented, than when they were tumultuous, and in horrid actions, assembled themselves in great multitudes, and (according to their vse and fashion) they ranne into the woods, mountaines, and bogges, whom the Knight was the more vnable to pursue, because the Nobility of that Iland (who promised to send him much aide) performed nothing: which carelesnesse he imputed to Gerald Earle of Kildare, who as he was a man by his birth, possessions, and friends, most powerfull among the Irish, so

1495.

11.

An armie is transported into Ireland.

was

was he chiefe Deputy of that Countrey to the King. Him (vpon the false and slanderous accusations of his malignant enemies) the Knight apprehended as a Traitor, and brought him into England. But (before the King) his fidelitie and his innocencie freely deliuered him from further trouble and danger: so that being graced, thanked, and rewarded for his true and honourable seruice, he was not onely enlarged, but obtained the continuance of his Deputati-on as before.

*Perkin War-
becke lan-
desb some of
his men in
Kens.*

In this meane time *Perkin Warbecke* (being by the Ladie *Marga-ret* furnished with a Flecte of ships, and being accompanied with Rogues, Vacabonds, Slaues, Theeues, Robbers, Murderers, Banke-rupts, seditious Varlars, and with the off-scumme of many Nations) came vpon the Kentish Coast, where they cast Anchors, and landed some of those Vassals, who endeauoured to informe themselves whether the people determined to follow poore *Per-kin Warbecke* or no. The answer made by the multitude (who be-gan to rise in armes) gaue good contentment: for ourwardly they firmly promised (vntill death) to support and to maintaine him and his quarrell against the king. But when (by faire words and soothing speeches) they had trained those Rascals vp into the land, they fiercely set vpon them, slew many, and tooke one hun-dred and threescore prisoners, whom they deliuered into the cu-stodie of *Sir John Peachy* high Sheriffe of that Prouince, who railed them in ropes (like vnto horses drawing carts) and conueied them in that fashion to the Citie of London, where they receiued their trials, and were executed in sundry places of this Realme. And the counterfeited Duke of York (expecting better fortune at ano-ther time) returned into Flanders to his pensive and carefull Aunt, where (because he supposed that delaies would proue dangerous, and that much lingring would be vnprofitable for him) he speedi-ly collected such numbers of base and vnworthy Pefants, as by necessitie were compelled to enter into his seruice: which being done, he embarked them, hoised his Anchors, and sailed into Ire-land, purposing with those wilde and saluage men to augment his numbers, and then to land in the Westerne parts of this King-dome.

*His men are
slaine and
executed.*

*He returneth
into Flanders.*

*He landeth
in Ireland.*

*He cometh
into Scotland*

But when experience assured him that hee might haue men e-now, but little armes, hee then resolved, not to make warre by the helpe of such as were naked: wherefore he left them, and came into Scotland, and presented both him selfe and his cause to *James* the Fourth, who at that time was very young, and mayed the Scepter of that Kingdome.

The

The Scots, although they knew that *Perkin* was a counterfeit, yet they reioyced that opportunity had offered them that occasion to invade England; not to make a conquest thereof, nor to helpe *Warbeck*, but only by valuable booties and large spoiles to enrich themselves. Whereupon the young king, being accompanied with his foolish guest, and many thousands of lustie and tall men, marched forth, and entred into Northumberland, where they exercised all kinde of rigour, violence, and wrong, burning, robbing, riding, stealing, and spoiling in all places, and destroying with the sword both young and old, strong and feeble, healthie and infirme, rich and poore, with such barbarous inhumanity, and strange crueltie, as neuer was committed before by that Nation. And as soone as they had almost desolated all that Province, finding no helpe nor succour from the English to assist their new king, they returned into Scotland; and neglected to giue vnto him any more aid.

King *Henry* vnderstanding what rapine, spoile, and violence was done by the Scots vnto his people, and being sicke vntill hee had requited those wrongs with severe and sharpe reuenge, summoned his High Court of Parliament, in which it was concluded, that forthwith an Armie should be sent against those enemies, lest perhaps long forbearance might encourage them at another time to doe the like mischief. And for the maintenance of those warres a small Taxe or Subsidie was granted to the king, which occasioned him much trouble. The king (who vsed great expedition in this businesse) raised a puissant Armie, which hee committed to the charge & gouernment of his Chamberlaine *Giles Lord Darnley*, who was a wise and a valiant man. But no sooner was this Armie on foot marching towards the North, but suddenly it was recalled to withstand a great mischief, which otherwise might giue a deadly blow to the state of this Kingdome and Common-weale. For the Cornishmen (who were strong, stout, and couragious, yet poore, and oppressed with many wants) not onely refused to pay the said Subsidie and Taxe, but in a brain-sicke and sullen humour they accused *John Morton* Archbishop of Canterbury, and *Sir Reynold Bray*, (who were two of the greatest, wisest, and most honest Counsellors aboue others to the King) that they (as enemies to their Countrey) oppressed the inferiour sort, and were prollers, pillers and pollers for their priuate commoditie and gaine: And that they seduced the King by lewd aduice and bad directions, and were the Authors of much euill: And that therefore they would take it on themselves, not onely to remoue them from the

King,

The Scots invaded England, under a colour to aide Perkin Warbeck.

Their crueltie.

*1496.
12.*

A puissant Army is leued to goe into Scotland.

A Taxe which occasioned a rebellion.

The Cornishmen rebell.

They march
towards
London.
The Lord
Audley is
their chiefe
Captaine.

1.

2.

The Kentish-
men are a-
gainst them.

Black-heath
field.

King, but also to correct and punish them as euill doers, and as foes and enemies to their Native Country and Common-weale. And pleasing their vndisfined passions with this fantasticall and vnruly grounded resolution, they (by the prouokement and incitation of *Michael Ioseph* a studie Blacke-Smith, and of *Thomas Flamoke*, a man learned in the Law, yet factious, and of a tumultuous disposition) put themselves in Armes, and determined to effect their purpose, though with violence, yea in the presence of the King. Wherefore hauing augmented their numbers, and hoping that as they marched a long journey, so their forces would daily bee increased, and nothing doubting but that (according to the common voice and fame) the Kentishmen would be partakers with them in their Rebellion, they pressed and passed forth towards London, and in their iourney were much comforted by *James Fysher* Lord *Audley*, who (with many others being his adherents) ioyned with those Rebels, and gained from them the chiefeft authority to command.

In this meane while the King perceiuing their intentions, and hauing recalled his Armie which was traouelling towards the North, handled this businesse with such policie, that he would not suffer one man to moue one foot towards the West, for these especiall reasons. First, because that on better termes hee should encounter with them when they had wasted their best strength, and tired out themselves with a wearisome and with a tedious iourney. And secondly, because those Rebels (being so farre off from home) should be altogether destitute of kinsfolkes and of friends to relieue them, and of conuenient places of Retraire, if necessary should compell them thereunto.

The Cornishmen after much labour and paine, comming into Kent, not onely failed of their expected aide, but also found the Kentishmen armed, resolved to withstand their force, and by their best endeavours to subdue them. Yet were not the audacious and bold Cornishmen affrighted with this checke, but retired strongly to Blacke-heath, not many miles from London, intending there to abide the utmost of their fortune, and either like men to be victorious, or at a deare price to sell their liues.

The King with his Armie drawing neere towards them diuided it into three parts. Two of them he placed vpon the sides of the Rebels, and those were commanded & directed by *Iohn Earle* of Oxford, *Henry Bourchier* Earle of Essex, *Edmund de la Poole* Earle of Suffolk, *Sir Rice ap Thomas*, *Sir Humfrey Stanley*, and diuers others. The King himselfe led the third, and brauely charged the Rebels,

Rebels in the face, and the residue did the like on eyther side: and thought the poore sturdie and stout Cornishmen, were oppressed with multitudes on euery part, yet they fainted not, but fought like men for a long time, still pressing forth & making no stay, but as they were compelled by the sword. The Lord *Darbhery* was at length taken prisoner by them, but they enlarged him incontinently of their owne accord, thinking by his meanes to find some mercie. This fight and battaile was conragiously maintained for some houres, during which space, there were slaine on the Kings part about three hundred, and of the Rebels more than two thousand. Their chiefest Captaines, and manie hundreds besides were taken Prisoners: the rest fled, and king *Henry* wonne the field.

And within few daies after, the Ring-leaders of that rebellious insurrection, were in sundrie places of this Realme executed as Traitors, and their heads and quarters were sent, and disposed in sundrie Townes, Cities, and Castles of this Realme, for a terroure to all such as should attempt the like enormous offence against their Soueraigne.

Now must we be informed, that though the King had recalled the Lord *Darbhery*, and his Armie to withstand these Rebels, yet he knew that the young king of Scots (in the meane time expecting punishment, except he could by force of Armes auoide it) made great prouision and daily preparations to defend himselfe. Which forces would againe invade the Northerne parts of this Kingdome, as soon as they were informed of king *Henries* employment against his owne Subjects: wherefore (to prevent that imminent and like danger) hee by his letters required *Thomas* Lord *Howard*, Earle of *Surrey*, and *Richard* Fox, sometimes Bishop of *Ely*, and then promoted to the See of *Durham*, to raise a strong Armie, and so withstand the Scots (if they endeaoured to attempt any such thing) vntill he sent another power to aide and to assist them, which thing should with all celeritie and diligence bee performed, as soon as he had vanquished the Cornishmen, who so desperately opposed themselves against him.

Now as the King imagined, so fell it out true indeed. For the Scots (proudly insulting at his troubles, and expecting the worst that hee could doe when hee should bee in peace at home) resolved, by anticipating warre, to enrich themselves with new Rapines, and Spoiles, and to make haucke vpon the Borders: that by meanes thereof they might the more weaken him, and the better enable themselves, to make resi-

The Rebels
are over-
throwne.

1497.

Traitors
heads and
quarters set
up in Cities
& in Towns.

1497.

Promission
against the
Scots.

The Scots in-
uade Eng-
land.

stance when time and opportunitie should serue.

With the same resolution, the King of Scots and his Armie againe entred vpon the English Pale. But ere they could proceede farre, or doe much harme, the aforesaid Earle, and Bishop, (and many other Nobles, Knights, and Gentlemen of the North) assembled themselves and their friends, to the number of twentie thousand fighting men, and marched boldly towards the Scottish Armie: vnto which when they drew nere, their King (vpon good occasion being timorous and fearefull) retired hastily, and fled into his owne Countrey. But the English forces with braue courage and manly resolution entred into his Kingdome, and battered, assaulted; wonne, and razed to the ground many of his strongest Townes, Castles, and Holds, and were not resisted, albeit the Scottish King with all his Armie was not distant from them about one mile. Onely hee challenged the field the next day; which was accepted, but in the night before he raised his Armie, and dispersed them, who ranne into the Woods, and high Mountaines, and were to no purpose pursued and hunted by the Englishmen, fixe or seuen daies.

But so barren was that Countrey, and so poore and destitute of all good things, and so vnseasonable was the weather there, which abounded with continuall Raine, Winde, Snow, Haile, Thunder, and Hideous stormes, and tempests, that the Earle and the Bishop returning brake vp their Armies, and themselves went to Barwick, where they attended directions from the King.

Whilest these things were thus in action, *Peter Hyalau*, who was sent Embassador from *Ferdinando* king of Castile, to mediate a peace betwixt the kings of England and of Scotland, could not effect that businesse according to his mind. Yet a Truce was concluded betwixt them, to endure for certaine years, conditionally that *Perkin Warbeck* were forthwith banished and exiled out of that Countrey.

The French King also, at the same time sent his Embassadors into England, to ratifie the former peace established betwixt the King and him, which was performed with much honour, and solemnity, to the great contentment and ioy of all the People of both those Kingdomes.

Likewise, *Philip* the Arch-Duke of Austria, and Duke of Burgoine, sonne to *Maximilian*, king of the Romans, by his Embassadors importuned the restitution of the English trade, and the returne of the Merchants into his Countrey of Flanders, because his subiects were exceedingly impouerished by them, & did obtain his

face:

The Scots flee.

The English Armie banishes in Scotland.

A truce with Scotland. Perkin Warbeck is sent out of Scotland.

The peace with France newly ratified.

The English trade is restored to the Flemings, and their ioy thereat.

lute: wherat such comforts was conceiued, that when the Englishmen were for trade returned againe vnto Antwerpe, they were receiued into the City with solemn Processions, princely Triumphs, sumptuous Feastings, rare Banquettings, and with the expression of great loue, and of much ioy.

And thus was king *Henry* (at this time) made fortunate, and happy: for he enioyed peace, and friendship, both at home and abroad, sauing only with *Perkin Warbeck*, who ceased not to vex and trouble him for a while, to his owne ouerthrow and destruction. For being compelled to forsake Scotland, and vnderstanding that though the Cornishmen had lately bin ouerthrown, yet were they not pacified or appeased, he with foure ships onely, and with fixe score ragged landing Souldiers, and no more, sailed into Cornwall, where he was receiued by the rusticke, and meanest sort of the Inhabitants of that Prouince, with ioyfull acclamations, and with good welcome. And within few daies after, they aided him with three thousand men.

With these, and with some others he marched Eastwards, and came as farre as the City of Exeter, where hee vsed many perswasive and rethoricall arguments, and speeches, to incite the Inhabitants, voluntarily to become his subiects, and to surrender the Citie into his hands. But finding that the fidelity of the Citizens was constant and vnremouable from their King. And that their resolutions (to endure extremities, if otherwise they could not bee auoided) was strongly setled and vchangeable, they besieged the Citie round about. And because they wanted artillery, and great Ordinance to make batteries vpon their Walls: therefore (with Ladders, Crookes, Ropes, and other Engines,) they desperately attempted to scale them in many places, at one instant. But still and euery where (with manlike courage and with approued valour) they were repulsed, ouerborne, and tumbled into the Ditches, and deepe Trenches, with which that Citie is enuironed on all parts. So that (in those assaults) many of those Rebels with great obstinacie lost their liues.

Now when they perceiued, that those their attempts daily failed, and succeeded not: they desperately approached vnto the City gates, which they endeauioured by many slights to open, or to ouerthrow. But when none of their practices could preuaile, then they caused great fires to be kindled against the: so that by consuming of them they might make an easie passage & entrance into the Citie.

This stratagem of warre (because it was vnusuall) did at the first somewhat abash the Citizens. But they (considering with

M m 2

them-

Perkin Warbeck saileth into Cornwall.

The Cornishmen rebell, and doe take Perkin Warbeckes part. Exeter is besieged.

Fire encountered by fire.

themselves, that base cowardlineſſe was the betrayer of true manhood, and that perfect valour deſpaired not in any danger) aſſumed the hearts of vndaunted men, and by their endeauorous attempts and imployments, they ceaſed not to provide for their owne preſent ſaſetic: inſomuch that with fire they encountred fire, and made greater fires within their Gates than the Rebels did without, which they maintained by adding ſtore of matter and of ſewell for a long time, vntill that with rampiers, bankes, bulwarks, and other deſenſiue fortifications, they had ſecured thoſe places from the entrie of their enemies.

When this their practice auailed not, then they againe buſied the Citizens with daily ſcalings and climings againſt their walls. But the inhabitants ſo confidently perſiſted to defend themſelves, that poore *Perkin* began to hang downe his head; and being troubled with melancholike paſſions, filled the aire with ſighes and groanes, and was perplexed at the heart, being weary of his match.

The King, who had beene ſpeedily informed how violently that Citie was enuironed, and how couragiously the Rebels were reſiſted, ſo carefully regarded it, and the inhabitants thereof, that with a faire Armie he himſelfe (in his owne perſon) marched towards the Rebels with all ſpeede. But before he could come neere vnto them, *Edward Courtney* Earle of Deuonſhire, and the Lord *William* his ſonne, *Sir Wymond Carew*, *Sir Thomas Trenchard*, *Sir William Courtney*, *Sir Thomas Fulford*, *Sir John Haltwell*, *Sir John Crocker*, *Walter Courtney*, *Peter Edgescombe*, and their luſty followers, repaired to the ſaid City of Exeter, and intended to giue ſuch good helpe and aſſiſtance to the inhabitants thereof, that the Rebels (leauiſg the ſiege) marched into *Somerſetſhire*, where they beſieged the Towne of *Tawnton*. But the king vnderſtanding that they were remoued from the City, and where they then were, directed his courſe towards *Tawnton*, he hauing with him in his armie *Edward* the young Duke of Buckingham, who was a Prince of haughty courage, and of a gallant reſolution, *Giles Lord Dawbeney* his chiefeſt Chamberlaine, *Robert Lord Brooke*, Lord Steward of his houſe, *Sir Alexander Baynam*, *Sir Maurice Barkley*, *Sir Robert Tame*, *Sir John Guiſe*, *Sir Robert Poynts*, *Sir Henry Vernon*, *Sir John Mortimer*, *Sir Thomas Tremaile*, *Sir Edward Sutton*, *Sir Amias Paules*, *Sir John Sapcots*, *Sir Hugh Lutterel*, *Sir Francis Cheney*, and ſundry other Knights and Gentlemen of great place and valour.

But when *Perkin Warbecke* and his fellow Captains heard of the kings approach, they fled with threeſcore horſe vnto *Beaulieu* neere to *South-hampton*, where poore *Perkin* & moſt of thoſe his companions

The King commeth into the Weſt Countrey with an Armie.

The ſiege of Exeter is abandoned. Perkin Warbecke beſiegeth Tawnton.

Perkin and the Rebels flee.

panions entred into the Sanctuarie, and registred their names there: but the residue of them were taken prisoners by the kings light-horsemen, and being brought into the kings Armie (for examples sake vnto others) they were ordered and executed by the martiall law in sundrie places in the Westerne parts. But the rude rabble which were left behinde (perceiuing that their Ring-leaders had left them, and were run away) fell downe vpon their knees, craued mercie, promised faith and loyaltie in future times, and not only receiued the kings pardon, but were reuiued by his expressing of much fauour and grace towards them.

This victory being thus obtained without blowes, the king, with his greatest Lords, and the brauest Gallants in his trayne, came to the Citie of Exeter, and was lodged in it certaine daies, where he commended and thanked the inhabitants, for their faithfull and valiant seruice, promised them the fulnesse of his fauour, and (for an addition of Honour to that City) gaue vnto them his Sword from his owne side, and commanded that in future times and in all publike places within that City, it should bee borne before the Maior, as formerly, and for the like purpose his noble predecessor king *Edward* the Fourth had done.

Then the king (intending to make a finall end of these ciuill warres) sent some of his chosen Captaines, with certaine bands of armed men, to apprehend poore *Perkin*, who compassed the Sanctuary at Bewly round about, so that he (recounting with himselfe his sundry mishaps, and his hopelesse fortunes to be a king) yeelded himselfe, and was brought vnto the king, who carried him as his prisoner vnto London: where albeit hee was closely kept, and narrowly watched by diuers of the kings Guard, yet hee escaped. But being daily and houely searched for, hee voluntarily committed himselfe to the Abbot of Shene, neere to the kings Palace of Richmond, intreating him to haue compassion on him, and to procure for him the kings Pardon, which hee did. Then was hee brought to the kings Court at Whitehall, where all his base descent and ignoble pedigree being in a paper fully written, and pinned vpon his backe, hee was stocked one whole day: so was hee the next morning vpon a high scaffold in Cheape-side within the Citie of London, from whence he was committed a close prisoner to the Tower.

Hee being in prison there, corrupted (by infinite promises of honourable aduancement) the seruants of Sir *John Digbie* Lieutenant of the Tower, to suffer him and *Edward* the young Earle of Warwick (who had been a prisoner from his infancy) to escape.

Mm 3

Eur

The common sort of Rebels are pardoned.

King Henry commeth to the Citie of Exeter.

The King giues his Sword to the Citie of Exeter.

Perkin Warbeck is brought to the King.

1498.

14.

Perkin escapeth, and is taken againe.

He is stocked. He is committed to the Tower.

1499.

15.

He prauiſeth to escape and to conuay away the young Earle of Warwick.

Perkin Warbeck beheaded.

The young Earle of Warwicke is beheaded.

1500.
16.
Prince Arthur married Katharine daughter to Ferdinand King of Aragon.

1501.
17.
The Kings eldest daughter affianced and after married to James the fourth, King of Scots.

1.

2.

But this plot being discovered, *Perkin Warbeck* was shortly after by the due course of Law condemned for High Treason, and was executed at Tyburne within two daies after: and the young Earle of Warwicke, who consented to haue escaped likewise, being altogether innocent of all crime, and onely affecting libertie, which men, beasts, birds, and fishes doe naturally desire, was indicted, arraigned, conuicted, and adiudged guilty of the like offence, and was executed on a Scaffold at the Tower Hill. His death much blemished the fame and reputation of king *Henry*, who being mercifull and compassionate by nature, and hauing extended it oftentimes vnto notorious malefactors, now (to worke his owne security, and without any iust offence) would not pardon him, who all his life time had beene so secret a prisoner, restrained from all company, and from the view of this vaine and transitory world, that he scarcely knew a Capon from a Goose, nor euer attempted any thing which might offend the King, sauing only to set himself at large.

As soone as these busineses were thus ended, *Arthur* the noble Prince of Wales, being of the age of fifteene yeares, was by an honourable deputation betrothed to the Ladie *Katherine*, daughter to *Ferdinando* king of Spaine, she being of the age of eighteene yeares; and the next yeare after with triumphant ioy and princely entertainment he receiued her into England, and was married to her in *Pauls Church* within the Citie of London.

And not long after, *James* the Fourth, king of the Scots, vsed the mediation of *Richard Fox*, then Bishop of Durham, but shortly after translated vnto Winchester, that hee might haue to wife the Lady *Margaret*, the eldest daughter of king *Henry* the Seuenth. And though the King (for many important reasons) might haue bestowed her vpon the greatest and most honorable Kings or Potentates in the Christian world, yet for these good respects hee cheerefully consented to his request. First, because (by all likelihood & probable coniecture) this marriage would establish a perpetuall peace betwixt those two Kingdomes. And secondly, because if issues males and females failed of the bodies of his two sonnes, then the Kingdome and the Crowne of this Realme descending to the said Lady *Margaret*, and to her issue, would draw the Scottish king into England, as vnto an estate of greater power, magnificence, honour, and riches; whereas if she were ioyned to a Prince equall, or exceeding her father in those respects, this Kingdome would then wait vpon the greater and more worthy, and so might bee guided, gouerned, directed, and commanded by a

Depury,

Deputy, or a Substitute, which would bee derogatorie from the maiesty of such a Monarchie and Common-weale.

These Halcyon dayes, which made king *Henry* fortunate and happy, were suddenly exchanged into daies of heavinesse and of sorrow: for Prince *Arthur* within five moneths after he was married, departed out of this troublesome and transitorie vale of misery, and was buried with great pompe, and incredible lamentation both of the Nobles, Gentlemen, and common people, in the Cathedrall Church within the City of Winchester: by whose decease without issue, his brother *Henry* Duke of Yorke (without Creation) was Prince of Wales, as vnto him (of right) that dignity did belong and appertaine: and the next yeare after he was created Earle of Chester by his father.

The King nor long after (by an honorable attendance of Lords, Knights, Ladies, and men and women of especiall note and qualitie) sent his eldest daughter, the Lady *Margaret*, into Scotland, to her espoused husband *James* the Fourth, who receiued her vpon the limits of his owne Kingdome, from the Earles of Surrey and Northumberland, and was the next day married to her in his City of Edendburgh, to the great reioycing of the people of both those Nations.

Now when King *Henry* had thus ouercome his enemies and the Rebels, and had settled himselfe in peace, hee determined to plucke downe the high stomackes and stout courage of his people, supposing that their wealth and riches occasioned their rebellions, and was the cause that many enormous insolencies were done and committed in the Common-weale. And by that meane hee also intended to enrich himselfe. And the plot whereby he intended to effect it, was, by taking of the advantage of the breach of Penall Lawes. And the principall charge of that polling businesse hee committed to Sir *Richard Empson* and *Edmund Dudley*, men learned in the Law, but ready enough to execute the Kings commands in a worser matter, if occasion did so require.

These two being attended by troupes of base Informers, Promoters, Catch-poles, Cheaters, Knaues, and cousening Rascals, prosecuted and persecuted many of the Kings good Subiects, to their vtter ruine and ouerthrow; insomuch that many people in euery Shire of this Kingdome (by their oppressions) waxed poore, and were vtterly decayed in their estates. But the Kings Coffers were filled, his Bagges were stuffed, and those two gracelesse and cruell Cormorants got to themselues the Deuill and all. But no remedie there was to cure this malady: for the King authorized them,

Prince *Arthur*
his death.

1502.
18.

1503.
19.

1504.
20.

The King
takes ad-
uantage of
forfeitures
upon Penall
Lawes.

Empson and
Dudley.

Many are
undone.

1605.
21.

*The King and
Queene of
Castile doe
come into
England by a
storme.*

*Sir Thomas
Trenchard
entertaineth
them at his
house.*

*They are en-
tertained by
the King.*

them: and they so rigorously, and so vnconscionably executed their tyrannie, that no man could assure himselfe, that hee was free, and without the danger of their lash.

In the 21. year of K. *Henries* reigne, *Elizabeth* Q. of Castile, & wife to *Ferdinando* K. of Aragon & Spain, died without issue male of her bodie, so that her Kingdom not being deuidable among sisters (according to the custome of that Countrey) descended to her eldest daughter the Ladie *Jane*, wife to *Philip* Arch-Duke of Austria, and Duke of Burgoine, so that hee (being king of Castile in her right) prepared a Nauie of strong, and well appointed ships, and entred into the Sea, purposing to take the possession of his new Kingdome. But (by the violence of an outrageous storme) himselfe with his Queen was driven into Waymouth in Dorset shire: where (at his landing) hee was receiued by Sir *Thomas Trenchard*, a worthy and a compleat Knight, who instantly importuned the king to accept of the entertainment of his house, vntill king *Henry* were certified of his being there, which courteously he did. Whereof when he had louingly, accepted hee was conducted thither, and feasted like (as hee was) a king. The Knight forthwith sent diuers Posters to king *Henry*, who (being much gladdened by this newes) because the said king, and he were vnfaigned and faithfull friends, forthwith sent for his better direction, and attendance, the Earle of *Arundel* and some others, who inuited him and his Queene, and their Companie to the kings Court, which was then at his Castle of Windsor, of which great courtesie he accepted with a kind heart: & as he came within fve miles of the Castle, he was met by the noble *Henry* Prince of Wales, who was accompanied by diuers Earles, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of choice reckoning & account: and within halfe a mile of his iournies end, the king himselfe with the greatest part of his Nobility, Ladies, and Personages of great worth and honour (being richly apparelled, and brauely mounted) met him likewise, where kind salutations, and friendly greetings proceeded from the heart; and were performed with most exquisite complements of loue, that by any could be imagined.

From the kings Castle of Windsor, the king conducted him and his Queene to the City of London: where nothing was omitted, that any deuice, or cost, could make sumptuous: thereby to expresse the hearty welcome of such beloued guests. And thus when (with great contentment, mirth, and pastime) the king and hee had spent some dayes, they renewed the League which was betwixt them, and taking kind farewells each of other, the said king

King and Queene, imbarked themselues againe, lunched into the Sea, and safely arrived according to their owne wils. But not long after, king *Philip* and his wife died, and that kingdome descended to *Charles* his eldest son.

From this time forwards king *Henry* waxed sickly, weake, and infirme, and by meanes thereof, the two scourgers of the Common-weale *Empson* and *Dudley*, tooke larger libertie to extend their villanies, than was giuen to them, and did oppresse, torment, and vex the People of this land.

But when the king perceiued that his time was short, hee deputed them of their authority: remitted and pardoned all offences, committed against his penall Lawes, and enlarged all prisoners, which were in durance for any offence (treason and murder excepted only:) he also paid the debts of all such, as for trifling and smal summes, were prisoners in any Ward, and gaue certaine summes of monie vnto some poore folkes, who had been vnconscionably deuoured, robbed, and spoiled, by those two gracelesse and vngodly Cormorants. He also was exceeding penitent and sorrowfull for those wrongs and iniuries, which (with too much seuerity) they had done vnto many: and hee disbursed by way of loane freely, and without reward, diuers great summes of monie to his Merchants. By meanes whereof their gaines and his custome were mightily increased. Finally, when hee had reigned twentie and three yeares and some moneths, and when hee had liued fifty and two yeares, he died, and was buried with great solemnity and honour by Queen *Elizabeth* his wife, in his owne Chappell at Westminster: which he had with great cost and skill founded, and caused to be built not long before.

1506.
22.

1507.
23.
*The King
waxeth sickly
His deedes of
charity.*

*He repenteth
of his actions
by the penall
lawes.*

1508.
24.
*A notable
politic.*

*The King
dieth.*

King and Queen, unmarked by death, landed into the sea and lately arrived at their own wish. The not long after, King John and his wife died, and their kingdoms descended to their children.

From the time that King Henry was waxed fully in the land, and by means thereof, the two kingdoms of the Com-
monwealth, Wales and Berks, took their liberties to extend
and flourish, and was given to them, and did operate to
and were the people of this land.

[illegible]

...the ... which ...



THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE

THE EIGHT.



King HENRIE the Eight, being of the Age of eighteen years, began to reigne the two and twentieth day of Aprill, in the year of our Lord God 1509. And being dispenced with by Pope Noly the second, hee married the Ladie Katherine, daughter to Ferdinando king of Aragon, Aunt to Prince Charles of Castile, who afterwards was Emperour; when as not long before she had

beene his brother Prince Arthurs wife: by which match, much trouble afterwards ensued, as in this discourse of his gouernement it will appeare.

In his first beginnings he seemed tenderly to affect his peoples loue, and to execute his Lawes with mercy, and with compassion. And whereas oppression (in the end of his Fathers dayes) had much vexed and grieved the Subjects of this Land, Hee (by open Proclamations) made it knowne, that he would not only heare the lamentable complaines of such as by the Tyrannous Rapine, and greedie Couetousnesse of Empson and Dudley, and of some other tormenting Promoters had beene vndone; but would also redresse and recompence their wrongs. By meanes whereof great throngs of People daily resorted, flocked, and rushed into the Kings Court: Among whom many complained most who had least cause; but they receiued sharpe punishment for their impudencie and boldnesse; and to the rest, the King gaue liberall restitution and amends. And the more frankly and freely to content

such

1509.

*The King
marries his
brothers
wife.*

*The King is
gracious to
such as were
oppressed by
Empson and
Dudley.*

Empson and
Dudley put
to death.

1511.

3.

Ferdinando
cravesb and
obtaineth
aide, but did
nothing.

The French
King war-
reth on the
Pope.

King Henry
mediateb a
peace, but he
is neglected.
Warres be-
twixt King
Henry and
Lewis the

such as had beene iustly offended by those extremities, after all legall proceedings finished, hee caused the heads of those two de-
vouring Canniblers to be stricken off at the Tower hill: and the
rest of that rascall rabble were disgracefully corrected by the
stocks and pillories in sundry places of this Realme.

Thus when the King had well busied himselfe in the settlement
of his Kingdome the first two yeares of his reigne, he was by his
wives father, *Ferdinando* king of Aragon, entreated to enter into
more turbulent actions, by aiding and assisting him against the
Moors, which willingly hee did. But by reason of a cessation of
those iarrres, the Englishmen returned out of Spaine, having beene
rudely entertained, and spent all.

About the same time the French king *Lewis* the twelfth (by
reason of some priuie quarrellings betwixt himselfe and Pope
Italy the Second) transported an Army into Italy, and by strength
and violence (as a Conquerour) hee possessed himselfe of the
faire and rich Citie of *Bologna la Grassa*, and insolently did much
harme.

Whereupon king *Henry* in fauour to the Pope, because he dis-
pensed with his late marriage, and was vnitied vnto him by more
than by the ordinary bonds of friendship and of loue, and because
the Pope himselfe was vnable to resist, or to maintaine his owne
quarrell, interposed himselfe as an indifferent mediator, and as an
intercessor for amity and for peace.

But the French king, (tasting the pleasant and the profitable
fruits of his successfull fortune, and longing to extend his go-
uernment into so rich a Countrie) turned the deafe eare, and
would not hearken to this motion. Whereupon king *Henry*
(whose bodie was young and lussie, and whose high heart was re-
plenished with true fortitude, magnanimity, and valour) made it
known to the Christian world, that as he scorned to be neglected
in so good a suit, so he loathed to be idle, and a looker on, in a time
of such negotiation and employment, and therefore would attempt
by his best meanes to withdraw the French kings warres from the
Popes Countreies, Vpon which resolution, forthwith by his Am-
bassadors hee required the French king to giue vnto him the full
and peaceable possession of his two Duchies of Guyen & of Nor-
mandy, together with his ancient inheritance of Angeou and of
Mayne, which wrongfully was kept and detained from his Ance-
stors and from him.

The small acquaintance which at that time the French king had
with king *Henry*, and the contempt of his youthfull yeeres, made him

him to returne a scornfull deniall to his demand; insomuch that king *Henry* proclaimed warre against him, and prepared daily to send a puissant Army into Guyan. Vpon which occasion, and others, and in regard that those broiles were chiefly vnder-taken to relieue the Pope, king *Henry* was by him entiled with this addition to his kingly Title, *Defender of the Faith*.

*Defender of
the Faith.*

This resolution being notified to his father in law *Ferdinando* king of Aragon, (who was crafty, and cunningly intended, vnder the colour of much friendship, to vsurpe, and treacherously to winne vnto himselfe the Kingdome of Nauarre, for which immoderately his ambitious heart did thirst) hee made vnto king *Henry* a large proffer of great assistance and help, with horses, tents, carriages, ordinance, and sundry other things needfull and expedient for those warres, if hee would land his Army within his Countrey of Biskey, and march from thence into Guyan.

*Ferdinando
promiseth
aide to King
Henry.*

The king (who dreamt not of any fraud, but was perswaded of good performance of more than had beene offered) most thankfully accepted of this great counsell, and sent (for the aforesaid purpose) ten thousand men into Biskey, vnder the principall command of *Thomas Grey Marquesse Dorset*, who was their Generall in that warre.

*The King
Arms lan-
deth in Bis-
key.*

But *Ferdinando* (whose owne plot touching the surprisall of Nauarre was not fully perfected, and who intended nothing lesse than according to his promise to aide the English Army) by flattering messages to the Marquesse maintained his hopes, but yet suffered both him and his (without employment or succour) to lye idle, to their great dishonour and reproach.

*Ferdinando
yeelds no
helpe.*

In the end he prepared a strong Armie, which was conducted by the Duke of *Alba*, and outwardly pretended to vnitte them to the English forces. But as a riuer growing outrageous by the abundance of much raine, overfloweth the low adiacent grounds, so this Armie with great violence and strength vncexpectedly rushed into the vnprovided Territories of Nauarre, surpris'd the Citie of Pampelona, and treacherously (without blowes or resistance) subdued the greatest part of that kingdome, which (without right or title) the Spaniards doe hold and enioy at this day.

*The King-
dome of Na-
uarre taken,
and conque-
red by the
Spaniards.*

And although that king *Ferdinando* (by this valiant and deceitfull practice) had easily attained to the height of his ambitious desires concerning that conquest, yet did hee continue false and vnkinde to the English Armie, whom hee assisted not at the last, but suffered them for the space of foure moneths to bee oppressed with a thousand wants, and to be consumed by the fluxe and other cala-

*Ferdinando
affords no
helpe or
assistance
at last.*

*The English-
men returne
home without
leane.*

1512.

*4-
Sir Edward
Howard
plagueth the
Brittons.*

*The Brittons
dare him but
run away.*

*The King
sendeth him
more aide.*

*He fighteth
at Sea with
the French
Fleet.*

*The Regent
and the Car-
ricks are
burned.*

mities in the open field : by meanes whereof, the common souldiers (being heartlesse, and hopelesse of better vsage from the king of Aragon) forsooke the field, and (without the licence of their Generall) returned straglingly into England. And thus was K. Hen-ry grossly abused & wronged by his father in law the second time.

Whilest the English Armie was thus vnkindly deluded in Biskiey, the right valiant Knight Sir *Edward Howard* (Lord Admirall of England, and a younger son to the Earle of Surrey) with a well appointed Fleet of ships (which were well furnished with braue and lustie men) kept and commanded the Narrow Seas, daily tooke the French Merchants, oftentimes landed in sundry places within the Duchie of Britaine, forraged their Fields, ransacked their Villages and their Townes, set them on fire, and enriched his companies with great spoiles.

The Brittons (being hourelly endammaged, and knowing that no better fortune would attend them, except by true valour and manhood they encountred the English assailants) braggingly dared the Admirall into the field, of which challenge he ioyfully accepted, although that with fixe and twenty hundred (and no more) he was to fight against more than ten thousand men. And incontinently with martiall skill and policie hee ordered his battaile in the open field. But when the Brittons approched neere, and with iudicious eies beheld the order & the courage of the English souldiers, their hearts fainted, their Leaders retired, their common souldiers fled, and would not once looke on an English face.

The king being aduertised of the valour of his Admirall, and of the haughty courage of his men, & intending to giue them strength which should bee answerable to their desires, did send vnto them some of his ships royall, & many others, which were well ordinated, and plentifully manned, both for the Sea, & also for the Land.

When the Admirall was thus prouided, and had reduced all his ships into one Fleet, within few daies after he met and fought with the French Nauie, at which time death was despised, in regard that euery man sought by bloud to purchase honour and renowne : vntill the Regent of England, & in her Sir *John Carent* of Deuonshire, and Sir *Thomas Knyet*, with seven hundred more, and the great Carrick of Brest, and in her Sir *Pierre Morgan*, and nine hundred men of warre, (both those ships being fast grappled together) were vnfortunately burnt, slaine, and drowned in the Sea. The view whereof being vnusnall, was so terrible, that whilest men fearfully looked on, the fight ceased, and the Frenchmen (scattering themselues) returned into the Sea.

The

The French king (to make his match the better with the English Naue) augmented the number of his ships and men, and sent them thorowly provided with ordinance, powder, shot, and other necessities, into the Hauen of Brest. And king Henry (who scorned that his Admirall should bee oppressed with a greater strength than he should be well able to resist) rigged vp the most part of his Royall Fleet, and some others, which safely arriued in Bartram Bay within the Duchy of Britaine. With these, and with all the rest, the braue Admirall attempted to assaile the French Bottoms as they lay at anchors within the Hauen of Brest. But as he was entering in, the foremost ship, which *Arthur Plantagenet* did command, was splitted in sunder vpon a rocke, which made the rest doubtfull to proceed, except with better guidance they might safely enter in.

The French Captaines perceiuing the Englishmens intent, anchored as neere to the Castle of Brest as they were able, and placed foure and twenty old Flemish Hulkes towards the mouth of the Hauen, betwixt themselves and the English Fleet, which they appointed to bee set on fire, and to bee vniouered when the ships of England did approach towards them, that by them they might be endangered. They also raised and fortified diuers Rampiers and Bulwarkes vpon the entrance of the Hauen, from which their great Ordinance might play vpon their enemies.

The Lord Admirall of England (doubting lest the Hauen of Brest was too shallow to support his ships of greatest strength and burden, and finding that the French cowards meant nothing lesse than to expresse their manhood by a resolute encounter) resolved with oared Barges to be rowed into the Harbour, and there to doe some memorable exploit vpon his enemies ships. With this determination (which more manfully than aduisedly hee did put in practice) hee with such an haughty courage and with such violence assailed the three great Gallies of the Rhoads, which were brought thither by a gallant Knight, named *Prior John*, that hee wonne them quickly, and possessed them as his owne. But when the Frenchmen perceiued that the English Barges were gone out of the Hauen, and were returned to their owne Fleet, they then with great numbers of well armed men rushed into the said Gallies, where the braue Admirall with that small remnant which were with him, defended themselves a long time with great courage. But being ouer-mastered, and too much wearied with fresh supplies, which euery minute did assaile them, the greater part of his men were slaine, the Admirall with a pike was violently borne

The French Fleet entresth into the Hauen of Brest.

King Henry augmenteth his Fleet.

The Frenchmen doe fortifie the Hauen.

1513.
5.
The Admirall in Boats entresth into the Hauen.

He taketh the three Gallies of the Rhoads.

He is drowned.

*His brother
is made Lord
Admirall.*

*Two Armies
sent into
France.*

*Tyrwyn is
besieged.*

*The King
with a third
Armie com-
meth before
Tyrwyn.*

*The French
Armie as-
tempteth to
raife the
siege.*

ouer-boord, and drowned in the Sea, and the rest of them were taken prisoners by their enemies. And thus were they overthrowne, who (if they had beene more prouident, and better counsell'd) might haue triumphed in their victories. And within few daies after, the Lord *Thomas Howard*, the eldest brother of the said deceased Knight, was by the King made Admirall, who with all the extremitie of warre became a cruell reuenger of his brothers death.

The King (not minding any longer to trifle or to dallie with the French king) leuied two Armies. In the one of them were eight thousand men, and in the other fixe thousand. The former of them was commanded by *George Lord Talbot* Earle of Shrewsbury, and the other by *Sir Charles Somerset*, Lord *Harbert*, Chamberlaine to the King. These two Generals with their companies (departing from Portsmouth) arriued safely at Callice, from whence they marched to the strong City of Tyrwyn, & besieged it on euery side. And within few weekes after, the King himselfe (hauing first committed the gouernment of this Kingdome to the generall charge of the *Queene* his wife, and the particular protection of the Northerne parts vnto the noble and worthy Lord *Thomas Howard* Earle of Surrey, if peraduenture the Scots, according to their custome, should in his absence beyond the Seas, enter into those Countries) being accompanied with many of his Nobles and Gentry, and hauing an Armie of eleuen thousand lustie and gallant men, departed out of England, came to his Towne of Callice, and marched forth in warlike order, vntill he had ioyned himselfe with all his other force, which lay strongly encamped before Tyrwyn.

Now whilest king *Henry* thus lay in this siege, the inhabitants oftentimes sallied out of their gates, and with great resolution skirmished with their enemies, but were alwaies losers in their Retreats.

By the Englishmen likewise daily batteries and hourelly assaults were made, & manfully resisted by the Citizens, vntill the French king (to raise the siege) caused a huge Armie to bee leuied, which appeared, and approched neere to the English Campe, and made many a boasting and a proud bragge, as if they were determined to doe much: but still and still they trised, not doing any thing which might merit praise. But in the end (they being prouoked more by the taunting reproches of their owne Nation, and by the daily scornes which for their want of courage they receiued from the sharpe tongues of their daring enemies, than by their owne valour)

valour) they attempted to raise the siege by strong blowes: In so much, that the two Armies met together, fought stoutly, and on either part performed many braue deedes of Chivalrie, with great courage: But the presence of king *Henry*, and his example of good Knighthood, so animated his men of Warre, that with vndaunted spirits, they redoubled their strength, in times and in places of greatest neede & extremities, so that at the last, the Frenchmen being dissolved into many heapes of breathlesse carcases, and many of their Nobles and Gentry being taken prisoners, the rest fled; and within few daies after, the City of *Tyrwyn* (by composition) was yeilded to king *Henry*, who (only preserving the Bishops Palace, in which hee lodged, and the Cathedrall Church) razed the Walls, Towers, Bulwarkes, and Fortresses thereof to the ground: and consumed the rest of that City with fire.

In this siege *Maximilian* the Emperour, with thirty approued men at Armes, repaired to the kings campe; and (after his great welcome, amply expressed by his Princely entertainment) hee with them were all enrolled into the kings pay.

This victory, and the said City, being thus wonne, king *Henry* (with all convenient expedition) besieged the strong and the warlike Citie of *Tournay*, which (for a while) was by the Inhabitants manfully defended and preserved: But (after many bitter and sharpe assaults, and bloudie skirmishes) when they perceiued that their hopes for succour and helpe were frustrated and in vaine: they then by composition, yeilded themselves to the kings mercie; who, for the summe of ten thousand pounds, graciously received them as his owne subiects, and by his Almoner, *Thomas Wolsey*, tooke the oathes of their fidelity and allegiance, as to their soueraigne Lord and King. And then king *Henry* (leauing there a strong Garrison) committed the gouernement and safety of that City to Sir *Edward Poynings*, who was valiant, and a worthie Knight. And (dissolving his Armie, because the cold winter was vnfit for the continuance of warlike employments) he safely returned to England, where he was received by his subiects with louely acclamation, and great ioy.

Now must we vnderstand, that whilst the king was thus busied in France, the Lord *Thomas Howard*, his chiefeest Admirall, intolerably tormented, vexed, and daily grieved the French nation both by Sea and Land.

And likewise at the same time, *James* the Fourth, king of the Scots (although he had married with the Lady *Margaret*, the eldest sister of king *Henry*) made open warr, and wilfull breach of his Pro-

The French Army is overthrown. Tyrwyn is yeilded and burnt.

The Emperour cometh vnder King Henry.

Tournay is besieged and yeilded.

King Henry's returneth into England. The Lord Admirall vexeth the French Nation. James the 4. King of Scots (in the absence of his brother, King Henry) invadeth England.

*Sir William
Bulmer, a
valiant
Knight.*

*100000.
fighting men.*

*The Earle of
Surrey mar-
cheth against
the King of
Scots.*

mise, and of the Peace, which had beene confirmed by his (solemn Oath, and began vniually to picke quarrels against the King. In so much, that (vpon notice giuen to the Earle of Surrey, that in Scotland daily preparations and provisions were made for warre) He commanded Sir William Bulmer, a valiant Knight, with two hundred lustie and tall Archers, to harbour in some Town, or Village, neare to the Scottish Pale, to the intent, that hee might not only giue speedie notice and intelligence how things passed, but also might doe his best, to withstand and to resist their power.

Within few dayes after, the Lord Humes, Chamberlaine to the king of Scots, entred with an Armie of eight thousand men into the Kingdome of England: slew the Inhabitants, burned their houses, rancked their goods, and forraged their fields: And ha- uing enriched himselfe and his souldiers with money, and great spoyle, he returned securely, not thinking that any reckoning was to be made for his good speeding. But on a sodaine, and vne- expectedly hee was encountred by Sir William Bulmer, who with one thousand Archers, and no more, so thickly shewred arrowes vpon the Scots, and with their swords in such a desperate and strange manner assailed, and assaulted them, that quickly they were ouer- throwne: and five hundred of them being slaine, and foure hun- dred at the least taken prisoners, the rest fled, leaving their spoiles and their booties behinde them, and so returned beggarly into Scotland.

The king of Scots (who not only meant to reuenge this disgrace, but also to worke wonders, if hee might, in the absence of king Henry) entred into this Realme with an Army, in which were more than one hundred thousand fighting men; and besieged the strong Castle of Norham, which (through the Captains prodigall expence of all his powder and shot, to little or no purpose) hee tooke, and kept it as his owne.

The valiant and renowned Earle of Surrey, was no idle person in this businesse: But being aided and assisted by his eldest sonne the Admirall (who vnderstanding of his Fathers preparations for those warres, came from the Sea to New-castle, and brought with him one thousand Mariners, and lustie fighting men) and by the Lords Daeres, Clifford, Conyers, Latimer, Scrope, Ogel, and Lemley, and by Sir Edward Stanley, Sir William Bulmer, Sir Nicholas Apple- jard, Sir William Sydney, Sir Stephen Bull, Sir Iohn Ernningham, Sir Henry Sherborne, Sir Thomas Metham, Sir Marmaduke Constable, Sir William Percy, Sir Christopher Ward, Sir Philip Tylney, Sir William Gas- coyne, Sir Thomas Barkibby, Sir Walter Griffyth, Sir George Darcy, Sir

Sir Christopher Pickering, Sir Thomas Butler, Sir Guy Dawney, Sir John Booth, Sir John Romeliffe, Sir John Stanley, Sir John Normanile, Sir Liowel Percy, Sir John Willoughby, Sir Edward Echingham, and Sir Brian Stapleton, Knights; and by Ralfe Brearton, John Laurence, Brian Tunstall, Richard Bold, John Donne, John Bygod, John Clavus, Thomas Fitz-Williams, Brian Stapleton, Robert Warsop, and Richard Cholmsley, Esquires, and by many other Gentlemen of worthy reputation and great valour. And hauing in his Army sixe and twenty thousand men, able and fit for war, hee marched towards the king of Scots: and vpon the ninth day of September, in the yeare of our Lord God 1513. in a field which was called Flodden, both the Armies came in view each of other. The English forces (being marshalled in good order) made two maine battailes, both which were politickly and strongly guarded by their wings. And the Scottish Army was diuided into foure battailes. All these (after some few skirmishes, and the expence of much shot, both small and great) ioyned together pell mell, and fell to handy strokes, and made such an incredible exprellion of their manhood, by the indifferent exchange of blowes and wounds, that many a strong and lustie man was quickly deprivied of his life. Nobility and Gentry were no priuiledges to protect any man from danger, nay from death; insomuch that king James himselfe fighting couragiously among his people as a common souldier, triumphed ouer the dead carcases of such as (by his sword) he had prepared for the grave. But in the end he himselfe was also slaine, and so were two Bishops, twelue Earles, foureteeen Lords, and twelue thousand Knights, Esquires, Gentlemen, & common souldiers of the Scottish Nation. And on the English part, fiftene hundred and no more were slaine. Thus wasthis Field wonne by the blessing of Almighty God, and by the victorious courage and true manhood of the Earle of Surrey, and of his sonne, and of such Nobles, Knights, Gentlemen, and braue souldiers, as in that battaile approued themselues hardie and strong in Armes. And the suruiuing Scots (finding their chiefeest helpe and safety to consist in the agility and nimblenesse of their light heeles) forsooke the Field, and with more than posting speede they fled, and returned with heauie hearts into their owne Countrey.

King Henry (after his returne into England) bountiffully rewarded such as in France, and against the Scots in England, had done him the best seruice, and some of them hee aduanced to higher places, by giuing to them an increase of dignity and of honour. For he created Thomas Howard (who was then Earle of Surrey) Duke

26000. fighting men.

Flodden field.
1513.

The Scots
are over-
throwne.

The King of
Scots is
slaine.

Noblemen
created.

of Norfolk, and the Admirall his son was made Earle of Surrey. Sir Charles Brandon (being Viscount *Lysle*) was made Duke of Suffolke, Sir Charles Somerset (being then Lord *Harbert*, and Chamberlaine to the king) was created Earle of Worcester, Sir Edward Stanley was made Lord *Mounteagle*: And the kings Almoner *Thomas Wolsey* was created Bishop of Lincolne; which fauour hee vnthankfully requited, to his owne ruine, as hereafter we shall see.

The enclosures about London throwne downe.

In the end of this yeare, the Inhabitants of Islington, Hoxton, Shordich, and of other Townes and Villages bordering neere to the City of London, inclosed their Champion Fields (in which the Citizens were accustomed, for their recreation and pastimes sake, to walke, runne, shoot, leape, and to vse such like sports at their wills and pleasures) with high hedges, and wide ditches, because they would more priuately appropriate the commodities of those grounds vnto themselves. But multitudes of the meaner sort of the Citizens issued forth with mattockes, spades, shouels, and such like tooles of husbandry, with which they ouerthrew the said hedges, filled vp those ditches, and leuelled the said grounds, vsing in them their former exercises and pastimes, and so they are enioyed at this day.

1514.
6.

Prior John
landed, but
is wel beaten.

Not long after the kings returne into England, the before named Prior John, with his Gallies, and some Foists, being well manned and provided, arrived in Suffex, and landed in the night, and burnt a poore Village named Brigh-helmston. But being discovered, himselfe wounded in the face with an arrow, and diuers of his men slaine, he with the rest were compelled to runne into the Sea, out of which, being drawne into their vessels, they returned with small gaine.

Spoiles in
Normandie
by Sir John
Wallop.

But to require their boldnesse, the Lord Admirall of England, with some few ships, and eight hundred souldiers besides the Mariners, sent Sir John Wallop to the Sea, whose often landing in Normandie was very preiudiciall to the Inhabitants: for he burnt one and twenty of their Villages and Townes, and many boats and ships which were anchored in Traport, and in other Hauens, ransacked the Countrey, and slew much people. And much wondering there was, how with so small a number he could land so often, and performe such great things.

A peace concluded.
The French
King married
with the
Kings sister.

The old French king *Lewis* the Twelfth (vnderstanding that the Flemings would not, according to their former agreements, receiue into their Countrey, the goodly, faire, & vertuous Lady *Mary*, sister to king *Henry*, to bee espoused vnto *Charles*, the young Prince of Castile, because the Spaniards had not consented to that match)

by

by his Embassadors craued peace : and became an earnest suter to the King, that shee might be his wife : whereupon (to settle loue and amity betwixt those two Kings, and their Kingdomes ; and to make the said Lady so great a Queene, and that shee might be endowed with an yearely pension of ten thousand marks during her life, & might againe returne into England if the French king died) The King, & the said Lady consented and yeelded to his request : And thereupon the Duke of Longenyle, and such other Frenchmen, as had been taken at the battaile of Tyrwyn, were now released and set free. And within few dayes after, the said Lady (being by the King and Queen accompanied to Douer, and there shipped, and attended on by *Thomas* Duke of Norfolk, *Thomas* Marquesse Dorset, & his foure brethren, the Earle of Surrey, the Lords *De la ware*, *Barnes*, and *Mountegle*, *Sir Maurice Barkley*, *Sir John Peeche*, *Sir William Sandes*, *Sir Thomas Balleyne*, *Sir John Carre*, and by many other Knights, Gentlemen and Ladies of great worth : Shee landed at Bollen, where (with great magnificence and honour) she was receiued by the Dolphin, and by many Lords of France, who brought her to Abuyle, where shee met with, and was married to the King : And (within few daies after) at Paris, shee was crowned Queene ; *The French Nation thinking their King and Country to be happy, who to their Queene had the fairest Lady in the world.*

And at her Coronation, the Dolphin (vpon a generall challenge formerly made by himselfe, *Charles Brandon* Duke of Suffolke, *Thomas Grey* Marquesse Dorset, his foure brethren, & two others, against all commers / erected many honorable and martiall games, as the Iusts, Turnay, Barriers, and such like : All which were performed with great valour, and to the great pleasure of the King and Queen. But within twelue weeks after the said marriage, King *Lewis* died, and *Francis* the First succeeded him in that kingdom. And by the Duke of Suffolke the said Queene *Mary* was brought againe into England, where he won her loue, and married her with the Kings consent.

In the seuenth yeare of King *Henries* reigne, the former peace betwixt him and King *Lewis* the Twelfth, was renewed and confirmed with King *Francis* the First, and great amity and loue was exchanged betwene those two Kings.

It now so chanced that *Thomas Wolsey* (who was borne of base Parentage in the Towne of Ipswich, and was first made the Kings Almoner, then Bishop of Lincolne, and then of the Priuie Counsell) succeeded the Archbishop and Cardinall of Yorke, who was named Doctor *Benbrike*, in the said Archbishoprick. And not long after

The French King dieth. Francis the First.

The French Queene returneth into England.

The peace with France renewed

1515.

7. All the deeds and actions of Cardinall Wolsey,

touching this story are here set together, because the discourse of the rest would otherwise by them be too much interrupted.

1.

2.

3.

4.

after he was made Cardinall of Yorke, by the mediation and procurement of those two kings.

And now, because the kings affections towards him were extraordinary: His authority above all others eminent; his countenance insatiable, and his excessive Pride and Ambition boundlesse and vnlimited, which made him bold and peremptorie, to doe all in all; From henceforth (for many yeares) all things were commanded & gouerned according to his directions & will, vntill his monstrous oppressions and sawcie practices brought him to ruine, and to destruction. And lest his deedes and his actions by often interuiewing should interrupt the other discourse of other occurrences and negotiations, hapning in this kings Reigne: We haue therefore thought it conuenient, yea necessarie, to prosecute the Historie of his proceedings to a conclusion, before we intermeddle much with the Narration of other passages and things.

He intermeddles in other mens offices.

This proud Cardinall, so eagerly hunted after authority and power, to rule and to command all others: that (not contenting himselfe with his owne offices, though they were great) Hee intruded malapertly into the Enquirie and determining of such things, as properly belonged vnto others; but especially into the Chancellorship of this Realme.

He is made Lord Chancellor.

The Archbishop of Canterbury, vnto whom it appertained, was much troubled with those his intermedlings. But (being old and perceiuing that the kings affections were fast bound to his humours: and that to crosse with him, it was the ready way to crosse himselfe) he therefore deliuered vpon the Great Seale into the kings hands, who no sooner accepted of it, but hee bestowed it vpon *Wolsey*: which fauour and dignitie might well haue satisfied his proud humour, but nothing could. For now hee (being an Archbishop, a counsaillor of Estate, a Cardinall, Chancellor of England, and the kings especiall Fauourite) directed all, commanded all, and did all.

1516.
8.

He demands accompts and enricheth himselfe thereby.

He being thus imperiously great, Required an accompt of the Captaines, Treasurers, and other Officers of the kings warres: so that some of them (who by the kings conniuece had gotten much) by excessive Bribes excusing themselves, enriched him, and left themselves poore. Others whose Estates were more powerfull, to please him, shared that which vniustly they had gotten. And some others, who had deceiued the king, and had prodigally spent all, had nothing left, and therefore were punished publickly, and exposed to open shame.

He erecteth new Courts.

Hee also erected sundry Courts of equity (which might more truly

truly be termed Courts of Iniquity) vnder a colour and pretence to heare and to determine the cases of distressed and poor people: By meanes whereof the seates of Iustice, belonging to the cōmon Lawes, were little frequented for a while, and by them he gained a masse of treasure to himselfe, vntill the people (perceiuing that by them hee waxed rich, and they poore; and that the Sentences and Iudgements of those Courts were not finall, but controlable, They (of their owne accord) forsooke them, and commended their Controuersies to the censure of the common Lawes.

In the ninth yeare of king *Henries* Reigne, Pope *Leo* sent vnto him Cardinal *Campeius* as his Legate, to sollicite him (as likewise he had done to the kings of France & Spaine, and the Princes of Germanie) to make warre vpon the Turks. But so outrageous was the Ocean of *Wolseys* pride, that (because he knew that *Campeius*, in regard of his power Legantine, was to haue the Precedency of place when they twomet) hee cunningly informed him by certaine Bishops (who went vnto him to Callice, vnder a fained colour to visit him) that his journey would not be successfull, but come to none effect, except *Wolsey* were ioyned in equall authority with him in that businesse: whereupon *Campeius* (with all expedition) dispatched Messengers vnto Rome, by whom within forty daies hee receiued a new Commission, by which *Wolsey* was also made the Popes Legate and Commissioner as well as he. Then was *Campeius* admitted to come into this Realme, and both those two Legates (within few daies after) repayred to the Kings Court at Greenwich (hauing two siluer Crosses, & two Pillars of the same mettel, two Axes gilt with fine gold, & two imbroydered Cushions borne before them: But the Cardinall of Yorke preferred his elder brother to the inferiour place. And by an eloquent Oration (which by an Italian was made vnto the king) he was informed of the substance of their message; But to make answer thereunto, The king desired respite for a few dayes, in which he might be aduised and counselled in that matter. Then did *Wolsey* (by his authority Legantine) erect an honourable Court, without the kings notice or licence, and called it the Legantine Court. By the authority whereof, he visited all Bishops and their Diocesses, and other Clergie men; punishing such as were poore and vnable to giue bribes, but enriching himselfe by the enforced bounty of such as had store of money, and of faults.

By the same authority, he also sequestred vnto himselfe the probate of all Wills and Testaments: and such was his intolerable pride, by reason of his Legantine authority, that when (before and

1517.

9.

By subtiltie
he is made a
Legate.

Cardinall
Campeius.

The Court
Legantine.

Wolseys intol-
erable pride.

and after meat) he washed his greasie fifts, he was at his Lanatory attended and serued by Dukes and Earles, for that purpose.

This his example of haughtinesse, made the Clergy of this Land so proud and insolent, that their industrious labours, which formerly they applyed to the studies of morall Vertues, and of Diuinity, were now imployed to deuise curious fashions in their behauiour, in their apparrell, and in their dyet.

1520.

12.

*K. Henry and
his Queene
goe into
France.*

King Henry and his Queene, in the twelfth yeare of his Reigne, resolved to trauaile into France, for lone and friendships sake, to glad themselues with the society of the French king, Francis the First, and of his Queene. For which iourney, it cannot well be reported what cost in apparrell, what provision for attendance, what furniture for horses, what charges for jewels, and what preparations for rare banquetings, and princely gifts, were made both in England and in France.

And when the appointed time drew neere, the King and the Queene (being accompanied with the Cardinall of York, and with many Dukes, Earles, Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, and faire Ladies of principall reckoning and accompt, sayled from Douer, and safely came to Callice, and the French King and his Queene, with their Royall and godly traine, came to Arde.

And (because it was intended, that the peace which was betwixt the two kings, should be enlarged and confirmed) king Henry appointed the Cardinall to go before him to the French king, and to conferte with him touching that matter. For which purpose, hee gaue vnto him (by his Letters Patents, vnder the great Seale of his Kingdome of England) full power and absolute authority, in all points, to doe therein as he himselfe listed.

*Two large
commissions.*

*The Cardinall
going to the
French king.*

The Cardinall (being infinitely prided by reason of this vnreasonable, and vlimited authority and power which hee had gotten) tooke his iourney towards Arde, being attended on by some hundreds of Lords, Knights, Esquires, and Gentlemen: all which were clothed in crimson Veluet, and wore chaines of gold, and with as many Yeomen and Grooms, whose apparrell was made of rich Skarlet.

*A Princely
meeting.*

Now, when hee came vnto Arde, hee was royally entertained by the French king, and also by all the Nobility of his Court, who gaue their attendance on the king. But when the French Councell had viewed his Commission, and the vlimited extent thereof. The French king (by their aduice and counsell) granted to him the like authority and commission, in all respects, vnder the great Seale of France, which hee disdainingly refused, vnill hee was licenced

licenced by king *Henry* to accept thereof. After this great honour vnto him done, both the said Kings and their Queenes met together diuers dayes in the Valley of Andren, where they feasted, banqueted, cheered, and gladded each other, and with great bountie communicating their rich gifts each one to the other, and to the great men and Ladies of each others Nation, they tooke an unwilling and a friendly leaue, and king *Henry*, with his Queene and honorable train, returned to Calice, and from thence into England, where they were receiued with much ioy. But in the meane time the Cardinall so earnestly gaped after honour, and the reuerence of the people, that hee did little or nothing touching the said peace.

Now must wee vnderstand, that all places and all Countries were filled with the frequent reports of warre to be made betwixt the Emperour and the French king, with both which Princes king *Henry* was in league; by meanes whereof, king *Henry* solicited amitie and peace. Whereupon it was concluded, that the Commissioners of those three great Princes should meet together at Calice, where that matter should be debated and concluded, if possibly it might be.

King *Henry*, the more to honour and to exalt his Cardinall, gaue vnto him, and to the Earle of Worcester, and to the Lords *S. Iohn Ferrers*, and *Harbert*, and to the Bishops of Durham and Elie, and to Sir *Thomas Bulcine*, Sir *Iohn Peché*, Sir *Iohn Hussey*, Sir *Richard Wyngfield*, and Sir *Henry Guilford* Knights, and vnto such others as hee made Commissioners for that purpose, as large and as ample power and authoritie touching that businesse, as by any meanes could be deuised, or by any words be vttered: and then (being fully furnished and prouided) this proud Cardinall with his Colleagues (whom hee respected as his vnderlings) passed to the Tower-Wharfe thorow the Citie of London, and in his passage was met by the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and by the Companies in their seuerall Liueries, who did vnto him all honour and reuerence; and then proceeding forwards, he with the rest of the Commissioners and their Attendants tooke their Barges, landed at Grauesend, and comming to the Citie of Canterburie, the Arch-bishop, and the prime ones of the Clergie of England, met the proud Cardinall without the Cities Gates, with a solemne Procession, and magnified him as a King. Then being shipped at Douer, he with his companie safely arriued at Calice, where he was too much elated, and made too arrogantly proud, by receiuing of too much reuerence and honour: yet all was done by the kings command. Thither

o o

also

1521.

13.

The Cardinals large Commission.

The Cardinal is honoured.

The Cardinal is receiued with Procession.

The King commands he should be honoured.

*The Cardinal
goeth to the
Emperours
Court.*

*He had the
great Seale
of England
with him.*

*His great
state.
The Emperour
meeteth him.*

His Oration.

also resorted the other Embassadours, and betwixt them often conferences were had. But the Commissioners of the Emperour were stiffe, and the French were stout.

The proud Cardinall (not contenting himselfe with such honours as formerly had been giuen to him) would needs proclaime and publish his greatnesse in the Emperour *Maximilians* Court at Brudges, where hee hoped to receiue the greater esteeme, because hee had with him the Great Seale of the Kingdome of England, which neuer before that time any Chancellor dared to transport beyond the Seas out of this Realme. For this purpose he entreated some few daies absence of the Commissioners of the two other Princes, that in the meane time he might visit the Emperour: For hee pretended that their personall presence and conference might greatly further and expedite that businesse. Wherefore beeing accompanied with foure hundred and threescore horse, hee passed by Graueling, Dunkerke, Newport, and by Odenburgh, & was euer where met and saluted by the Noblemen and Gentry of those Countries. And comming towards Brudges, he was met one mile out of the Towne by the Emperour himselfe, and by the Prime and Flower of all his Court. Where the Emperour did him the more reuerence principally for two causes: First, because he was informed of the large extent of his commision, granted by King *Henry*. And secondly, because the great seale of the kingdome of England was in those Countries borne with great state before him, which seemed to bee the chiefeft marke and badge by which king *Henry* would expresse the extraordinary trust & confidence which hee reposed in him; when as in truth and indeed hee foolishly and vnadvisedly caried the said Seale with him for his owne glorie, without the kings leaue: so that in his absence no Sherifs could be made, nor any Writs, Commissions, or Parents could bee sealed, which wronged many particular men, and was very preiudiciall to the present estate of the whole kingdome.

Within a day or two after the Cardinals comming to Brudges, the Emperour with his Councell, and *Walsey* with his Associates, seriously disputed and debated of the causes of the iarres and wars intended betwixt his Maiestie and the French king. But when the Cardinall perceiued that the Emperour (without restitution vnto him made of such of his Castles, Forts, Townes, Cities, and Territories, as by the French king were detained from him) would not incline to any peace, hee then (like a learned and like a wittie Oratour) discoursed largely of the happinesse of peace, and of the vnspcakable and insupportable miseries of bloody war, and forgat

not

not to shew vnto the Emperour the kingly strength and puissance of his Soueraigne, both in men, and also in horses, ships, armour, ordinance, and all other materials for the warre. And further adding, That in regard of the league which was betwixt those two Kings, his Lord and Master should be vrged to take part with the French king, if any violence by any other Prince should be offered to him.

The Emperour, acknowledging all to bee true whatsoeuer the Cardinall had spoken touching the benefits of peace, & the incommodities of warre, answered, That God, who had giuen honours and possessions vnto Emperours and kings, had (includedly in the same gifts) appropriated such an inheritable right in them vnto those to whom they were so giuen, that he doubted not but (with the pleasure of Almighty God) they might not onely defend and keep them with the sword from all vsurpers & intruders, but might also by force and violence regaine them, if iniuriouly and besides right they were kept and detained. And seeing that all kings and Princes were bounden to support right, and to suppress all iniuries & wrongs, he said he doubted little of his vncke king *Hehrles* helpe and comfort, if betwixt himselfe & the French king there were no peace to be made without blowes. Hee also informed the English Commissioners, that when his forces (hee being at that time but Arch-duke of Austria) had ouerthrowne the Armie of k. *Charles* the eighth at Gingate, then the said king (to procure his peace) desired and espoused the Lady *Margaret* his daughter (now wife to the Duke of Sauoy) and vpon the same conclusion of the said marriage, hee gaue with her to the said French king a good portion in money, with diuerse Townes and Castles in Piccardie, which were still detained and kept from him, notwithstanding that the said king *Charles* perfidiously refused afterwards to marie her, and sent her home.

He told them likewise, that he himselfe being lawfully betrothed vnto the Lady *Jane*, the young Dutches of Brissaigne; he treacherously gate her from him, and tooke her to his owne wife.

Hee shewed them also, that whereas the Duke of Guelders was his subiect, and ought to liue vnder his homage and obedience, hee (by the procurement of the now French king) stood out as a rebell, refusing to be reformed without blowes.

He complained also that the French king treacherously surprised from the house of Castile the Realme of Naples, but should restore it againe by friendship or by warre.

Thus when the Emperour had discoursed, and had made an

*The Emperors
answer.*

*The Emperors
grievances.*

1

2

3

4

end of speaking: the Cardinall replyed little, leauing him to his owne will; and taking a friendly and a kinde farewell, hee returned to Calice: where hee againe (but more coldly than before) debated with those Embassadors vpon the conclusions of a peace: But when he perceiued that no such matter could be effected, hee tooke his leaue and returned into England, and was graciously welcommed as a friend, and liberally feasted as a stranger, by the King.

1523.

15

1524.

16

1525.

17.

Hee grants sh
strange com-
missions for
taxes.

In the fifteenth, sixteenth, and seuenteenth yeares of King *Henries* Reigne: this proud Cardinall (vnder the colour of the Kings partaking with the Emperor in his warres against the French king) of his owne authoritie, and without the Kings commandement, granted forth Commissions vnder the great Scale of England, into euery Shire and Prouince of the Kingdome, and directed them to the principall and chiefeest men, and gaue vnto them priuate instructions, how, and in what sort, they should proceed, and demean themselves in the execution of that businesse. And by the same Commissions, euery man was required to depose the certaine and true value of his Estate: and then, Of euery fiftie pounds and vppward, there was demanded foure shillings the pound; And for euery pound, aboue twentie, and vnder fiftie, two shillings; And for euery pound, aboue twentie shillings, & vnder twentie pounds, twelue pence. The payment thereof to bee in money, or in plate. And in London, hee made himselfe the chiefe Commissioner: In which he behaued himselfe insolently as a Tyrant, not so much to enrich the King, as to stuffe vp his owne purse. The like Commissions he granted forth against all the Clergie of this Land, of whom he demanded foure shillings the pound of all their livings.

The commons
will not obey.

Their reasons

These vniust proceedings grieved the Clergie, and common People at the heart, and generally they refused to submit themselves in that businesse.

1. First, because those Commissions were not established, nor were grounded vpon the Lawes of this kingdome and Commonweale.

2. Secondly, because the execution of them would be a dangerous president against the liberie and freedome of this kingdome, in time to come.

3. Thirdly, because many mens credits exceeded their estates; and to disconer their inabilities, either vpon their oathes or otherwise; it might, and would tend to the subuersion and vtter overthrow, both of them, and of their Families.

4. And lastly, because the thing demanded and required to bee paid

paid was so much, That not one man (among them generally) had that value in money or in plate, though they were worth much more: And therefore if the king, by force of these Commissions, should get into his hands all his subjects plate and money, they then should for necessities sake be constrained to barter, and to exchange and chop Lead for Clothes, Tyme for Bread, and Cloth for Cheese.

But these reasons prevailed not with the Cardinall: but contrariwise, hee (being by a generall Petition entreated to perswade the king to desist from that course, and by the Lawes to devise some other: made this froward and fallen answer; That he would rather have his tongue plucked out of his mouth with pinners, than hee would move anie such matter, and that the said summes demanded should be payed, or leuied, whether they would or no. And in Hampshire, the common people so much repined and grudged at these demands, That the Lord Viscount *Lisle*, and Sir *Richard Worsley*, and the other Commissioners for that businesse, greatly doubted what would ensue thereof. Wherefore (to pacifie the people) He, by his letters, most humbly entreated the Cardinall, that the twelfth pence, proportioned with the summes before demanded, might suffice, that thereby future dangers & troubles might be auoyded. But when the Cardinall with malignant eyes had perused the Viscounts Letters, he deeply swore, that they should cost him his head; because in them his presumption did manifestly appeare, taking to himselfe leave and libertie, to differ from those instructions which were giuen him. This was hee requited and recompenced for his good seruice to the king: and for his ducious desire to preserve the peace and quietnesse of his countrey, and of this common weale.

The Cardinall perceiuing, that the People would not support this heauie burden, recalled those Commissions, and sent forth others; whereby a sixth part of their substance was demanded, according to the aforesaid rates; whereto hee doubted not but willingly they would yeelde: but they refused not onely to submit themselves therein, but in euerie Shire they cursed the Cardinall to the pit of Hell; and were so incensed, that much trouble among them was likely to ensue. The king, who was informed in what strange sort and fashion his people were vsed, and vnderstanding that euerie place was filled with clamours, with discontentment, and with danger, grieued thereat exceedingly. And being resolved to reforme what was amisse, with all expedition, hee (by his Letters, which were directed into euery Countrey within his kingdom)

His tyrannie.

New Commissions.

The Cardinall is cursed.

The commissions are recalled.

A Beneuolence,

The Cardinalls base flatterie.

Commissions for the Beneuolence.

The Cardinall suppresseth some Religious Houses.

Note this.

commanded a present cessation of all executions of the said Commissions; and protested that they were granted forth without his knowledge or consent, and that he would not (but by the course of law) require any thing from his people, though his wants were great, to maintaine his warres. But if by way of a Beneuolence they would of their owne accord enlarge themselues towards him, hee then would accept thereof, and take it as an infallible proofe of their love and due towards their King.

The ambitious Cardinall priuately grudging that the king in his Letters had includedly layd the fault on him, and intending to rob his Maiestie of his peoples good affections towards him, & practising to win it vnto himselfe, required the Lord Maior and Aldermen of London to come before him, to whom by a subtil and a cunning speech hee protested, that because hee saw and perceiued that those Taxes were too heauie for them to beare, and because in his heart hee loued them, hee therefore had kneeled to the king, and had perswaded him to reuoke the said Commissions, and wholly to relye vpon their free beneuolence and good will. Wherefore hee courteously aduised them to be voluntarily bountifull and liberall of their owne accord. Then with great expedition hee dispatched his Letters to that effect into every Shire and Countie of this kingdome. But in regard that the king in his Letters had protested his ignorance touching the said former Taxes; therefore the proud Cardinall was still condemned, and mortally hated by the people.

Then forthwith (by the incitation of the Cardinall) new Commissions for the said beneuolence were made. And in the execution of them some of the Commissioners endeauoured fauely to perswade, but others of them by rough and vnkinde speeches procured men to give largely, whether they would or no. Yet they preuailed little: for the greatest part of the people refused to giue any thing, some of them alledging the Statute which was made against the demanding of Beneuolences in the first yeare of the reigne of king Richard the Third, and some others alledging for their excuse, their pouertie and their want.

It is now seriously to be obserued, that the Cardinall hauing newly created two Colledges, the one in Ipswich, where hee was borne, and the other in Oxford, and intending to make their possessions faire and great, as their foundations were wide and large, procured a licence from the Pope, by vertue whereof (as hee was authorized) hee plucked done certaine small Abbies, Frieries, and Religious Houses, to appropriate their Lands and Reuenues to those

those Colledges: which example and president first moued the king, for other respects, within few yeares after to plucke downe all such Religious Houses. For if it were religious in the Pope and Cardinall so to doe, the king little doubted (seeing the grosse enormities and euill life of most of those men) but it was likewise lawfull for him to plucke them downe.

And because the busie head of the Cardinall could not bee idle, therefore he made the king to beleene, that the estate and condition of his owne house was vnprofitably disordered, and out of tune. Whereupon, for the reformation thereof, hee remoued diuers of the kings menial seruants and household Officers from their places, and bestowed them vpon others, whom hee more fancied, although they deserued worse. Hee also bestowed his Manour of Hampton Court, with all such costly buildings as hee had erected there, vpon the King, in regard whereof, the king gaue him leave to keepe his Court in his Palace of Richmond, wherein king Henry the Seuenth did extraordinarily delight. These his two actions made him hatefull to the Commons, who mutteringly repined, saying that the king and they were much abused, so to be vsed by a Butchers Dogge.

At this time the French King became an earnest suiter to King Henry, to haue in mariage for the Dolphin, the Lady Mary, the kings onely daughter, and heire apparant to the Crowne. But the said motion was crossed by a double encounter. The first was, the dislike which the States-men and the Commons of this Realme had conceined touching that match, which publikely they declared by their solemne protestations, and frequent speeches, that if King Henry should dye without issue male of his body lawfully begotten, as hee then had none, they would not receiue a Frenchman to bee their king, because hee possessing a greater estate and kingdome, would make this but a seruant and an attendant vpon that. The second was a scruple cast in the way (as most men thought, vpon the secret intimation of the Cardinall, in displeasure to the Emperour, because by strength hee had not made him Pope) by the President of Paris, who made it questionable, whether or no the Ladie Mary were legitimate, and borne in lawfull matrimonie, because the king had begotten her vpon the bodie of the Ladie Katherine, Aunt to the Emperour, and who had sometimes been his brother Prince Arthurs wife. And from this doubt and from this scruple (which before that time was not thought on) infinite vexation and trouble did ensue, as in this discourse it shall appeare. For thereupon the kings Confessor, Doctor Long-

land,

Hereafter
methinks
Kings house
hold.

Hampton
Court.

1527.
19
The Kings
marriage
called into
question.

2

land, Bishop of Lincolne, and many other profound Diuines, informed the King, that almost twentie yeares hee had liued incestuously with the Queene, and that now (for his conscience sake) hee ought truly and heartily to repent for that great sinne, and to leaue her bed.

The Cardinall is Ambassadour for France.

He is made proud.

Two ridiculous Pageants.

The French King meets him.

He concludes a peace.

The Cardinall, who (as he thought) had a long time lien lazily at home, would now be gadding into France, in an Ambassage to the French King, the substance whereof was onely knowne to the King and him. And at his departure, the King (in the presence of all his Lords) embraced him as his familiar friend. And at that time such was his great estate, that passing thorow the Cite of London, he was attended by twelue hundred horse. And when he came to Calice, hee was receiued with as much honour as by the Towne and Garrison could be presented vnto him. And at Balleine (among many other deuices to magnifie his greatnesse) hee was entertained with two ridiculous Pageants.

In the one of them there was a Nunne, called the holy Church, vnto whose person and chastitie three Spaniards and three Almshouses attempted to offer violence, but by a Cardinall she was rescued and deliuered from them all.

And in the other there was represented a Pope lying on the ground, and an Emperour sitting in an Imperiall Throne; but a Cardinall plucked him from his seate, raised the Pope, and placed him therein.

From Balleine he came towards Amyens: he was met vpon the way by the Provost and the most substantiall Citizens on horsebacke, and by them he was saluted and reuerenced as a King. And when he came within halfe a mile of the Ciry, the King himselfe with his Nobles met him, cheerefully embraced him, and in a wonderfull and magnificient pompe conducted him to his lodging, on the gates whereof was written in large and faire letters, *Cardinalis pacificus, The peaceable Cardinall, or The Cardinall of peace.* And at their departure the proud Cardinall would haue vouchsafed to haue brought the King to his Court, but the King would not suffer him so to doe. Thus Kings, Nobles, Times and Places conspired (if it had beene possible) to haue made him more proud, whose heart was so hanghry, that hee supposed hee could neuer be humbled and brought low.

Then daily almost for the space of three weekes together, the French King, his Councell, and the Cardinall (with his Associates, who were obscured by his greatnesse, as the Moone is by the direct opposition of the Sunne) conferred seriously: and in the end he

he concluded a peace betwixt the two Kings, in the honour whereof, and of the proud Cardinall, the instrument in which the Articles of the said peace were contained, was sealed with a scale purposely made of fine gold, whereof he boastingly bragged the next Terme in the Starre-chamber, affirming before the whole Assemblie, that the peace which by him was concluded, was such an absolute, perfect, and sound peace, that it would continue *in secula seculorum*, world without end. But the people mutteringly repined thereat, saying that England neuer long enioyed any benefit by any peace which was concluded with the French, whose proprietie it was (for their aduantage, without cause) to start aside from any thing which they had said, and sworne to performe. They also said, that to enter into a fained league with the French King, the Emperour and his friendship was abandoned, and that old enemies were entertained, and old friends were vnaduisedly (by the Cardinals meanes) cast off. And therein they spake truly: for by the Cardinals enticement, and secret perswasions, the King (without good cause) shewed himselfe an enemy to the Emperour, and to the Flemings, and vnto others of his people, althoughe the Emperour by all fitting and be seeming meanes had wooed him to obtaine and to keepe his loue.

By these jarres, thus cunningly breached by the Cardinall, in fauour of the Pope, and of the French King, the question touching the lawfulnessse or nullitie of the Kings mariage was smothered for a while. But not long after, such as seemed to bee tender ouer the Kings conscience, and prouident to establish the true succession of this Kingdome in a lawfull heire, reuiued the scruple, and therewithall so busied the Kings cogitations and thoughts, that a religious sorrow began to seize vpon him. And (to auoid the continuance in that incestuous sinne, vntill by a iudiciall sentence the doubts were cleared) hee refrained from the Queenes bed. And the Cardinall (to make himselfe more great than hee was) procured a commission from the Pope, to bee directed to him, and vnto his ancient brother *Campeius*, that before them, as supreme Iudges, that question (by legall processes and proceedings) might bee heard, debated on, and censured, according to the Lawes of God and the Lawes of man.

These two Legates (hauing receiued this commission) informed the Queene of their authoritie and power: and shee (in some passion) accused *Wolsey* as the principall broacher of that doubt, and the maintainer of that contention, partly to bee reuenged thereby vpon her Nephew the Emperour, because he would not make him

Pope,

1528.
20.
The mariage
in question.

A power
Legatine
is granted.

Wolsey is
accused.

Pope (as secretly he had requested him) and partly, because oftentimes in a most secret, louing and gentle fashion, shee had admonished and warned him of his couetousnesse and tyrannie, of his extortions and oppressions, and of his pride and lecherie: but he excused himselfe, as if he had beene an honest man.

*The Queene
chooseth
Counsellors.*

The king (pretending nothing in this businesse but truth, sinceritie and iustice, according to the Lawes of God and Man) was well contented, that the Queene should make choyse of the greatest Clerkes, and of the best learned men within his kingdome, to defend and to maintaine her cause: Whereupon he elected *William Warham* Archbishop of Canterbury, And *Nicolas West* Bishop of Ely, who were Doctors of the Laws, and *John Fisber* Bishop of Rochester, and *Henry Standish* Bishop of Assaph, who were Doctors of Diuinity, and some others: And they (as occasions did require) did for her asmuch therein, as by wit and learning could be done.

1529.

21.

*The King and
Queene are
summoned.*

Now for the prosecuting of this businesse, the two Legates caused a stately Court to be erected at the Black-fryers in the great Hall, in which (for them) were placed two Chaires and two great Cushions, couered ouer with cloth of gold: And (at the appointed day) the two Legates tooke their places; but the Cardinal of York (as his custome was) preferred his elder brother *Campeius* to the left hand: and then, hauing caused their commission publicly to be read, the King and the Queene were cyted in their owne persons, or by their Proctors, to appeare. The King by his Proctors submitted himselfe to the Apostolical authority and power, which by the Pope to the two Legates was giuen. But the Queene herselfe (being accompanied with many Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, and hauing first done great reuerence to the Legates) appealed from them (as from Iudges which were not competent, and indifferent to determine betwixt the Queene and King) to the Court at Rome. This appeale they allowed not: but in the same Court they sate weekly. And before them many learned and subtrill disputations touching the lawfulnessse, and also concerning the insufficiencie of that mariage, were daily made before them.

*The Queene
appealeth.*

*The Kings
protestation.*

But the King (perceiuing that no quicke dispatch was vsed, though oftentimes deliberately they consulted) came with the Queene into the said Court, where his Maiestie solemnly protested his infinite loue towards her; acknowledging her to be the most amiable, louing, kinde, dutious, modest, and sweetest wife, that (hee thought) was in the whole world: And that therefore he should not take so much ioy and comfort, in any thing else

what-

whatsoever, as hee should doe in her, if by the lawes of God and Man she might remaine his wife : and therefore, for the determining of that question, and for the quieting of his troubled conscience, hee instantly importuned a quicke dispatch and a small end. Then was the Queene demanded, whether shee would sticke to her appeale or no : who answered, yea : yet (for all that) the Court proceeded weekly (though safely) as before.

Within few dayes after, the king being informed, that after the last day of that moneth of Iuly, the Legates would not sit any more, vntill the fourth day of October, He was thereat vexed and troubled about measure : Wherefore (at the next sitting) hee sent the Dukes of Norfolke, and of Suffolke, with some other Lords, to the Legates ; requesting them to dispatch their iudiciall sentence one way or other, that long delaies might not augment the anguish of his troubled conscience. The Dukes, in a reuerent, and in an earnest manner deliuered their message in the open Court. But by *Campeius* it was answered, That there was yearly, and of custome a cessation in the Court of Rome, betwixt the aforesaid daies, from all Legall proceedings whatsoever : And that, if any sentence in the Interim were giuen, it was vtterly voyd in Law and of no force at all : And therefore, seeing that their Court was a branch of the Court of Rome, they could not (vntill the day prefixed) intermeddle any further in that busines. This answer so much offended *Charles* the Duke of Suffolke, that (striking his fist vpon the board) hee swore, that the old saying was too too true, *That neuer Cardinall or Legate did any good in England* : and therewithall the offended Lords departed, and so did almost the whole companie, leaving the two Legates to looke one vpon the other.

The king being thus troubled with an enforced delay, contented himselfe as patiently as he was able, hoping that in October that businesse would haue an end. But within few dayes after, He was informed, that *Campeius* (being sent for by the Pope) made great preparations for his returne to Rome : Wherby he perceiued plainly, that the two Legates had grossly dissembled with him ; and that they had secretly plotted these delayes ; that the matter should not bee definitiue censured and sentenced by them ; but in the Court at Rome, where infinite costs and charges would be expended : the businesse would be lingred on with arguments, and long disputes, and that his conscience should bee vsurled in the meane time. And for this cause, from this time forward, the King in his heart hated and maligned his vnthankfull & dissembling creature base *wolsey*, whom (from a contemptible birth and estate) hee had preferred,

He desireth a quick end.

The King is delayed.

The Duke of Suffolke is angry.

Campeius is bound for Rome.

Two craftie mates.

The King hateth Wolsey.

preferred, and made Abbot of S. Albons, his Almoner, a Counsa-
lor of Estate, Bishop of Winchester, and of Durham, Arch-bishop
of Yorke, an Embassadour to Kings and Princes, his Chancellor,
and a Cardinall.

And thus, this businesse which hee plotted, to make himselfe
gracious with the king, eminent above others, and to be reuenged
vpon his enemies, turned to his owne ruine and vtter destruction
in the end.

Articles a-
gainst Wol-
sey.

For the Kings Counsell and the Nobles of this Land (perceining
that the kings heart was changed from him) were not a little glad,
because generally hee was hated. And (to presse him downe in his
falling) they framed against him diuers Articles, some demonstra-
ting his excessive pride, others his insulting tyranny, others his
griuous oppressions, others his monstrous iniustice, others his
insatiable couetousnesse, others his abominable lecherie, others
his eager and sharpe courses to reuenge, and others his secret and
his cunning dealing betwixt the Pope and him, whereby his Maie-
sties regall authoritie and his prerogatiue royall in all things tou-
ching the Clergie and Church, was made voyde. And thereupon
they concluded that hee was guiltie of the Premunire, and conse-
quently had forfeited all his promotions, lands, goods, chattels,
and his libertie to the king. These Articles beeing reduced into
good forme, and fit order, were by the Nobility ingrossed into a
booke, subscribed with their hands, and then it was deliuered to
the king, who concealed it for a few dayes.

Premunire.

Campeius
takes his
leane.

The two Legates (not knowing what had passed) came to Wood-
stocke to the king, where *Campeius* tooke his leane to goe to Rome:
and *Wolsey* (who purposed to haue left him, and to haue remained
with the king) was frowningly commanded to accompany his ho-
nest brother vnto London, where he should be further informed of
the kings minde. When they were come thither, and from thence
were iourning towards the Sea coasts: by order and direction
from the Councel, *Campeius* his trunks and chests were broken vp,
and a diligent search was made, to finde such letters, as they con-
iectured were by *Wolsey* sent to Rome: But none were found: For
by a Post, they were sent away a day or two before.

His chests
are broken.

The Cardi-
nall is indi-
cted.

The great
Seale is taken
from him.

The next Terme, the king caused his Attorney Generall, na-
med Sir *Christopher Hales*, to preferre into the kings Bench, an in-
ditement vpon the Statute of Premunire, against the Cardinall, vp-
on the aforesaid Articles, which he performed accordingly: And
by the Grand-Iurie, it was found against the Cardinall. Then
forthwith the Dukes of Norfolkke, & of Suffolke, were required to
take

take from him the great Scale, which the king bestowed vpon Sir Thomas Moore: he also caused Sir William Fitz-Williams, Knight of the Garter, and Treasurer of his Maiesties houlhold, and Doctor Stephen Gardiner his new Secretary, so to guard, & so to watch his House and Palace at Westminster, that none of his moveables, whatsoeuer, might bee imbeisled, or purloined, or carried away from thence. And the Cardinall himself being confined to Asher, not farre from Kingston, and most of his Attendants being displaced, and remoued from him: a small allowance of things needfull was appointed to him for his necessary vse, whereat hee infinitely grieved.

*His goods
are seized.*

He is confined.

Then was he required by the king, to plead to the said Indictment: but by his Attorny (sufficiently authorized vnder his hand and seale) he confessed euery martiall point thereof.

*He confesseth
this indictment.*

Then the king conferred the Abbie of S. Albones vpon the Prior of Norwich, the Bishoprick of Durham vpon Doctor Tansill, and the Chancellorship was ratified to Sir Thomas Moore. But the king (of his gentleness, and in regard of his former fauours towards the Cardinall) left vnto him the Arch-bishoprick of York: and the Bishoprick of Winchester, and sent vnto him much plate, household stuffe, and many other things (part of that which had bin taken from him) to a great value. Yet in his heart, he remained vnthankfull, grudging, and malicious towards the king.

*His dignities
taken from
him.*

The king (in former times) had intermeddled very little with the gouernment of this Common-weale, for he was almost altogether ruled and directed by the Cardinall, and by the Clergie of this Land. But he now began to be sensible of that error, and to cast away that yoke: so that he tooke the raines into his own hand. And (first of all) he assembled his high Court of Parliament, in which the Commons of the Lower house sharply complained of the misdemeanors of the Clergie: But especially in these fixe things.

Articles against the Clergie.

First, because (with great extremity) they exacted vnreasonable summes of monie, at due fees, for the Probate of mens last Wils and Testaments.

2 Secondly, Because they were excessively couetous, and cruell, in demanding for Mortuaries, especially of such poor people

people, as scarcely left two kins for the maintenance of their wives and children.

- 3 Thirdly, Because their full purses made them to become Farmers of great Granges, Barton, and temporall farms, taking them in lease in every Shire, and became Husbandmen and Graziers, to the preiudice and hurt of such as were trained and brought up only to be Husbandmen.
- 4 Fourthly, Because many of them kept Tanning houses for their private gaine, and were Brokers, Buyers, and Ingrossers of Wool, Cloth, and other merchandizes, snatching up all, and enforcing tradesmen, and clothiers to buy those commodities at the second, or third hand, and at unreasonable prices.
- 5 Fifthly, Because such Clergie men as had the best, and the greatest Spirituall livings, did (with great extremities) take the utmost of their rights: And yet they lived in the Courts, or in the houses of Noblemen, and Bishops, so that they spent nothing in Hospitalitie among their Neighbours, Nor did feede their flocke with the milke of Gods most holy and sacred Word.
- 6 And last of all, Because diuers ignorant men among them, held and enjoyed eight, ten, twelue, yea more Benefices and Spirituall promotions to themselves severally, and yet lived not upon any one of them: but kept great Schollars and learned men, as a sort commons, in one of the Vniuersities, who were better able to doe more good than they.

*Doctor Fisher
wrote the
lower house
of Parlia-
ment.*

The Bishops perceiuing that these matters much concerned them, and the whole Clergie of this Land, strongly opposed themselves against such as exhibited the same complaints. Insomuch that Doctor Fisher Bishop of Rochester (being more earnest, than well aduised) desired the Lords to remember well, and to consider, that when the Bohemians abused the estate and dignitie of their Clergie, they then ruinated and destroyed their Kingdome and Common-weale: Wherefore hee instantly requested them to bee well aduised, before they entertained these objections: For (quoth hee) they are not religious, nor doe proceed from Faith.

When

When the Commons had vnderstood what the Bishop of Rochester had spoken: Then by *Thomas Andley* their Speaker, and by thirty others of the house, They informed the King of the said injury & wrong: Alleging that if the lower House of Parliament were repured to want Faith, then they were esteemed to bee Heretikes, and consequently, that all such Bills as they preferred, or did passe, should be preferred and concluded on by Paynims, Pagans, and Faithlesse men, and so were vnlawfull, and vnfit to rule, and to gouerne Christians, and such as truly, and sincerely honored, and adored God.

The King (who was much offended, and grieved at the Bishops speech) gave them this gentle answer: That he would vnderstand his meaning concerning those words, and that (with all convenient expedition) hee would informe them of his answer. And within a day or two after, the said Bishop and six others were sent for, & the Bishop of Rochester was reprehended by the King. But with many solemne protestations, hee assured the King, that hee referred those words, *They proceeded not from faith*, to the doings, deeds and actions of the Bohemians, and not to the doings of the lower House, which likewise was affirmed by the rest. This his excuse was by the King sent to the Commons, who spake liberally of the Bishop, & repayed their debt with vnseeming termes. In so much, that at a Committee (in which the Bishops strongly persisted, to maintaine, and to iustifie the taking of their Fees for probates of Testaments, to be lawfull) because the same payments had bene of a long time vsed, a Gentleman of the lower House replied to the Archbishop of Cantuarie, That Theetres on Shooters Hill vsed to take purses there: Ergo it was lawfull. This speech pleased the Commons well: For they thought, That they had now angered the Bishops, as the Bishop of Rochester had angered them. Then were the matters aforesaid comprised in the same complaint, reduced into a formall Bill: which (being long, & substantially disposed on, and in some points qualified) were assented vnto by both the Houses, and afterwards (for Lawes) established by the King.

The Booke also, which contained the Articles, which were drawne against the Cardinall, was sent by the Lords to the lower House. In which (among diuers other things) he was principally accused of these great faults:

First, That by dishonest and cunning reasons, hee had deceitfully induced the King, to consent that he should be made

They complained to the King.

A bad shofr.

The Articles against Wolsey.

made a Legate to the Pope, which authoritie did (indeede and in effect) frustrate and make void, all the authoritie and iurisdiction of all other Bishops and Clergie men within this Kingdome, and also the authoritie of the King in Ecclesiasticall things and causes.

- 2 Item, That in all his letters, and other passages to forraigne Estates and Princes, his phrase in writing was, *Ego, & Rex meus*; I, and my King: as if the Kings Maiestie had been his inferior, and at his command.
- 3 Item, That (to induce the Pope to giue vnto him a power Legantine) he in his letters for that purpose had this phrase: *Ecclesia Anglicana facta est in reprobum sensum*; The Church of England is become reprobate: whereby bee vnchristianly disgraced and abominably slandered the Church of England, as being faithlesse. And that therefore necessitie did instantly urge and require, that by a power Legantine, to be granted vnto him, it might be reduced to a right belief.
- 4 Item, That when bee was sent an Ambassador to Callice, there to conferre with the Ambassadors of the Emperour, and of the French King, Hee carried with him, without the Kings leaue, the great Seale of this Kingdome: and from thence bee also carried it into Flanders to the Emperours Court for his owne honour and vaine glory.
- 5 Item, That without the Kings knowledge or consent he had sent a commission sealed with the great Seale of England, to Sir Gregory de Cassado, authorizing him thereby in the Kings name, to conclude a peace betwixt the Duke of Ferrara, and the Kings Maiestie.
- 6 Item, That bee, being filthily powdered with the French poeks, by reason of his excessive lecherie, and dishonest life, did oftentimes presume to talke with, and to cast his wholesome breath into the Kings face.
- 7 Item, That to magnifie his owne power both at home, and with forreign Nations, he caused a Cardinals hat to be stam-
ped

ped on some of the Kings coine, without his Maiesties appointment or consent.

8. Item, that hee would not suffer the Kings Clerke of the market to execute his office in S. Albons, because the same Towne was parcell of his Abbey.

9. Item, that (to obtaine his dignities, and to continue the loue and fauour of the Pope and of his Cardinals towards him) hee had in sixteene barrells conueied to Pope Clement the senenth, and to his Cardinals toward their redemption out of prison, wherein after the sacking of Rome they were kept by the Emperour Charles the fifth, and to the French king in the Popes behalfe, to make warres vpon the Emperour, so much gold as did amount to the summe of two hundred and fortie thousand pounds at one time, and incredible summes of other money at other times, to the great impouerishing of this Kingdome and Commonweale: and to enrich the king againe, had of his owne accord sent out such Commissions into all Shires within this kingdome, for the exacting of infinite summes of money, as quenched the peoples loue towards the king, and made them rebelliously to disturbe the peace of this kingdome in Norfolke and elsewhere,

These Articles and many more being comprised in the said booke, the Cardinall by a subscription written with his owne hand, frankly and freely confessed, and submitted himselfe to the Kings mercie.

About the same time the king (for honourable and good seruice) created Sir Thomas Bullaine (who was Viscount Rochford) Earle of *Wilshire*, and Viscount *Fitzwater* was made Earle of *Sussex*, and the Lord *Hastings* was created Earle of *Huntingdon*.

The king (because he was informed that the Emperour and the Pope were together in *Bononie*) sent thither (as Ambassadors) the said Earle of *Wilshire* and some others, protesting that the question touching his mariage was not begotten nor motioned by him, nor by his consent, but first by the President of *Paris*, who receiued it (as he affirmed) from the Counsell of *Spaine*, and since by the grauest and the best learned Diuines within his kingdome,

Wolsey confesseth the Articles.

Noblemen created.

An ambassador.

The King
craveth a
sentence.

and not vpon any dislike which he conceived against his Queene, nor for any desire to change: and therefore he earnestly intreated them, that for the clearing of his troubled conscience, the same matter might one way or other receive a speedie and a finall end by a sentence or iudgement declaratorie in the Consistorie of Rome. The Emperour said little, but onely answered, that the iudgement of the Law should content and satisfie him in that point. And the Pope said, that when he came to Rome, the matter should receive an end; but yet hee meant nothing lesse: for hee knew right well, that if he pronounced sentence against the dispensation granted by Pope *Iulie* his predecessor, although hee knew well that it was flatly against the Law of God, then the Popes future dispensations would be little or nothing at all respected or regarded. And hee likewise knew, that by giuing of sentence against the Queene, he should againe make the Emperour his enemy, who was now newly become his friend. Thus this vnthankfull Pope flattered and dallied with the Kings Ambassadors, making them hopefull, but in vaine, yet with this answer they returned to the king, who (fearing lest the Pope and his Cardinals would indeede by long delays abuse and dally with him) imploied diuers Lords, and the greatest Diuines within his kingdome, at his exceeding great costs and charges, to trauell into all the Vniuersities in the Christian world, and there to be resolu'd of their opinions touching the validitie or nullitie of his said marriage. And when they all returned, they brought with them twelue Instruments, sealed with the publike Seales of so many Vniuersities, and also the opinions of sundrie great and famous learned men, by all which it appeared that they agreed and consented in one, that the kings marriage with his brothers wife was vterly void, and contrary to the Lawes of God and man, notwithstanding the dispensation of the Pope.

The opinion
of Vniuersities

Wolsey is li-
censed to goe
to Yorke.

The king at this time (by the aduice of his Counsell) licensed *Wolsey* to liue within his Diocese of *Yorke*, for which cause he went thither. But diuers of his seruants (by their friends meanes) got into the kings seruice; among whom *Thomas Cromwell* (being a wise and a discreet man) was one, whom the king entertained with publike demonstration of his good affections towards him, and of his fauour.

The Cardi-
nals Colledges

Now though such of the Cardinals lands as he intended to haue bestowed vpon his two Colledges were clearly forfeited vnto the King, yet his Maiestie in regard of his great loue which he bare to learning, and vnto learned men, bestowed the same wholly vpon his

his Colledge founded in *Oxford*, called the Cardinals Colledge, but then newly named the Kings Colledge, but now it is called *Christs Church*. And the other of his Colledges (founded at *Ipswich*) the King destroyed, as being vnprofitable, and seruing to no purpose.

The King being secretly informed that the Cardinall had gotten a Bull from *Rome*, to curse him, except hee would restore him to all his goods, lands, and dignities, and that none but hee (no not the King himselfe) should for any offence whatsoever correct or punish any Clergie man, proclaimed that all prouisions, appeales, and instruments, within the space of one yeare next before that time procured, or which at any time from thenceforth should be procured from the See of *Rome*, whereby the authoritie royall and prerogative of the King might in any sort be lessened or diminished, should be vterly void and frustrate in all respects, and that the procurers of them should be punished at the kings will.

The proud Cardinall, scorning to bee humbled and trodden downe, and purposing to set new broiles and disturbances in the Common-weale to molest the King, wrote secret letters to the Pope and to his Cardinals, to animate and to exasperate them against the King. And they (vnderstanding in what a disgracefull plight the Cardinall then stood) encouraged him not to faint, nor to shew himselfe a coward, and a heartlesse man, by yeelding to the peruerfnesse of his present fortune, promising his restauration, and that (for his sake) the king should be effectually crossed in his weightie businesse betwixt the Queene and him.

Heretupon the Cardinall began to take heart: and nothing doubting but that hee should againe bee aduanced, if not by the kings consent, yet *volens nolens*, and against his will, made great preparation for his enstallment into his Archbishopricke at *Torke*, which hee intended to solemnize with such magnificence and pompe, as the like before had neuer beene seene in that place. For which purpose he erected in that Cathedral Church a stately seat, of an extraordinary height, not much vnlike to a kings Throne. He also wrote to the Nobles, Knights, and chiefe Gentlemen in the North, many fawning, flattering, and kinde letters, entreating and insulting them at a prefixed day to accompanie him (at his Instalment) to the Citie of *Torke*, where he prouided for them great cheere, not sparing any cost.

The king (who was aduertised what he had written to *Rome*, and what answer was made thereunto, and perceiuing that he intended with extrarodinarie pompe and state to be installed, for which his doings he had no licence from his Maicstie) imagined
(and

1530.

22.

*A Bull from the Pope.**A proclamation.**Wolsey writes to Rome.**The answer.**His pride.*

(and therein hee was not deceived) that those great preparations were made of purpose, and in an out-facing fashion, to confront him.

Wolsey is arrested.

Wherefore, to prevent his said instalment, he sent a commission vnder his great Scale of England, whereby he required Henry the sixt Earle of Northumberland, to attach and to arrest the body of the said Cardinall, to bring him to the Castle of Sheffield, and there to deliuer him to the safe custodie and keeping of the Earle of Shrewsbury, which he did: Although the Cardinall proudly checked him, and told him that hee was a member of the Colledge of Cardinals in Rome, and that neither the King, nor any other temporall Prince vnder heaven, could, or ought to intermeddle with him, for any cause, or matter whatsoeuer. Yet for all this (as soone as he was gone) all his plate, goods, horses, and household stuffe were seised on to the Kings vse: his Officers were discharged, and his Physitian Doctor Augustine, was by Sir Walter Wells, one of the kings chamber, conuayed to the Tower.

His goods are attached.

As soone as the king was informed of the executing of his commission, he sent Sir William Kingslow, the Captaine of his Guard, & Constable of the Tower, with certaine Yemen of his Guard, to fetch the Cardinall to that prison.

He dyeth.

The sight of this Messenger more danted and appalled the Cardinall than all the rest: For now he was right well assured, that his head was in great danger. This feare made him to fall into a sudden sicknesse, so that (purposely, as it was coniectured, to dispatch himselfe out of this life) he tooke a purgation, which was more strong, than the weaknesse of his nature could controll, by reason whereof he dyed two nights after.

His description.

Thus liued, and thus died this Cardinall, who was Proud and Ambitious, Wanton and Lecherous, Rich and Couetous, a Lyar and a Flatterer, a Tyrant and Mercilesse: Forgetfull of his beginnings, Disdainfull in his prosperitie, and Wretched in his end: whose death made the King ioyfull, his Nobles ioyfull, and the People glad.

The Clergie feared the Premunire.

Hee being thus dead, the king by his Councell was informed, that all the Clergie of England were guiltie of the Premunire; because (in all things) they had supported and maintayned the authoritie, and power Legantine of the Cardinall: Wherefore (to prevent a mischiefe before it fell vpon them) they gave to the king for their redemption, and for their pardon, the summe of one hundred thousand pounds: And by a publike instrument in writing, subscribed, and sealed by all the Bishops and Fathers of the Church,

100000 pounds.

The Kings Supremacie acknowledged.

Church, they plainly, voluntarily, and willingly acknowledged the king (within his owne Kingdomes and Dominions) to be the Supreme Head of the Church, as well in all matters Ecclesiasticall, as in all Temporall things and cases whatsoever. Yet not long after the king diminished their number and their strength, as hereafter it shall appeare.

The Cardinall being thus gone, the king intending nothing lesse than to dance attendance in the Court at Rome, caused the said instrumentes procured from so many Vniuersities, together with the opinions of so many learned men, and of his two Vniuersities of Oxford & of Cambridge, publicly to be shewed in both the houses of his Parliament: which being done by diuers honorable Lords, both spirituall and temporall, hee caused them to bee shewed to the Queene, and the question to bee demanded of her, whether she would relinquish her appeale to the See of Rome, and referre her selfe and her cause to any Nobles and Bishops within this Kingdome: whose answer was, that she would not: whereupon the king, resoluing in his conscience, that his said marriage was void in Law, began to bend his loue and kinde affections to a goodly, faire, and beautifull Lady in his Court, named *Anne Bullen*. Her he created a Marchionesse of Pembroke, and after took her to his wife. And some few moneths after, the Archbishop of Canterbury (being accompanied with the Bishops of London, Bath, Lincoln, & some others, together with diuers Doctors, Advocates, Proctors, & Officers of the Ecclesiasticall Court) repaired to Dunstable, where the Princesse Dowager (for so shee was then called) lay. Her the Archbishop peremptorily ascited personally to appeare before him in a case of matrimonie: and the like he did for fiftene daies together. And then upon the default and contumacie of the said Princesse, the Archbishop pronounced the said marriage (being against the Law of God) to be meerly and viterly void, the Popes dispensation notwithstanding.

Having discoursed of all things memorable which were done by *Thomas Wolsey* Cardinall of Yorke, and concluded the contention touching the marriage of king *Henry* with the Ladie *Katherine* his brothers wife, it will bee very expedient & fitting that we now returne to the narration of such other things as are worthe to bee comprised in this Storie, and which were done whilest king *Henry* liued.

First therefore we may vnderstand, that in the end of the eighth yeare, and in the begining of the ninth yeare of his reigne, the Citizens of London heartily hated such Merchant strangers and

*Opinions
shewd.*

*The King
marries
Anne Bullen.
The King is
divorced
from Queene
Katherine.
1536.*

*8.
The Author
returneth to
the historie,
which is in-
terrupted by
the relation
& counselling
together of
the deeds and
allions of
Cardinall
Wolsey.*

*1547.
9.
A riot on
Marchant
strangers.*

Emil May
day.

Treason.

1518.

10.

A peace with
the French
King.
Tourney is
delivered up
by compo-
sition.

Hofstet.

strangers Artificers as dwell among them; partly because by their great wealth and extraordinarie labour and industry they took from them the greatest meanes whereby they were to live; and partly because their riches made them so proud; that in derision and in scorne, privately and publikely, they would depraue and abuse the Citizens with many mockes and frumpes: so that they (being resolved no longer to endure or to beare them) upon May day many hundreds of them riotously assembled themselves together, and with great outrage and violence rised, robbed, and ransacked the houses and the shops of all strangers, and intended to have done more mischief, if the provident care and industry of the Lord Maior and chiefe Citizens had not suppressed them. For some of the malefactors (by flying mist for their lives, and many (who were most of all notoriously faultie) were committed to severall Goales and Prisons; and being afterwards indicted, arraigned, and found guilty, were condemned of high Treason, because their iniurie and wrong tended to the breach of the League which was betwixt the King and their Soveraignes. Wherefore some of them were executed as Traitors, according to their iudgement; and the residue of them (being about foure hundred) were pardoned by the King, who in his owne person sat in the Guildhall of London. And then all things were againe settled in prosperitie and in peace.

The French king now longed to be again owner of the faire Citie of Tournay, which by conquest was possessed by King Henry. Wherefore by his Embassadors he not only desired the ratification of the peace which was betwixt the King and him, but also a restitution of the said Citie, for money to bee unto him paid. The king so lovingly accepted of this message, that forthwith the peace was confirmed; and further it was concluded, That for 60000 Crownes to be paid for the Towne, and for 40000 Crownes more to be paid for the Castle, which by king Henry was erected, and almost finished, and for 24000 pounds sterling to bee paid in discharge of a debt due and owing by the Citizens for the preservation and redemption of their Liberties; according to the composition and their owne agreement, the Towne and Castle should be surrendered up into the hands of the French king. Whereupon some great hostages (for the true payment of the said sums of money at the appointed daies) were sent over, and accepted by the king. And then the Earle of Worcester, Sir Edward Belknap, and some others, were sent over, who delivered the Towne and Castle (according to both the said Kings Commissions) to Monsieur

their *Chastitie*, who was not suffered to make his entrie with Banners displayed, but rolled vp, because it was not wonne, nor conquered, but yielded vp by composition.

The surrendering of this City was much disliked by many wise and prudent men, for two reasons. First, because that the holding thereof was a curbe and a bridle to the French Nation. And secondly, because the Garrison of that place was a very profitable Nurserie for the training vp of Gentlemen and younger brothers in feats of Armes, and in Martiall Discipline.

About the same time the Emperor *Maximilian* died, and *Charles* King of Castile (Nephew to *Queene Katherine*) was elected in his stead; who shortly after coming out of Spaine towards the City of Acon, where he was to receive his first Crown, came into England, and was with all pompe and princely magnificence welcomed and entertained by the King and *Queene*, to his good liking and contentment.

The Lords of the Councell of Estate perceiuing that certaine Gentlemen of the Kings Prinie Chamber (who were the Kings Minions) were so much Frenchified, that they were scoffed and derided by all wise men, and that they were overbold, saucie, and malapertly familiar with the King, to his great disgrace, besought his Maiesty to reforme them and himselfe therein. The King not only thanked them heartily for this their friendly admonition and fatherly care of his well-doing, but also referred to them the absolute ordering and disposing of those metamorphozed Gentlemen. Wherefore they banished them from the Court, and placed in their roomes *Sir Richard Wingfield*, *Sir Richard Ierningham*, *Sir Richard Weston*, and *Sir William Kingston*, who were discreet, temperate, and valiant men, of whom the King graciously accepted, and receiued them into his extraordinarie fauour.

The King and *Queene* hauing made large and costly prouision for the meeting of the French King and *Queene*, according to promise, near vnto Arde, shipped themselves at Douer, and with their stately and honourable traine they landed at Callice, & afterwards effected their journey in Princely fashion, as formerly in this discourse it is more particularly set downe.

Within few daies after the King and *Queenes* returne from Arde vnto Callice, he with an honourable traine rode to the Town of Graueling in the Low Countries, to see and to visit the Emperour, and his great Aunt the Lady *Margaret* Duchesse of Sauoy, by whom he was receiued with great familiaritie and bountie, and was by them both brought backe againe to Callice, where their welcome,

1.
2.

Maximilian
died.
Charles is
elected Em-
perour.
He cometh
into England.

1519.
11.
*A rare ex-
ample.*
A wise King.

1520.
12.
The King
and Queene
sail into
France.

The King
visits the
Emperour.

They come to
Callice.

*The French
King is an-
grie.*

A peace.

A condition.

1531.

13

*The Duke of
Buckingham
overthrow.*

welcome, cheere, and entertainment farre exceeded measure and their owne desires and expectation. But this exchange of love and of kindnesse grieved the French king at the heart, who was inwardly displeased and reuengefull, because he practised, but could not be elected Emperour according to his hopes. Yet because he could flatter and dissemble, therefore he sent vnto them the Lord *de la Roch*, not only to congratulate for former courtesies received, but also to conclude a peace betwixt them three, which for his part he neuer intended to obserue. But the peace was fully agreed vnto, with this condition, that hee who first made breach thereof, should be warred on by the other two.

Not long after the kings reurne into England, he was secretly informed (and it was true) that by a Monke the haughty and ambitious Duke of Buckingham was much abused in this, that he was by him perswaded, and did beleue, that he should be the king of this Realme; which could not be, but by vsurpation, and the confusion of the kings royall person. And this conceit so pleased him, that hee now and then would babble and reueale it to some of his inward and familiar friends, and some of them discovered it, to his destruction & vtter overthrow. Likewise this hope framed him to a more ambitious course in his carriage, and made him negligent of his seruice and duty to the king, in so much that his Maiesty, by his Letters, required him with all conuenient expedition (privately) to reuire vnto the Court. But as hee was in his Barge vpon the Thames, he was by Sir *Henry Marney* Captain of the kings Guard (who had with him an hundred of the kings Yeomen subiect to his command) attached and arrested of high treason, and as a prisoner conueied to the Tower. And being afterwards legally and according to the due forme of Law indicted by sundry Knights & Gentlemen, for that (as much as in him lay) hee had conspired and contriued the kings death, to make himselfe his successor, hee was brought to a Barre at Westminster Hall, before the Duke of Norfolk, high Steward of England, and his chiefe Iudge. And hauing holden vp his hand, he was arraigned of treason vpon the said indictment, and pleaded thereunto that hee was not guiltie, and did referre himselfe for his triall to God and to his Peeres, who were these, the Duke of Suffolke, the Marquesse Dorset, the Earles of Oxford, Devon, Darbie, Shrewsbury, Essex, Worcester, and Kent, and the Lords *De la Ware, Fitz warren, Willoughby, Harbert, Cushman, Brooke, and Morley*. These twelve men in the presence of the Prisoner, had witnesses face to face, (who were all prisoners for concealments of the same offence) and depo-

sition

sition in writing; which when they had done, they arose from the Bench, retired into a priuate roome, and after a short absence returned againe to their places: and the Duke of *Buckingham* being againe brought vnto the Barre, the said Lords, one by one, protested with great solemnitie, and protestations on their honour, that they thought him to bee guiltie, according to the indictment. And thereupon the Lord high Steward, with many teares, pronounced against him that iudgement which against meaner offenders in that nature is giuen. Whereupon hee was taken from the Barre, and hauing an axe borne before him, with the edge thereof turned towards him, because he had his iudgement to die, hee was conueyed by water to the Temple staires, and was there receiued on land by Sir *Nicholas Vaux* and Sir *William Sands*, both Baronnets, who conducted him thorow the Citie of London to the Tower: and within two or three daies after he was beheaded on a Scaffold at the Tower Hill.

About the sametime the King himselfe wrote and published in the Latine tongue a booke against *Martin Luthers* Assertions, Disputes, and Arguments, touching Indulgences and the Sacraments of the Church; for which cause he was by the Pope entitled *Defensor Fidei, Defender of the Faith*. Yet some doe affirme, that he was so intituled in requitall of the aide and succour which by the gift of excessiue summes of money (when hee and his Cardinals were prisoners to the Emperour) was extended to him and them.

We haue already heard, how that Cardinall *Wolsey*, being sent to Calice, to ratifie, and to confirme the Peace, which not long before was concluded there betwixt the Emperour & the two Kings, did therein little good. And wee must now know, that the first breach of that peace was made by the French King, who began to warre sharply on the Emperour, both by Sea and Land: And because he suspected that King *Henrie* (partly for affinities sake, and partly by reason of the condition of part-taking, annexed to the said peace) did secretly side with the Emperour against him, therefore he dealt thus vnkindely with King *Henrie*.

1 First of all (contrarie to his faith and promise) hee sent *John Duke of Albanie* into *Scotland*, to raise new warres, and many mischiefes against this Realme, to the end, that the King might not haue any leisure to ioyne with the Emperour, and to make warre vpon him.

2 Secondly, he detayned and kept from the King, that yearly Tribute, which for *Normandie, Aquitaine*, and other the Kings inheritance

The King
writeth a-
gainst *Mar-
tin Luther*.

*Defensor
Fidei*.

1522.

14

The French
King first
breaketh the
peace.

The French
King wrong-
eth King
Henry.

heritance in those Countries, was due and payable by the Kings of France.

3 Thirdly, contrarie to his promise, and safe conduct giuen to the Merchants of England, no warre betwixt the two Kings being proclaimed, he seized on all their wares, and merchandizes in *Bordeaux*, and committed them to prison.

4 Fourthly, vpon the Seas he ruffled, robbed, and spoyled the Merchants of England daily; and vpon complaints promised liberrall restitution, but made none.

5 Fifthly, he refused to pay to *Queen Mary*, Dowager of France, her yeerely pension, contrarie to the agreement made betwixt king *Henrie*, and the whole estate of France.

6 And last of all (neglecting his Hostages, and making a wilfull breach of his promise) hee would not pay those summes of money which were concluded to be paid, for the surrendring and yeelding vp of the Citie and Castle of *Tourney* into his hands.

1.
King Hen-
ries course
for requittall.

These injuries and wrongs, first of all procured the King to make generall Musters through his whole kingdome, and then to apparel, provide, and furnish his Nauie Royall, and to commit them to the charge and gouernment of the Earle of *Surrey*, his high Admirall, the scourger of the French King for all his faults. To him hee gaue ample and large commission, to vexe and to annoy the French King, and his Subiects, both by Sea and Land.

2.

He also restrained the French Embassador of his libertie, not permitting him to goe abroad without his leaue.

3.

He also caused the merchandizes, wares, goods, and money of all Frenchmen within his kingdome (not being Denizens) to be attached to his owne vse.

4.

Also hee committed their bodies to Goales, and Prisons, vsing them in the like sort, as his Subiects, and Merchants, were mis-vs'd in France.

A French
Armie van-
ished.

King *Henrie* (being informed that the French King hauing leui- ed an Armie, houered vp and downe, neere vnto the marches of *Calice*) to preuent danger, and to meet with him at all assaies, sent many thousands of gallant, and braue Souldiers to the Sea, which were by the Admirall receiued into his Fleet, so that (vpon any occasion or need) they might quickly bee set on land. But when they perceiued that *Calice* was not in any hazard, for that the French Armie was vanished and dissolued: then the Admirall (because hee loathed to be idle) landed many of his men vpon the coast of *Brittaine*, and with great confidence and resolution, con- ducted them to *Morleys*, where (a principall gate of the Citie be- ing

Morleys ta-
ken & burnt.

ing battered and beaten open with some great shot) the braue English men boldly entred in, rifled, ranfacked, and spoiled the town, and by the commandement of the Admirall, they consumed it with fire, and razed it to the ground. This seruice was by diuers Gentlemen so gallantly performed, that in honour thereof the Admirall dignified with the honour of Knight-hood, these worthy Gentlemen, *Francis Briam, Iohn Russel, Anthonie Browne, Iohn Rainsford, George Cobham, Giles Hufsey, Richard Cornwal, Iohn Cornwallis, Thomas Moore*, and some others. And daily other braue and warlike exploits, were still made and performed in Brittain, neare vnto the Sea coasts: Of which it will be too tedious to make particular relation: neither will wee much busie our selues with the discourse of such things as hapned betwixt the Emperour, and the French king, in their warres; because they doe not properly belong to the Historie of this kingdome.

The King (who was informed that the Duke of Albanie intended to inuade the Northern marches of his Realme) commanded the Lord *Roos*, and the Lord *Dacres* of the South (by an anticipating warre) to enter into the Borders of Scotland, with a slight Armie; which they did, and burnt fourescore Hamblers, Villages, and Townes, razed, and destroyed diuers Castles, Bulwarkes, and Towers; foraged their fields, and without any encounter returned into England. The King likewise made the Earle of Shrewsbury Lieutenant generall of the North, whose charge was, to make strong prouision, to withstand all sodaine inuasions, which the Scots should attempt to make.

And likewise, hee leuied an Armie of twelue thousand men, which hee commended to the Gouernment of the Admirall, for the supply and maintenance of his warres in France.

Thus the King, being daily employed, and wanting money to defray his charge; by way of loane vpon priuie Scales, hee borrowed of the Citie of London twentie thousand pounds: and of many others great summes of money; in all Shires and Prouinces within his kingdome, whereat his Subiects much grieved: But afterwards they were much more displeased thereat, because the said loanes by an Act of Parliament, were clearely released to the King. And yet for all this, *Wolsey* (by strange commissions, and by other vnlawfull meanes, without the Kings consent or notice) endeuoured to raise, and to leuie more money, as formerly wee haue heard.

The Admirall, who (maugre his Enemies, hauing landed his Armie at Calice) Marched from thence, and

*The Scots are
trouble some.*

*Another Ar-
mie sent into
France.*

Priuie scales.

*They are
released.*

*Braue seruice
in France.*

Chiefe Gen-
tlemen of
service.

A great bootie.

The Scots
inuada.

They will not
fight.

1523.
15
The Duke of
Suffolke
warreth in
France.
Bell Castle.

passed in good order of Battaile ouer Newnam Bridge, waisting, spoyling, burning, and ranfacking sundrie Townes, Villages, Castles, and Forts (as namely Selloys, Brunbridge, Senkerke, Frynge, Blaniou, Dorlans, and other places as they passed by) so terrified the people, that they would not abide his fight. And in those seruices these Gentlemen (as chiefe Captaines, and worthie of the best praise) are principally to be noted, Sir William Sands, Sir William Fitz-William, Sir Maurice Barkley, Sir John Wallop, Sir Richard Ierningham, Captaine Coo, and Captaine Thwayss. The three former of them (among other imployments) were by the Admirall sent with three thousand men to the strong Towne of Marquison, which was newly builded, fortified, and well defended for a while. But at length they tooke it, ranfacked it, and vtterly consumed it with fire. The like they did at the Townes of S. Johns Rhode, and Temple, and with great spoyle returned to their Generall. Then all the Armie being collected, the Admirall marched vnto Calice, and brought thither with him 14000. Sheepe, 1400. Oxen and Kine, 1300. Hogges, and 700. Horses, Geldings, and Mares. And then hee commended and rewarded his souldiers, dissolued his Armie, and with great honour, and in the especial fauour of his Soueraigne, he returned into England.

Whilest these things were thus ordered in France, the Kings professed enemy, John Duke of Albanie, Protector to the young King, and of his Realme, by the procurement of the French King, leuied a great Armie, purposing with fire and sword to haue entered into the West Marches of England. But the Lord Dacres, and the Lord Roos, and many other Knights and Gentlemen, hauing carefully provided and well furnished an Armie of eight and twentie thousand men, to make head against him; and likewise the Earle of Shrewesburie hauing leuied another Armie of great strength, and appearing boldly into the Scots fight, the Scots began wisely to doubt of their successe, and the rather because the most of them knew not the cause or ground of that quarrell, and therefore would not fight, but (leauing to assise their Captaine) they returned home, and were not pursued by the English, who by their Commission were not authorized to inuade, but to defend themselves.

The next yeare, Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, was sent to Calice with an Armie of thirteene thousand men, with which he marched forth, burning, spoyling, & foraging without compasfion, vntill he came to the strong Castle of Bell, which (after many gallant and braue assaults) was yelded, and razed to the ground.

Thither

Thither repaired to the Dukes Armie, as seruants to the Emperour, three thousand footmen, and five hundred horsemen; being Burgundians, Flemings, and of their neighbouring Nations: all which besieged the strong Towne of Bray, which was well fortified, and furnished with goodly Ordinance, and with two thousand men. This Towne they tooke, not by composition, but by assault. But because the Frenchmen themselves had first fired it, and were runne away, the Englishmen and their friends (besides the winning of it) receiued small commoditie thereby.

*Aide from
the Emperour.*

Bray.

Then with vndaunted courage they passed ouer the Riuer of Some into France : and to them (vpon seuerall summons) were yeelded vp the Townes of Roy and Lyhome. But they were compelled to besiege the warlike Towne of Mount dedyer, in which weretwo thousand men, and five hundred horse. This Towne they daily battered with the continuall shot of their great Ordinance, so that it was made assaultable, and then the Frenchmen (vpon composition to depart with bagge, baggage, and with their Armes) yeelded the Towne to the Dukes forces, in which there was exceeding plentie of costly linnen, arras, tapestrie, bedding, and of choice household stufte. Afterwards they tooke the Castle of Boghan, which (had not the Marishes beene excessively hardned by a continuall frost) was not accessable, nor pregnable by any strength. This Castle they razed to the ground, because it was not commodious to their seruice.

*Roy.
Lyhome.
Mount dedyer.*

Boghan.

These archieuements being thus manfully and honourably performed, the English souldiers (by reason of the extremitie of the weather, and the sharpnesse of the Winter, long nights, and short dayes) were altogether vnwilling to proceed any further at that time, and the rather for these two other causes : First, for that the Duke of Burbon (who was reuolted from the French King to the Emperour) came not (according to his promise) to the Dukes Armie with ten thousand men, but applied them about Marcelles, and by them they had no helpe. And secondly, because the Burgundians, Flemings, and their companions, hauing Carts, Waggon, and other carriages, and being neere vnto their owne Countries, tooke and were able to carry away the greater and the better part of all their spoyle, and yet they would seldome fight, as the Englishmen were compelled and enforced to doe. The Duke (not knowing what allowance the King would giue to the dissolving of the Armie without his consent) sent the Lord Sands and Sir Richard Ierningham to the King, to informe him of the state of his Armie, and also to know his pleasure touching the breaking of it

*English souldiers returne
without leave
of the Generall.*

1.

2.

*The Armie is
dissolved.*

*The Scots
are againe
busie.*

A truce.

1524.
16

*The Duke of
Albanie
forsaketh
Scotland.*

*The Scots de-
sire peace.*

vp. But the King would not in any sort assent to their returne, but prepared the Lord *Mountjoy* with an Armie of 6000. men, money, and store of victuals, and of other necessities, to hasten vnto their aide. But before the returne of those two messengers, the souldiers (withont the Dukes leaue) wilfully departed home thorow Burgundie and Flanders. And because the greater number of them had so done, therefore the Duke was compelled to breake vp his whole Armie, whereat the King was highly displeased for a while: but at length (finding the Duke and chiefeft Captaines faultlesse) they returned home, and were by his Maiestie receiued into his especiall grace and fauour.

Whilest the Duke of Suffolke was thus busied in France, the Duke of Albanie raised another Armie of 80000. men. But to resist and to fight with them, the Lord Admirall and Treasurer of England marched forth with an Armie of fortie thousand. But the Scots (not well enduring the sight of such powerfull and well appointed enemies) presently ran away, and would not strike one stroke. And had the Earles commission beene enlarged, and giuen them leaue to haue followed them into their owne Countrie, vndoubtedly the Scots had receiued a fatall blow at that time: but by quick message, the Queen of Scots (who was the Kings eldest sister) againe obtained a truce: so that in the meane time a triall might be made, whether a peace would be concluded, and agreed on, or no. Betwixt the Marches of Bullecyn, and of Calice, diuers feats of Armes were euermore valiantly performed for honours sake: in which, sometimes the vanquished were againe victors, and such as preuailed now, were by and by ouercome.

The Duke of Albanie perceiuing, that the Nobilitie of Scotland would no longer endure, that hee (being a Frenchman borne, and (next to the King) the inheritor of that Crowne) should haue the rule and gouernement of their King and Countrie: Feared, lest any mischief might befall him, or lest by some deuce, he should be deliuered to the King: Wherefore hee secretly fled into France, vpon whose departure, much peace and quietnesse ensued betwixt the King and that kingdome. For the Queene and Nobles of the Realm of Scotland, by their Ambassadors desired Peace: And that the Ladie *Marie* (who was then the only daughter of King *Henrie*, and Heire apparant to his Crowne) might be giuen in marriage to *James* their young King. To this motion, it was answered: that touching the said Peace (if honorable and fit conditions might be proposed and concluded) the King would willingly assent thereto: But concerning the other point of their demand, hee said: That hee

hee was not yet resolued how to dispose of his said daughter, for that she was but young: yet in the end a peace was assented vnto, and proclaimed in both those Realmes.

Likewise the Ladie *Margaret*, Dutches of Sauoy, and great Aunt to the Emperour, and (in his absence) the Gouvernour of the Low Countries, by her Embassadours, proposed to his Maiestie these requests.

First, that the Lady *Marie*, his daughter, might bee giuen in mariage to the Emperour, who longed for her with his best affections, and respected her with his heartie loue.

Secondly, that (because the Emperour intended to giue vnto her for her Dowrie, the Prouinces of the Low Countries) his desire was, that forthwith shee might be sent thither to officiate the Protectorship of them in his absence.

Thirdly, that such summes of money as the King intended to giue vnto her as her mariage portion, might presently bee disbursed for the maintenance of the Emperours warres.

And last of all, that the King himselfe would bee pleased (in his owne person) the next spring to enter with a Royall Armie into France, vpon the territories of the French king, who (in contempt of them both) did diuers iniuries and wrongs vnto their Subiects, and had made the first breach of the Peace, which was concluded, and by their oathes confirmed betwixt them three.

But, because King *Henrie* was secretly displeased with the Emperour, for that he (by the raising and enhauncing of the prices and value of this gold, and other coynes, within the Prouinces of the Low Countries) had politikely drawne the greatest part of his money out of this Realme, and in some other things, had not respected him, as his enleagued friend, therefore he only returned thanks for a fashions sake: but made answer, That his daughter was too young to be married to the Emperour, and was (as yet) vnfit to be coupled with any Prince.

At the same time also, the French King, by his Embassadours, desired, that the said Ladie might be espoused to his sonne the Dolphin. And that the former peace (betwixt the King and him) might be renewed, and reuiued, during both their liues.

These his motions (to speake truly) were best receiued and digested, and were most likely to haue taken place, if the French king himselfe, and his children, had not (shortly after) beene taken prisoners, by the Duke of Burbons Armie, & by the Marques of Pescara, as he lay at the siege of Pavia, where he lost fourteen thousand men, and was defeated: although he had then in his Armie almost fiftie thousand men.

Among

*The Emperours Regent
crancib
peace.*

1.

2.

3.

4.

*The French
desire to re-
new the peace*

*The King in
danger of
death.*

Among these friendly motions for peace and mariages, an euill chance hapned to the King. For one day, as he hawked for his recreation and delight, he offered to leape ouer a wide and a warric ditch, but his staffe brake in sunder, and his head pitched fast into the clay; so that hee had assuredly dyed there, if a footman of his owne, named *Edmund Moody*, had not quickly plucked his head out of the dirt.

About this time dyed the most Noble, and Victorious, *Thomas Howard* Duke of Norfolk, and was honourably buried at Thetford in his owne Countie.

1525
17
*Noble men
created.*

The King (who for a long time had wantonly conuersed with a beaurifull, and a lasciuious Gentlewoman of his Court, named *Elizabeth Blunt*) begate on her a sonne, who by the king was called *Henrie Fitz Roy*: This young Gentleman (being now of the age of sixe yeares) was by the King created Earle of Nottingham, and forthwith Duke of Richmond. And at the same time the Lord *Henrie Courtney*, Cosen german to the King, was made Marques of Exeter: the Lord *Henrie Brandon*, the eldest sonne of the Duke of Suffolke, and of the French Queene *Marie* his wife (being but two yeares old) was created Earle of Lincolne. Sir *Thomas Manners* Lord *Roos*, was made Earle of Rutland: and Sir *Henrie Clifford* was created Earle of Cumberland: and Sir *Robert Ratcliffe*, Lord *Fitzwater*, was made Earle of Suffex: and Sir *Thomas Bullein*, the Treasurer of the Kings household, was made Lord Rochford: And thus, in regard of great seruices honorably performed, the king requited them with such honours, as were answerable to their deserts and callings.

*The French
were humble
to serue their
owne turnes.*

The Queene Regent of France (foreseeing what present miserie was likely to ruinate that Estate and Kingdome, if in time by carefull prouidence it were not preuented) sent Monsieur de *Bryond*, chiefe President of Paris, and some other Lords, Ambassadors into England: who not only (according to their commission) in a most submissiue and an humble sort confessed the injuries, and the wrongs done by the French Nation, to King *Henry*, and to his subiects, both by sea and land, in the absence of King *Francis*, but (for a requitall and satisfaction thereof) and for the arrearage of his tribute, they made offer to pay vnto the King the summe of twenty hundred thousand crownes, whereof fiftie thousand pounds sterling should be paid in hand, and fitting securitie should bee given for the rest: they also promised the continuance of the said tribute, and assumed to pay Queene *Marie* her dowrie, and all the arrearages thereof, if the King would grant them peace, and receiue them into his loue and fauour.

The

The King and his Counsell hauing seriously considered of these motions and large offers (for many important causes) assented to their requests, and caused those his conclusions and agreements to be proclaimed solemnly, both in England and in France, and receiued both money and good securitie accordingly.

Peace concluded.

But betwixt King *Henrie* and his nephew the Emperour (by the subtrill practises and craftie judggings of *Thomas Wolsey*, Cardinall of Yorke) warres were denounced with euill termes, but little or nothing was done thereon, sauing that in England, Spaine, and in the Low-Countries, the Merchants of either Nation, and their goods and substance were attached, to the infinite losse and damage of them all : but vpon seuerall truces oftentimes concluded, and againe broken, they were released, and againe arrested; where-by the ancient saying of the Poet was truly verified :

1526

18

Warres betwene the Emperour & King Henry.

Merchants vexed.

Quicquid Delirant Reges, Plebsuntur Achini:

*When Princes iarre, and for renenge doe seeke,
The meaner sort must pay for their dislike.*

But in this place we must now obserue, That in regard of those often concluded truces, and in regard of the peace which vnitd the kingdomes of England, France and Scotland in one minde, little or nothing worthie of our discourse (more than hath formerly beene written) hapned in sixe of the next ensuing yeares, for the greater part of that time was spent and consumed in debatings, enquirings, ordering, handling, and disposing of the businesse of the Kings marriage with the Ladie *Katherine* of Spaine, sometime his brothers wife.

And now the King (who in a manner was wholly guided and directed by the priuate aduice and counsell of his chiefe fauourite, *Thomas Cromwell* (somtimes seruant to Cardinall *Wolsey*) whom he had made a Baron, and a Counsellor of State) proceeded daily more and more to diminish, nay (by succeeding degrees) clearly and absolutely to abrogate, and to make void the claimed power and authority of the Pope within this Realme. In so much, that in his Parliament he procured it to be enacted for a law, That the penaltie of the Premunire should bee inflicted vpon the bodies, lands and goods of euery such person, as for any matter, thing, or cause whatsoeuer, appealed to the See of Rome, or did procure from thence any Proceffe, Citation, Inhibition, Suspension, Sentence, or Iudgement whatsoeuer.

1532.

24

The Popes authoritie curbed.

And in the next Sesion of the same Parliament (to please, and
to

*The Kings
marriage
made void.
The Crowne
ensailed.*

*B. Fisher.
Sir Thomas
Moore.*

*They are be-
headed.*

*The Lord
Dacres.*

*The holy
maide of Kent*

to content him) the whole Clergie of this kingdome freely submitted themselves to the King, touching their Spirituall and Ecclesiasticall affaires and businesse: and the Pope was utterly deprived of all Annates and first fruits; which formerly for Bishopricks, and other spirituall promotions and dignities, had vsually beene payed vnto him: and likewise to establish and to confirme the lawfulness of his marriage with *Queene Anne*, and to settle the inheritance of his Crowne vpon her issue, hee procured it by Parliament to be enacted, That his former marriage with his brothers wife was absolutely void, and of none effect in Law, because it was contrarie to the Law of God, and that the Popes dispensation had none effect or power to make it good: and by the same Act, the Crowne of this kingdome was entailed to the King, and to his heires of his bodie (out of which the *Ladie Marie* was inclusively excluded) And to this Act all the Lords & Burgeses there present, were particularly sworne, sauing *Doctor Fisher* Bishop of Rochester, and *Sir Thomas Moore* Knight (sometimes Chancellor of England) who some few yeares before disliking the Kings proceeding against *Queene Katherine*, and against the authoritie and iurisdiction of the Pope, had deliuered vp the great Seale of England into the Kings hands. These two not only refused to sweare, as the rest did; but publickly contested, and protested, against the said Act of Parliament, which nullified the Kings said first marriage, by reason of the Popes dispensation giuen to inable the same, and to make it lawfull. For which causes the said Bishop, and Knight, were sent vnto the Tower, where they remained, vntill (as Traitors) they lost their heads, for denying of the Kings Supremacie in Ecclesiasticall things and causes, and attributing it to the Pope of Rome: of which the Kings Supremacie a Statute was made in Parliament the next yeare after.

About this time, diuers treasonable practises (by malicious and lewd Conspirators) were surmised and intimated to haue beene intended, and contriued, against the Kings person, by the Lord *Dacres* of the North. And thereupon he was indicted and arraigned; but the guiltlesse and well affected Lord (with such a temperate boldnesse, and with such a modest courage) so discreetly, and so wisely defended his innocencie, against those false suggesters, that he was freely acquitted, and discharged, from all suspicion, and from all blame. But (by the whole Parliament) *Elizabeth Burton* (nicknamed the *holy maide of Kent*) and her Companions in mischief (who vnder an hypocriticall shew and shadow of Religious deuotion, and of holinesse, had conspired the Kings death) being attainted

tainted and condemned, were executed as Traitors according to their deserts.

The next yeare the King in Parliament was made and acknowledged to be the supreme head of the Church within all his Countries and Dominions, in all Spirituall and Ecclesiasticall things and causes: and the Popes Bulles, Pardons, Indulgences, and other Instruments of the like nature, were vtterly banished, frustrated, made voide, and of none effect, validitie, or force concerning the King and his Subiects. And likewise the First Fruits and Tenths of all Benefices and Ecclesiasticall dignities and promotions were in the same Parliament giuen and granted to the King, and to his heires and successors for euer.

And not long after, Queene *Anne* (sometimes the Kings dearest wife) was beheaded; yet innocently, as at her death shee religiously protested, and as all men present did belecue, for that it was vniustly surmised, and falsly testified, that she had incestuously conuerfed with and prostituted her body to the Lord *Rochford*, her owne brother, who likewise (with some others) receiued the like sentence, and were put to death.

This Tragedie being thus ended, the King (within twenty daies after) married a vertuous and a faire Gentlewoman, whose name was *Iane*, the daughter of Sir *John Seymor* Knight, who bare vnto him a goodly Prince, named *Edward*, who succeeded, and was King: but within few dayes after his birth the good Queene died.

We haue formerly heard, that *James* the fourth, King of *Scots*, was slaine at *Flodden* Field. And wee must now know, that Queene *Margaret* his wife, being the eldest sister of King *Henry*, was married afterwards vnto *Archibald Douglas* Earle of *Angus*, who by her had a daughter named *Margaret*. This Ladie, the Lord *Howard* (without the Kings notice or consent) tooke to wife; for which vnaduised boldnesse and offence (she being of the bloud royall) he was condemned as a Traitor, and lost his head.

The King, who within his owne Territories and Dominions daily furthered his owne intentions, to abrogate the authoritie, power, and iurisdiction of the Bishop of Rome, procured it by Parliament to be enacted, that thirtie and two such persons spirituall and temporall as his Maiestie should vnder his great Seale nominate and appoint, should haue authoritie and power to make and establish Lawes and Ordinances Ecclesiasticall, which should binde the Subiects of this Kingdome. And by the same Parliament all religious houses, whose possessions in yearly reuenue exceeded not the summe of two hundred pounds, were suppressed and dissolved,

1534.

26

The Supremacie of the King.

1535

27

Queen Anne Bullen beheaded.

Execution.

The King married.

The Lord Th. Howard is beheaded.

The 32. Commissioners.

Petit houses of Religion suppressed.

*The booke of
Articles.*

solued, and all their sites and possessions whatsoever were given for ever to the King.

The Clergie also (at the same time, of their owne accord, and to insinuate themselves into grace and fauour with the King) composed and published in printed bookes, certaine Articles for the ordering and gouerning of the Church, in which mention was made of three Sacraments only: and the rest of them (which former times superstitiously receiued and did maintaine) were left out of the said bookes.

*A rebellion
in Lincoln-
shire.*

These proceedings of the King and Clergie against the Pope and holy Church, were so generally disliked by the rude, ignorant, and wilfull people, that in many places their lauish tongues were witnesses of their inward griefe and discontent; so that they publicly affirmed, that the Kings Counsell irreligiously and absurdly aduised and directed him amisse, and that the soothing, smoothing, and temporizing Clergie of this Land, prophanely and wickedly practised by all meanes possible to extinguish all deuotion, and vterly to subuert the ancient rites, ceremonies, and commendable gouernment of the Church. And in madde humour, and franticke fashion, the rude and vnruely people in Lincolnshire, to the number of 20000. assembled themselves in armes, taking vpon themselves to frame and to deuise better orders for the gouerning of the Church and Common-weale.

*The King
marcheth
against the
Rebels.*

The King (who scorned to be thus checked by his owne Vassals, and loathing to proue himselfe a coward at home, seeing that forraigne Nations had found him to be valiant and full of courage) leuied a strong and a puissant Armie, with which (in his owne person) he marched with princely magnanimitie against those rebellious people, who (as he drew towards them) by their petition craued a reformation of those things which lately had beene done and concluded against Religious Houses, and against the former and ancient gouernment of the Church; which things being consented and yeelded to, they solemnly protested their humble dutie and seruice to the King.

*The Rebels
petition.**The King is
slew.*

But hee (who highly disdained that such plaine Swads and rusticke people should presume to giue instructions vnto him, and vnto his whole Clergie and Court of Parliament, in matters so farre aboue their vnderstanding and capacitie) reiected their petition, and resolved by an exemplarie course of iustice (to be by the sword martially vsed in the open Field) to punish and to correct them, except one hundred of those their chiefeft Conspirators might be sent and deliuered absolutely into his hands. This resolution

tion and quick demand so appalled the fainting hearts of the rude and headlesse multitude, that they (suspecting each other of being to bee sent vnto the King) forsooke the Field, and with all speed resorted to their owne houses. But Capitaine Cobler (their chiefest Ring-leader being indeed Doctor Makarell) with some others, were shortly after apprehended, and executed according to their merits and deserts.

The King (who now supposed that all things had beene settled in a sure and in a firme peace) was suddenly informed of another Insurrection in the North, and that their grievance was grounded vpon the same points, and that the number of these Rebels exceeded the number of 40000. men, who termed themselves the *True Pilgrims*, who intended nothing but the establishing of true Religion, and the reformation of great abuses, which defaced the gouernment of the Church.

To encounter these men, and to correct their braine-sicke humour and foolish madnesse, the King appointed the two Dukes of Northfolke and of Suffolke, and some other Lords, with a strong and well appointed Armie, to march against them with all speed. And the Rebels (expressing much ioy because they were to fight) came nere vnto the Dukes Armie, and before them expressed manie signes and tokens of vndoubted courage and desperate boldnesse. But in the night before the two Armies intended to haue ioyned together in handie strokes, a little brooke which ranne betwixt them, and which with a drie foot might the day before haue bene passed ouer, grew so outrageously great and violent, by the fall of immoderate and continuall showres of raine, that the Armies could not meet as they determined. This miraculous pitie, and this mercifull compassion, which by almighty God himselfe was immediately extended towards his people for the preservation of their liues, so effectually wrought in the hearts and mindes of the two Armies, that (vpon the faithfull promise of the two Dukes, that the Kings free and ample pardon should remitt and acquite them all) the Rebels left the Field, and quietly departed to their owne houses. And thus was this Kingdome and Commonwealth deliuered the second time without blowes, from as great danger and perill as at any time before had threatned the ruine and destruction of the people of this Land. By means whereof the King waxed more absolute and more strong in his gouernment than he was in former times, especially concerning his Clergie, and the ordering of the Church, wherein hee disposed of all things (vnccontrolled) according to his owne will.

*The Rebels
die.
Capitaine
Cobler.
Execution.*

*A rebellion
in the North.*

*The holy
Pilgrims.*

*The Kings
Armie.*

*A strange
accident.*

*The Rebels
quietly doe
depart home.*

A third rebellion.

The Rebels overthrown.

Execution.

1536.
28.

The Lord Darcy.

The Lord Hussy.
Execution touching the Supremacie.

Prior Forest.

Noblemen created.

The Lord Cromwell is made Vicegerent in Ecclesiastical matters and things.

1537.
29.

Images and Shrines are suppressed.

Attainders.

Yet as a lightning, so on a sudden in Westchesterland *Thomas Fitz* and *Nicholas Mufgrave*, with some others (for the onely cause a boue mentioned, and for none other) brake forth into an open Rebellion, with eight thousand men, against the King. But by the Duke of Norfolk many of them were slain; the rest were overthrowne, and threescore and fourteene of their Commanders and chiefest Actors in that Rebellion, were as Traitors, by Marshall Law and Iudgement executed in sundry places in the North.

At this time (before *Henry Gow* was Duke of Devonshire, Marquesse of Exeter, cosen german to the King, and Lord High Steward for that day) were brought, arraigned, found guilty, and condemned; the Lord Darcy, and the Lord Hussy, and both of them were executed accordingly; the former for a Murder, and the latter for High Treason. Likewise Sir *Robert Constable*, Sir *Thomas Percy*, Sir *Francis Bigot*, Sir *Steven Hambleton*, and Sir *John Balaun*, Knights, *William Lowley*, *Nicholas Tempest*, *Robert*, two Abbots, and some others; being condemned as Traitors for denying of the kings Supremacie; were executed in sundry places of this Realme: and *Prior Forest* for the same matter, and also for maintaining certaine Heresies with an obstinate and vniuersall resolution, receiued the iudgement of a Traitor; and of an Heretick, and (being hanged in irons vpon a Gibbet) he was burnt.

The king being gracious to some wherein he much favoured, and who had deserved well, bestowed Titles of Honour on them. For the Viscount *Beauchamp* was created Earle of Hartford, Sir *William Fitzwilliam*, high Admiral of England, was made Earle of Southampton, Sir *William Paulst*, Treasurer of the kings household, was made Lord *Sir John*, Sir *John Russell* Knight was made Lord *Russel*, and Sir *Thomas Cromwell*, a Counsellor of Estate, Knight of the Garter, Lord Priuie Seale, Lord *Cromwell*, was made the kings Vicegerent in all cases and matters Ecclesiasticall and Spirituall, by vertue whereof, both in Parliament and elsewhere, hee had the precedence of the Archbishop of Canterbury, and (in almost in all things) did all in all: so that (by reason of that authoritie) hee venterly defaced, burnt, and destroyed all senselesse and dumme Images and Shrines, to whom any thing was superstitiously offered, or vnto whom Prayers, Innocations, or Pilgrimages, were fantastically and foolishly made. Hee also suppressed the Orders of Begging and Craftie Friars, and Puling Dunnes, whose houses and possessions came vnto the king. And about the same time, the Marquesse of Exeter, *Henry Paule*, Lord *Montague*, and Sir *Nicholas Carew* of Beddington in the County of Surrey, Knight of the Garter,

ter, and Master of the Kings horses, were attainted and executed for high Treasons, especially, because that with Cardinall *Pope* (brother to the Lord *Montague*) they endeavoured to procure foraine Princes (in the Popes side) to invade this Land, and to reforme the busineses of the Church by the Apostolicall auctoritie of the Sec of Rome. For this offence the said Cardinall (being beyond the Seas) was by Parliament attainted: and within a few months after, his mother, the Lady *Margaret Countesse of Salisbury*, who was the last of the Princely line of the *Plantagenets*, the said Cardinall onely excepted, for shee was the daughter of *George the last Duke of Clarence* together with *Gertrude* the widow of the late Marquess of *Buccher*, *Sir Adrian Fortescue*, and divers others, were also attainted of high Treason for the same Conspiracie: and so were the Abbots of *Reading*, *Colchester*, and *Glastonbury* with many Monkes, Friers, & religious men, because they obstinately denied the Kings Supremacie, and confidently attributed it vnto the Pope. And all these (except the Cardinall, who came not home whilst the king lived) were afterwards executed in sundrie places of this Realme. Many others also (for the same offence) suffered the like death: whose names (by reason of their meane estate, and undignified qualities) may not (in this our Historie) challenge a place of particular remembrance.

Whilst the king was thus busily imployed in cutting off his subjects heads, the Great *O'neyle* and *O'donoghyl* with a multitude of salvage Our-lawes, wilde Kernes, and desperate Irishmen, committed more than twenty raides within the English Pale, and did much mischief. But by the Lord Deputy (being the Lord *Leonard Grey*, brother to the Marquess of *Dorset*) they were so well fought with in the open field, that he obtained the victory. But such was the insolence of those Rebels, that when by blows they failed to maintain their watch, then (according to their common use and custome) they swiftly ran over the bogges and marshes into the woods and rocks, vnto which the more sober and well ordered Englishmen could not approach, without apparant hazard and danger to their liues.

The king (who in a manner was wholly directed and governed by the Lord *Cromwell* now Earle of *Essex*, and made high Chamberlaine of England) pretended many quarrels against the Abbes, Priests, Monkes, Friers, Nuns, and Glasters of this Kingdome, for many exorbitant misdeemours daily by them committed and done, especially because they were abominably lech-

1539.
31.

A rebellion
in Ireland.

Sheweth

the manner

howe

the same

was

done

and

the

cause

thereof

is

manifest

and

clear

and

manifest

Whereupon the Bishops and Clergie of this Land (who for feare of after-claps, were well pleased to dance after the kings pipe) in their solemne Convocation, published an authentickall Instrument in writing, vnder the Seales of the two Archbishops, by which they made it knowne to the Christian world, that the kings marriage with the said Ladie Anne of Cleve, was a nullitie, voide, frustrate, and of none effect, because the said Ladie (vnder her owne hand) had (vpon due examination) confessed, that the king neuer had nor could performe to her that beneuolence which by a husband was due vnto his wife.

The like sentence was enacted, pronounced, and published by the Parliament, with these additions, That it was lawfull for his Majesty, whensoever and with whomsoever, to marry and to take another wife, according to the Ecclesiasticall Lawes of this Realme, and likewise, That it was lawfull for the said Lady Anne of Cleve, to marry and take another husband when shee should please, according to the Lawes of the holy Church. And further it was then enacted, that all such as (by writing, printing, speaking, or by any other way) did expresse or maintaine the contrary, should be guilty of Treason, and receive punishment accordingly. The king (who was thus enlarged and freed from his bonds of discontented matrimony) took to wife (within twenty daies after) Katharine Howard, the daughter of the Lord Edmund Howard, brother to the Duke of Norfolk, and from thence forth he began to alter the copie of his countenance, and looked discontentedly vpon his great Favourite and inward Counsellor the Lord Cromwell, who had ferreted him through his former troubles. And because this alteration in the king was quickly perceived by many, who longed for his ruine and his downefall, a long and tedious Bill (by some of them) was vnexpectedly preferred against him into the Parliament, in which (rather as a generallitie than by many particulars) he was accused of sundry Treasons, Murtherings, and of Heresie. And among other obnoxious words vnto his charge, it was suggested, that in ioyning with the late Queene Anne, hee favoured the Lutherans above measure, and so strongly supported them against the Catholike Priests and Prelates of this Kingdome, that when by some of the Clergie he was told, that they doubted not but that the king would shortly strike their boldnesse and presumption, the said Lord Cromwell did replye, that the king should allow of their Religion whether he would or no. But how true or how false, some of the strifes wrote, the said bill was found. Yet was he not called to make his answer or defence there.

*His marriage
is dissolved.*

Treason.

*The King
marries
again.
The King
frowneth on
Cromwell.*

*Cromwells
downefall.*

thereto, so that being by the said Parliament attainted of Heresie and of Treason: He, with the Lord *Hungerford*, was beheaded on a scaffold on the Tower hill, whereat his enemies did reioyce: some of them attributing the cause to his hanghynesse and pride; and some of them affirming, that it was Gods reuenge and punishment for his hatefull defacing and wasting of the Church.

The Lord
Leonard
Grey execu-
ted.

And neare about the same time, the Lord *Leonard Grey* (who not long before had beene the kings Deputy in Ireland) was condemned for many treasons, by him committed in that Country, during the time of his Gouvernment: especially, for that secretly he had once procured the Irish Rebels, to enter into, and to make ha- uock within the English Pale; all which hee (of his owne accord) confessed to bee true: wherefore hee received his iudgement, and lost his head.

1541.

33.

Queene Ka-
therine be-
headed.

Francis Dyr-
ham, Thomas
Culpeper,
The Lady
Rochford.

The King (who was but newly married to Queene *Katherine*) was now informed by some who presumed that they knew it well, that before her marriage with the King, she had liued a licentious, and an euill life, with a Gentleman named *Francis Dyrham*: And furthermore, it was much presumed and suspected, that since shee was the Kings wife, shee had vnicastely consorted with another Gentleman, whose name was *Thomas Culpeper*; for it was fully proued, that in her last Progresses, the said *Thomas* was secretly brought by the Lady *Rochford* into the Queenes chamber, at eleuen of the clock in the night, and that hee remained there almost five houres: And that at his depature he was gifted with a chaine of gold, and a rich wrought cap: For these offences, the said two Gentlemen, at Tyborne suffered death. And not long after, the Queene by Parliament was attainted, and so was the Lady *Rochford*, and some others, and lost their heads for the said offence. And in the same Parliament, the King was proclaimed King of Ireland, which Title his Predecessors neuer had.

King of
Ireland.
The King
marrieth
againe.

The King likewise tooke to wife the Lady *Katherine Parr*, sister to the Marquesse of Northampton, and sometimes the wife of the Lord *Lattimer*; who in the latter end of the Kings reigne, was in a faire possibility to haue lost her head, if her owne vertue, modestie, and the Kings sodaine sicknesse and death, had not rescued her for a better fortune.

1542.

34.

Earle of
Tyron.

At this time *Esau* the Great Oney, and *Mathias* his sonne, repaired to the Kings Court, and withall submissiue, and humble contrition they confessed their late rebellion and treasons; and so gracious was the King vnto them both, that hee not only gave them his free pardon, but (in hope of future seruice according to their

their

and promise he created him Earle of Tyrone; and made him Lord of Duncan.

The Scots (who for a long time had bene quiet) did now beginne to swagger; and by sodaine invasions, to hurt, and damage the Subjects of this Land; which discontented the King.

To requyre of their King James the Fifth, and Nephew to the King, these things. First, That the said King James should doe his homage to his fealrie to King Henry, for his kingdome of Scotland; as his Ancestors in former times had often done: But the Scottish King (with great obstinacie; and with forward messages) refused to yeeld thereto.

King Henry likewise required the deliuerie of some small land trising Territories bordering close vpon the inheritance of the said Scottish King. And for the prooue of his rightfull Title thereunto like caused certaine ancient and old sentences to be shewed forth: But the Scottish Commissioners without shame or remorse rejected them saying that they were written and sealed by Englishmen, who (for their owne profiting gain) might write and sale what they list.

And these and some other deuiances King Henry (who rather desired a friendly reconciliation betwixt himselfe and his Nephew than by the draw of sword to shed Christian blood) concluded to smere, and recomfort with King James in kinde manner, vpon the borders of eicher kingdome. For which purpose King Henry made his Progresse vnto York; and was there certified that the Scottish King intended not (according to his promise) to meet with him: But would (by Commission) authorize some of his Counsellors of estate, to conferre, and to conclude with his Nephew's Commissioners of England, touching the matters then in difference betwixt them.

The King (though he were thus deluded) yet did he not expresse any touch of impatience for that wrong; but (authorizing certaine Commissioners in that behalf) he ended his Progresse and returned home: All these Commissioners met by; but whilest they were in Parle, so notorious and great despights were offered to King Henry.

For though the Commissioners daily continued of vntie, and of peace yet at the same time the Scots invaded the Western marches of this Realme, burnt, slew, spoiled, and rifled beyond chaunce and season; and yet no warre was then denounced betwixt the said two Kings. For this iniurie, and for this wrong, sufficient and liberall amends, and recompence was promised by the

Contention
with the Scot-
tish King.

William
Shakespeare?

Shakespeare
- 1564
- 1616
- 1616
- 1616

said

said Commissioners, but no manner of restitution or satisfaction was made in that behalfe.

And lastly, although the king of Scots commission was very large and ample, and authorized those his Agents, to do (almost) whatsoever they themselves pleased, yet did the said Commissioners so strictly stand upon sundrie points (which were so much vnreasonable and dishonorable for king Henry to yield vnto) that by the English Commissioners (who had thoroughly viewed and praised their authority and power) they were contemned as enemies to the Peace, and to their owne Countrey: For that (by the means of their frowardnesse) there should be wanted. Whereupon, the Scottish Commissioners too cleare shame of this blame, imputed to their obstinacie and folly, signed forth their priuie instructions from their King, which (for feare of death) they dauid not to execute: By which instructions it appeared plainly, that their authority, expressed in their said Commission, was (in all things) curbed, and made of little, or of no force: except the said English Commissioners would yield to such demands, as were vnprofitable, and dishonorable to their King.

Warres in
Scotland.

The English
Army re-
turneth.

The Scots in-
made Eng-
land.

A notable
ouertrow.

These notorious iniuries and wrongs, and this defiance and crafty dissimulation, enforced king Henry, to send forth an Army of twenty thousand men into Scotland, vnder the command of the Duke of Norfolk, who was accompanied by the Earles of Shrewsbury, Derby, Gloucester, Surrey, Hereford, August, and Rutland, & with the greatest part of the Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of the North. All these marched on their iourney, and for eight daies (not being vanquished, and vnfought with) they killed, rished, burned, straged, and spoiled the Scottish Townes, Castles, Fortresses, houses, and Fields, with much other violence, and furie, as the extremitie of warres could exerce it for that time: Which while they had done, the Army attyred was distressed and curty was repaired, laden with spoiles to his owne home.

With this defamed and fured reuenge, the king of Scots was infinitely grieved and perplemd at the heart, in such sort, that he caused (with all his expedition) to be raised an Army of sixteen thousand men, which was sent into the West marches of this kingdome, where they began to spoile, and do much mischief. But Thomas, the Bastard of Burgoyne, and Glouc. Lord Wharton (having up-shore, waiting collected a small number of approved and valiant men warres, taking with them some part thereof, and leaving the rest for a secret staye of ambush, to annoy their enemy when time should serue) encountered vnex-
pectedly

pectedly with the Scots, upon whom in the Rereward, the said ambush, valiantly issued, which did so terrifie and affright them, that they supposed verily, the Duke of *Norfolke*, with a great Armie did fall on them, wherefore (to saue themselves) they fled; and in the pursuite there were taken prisoners, the Earls of *Cassels*, and *Glan-carne*; the Lords *Maxwel*, *Fleming*, *Sommerwel*, *Oliphant*, *Gray*, and *Oragy*, and the Lord *Carre* of *Gredon*; two hundred Gentlemen, and about eight hundred common Souldiers; so that euery English man had two or three prisoners, to recompence their aduenterous paines, and trauaile: The Englishmen also tooke, and brought away, foure and twentie peeces of Ordinance, and foure Carts loaden with Speares: this ouerthrow, many men then imputed (and peradventure truly) to the Scottish kings vnadvised and indiscreet direction, who made so meane a Springall the Generall in that armie, in which so many Lords, Earles, and worthy Captaines were, who scorned to be commanded by such an Vnderling; and therefore hazarded their owne liues, by a willing flight, rather than (by obtayning the Victory) to lay on him such honour as they knew, he was not able to deserue.

Prisoners.

Disdaine.

Of these prisoners, foure and twentie of the chiefeft, were sent to the Tower of London; from whence (after two dayes) they were remoued, and committed to the care and custodie of diuers Noblemen, Knights, and Gentlemen of worth: at whose hands, they receiued such kinde welcome, and bountifull entertainment, that (with multiplyed words of extraordinary praise and commendation) they ceased not to extoll their friendly, and good v-sage, to the skies.

This vnexpected, strange, and vnfortunate ouerthrow of so faire an Armie, with so small a handfull: so much disturbed the patient disposition of the Scottish king, that (with melancholy, and inward griefe) he dyed within few weekes after, leauing behinde him (as to succeed) his only daughter and heire Queene *Mary*; a child who was then but newly borne.

The King of
Scots dies.Marie Queen
of Scots.

When the newes of this kings death was voiced to the Scottish Prisoners, it is not to be maruailed at, if pensiue sorrow and anguish much appalled them for a while: But at length (making a vertue of necessitie, and recomforing themselves with some hope which they conceived of future happinesse) they counsailed king *Henrie* to procure their said yong Queene, to be by the State of Scotland, giuen in marriage vnto Prince *Edward* his son: For the furtherance whereof, they all protested, swore, and promised, to imploy their best trauailes, and their chiefeft friends:

A motion for
marriage.

*Scottish pri-
soners relea-
sed.*

*The French
men breake
the peace.*

*The Mer-
chants are
vexed.*

*Unthankfull
Frenchmen.*

1543
35.

*An Armie
sent into
France.*

*Landersey
besieged.*

*The siege
abandoned.*

The King so thankfully entertayned this their motion, and proffered service for the furtherance thereof, that he not only enlarged them all without ransoms, but also gaue vnto them rich and great gifts, for which they were exceeding thankfull; and departed ioyfully into their owne Countrie.

Now must we know, that as the Scots without cause, had made breach of the former peace; so did the French King: who suffered his subiects (vpon the Seas) to robbe and spoile the Merchants of this kingdome. And thereupon King *Henrie* permitted his subiects to doe the like. Diuers complaints for these iniuries and wrongs, were first made vnto the French king, because his subiects had first transgressed; but he neither afforded answer, redresse, or recompence therein. And by reason of this debate and variance betwixt the two Kings, the Merchants of either Nation were arrested and impritoned, and their goods, and marchandizes were attached, and seised on in each kingdome. Likewise the French and English Embassadors, were (for a time) restrayned of their liberties, but were quickly set at large againe: yet still, the poore Merchants on either part, were compelled to pay the reckoning, although they fared ill, and were enforced to sustaine punishment for the faults of other men. Such was the iniquitie of those times, wherein Warre and Rapine did beare the chiefeft sway, and such were the miseries which harmelesse men sustained: because Peace and Iustice were not suffered to moderate, betwixt Right and Wrong. For the French King did vtterly forget, in what a desperate case his kingdome stood, when King *Henrie* (vpon the humble supplication of the Queene Regent, and of his Nobles, when he, and his children were prisoners in Italie) gaue vnto him peace. Wherefore, to correct his monstrous ingratitude, and to be reuenged of daily wrongs, The King (to defie him) sent his Heralds towards France. But the French King would not in any sort permit them to come into his kingdome: Whereupon King *Henrie* (vnder the principall command of Sir *Iohn Wallop*, Sir *Thomas Seymour*, and Sir *Richard Cromwel*) transported a strong Armie, who (presently vpon their landing) besieged the Towne of Landersey, and by continual batteries, and fierce assaults, brought it into some necessities, and danger: but the French king knowing well the distressed estate in which the Towne then stood; in his owne person, with a huge Armie, came to releue it: by meanes whereof, the English Generals raised the siege, and made themselves strong, and ready to encounter the French king in battaile: of which, hee made great brags. This expectation of a bloody skirmish, caused the

the English Armie (who would not then disorder nor incumber themselves with other imployments) to suffer the said Towne to be newly victualled and releued. But in the midst of the night before it was intended by the English Armie that this battaile should haue beene fought, the French King (being shrowded in the darke) ran away, and all his companies returned with speede vnto their owne Countries; insomuch that for that time no more was done, but (by command) the English Armie returned into England.

In this meane while, the aforesaid motion concerning the marriage of the young Prince with the Infant Queen of Scotland, was so well applauded, & entertained by the Scots, that in their Parliament it was first concluded, and then confirmed by an Instrument in writing, vnder the hands and seales of their Nobilitie, and ratified by their oathes, that the said intended match should bee effected, and that their young Queene (for that purpose) should bee conueied into England. But within few moneths after, by the secret and cunning plots and practises of the French king, the Nobilitie of Scotland neglected their Law, their promise, & their oath, which occasioned king Henry with all speed to make new and vnwonted preparations and prouisions, not onely to inuade that Countrey, but also to make warre vpon his enemy the king of France.

And to effect his purpose in that behalfe, first he sent a puissant Armie (which was transported in two hundred warlike ships) into Scotland, vnder the generall command (by Sea) of his high Admirall the Viscount Lisle, and vnder the generall command (by land) of the noble and right valiant Earle of Hartford.

All these ships safely entred into the Fryth, where they took many good Vessels, which were exceeding seruiceable to their proceedings. And then was the whole Armie set on land: and being well ordered into three battailes, and marching towards Leyth, they first took view of six thousand Scottish horsemen, with whom they encountered for a while. But when the Scots perceived that the Englishmen took more delight to fight with courage, than to dallye, as being fearefull of their liues, they made a quicke retreat, and suddenly fled away, leauing their Artillerie and that Towne to their enemies, who appropriated to themselves every good thing which they found there, and then consumed the towne with fire. From thence they marched towards Edenborough, the principall Citie of that kingdome. But on the way the Prouost and some of the chiefe Burgesses of that Towne, made offer to the

*A marriage
concluded
with Scot-
land.*

*The Scots
doe breake
their oath.*

1544.
36.
*An Armie
spoileth Scot-
land.*

the Earle of Hartford (Generall of the Field) to deliver to him the keies conditionally that he would preserve it from fire, and suffer the souldiers and the Inhabitants thereof with bagge and baggage to depart.

But the Generall made answer thus: That hee was sent into that Countrey to take revenge vpon that Nation, because their Nobilitie (with one consent) by the peruerse and vnfriendly instigation of the French king, had violated their owne Law, their promise, and their oath, touching the marriage agreed on, to be solemnized betweene Prince *Edward* and their young Queene. And therefore if all the Souldiers and all the Inhabitants of that Citie would come disarmed into the open Field, and yeeld their substance and their liues to bee ordered according to his pleasure and will, he then would doe as he thought good: but if they refused so to doe, he then protested to visit the Towne and them with all the extremities which were incident to such a warre.

This quicke answer so little pleased the Townesmen, that they returned, purposing to resist: and so they did. But by strong batteries and fierce assaults, their gates and their walles were beaten downe and entred, so that many thousands of the Scots were slaine, their riches were possessed by the English Armie, & a great part of that Citie was consumed by fire. Now whilest the Armie was thus busied, there came vnto them from the King foure thousand English horsemen: so that when the spoiles and booties were by the souldiers imbarcked, & by water sent into England, the English Armie coasted thorow a great part of those Countries, vnfought with, burning, killing, and forraging in all places, as they pleased: so that they hauing taken, ransacked, and burnt a good part of the Citie of Edeaborough, Holy-rood house, and the kings Palace there, and hauing rised and defaced the Townes of Leyth, Haddington, Dumbarr, Dyrlaw, Broughton, Duddistoun, Beuerton, Markle, Hatherwike, Bowland, Blackborne, West-Crage, Chesterfells, Stonehouse, Trauert, Trapren, Belton, Butterden, Raunto, Enderligh, Crawenden, Shenston, the Fycker, East-barne, Kyrklandhill, Quickwood, part of Muskelborough, and many other Villages, besides Abbies, Monasteries, & Religious Houses, (which particularly we cannot name) they returned powerfully, with rich booties, and with the only losse of some men, into England.

And thus did king *Henry* in some sharpe measure correct and punish the vnstable dealings of the Scots. Which troubles when he had finished, hee then forthwith made such plentifull preparations to invade France, that he sent vnto the French kings Domini-

*Two Armies
sent into
France.*

ons

ons two strong Armies, of which the one was commanded by the Duke of Norfolk, and by the gentle Lord *Russell*, who was then newly made Lord *Princ Seale*, who therewithall besieged the strong Towne of *Murrell*, where they lost much time, and much labour, and were enforced to leaue it in the end. And the other of the said two Armies was commanded by the Duke of Suffolke, with which the said former Armie inbodied it selfe: and then they all encamped about the strong and warlike Citie of *Bulleine*, and after many sharpe conflicts and hot skirmishes, they first tooke the Old-man, and shortly after base *Bulleine*.

To this siege king *Henrie* himselfe (being attended by many a worthie man) repaired, and after his comming thither, so long as the light gaue leaue, for the space of one whole moneth together, he caused the walles of the Towne and Castle so cruelly to be battered, and the Towne it selfe to be so beaten, and the breaches and the trenches to be so furiously assaulted, that the walles in many places lay almost leuell with the ground. No house escaped vnhurt: and the Inhabitants with continuall labour, vexation, and trauell, were almost tired and worne out: so that at length, vpon composition that all the Souldiers and Inhabitants should safely depart with bagge and baggage, the strong and stately Towne and Castle of *Bulleine* was deliuered into the kings hands: out of which issued (vpon the said agreement) three score & seuen horsemen, fiftene hundred, three score and three footmen, eight hundred Gunners, fourescore and seuen men who were hurt, and nineteene hundred twentie and seuen men, women, and children, they all being in number 4444. soules. But many (who by reason of their greuous wounds could not depart) were found, and well cherished and relieved in the Towne.

Now whilest the King thus lay at the siege of *Bulleine*, the Emperour (without the kings knowledge or consent) secretly concluded a peace with the French king, whereat king *Henry* much grieued: so that (after he had taken an exact order for the repairing and fortifying of that Towne and Castle) hee dismissed his Armie, and with great ioy, honour, and triumph, he returned into England.

And because his daily warres (which required continuall supplies) had wasted and consumed his treasure, which (for the preventing of future mischises, and in especiall such as were daily offered vnto him by the Scots) he endeuoured to augment; he therefore demanded a Beneuolence of all his Subiects both Spirituall and Temporall. For which purpose Sir *Thomas Wrythlesley* Lord

Chancellor

Murrell besieged and abandoned.

Bulleine is besieged.

The King cometh to Bulleine.

Bulleine is yielded.

King Henry returneth.

John Stow. 993.

A Beneuolence.

*Alderman
Read.*

Chancellor of England, the Duke of Suffolke, & others of his Ma-
iesties Counsell of Estate, (sitting as Commissioners in *Baynards*
Castle in London) taxed the Citizens and Inhabitants according
to their wisdomes and discretions. And because one Alderman
(whose name was *Richard Read*) refused to pay what they had or-
dered, he was therefore by them required (on a great paine) per-
sonally to serue the king in his warres against the Scots; which
cheerefully he performed, and was (with many others) taken pri-
soner and detained by his enemies, vntill that for his ransome hee
was enlarged and set free.

*The Dolphins
successe.*

After the king was departed home, the Dolphin (taking the
benefit of a darke night) came with a great power so suddenly into
Base Bulleine, that he tooke it. But such as fled, and had saued their
liues, being aided by the souldiers of the vpper Towne and Castle,
came fiercely on the Dolphin, and so manfully assailed him, that
(to saue himselfe and his) he in all the haste departed, and left the
Towne with his great losse.

*The French
are over-
throwne.*

Within few daies after, Monsieur *de Beus* came on the other side
of the water before the Towne, with an Armie of fiftene thou-
sand men, and began to erect a Fortresse there. But by the valiant
Earle of Hartford, the Viscount *Lisle*, the Lord *Gray*, and diuers o-
thers, they were assailed, fought with, and shamefully put to
flight, and were compelled to leaue behinde them their Ordina-
nance, Tents, and other good prouisions, to their great ignominie
and reproach.

1545.

37.

*The French
Kings Navie
doeth nothing.*

The French king (intending to worke wonders in England, by
way of a reuenge, for that his strong Towne of *Bulleine* was lost;
sent to the Sea a mightie Fleet, of two hundred tall ships, and seuen
and twentie strong Gallies, all which were stuffed (as it was repor-
ted) with threescore thousand men. All these came in good order,
and anchored before the Isle of Wight, & were oftentimes beaten
with the great Ordinance which the Admiral of England liberally
bestowed on them. But as the English Fleet passed out of the Har-
uon of Portsmouth into the Sea, a stately, strong, & a goodly ship,
named the *Marie Rose*, belonging to the king, in which was Cap-
taine Sir *George Carew* Knight, with more than foure hundred men
besides) was drowned almost in an instant, by the grosse follie of
the Gunners, and of the Mariners, the former of them hauing left
their Ordinance vntugged, and the latter hauing left the vnder
port holes open, by meanes whereof when the ship turped, the
Ordinance ran backe to the one side, and bare the port holes vnder
water, so that the sea violently and abundantly flowed in, and in a

*The Marie
Rose drowned*

moment

moment swallowed vp both ship, Captaine, Men, Ordinance, and all other things there to the great grieve and sorrow of the King himselfe, and of all such as were present, and beheld it.

The Lord *Dambale*, high Admirall of France, being by certaine poore Fishermen, whom he had taken, informed, that the King in his owne person, being accompanied with an infinite number of valiant men of warre; expected and longed to be made victorious & rich by their landing, feared to hazard all his fortunes in so desperate and hot a seruice: Wherefore he hoised Anchors, and without Fame or Honor, returned basely into France.

Now must we know, that no sooner was King *Henrie* departed out of England to the siege of *Bullein* (as wee haue heard) but the Scottish Nation (observing their old custome) entred, rifled, spoiled, and burnt many Houses, Villages, and small Townes in the marches of England, without pittie: Wherefore, king *Henrie* (after his returne) resolved to correct their madnesse, and their folly, and to take reuenge for those iniuries and wrongs: And for that purpose, he sent the Noble Earle of *Hartford* into that kingdom, with an Armie of twelue thousand men, where hee hauoked Men, Townes, Castles, and the Countrey, in such a furious and fierce manner, that the Scots were extremely dammified thereby; and thousands of them were vterly vndone.

About the same time, the valiant Lord *Lisle*, Lord high Admirall of England, entred into and landed within the Hauen of *Treport*, and burnt the suburbs of that towne, and many other houses, Villages, and Townes, which bordered vpon the Sea coasts: And at his returne from thence (as a rich prey) he caried with him many Ships, Barges, Boats, and Vessels, which he found there.

Now like as after many ruffe and boisterous stormes, a sweet, and a desirable calme doth follow: so after these busie conflicts, and martiall contentions, whereof wee haue already taken a perfect view: A peace was louingly concluded, and ioyfully proclaimed, betweene the two kingdomes of England and of France. But this ioy (as in humane affaires it often hapneth) was quickly checked with an other sorrow: for the most victorious, faithfull, and euer to be honored Captaine, the Duke of Northfolke, and his sonne, the most illustrious Earle of Surrey (both which, in this Kings raigne, performed many memorable, and braue seruices, in Scotland, England, and in France) were sodainely apprehended, & sent vnto the Tower; For none other thing, but because they quartered, and bare in their Escoucheon certaine Armes, which were pretended, properly, and only to belong vnto the king and Prince

*The Scots
invade Eng-
land.*

*An Armie
sent into
Scotland.*

Treport.

1545
38
*The Duke of
Northfolke
and the Earle
of Surrey
committed.*

*The Earle of
Surrey beheaded.*

Prince (which Armes notwithstanding, they and their Auncesters time out of minde had so borne without controlment, reproofe, or check.) For this offence, the said Earle was indicted of high Treason, arraigned thereon, and tryed by a Iurie of Knights, and Gentlemen, (and not by his peeres) because he was no Lord of the Parliament / by whom he was found guiltie, and then receiued his iudgement, and lost his head, to the great grieve and sorrow of many thousands, who lamented the causelesse death of such a worthy man, as had so well deserved of the king, and of the common weale.

*The King
dieth.*

But the Duke his father (by reason of the Kings sicknesse, and death, which followed shortly after) was preserved by God from that danger, for better fortunes.

He is described.

The Presence of this King was amiable, and Princely : for hee was somewhat more than ordinarie tall, strongly limmed, proportionably composed, faire in his complexion, nimble, and full of agilirie in his yonger yeeres ; and alwaies as resolutely valiant as a man might bee : Hee had a pregnant and a sharpe wit, and was generally held to be well learned, because hee could, and vsed to speake well : He was exceeding humble, and passing stout ; applying the former to gentle spirits ; and opposing the latter against prowd, insolent, and rough Mares : He was bountifull, and magnificently liberall (if occasion so required) Yet in regard that he was a man, he was not free from all faults ; For he was too too much familiar and conversant with wanton and light women : And delighted too much in varietie, and in change, as most men did coniecture, because he had fixe wives : From two of them he was seuered, because his mariages were held to be void, frustrate, and of no force : other two of them (for the objected crime of incontinencie) lost their heads : A fifth died in her child-bed : and the sixt escaped fairely by his death. Finally, hee (oftentimes) much pleased himselfe, to be ouer-familiar in the swaggering company of loose Fellowes ; yet in most respects, hee was a famous, a worthie, and a most noble king. Thus ended he his life ; and thus doe I conclude this Historie of these twentie kings, hoping that some other (who shall be better able) will (with more sufficiencie) write the rest.

FINIS.

THE SVCCES-
SIONS OF THE DVKES
AND EARLES OF THIS
KINGDOME OF
ENGLAND:

FROM THE CONQUEST
vntill the twelfth year of the famous Reigne
of the mightie Monarch King

JAMES
THE FIRST.



LONDON,
Printed for George Tompson. 1628.



Princes of Wales.

since the Conquest.

John Speede.
97.

- 1 **E**dward Caer-Nernon, son to king Edward the First, afterwards king Edward the Second.
- 2 **E**dward of Windsor, son to king Edward the Second, afterwards king Edward the Third.
- 3 **E**dward the Black Prince, sonne to king Edward the Third.
- 4 **R**ichard of Burdeaux, sonne to the Black Prince, afterwards king Richard the Second.
- 5 **H**enry of Monmouth, sonne to king Henry the Fourth, afterwards king Henry the Fifth.
- 6 **H**enry of Windsor, son to king Henry the Fifth, afterwards king Henry the Sixth.
- 7 **E**dward of Westminster, son to king Henry the Sixth.
- 8 **E**dward of Westminster, sonne to king Edward the Fourth, afterwards king Edward the Fifth.
- 9 **E**dward Plantagenet, son to king Richard the Third.
- 10 **A**rthur Tudor, son to king Henry the Seventh.
- 11 **H**enry Tudor, sonne to king Henry the Seventh, afterwards king Henry the Eighth.
- 12 **E**dward, the sonne of king Henry the Eighth, afterwards king Edward the Sixth.
- 13 **H**enry, the son of king James.
- 14 **C**harles, the son of king James.

THE



THE SVCCESIONS OF THE DVKES AND EARLES OF THIS KING.

DOME OF ENGLAND:

From the Conquest vntill the twelfth yeare
of the famous Reigne of the mightie Monarch
King JAMES the First.

Albemarle and Holdernes.



E VRO (Sonne to the Earle of Cham-
paigne) married one of the Conque-
rours sisters, and was by him crea-
ted Earle of Albemarle, and of Hol-
dernes.

Conq.

Stephen, their sonne, succeeded,
and was Earle of Albemarle, and of
Holdernes.

William, surnamed Le Grose (being
his son) succeeded, and was Earle of
Albemarle and Holdernes.

William de Forstun, married Hawse
or Anice, the daughter & heire of the aforementioned Stephen, & was in
her right created Earle of Albemarle, & of Holdernes, by K. Stephen.

K. Steph.

William de Forstun, their son, succeeded, and was Earle of Albe-
marle and of Holdernes.

William de Forstun, his son, was Earle of Albemarle and Holder-
nes, and dyed without issue Male.

The successions of the Dukes

- R. 2.** *Thomas Plantagenet*, otherwise called *Thomas of Woodstock*, a younger sonne to king *Edward the Third*, was by his Nephew king *Richard the Second*, created Earle of *Albemarle*, *Holdernes*, *Darby*, *Launcester*, and *Leicester*.
Henry Plantagenet his sonne, was Earle of *Albemarle*, *Holdernes*, *Darby*, *Launcester*, and of *Leicester*.
- R. 2.** *Edmund Plantagenet*, the sonne of *Edmund of Langley*, brother of the younger sonnes of king *Edward the Third*, and Duke of *Yorke*, was by king *Richard the Second*, his Cousin, created Earle of *Ausland*, and Duke of *Albemarle*.
Thomas Plantagenet, Duke of *Cleynce*, and sonne to king *Henry the Fourth*, was by him created Earle of *Warwick*, & of *Albemarle*.

Arundell.

- Conq.** *Roger Mountgomery*, was by *William the Conquerour* created Earle of *Arundell*, and of *Shrewsbury*.
Hugh Mountgomery, his sonne, succeeded him, and died without issue.
Robert Mountgomery, his brother, (being Earle of *Belesme*) succeeded, and dyed without issue.
- Mauld.** *William de Albenei*, was by *Mauld the Empresse* created Earle of *Arundell*, and *Suffex*, because he tooke her part against king *Stephen*, he married *Aukiza*, the widow of king *Henry the First*, and was confirmed in his honors, by king *Henry the Second*.
William de Albenei, his son, succeeded in these honors.
- H. 2.** *William de Albenei*, his sonne, was by king *Richard the First*, restored to the said Earledomes, which for displeasure had been kept from him by *Henry the Second*.
William de Albenei, his son, succeeded in those Earledomes.
- R. 1.** *Hugh de Albenei*, was Earle after his brother, and dyed without issue.
- H. 3.** *William de Albenei*, was created Earle of *Arundell*, by king *Henry the Third*, and dyed without issue.
- E. 1.** *Richard Fitz. Alen*, married *Isabel*, (who was one of the daughters of the last Earle *William*) and was by king *Edward the First*, created Earle of *Arundell*, hee was (before that time) Lord of *Claun*, and *Oswaldstry*.
Edmund Fitz. Alen, their son, was Lord of *Claun* and *Oswaldstry*, and succeeded in the Earledome of *Arundell*; but was beheaded on

and Earles of this Kingdome.

on displeasure, and by the commandement of Queene Isabel, the wife of king Edward the Second.

Richard Fitz-Alen, his sonne, succeeded in all those honours: he was also Earle of *Warren*, and of *Surrey*.

Richard Fitz-Alen, his sonne, was Lord of *Clun* and *Oswaldstry*, and Earle of *Arundell*, *Warren*, and of *Surrey*: hee was also Lord of *Bromfield*, and *Tale*; and was beheaded at *Briffow*, whilst king *Richard* the Second liued.

Thomas Fitz-Alen, his son, was Lord of *Clun*, *Oswaldstry*, *Bromfield*, and *Tale*, and Earle of *Arundel*, *Warren*, and of *Surrey*, and died without issue Male.

John Fitz-Alen, and Lord *Maltravers*, being the next heire Male to the said *Thomas*, was by king *Henry* the Sixt created Earle of *Arundel*, and Duke of *Torayne*.

H. 6.

Humphrey Fitz-Alen, his sonne, was Earle of *Arundell*, and died without issue.

William Fitz-Alen, his Vncle, and Brother to the last Earle *John*, was Lord of *Clun*, and *Maltravers*, and Earle of *Arundell*.

Thomas Fitz-Alen, his sonne, succeeded, and was Lord of *Clun*, and *Maltravers*, and Earle of *Arundell*.

William Fitz-Alen, his sonne, was Lord of *Clun*, and *Maltravers*, and Earle of *Arundell*.

Henry Fitz-Alen, his sonne, was Lord of *Clun*, and *Maltravers*, and Earle of *Arundell*, and dyed without issue Male.

Thomas Howard, Earle of *Surrey*, and the fourth and last Duke of *Northfolke*, married *Mary*, one of the daughters and co-heires of the said *Henry Fitz-Alen*, and was in her right Lord *Maltravers*, & Earle of *Arundell*. The other moytie descended to the Lord *Barkley*.

Philip Howard, his sonne, was Lord *Maltravers*, and Earle of *Arundell*, and of *Surrey*.

Thomas Arundell, his son, is Lord *Maltravers*, and Earle of *Arundell*: to which honours he was restored by the mighty Prince king *James*.

K. James, 6. 7.

Baihe.

P*Hilbert de Chandew*, a Britton borne, was by king *Henry* the First created Earle of *Bathe*: he dyed without issue Male.

H. 1.

John Bouchier, Lord *Fitz-Warren* of *Towstock* in *Denon*, being the

The successions of the Dukes

H.8.

sonne of *Paulke Bouchier*, Lord *Fitz-Warren*, who was the son of *William Bouchier*, Lord *Fitz-Warren*, who was the younger son of *William Bouchier*, Earle of *Ewe* in *Normandy*; who was the younger brother of *Henry* the first Earle of *Ewe*, was by king *Henry* the eight, created Earle of *Barb*.

John Bouchier, his son, was Lord *Fitz-warren* of *Towstock*, and Earle of *Barb*.

William Bouchier, the sonne of *John Bouchier*, who was the son of the said *John*, last Earle of *Barb*, is now Lord *Fitz-Warren* of *Towstock*, and hath issue one son only, who is named *Edward*, Lord *Fitz-Warren* of *Towstock*.

Bedford.

E.3.

Ingram, Lord *Concy*, a *Frenchman* born, married *Isabel*, the daughter of king *Edward* the third: and being by him created Earle of *Bedford*, he died without issue Male.

H.4.

John Plantagenet, the third sonne of king *Henry* the fourth, was (by his father) created Duke of *Bedford*, and whilst king *Henric* the first liued (to whom he was Vncle) hee was Regent of *France*, ruled it with great wisdom and valour; and dyed without issue.

E.4.

George Nevil, was by king *Edward* the fourth, created Duke of *Bedford*, and dyed without issue.

H.7.

Jasper Tuthar, surnamed *Jasper of Hatfield*, son to *Owen Tuthar*, and of *Queene Katherine*, the widow of king *Henry* the fifth, was (by his halfe brother, king *Henry* the sixt) created Earle of *Pembroke*, and was after (by his Nephew, king *Henry* the seventh) created Duke of *Bedford*, and dyed without issue.

E.6.

John Russell, was by king *Henry* the eight, made Lord *Russel*, and by king *Edward* the sixt, he was created Earle of *Bedford*.

Francis, Lord *Russel*, his sonne, succeeded, and was Earle of *Bedford*.

Edward, Lord *Russel*, his sons son, viz. the son of *Francis* third son to the said Earle *Francis*, is now Earle of *Bedford*.

Bridgmasce.

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Bridgewater.

Alice Dancbery was by king Henry the Seventh made Lord Dancbery, and his sonne Henry was (after his fathers death) created Earle of Bridgewater by king Henry the eighth, and dyed without issue. But Alice his sister and heire was married to John Bourchier, Lord Fitz-warren of Towstock in Devon, from whom William Lord Fitz-warren of Towstock, and Earle of Bath is descended.

H. 8.

Buckingham.

Walter Gifford, Earle of Longue in Normandy, and cosen to the Conquerour, was by him created Earle of Buckingham and Pembroke.

Conq.

Walter Gifford his son succeeded, and dyed without issue.

Thomas Plantagenet, surnamed Thomas of Woodstocke, the sixth sonne of king Edward the third, was by his Nephew king Richard the second created Earle of Buckingham, Northampton, and Essex: and afterwards he made him Duke of Gloucester. And for his good counsell to the same king, he was sent prisoner to Callice, and there murdered.

R. 2.

Humphrey Plantagenet, his sonne, was Earle of Buckingham, Northampton, and Essex, and died without issue.

Humphrey Stafford, Lord of Brecknocke and Holdernes, and being Earle of Stafford, was by king Henry the sixth created the first Duke of Buckingham.

H. 6.

Henry Stafford his sonne, being Lord of Brecknocke and Holdernes, was Earle of Stafford, and Duke of Buckingham, and was beheaded by king Richard the third.

Edward Stafford his sonne, being Lord of Brecknocke and Holdernes, and Earle of Stafford, by restitution from king Henry the eighth, was the third and last Duke of Buckingham, and was beheaded whilest king Henry the eighth reigned.

H. 7.

Cambridge.

The Successions of the Dukes

Cambridge.

E. 3.

John of Henault brother to William Earle of Henault, & vncle to Queen Philip the wife of king Edward the Third, was by him created Earle of Cambridge. But hee revolted to the French king, and thereby lost his honour.

E. 3.

William Marquess of Salter, Bergen, and Cleueland, was by king Edward the Third created Earle of Cambridge.

E. 3.

Edmund Plantagenet, surnamed Edmund of Langley, being the fifth sonne of king Edward the Third, and Duke of Yorke, was by his father created Earle of Cambridge.

Edward Plantagenet his sonne, was Duke of York and Albemarle, Earle of Rutland and of Cambridge, and being slaine in the battaile of Edgingcourt, he died without issue.

Richard Plantagenet, his brother, was Earle of Cambridge, and had issue, Richard.

Richard Plantagenet was Lord of Clare, and of Wigmore, Duke of Yorke, and Earle of Ulster, March, and Cambridge, and was slaine in his wars against king Henry the Sixth.

Edward Plantagenet his son succeeded him in all those honourable dignities, and was afterwards king Edward the Fourth.

Chester.

Conq.

Hugo Lupus, Viscount of Avrigny in Normandy, nephew to the Conquerour, was by him created Earle Palatine of Chester.

Richard Lupus his son succeeded, and died without issue.

H. 1.

Ralph Meschynes (being the sonne of Margaret the sister and heire of Hugo Lupus) was by king Henry the First created Earle of Chester.

Ralph Meschynes his sonne succeeded, and was Earle of Chester.

Hugh Meschynes, surnamed Kenilworth, because hee was there borne, succeeded his father in the Earldome of Chester.

Ralph Meschynes, surnamed Blundenille, his sonne, being Lord of Little Britaine, was Earle of Chester, Lincolne, and of Richmond.

R. 1.ohn.

John surnamed Scot, was by king John created Earle of Chester, and died without issue Male.

Edmund Plantagenet, surnamed Crouch-backe, the second sonne of

and Earles of this Kingdome.

of king *Henry* the Third, and brother to king *Edward* the First, was by his father created Earle Palatine of *Chester*.

H. 3.

Edward the Prince, sonne and heire apparant to king *Edward* the First, was by his father created Earle Palatine of *Chester*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Prince of *Wales*. He was afterwards king *Edward* the Second.

E. 1.

Edward the Third was in his fathers daies created Earle Palatine of *Chester*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Prince of *Wales*, and was afterwards king *Edward* the Third.

E. 2.

Edward Plantagenet, surnamed *The Black Prince*, the eldest son of king *Edward* the Third, was in Parliament created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*.

Richard Plantagenet, sonne to the *Black Prince*, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, and was after that king *Richard* the Second.

Henry Plantagenet, the eldest son of king *Henry* the Fourth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, vntill he was king *Henry* the Fifth.

Edward, the sonne of king *Henry* the Sixth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, vntill hee was shamefully murdered.

Edward Plantagenet, the son of king *Richard* the Third, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, and died without issue.

Arthur Tudor, the eldest sonne of king *Henry* the Seuenth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, and dyed without issue.

Henry Tudor, the second sonne of king *Henry* the Seuenth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, vntill he was king *Henry* the Eighth.

Edward Tudor, his son, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, vntill he was king *Edward* the Sixth. He died without issue.

Henry Stewart, the eldest sonne of the illustrious Prince, King *James* the First, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, and died without issue.

Charles Stewart, his brother, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *York*, *Cornwall*, and *Rossay*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*.

Clarence.

The successions of the Dukes

Clarence.

K. Steph.

Gilbert de Clare was by king Stephen created Earle of Clare. Roger de Clare, his brother, succeeded, and was Earle of Clare. Richard de Clare, his son, succeeded, and was Earle of Clare.

E. 3.

Lionel Plantagenet, the third son of king Edward the Third, was by his father created Duke of Clarence. He had no issue Male: but his daughter and heire Philip was married to Edmund Mortimer Earle of March, from whom the Familie of York did lineally descend.

H. 4.

Thomas Plantagenet, the second sonne of king Henry the Fourth, was by his father created Earle of Albemarle, and Duke of Clarence.

George Plantagenet, the third sonne of Richard Duke of Yorke, and brother to king Edward the Fourth, was by him created Duke of Clarence, and was murdered in the Tower.

Cornwall.

Conq.

Cauder a Briton was Earle of Cornwall at the time of the Conquest, and did homage to the Conquerour for the same.

Cauder his son was the second Earle of Cornwall.

Robert Earle of Mortaigne in Normandy was by the Conqueror created Earle of Cornwall.

William his sonne, being Earle of Mortaigne, was also Earle of Cornwall.

K. Steph.

Reynold the base son of king Henry the First, was by king Stephen created Earle of Cornwall.

H. 2.

John the second sonne of king Henry the Second, was by his father created Earle of Cornwall. He was afterwards king John.

H. 3.

Richard, the second sonne of king John, was by his brother king Henry the Third created Earle of Cornwall. Hee was also king of the Romans.

Henry Plantagenet his sonne succeeded, and was Earle of Cornwall, and died without issue.

E. 1.

Edward Plantagenet, the eldest sonne of king Edward the First, was by his father created Prince of Wales, Earle Palatine of Chester, and Duke of Cornwall, and he was afterwards king Edward the Second.

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Pierce Ganeſſon, a *Gascoigne* borne, was by king *Edward* the Second created Lord of *Wallingfold*, and Earle of *Cornwall* and *Gloceſter*. He was beheaded by the Barons, becauſe hee miſſe-lead the king. He died without iſſue. E. 2.

John Plantagenet, ſecond ſonne to king *Edward* the Second, was by his father created Earle of *Cornwall*. He died without iſſue. E. 2.

Edward Plantagenet, the eldeſt ſon of king *Edward* the Second, was by his father created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle of *Cheſter*, which hee enioyed vntill he was king *Edward* the Third. E. 2.

Edward Plantagenet, ſurnamed *The Blacke Prince*, was by his father king *Edward* the Third in Parliament created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*. E. 3.

Richard Plantagenet, ſonne to the blacke Prince, was by his Grandfather king *Edward* the Third created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, which he enioyed vntill he was king *Richard* the Second. E. 3.

Henry Plantagenet, the eldeſt ſon of king *Henry* the Fourth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, vntill he was king *Henry* the Fifth.

Edward, the ſonne of king *Henry* the Sixth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, & was murdered.

Edward, the ſon and heire apparant of king *Richard* the Third, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, & Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, and died without iſſue.

Arthur Tuthar, the eldeſt ſonne of king *Henry* the Seuenth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, and dyed without iſſue.

Henry Tuthar, his brother, enioyed the Principality of *Wales*, the Duchie of *Cornwall*, and the Earledome of the Palatinate of *Cheſter*, vntill he was king *Henry* the Eighth.

Edward Tuthar, the ſonne of king *Henry* the Eighth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, vntill hee was king *Edward* the Sixth.

Henry Stewart, the eldeſt ſon of king *James* the Firſt, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, vntill he died without iſſue.

Charles Stewart, his brother, was Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, Duke of *Roffey*, *Torke*, and *Cornwall*, and Prince of *Wales*.

Cumberland.

The successions of the Dukes

Cumberland.

Conq.

Ralph Meschynes, a Norman, was by the Conquerour created Earle of Cumberland and Carlisle.

H.8.

Henry, Lord Clifford, Bromsflet, and Vessy, was by king Henry the Eighth created Earle of Cumberland.

George, Lord Clifford, Bromsflet, and Vessy, being his sonne, was Earle of Cumberland, and dyed without issue Male.

Francis, Lord Clifford, his brother, is Earle of Cumberland.

8

Darbie.

Conq.

William Peverell, base sonne to the Conquerour, was by him created Earle of Darbie and of Nottingham.

William Peverell, his son, succeeded in those Earldomes.

K, Steph.

Robert de Ferrers, Lord of Tedbury, and Earle of Ferrers and of Nottingham, was also Earle of Darbie.

William de Ferrers succeeded his father in those honours.

William de Ferrers, his sonne, was Lord of Tedbury, Charsley, and Groby, and Earle of Ferrers, Nottingham, and of Darbie.

Robert de Ferrers, his sonne, possessed his fathers dignities. Hee was disinherited, because he sided with the Barons against king Henry the Third.

H.3.

Edmund Plantagenet, surnamed Crouch-backe, being Earle of Lancaster, second sonne to king Henry the Third, and brother to king Edward the First, was by his said father created Earle of Leicester and of Darbie.

Thomas Plantagenet, his sonne, being Earle of Lancaster, Leicester, Lincolne, and Salisbury, was by descent Earle of Darbie, and died without issue.

Henry Plantagenet, his brother, was dignified with all those honours.

E.3.

Henry Plantagenet, his sonne, enioying those Earldomes, together with the Earldomes of Albemarle and Holdernes, was by king Edward the Third created Duke of Lancaster. And his daughter and heire, named Blanch, was married to John of Gaunt, the fourth sonne of the same king.

John Plantagenet, surnamed John of Gaunt, being Duke of Lancaster,

ser,

and Earle of this Kingdome.

ster, Earle of Leicester, Lincoln, and Salisbury, was also Earle of Darby.

Henrie Plantagenet, surnamed Ballingbroke, being his son, was Duke of Lancaster and Hereford, and Earle of Leicester, Lincoln, and of Salisbury; he was likewise Earle of Darby, and was King by the name of King Henrie the Fourth.

Thomas Stanley, Lord Stanley, (whose Father Thomas was by King Henry the Sixth, made Lord Stanley) was by King Henrie the Seventh, created Earle of Darby.

H.7.

Thomas Stanley, his Grand-child, viz. the sonne of his sonne, Henrie who married Jane, the daughter and heire of John, Lord Strange, and Knoking; being Lord Stanley, and Strange, was also Earle of Darby.

Edward, Lord Stanley, Strange, and Knoking, being his son, succeeded, and was Earle of Darby.

Henrie, Lord Stanley, Strange, and Knoking, being his sonne, was Earle of Darby.

Ferdinando, Lord Stanley, Strange, and Knoking, being his sonne, was Earle of Darby, and dyed without issue Male.

William, Lord Stanley, Strange, and Knoking, his brother, is now Earle of Darby.

Devonshire.

R*ichard de Bruer, surnamed Richard of the Heath, being a Norman, was by the Conqueror created Earle of Devonshire, he dyed without issue.*

Conq.

Adela de Bruer, his sister and heire, was by the Conqueror created Viscountesse of Devonshire.

Conq.

Baldwine de Rivers, being Earle of Exeter, was by King Henrie the second created Earle of Devonshire.

H.2.

Richard Rivers, his sonne, succeeded in those honors.

Baldwine Rivers, his sonne, was Earle after him, and dyed without issue.

Richard Rivers, his brother, was Earle, and dyed without issue.

William Rivers, surnamed de Valentia, was their Nephew, and heire, was after them Earle of Devonshire.

Baldwine Rivers, his sonne, was Earle of Devon.

John Rivers, his sonne, being Earle, dyed without issue.

Isabel Rivers, surnamed de Fortibus, being the General heire of

The successions of the Dukes

the Earles of *Denonsbire*, did enioy the said Earledome. Shee married one who was named *William de Fortibus*, Earle of *Albemarle* and Lord of *Holdernes*; by whom shee had a plentifull issue. But King *Edward* the Third would not permit them to enioy the said Earledome of *Denonsbire*.

E.3.

Hugh Courtney Knight, who was descended from the before named Earles of *Denonsbire*, was by King *Edward* the Third created Earle of *Denonsbire*.

Hugh Courtney, his sonne was Earle after him.

Edward Courtney, surnamed the *Blinde*, (who was the sonne of *Edward*, the sonne of the last *Hugh Courtney*) was Earle of *Denonsbire*.

Hugh Courtney, his sonne, was Earle of *Denonsbire*.

Thomas Courtney, his sonne, being Lord of *Okehampe*, in *Denon*, was also Earle of *Denonsbire*. Hee tooke part in the warres with King *Henric* the sixth, and being taken prisoner at the battaile of *Towton* in *Torkeshire*, he lost his head.

E.4.

Humphrey Stafford Esquier, was by King *Edward* the Fourth, first made Lord *Stafford* of *Southwicks*, and after Earle of *Denonsbire*. and because he cowardly left the field at *Banbury* in the ciuill warres, at *Bridgewater* he was beheaded by the Commandement of the said king.

H.7.

Edward Courtney, Lord of *Hackham*, being cosen and heire to the said *Thomas Courtney*, was by king *Henric* the seueneth created Earle of *Denonsbire*.

William Courtney, his sonne, married the Lady *Katherine* (one of the daughters of king *Edward* the Fourth) and was Earle of *Denonsbire*.

H.8.

Henric Courtney, his sonne, was Earle of *Denonsbire*, and by his Cosen German king *Henr* the Eight, he was created Marquess of *Exeter*, but lost his head,

Q.Ma.

Edward Courtney, his sonne, was by *Queene Mary* restored to the Earledome of *Denonsbire*, but dyed at *Padua* without issue.

K.1.

Charles Blunt, Lord *Mounstrey*, was by King *James* the First created Earle of *Denon*; he dyed with out issue.

Dorset.

Conq.

Oswald a Norman, being by the Conquerour created Earle of *Dorset*, dyed without issue.

Thomas

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Thomas Beauford, the sonne of *John of Gaunt*, by *Katherine Swinsford*, his third wife, was by king *Richard* the Second created Earle of *Somerset*, and *Marquess Dorset*, which latter dignitie was taken from him in Parliament, in An. 1. H. 4.

John of Gaunt
called all his
Children by
that wife, by
the name of
Beaufords.

John Beauford, his brother, was Earle of *Somerset* onely, and was afterward by king *Henrie* the Fourth created *Marques Dorset*, and by king *Henrie* the Sixt hee was created Duke of *Somerset*. His daughter and heire named *Margaret*, was married to *Edmund Tucher*, Earle of *Richmond*, and they two had issue king *Henrie* the seuenth.

H. 4.

Edmund Beauford, his brother, was Earle of *Somerset*, and by king *Henrie* the Fifth hee was created Earle of *Mortaigne* in *Normandie*, and by King *Henrie* the Sixt, *Marquess Dorset*, and Duke of *Somerset*.

H. 6.

Henry Beauford, his sonne was Earle of *Mortaigne*, *Marquess Dorset*, and Duke of *Somerset*, and dyed without issue.

Thomas Grey, the sonne of Sir *John Grey* Knight, and of the Lady *Elizabeth* his wife, and widow, who was afterwards married to King *Edward* the Fourth, was by the same king created *Marquess Dorset*; he was also Lord of *Graby*, *Astley*, *Bondville*, and *Harrington*.

E. 4.

Thomas Grey, succeeded his father in those honors.

Henrie Grey, his sonne, being Lord *Ferrers* of *Graby*, Lord *Harrington*, *Bondville*, and *Astley*, was after his fathers death *Marquess Dorset*, and by King *Edward* the Sixt, he was created Duke of *Susfolke*, and was executed in Queene *Maries* raigne.

Thomas Sackville, Lord *Buckbursh*, & Lord *Treasuror* of *England*, was by King *James* created Earle of *Dorset*.

K. 1. a.

Robert Sackville, his sonne, was Lord *Buckbursh*, and Earle of *Dorset*.

Richard Sackville, his sonne, is Lord *Buckbursh*, and Earle of *Dorset*.

Essex.

Geoffrey de Magna Villa, otherwife *Mandevile*, was by king *Stephen* created Earle of *Essex*.

K. Steph.

Geoffrey, his sonne, was Earle of *Essex*, and dyed without issue.

William, his brother, was Earle of *Essex*, and dyed without issue.

Geoffrey Fitz. Piers, otherwife *Ludgarshull*, married *Beatrice* the heire of the said *William Mandevile*, and was by King *John* created

K. Job.

The successions of the Dukes

Earle of *Essex*, he had by him two sonnes, *Geoffrey* and *William*, whom (at his wiues request) he named *Mandeviles*, according to the name of their Grand-father.

Geoffrey Mandevile, their sonne, was Earle, and dyed without issue.

William Mandevile, his brother, was Earle, and died without issue.

H.3. *Hamsfey Bohun*, was by King *Henrie* the Third, created Earle of *Essex*, and of *Hereford*.

Hamsfey Bohun, his sonne, succeeded in those honors.

Hamsfey Bohun, his sonne, was Earle after him.

Hamsfey Bohun, his sonne, was Earle of *Essex* and of *Hereford*.

John Bohun, his sonne, was Earle and dyed without issue.

Hamsfey Bohun, the sonne of *William Bohun*, who was the sonne of the last *Hamsfey*, was Earle of *Essex*, *Hereford*, and *Northampton*, and died without issue Male. And *Eleanor*, his eldest sister, was married vnto *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, one of the sonnes of king *Edward* the Third.

E.3. *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, the first sonne of king *Edward* the Third, was by his father created Earle of *Essex*, *Buckingham*, *Hereford*, *Northampton*, and by his Nephew king *Richard* the Second created Duke of *Glocester*, and mured in prison at *Calice*, he had warned the king friendly of his faults.

Hamsfey Plantagenet, his sonne, succeeded in those Earldoms and dyed without issue Male.

E.4. *Henrie de Burgo Care*, otherwise *Bourchier*, being Earle of *Normandie*, who was the sonne of *William Bourchier*, who by King *Henrie* the Fifth, was at *Mans* in *Normandie*, created Earle of *Essex*, was by king *Edward* the Fourth, created Viscount *Bourchier*, and Earle of *Essex*, his sonne *William* had issue *Henrie*, and dyed whilest his father liued.

Henry Bourchier, was Viscount, and Earle, and died without issue.

H.8. *Thomas Cromwel*, was by king *Henry* the eighth, made Lord *Cromwel*, and was by him created Earle of *Essex*, but lost his head.

H.8. *William Parre*, was by king *Henry* the eighth, made Lord *Parre* of *Kendall*, and Earle of *Essex*, and by king *Edward* the Sixt, he was made Marquesse of *Northampton*, and dyed without issue.

Q.Eliz. *Walter Deneuex*, Lord *Ferrers* of *Chartly*, and Viscount *Hereford*, was by Queene *Elizabeth*, created Earle of *Essex*.

Robert Deneuex, his son, was Lord *Ferrers* of *Chartly*, Viscount *Hereford*, and Earle of *Essex*.

K.1. *Robert Deneuex*, his son, was restored to all his fathers honors, by king *James* the First, and now liueth.

Enter.

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Exeter.

Iohn Holland, halfe brother to king *Richard* the Second, was by him created Earle of *Huntington*, and Duke of *Exeter*. He was executed because he conspired against king *Henry* the Fourth.

R.2.

Thomas Beauford, one of the sonnes of *John of Gaunt*, by his third wife, *Katherine Swinsford*, was by his brother K. *Henry* the Fourth created Earle of *Dorset*, & Duke of *Exeter*. He died without issue.

H.4.

John Holland, the sonne of the forenamed *John*, was by King *Henrie* the Fifth restored to his Earledome of *Huntington*, and by King *Henrie* the Sixt to his Dutchie of *Exeter*.

H.6.

Henry Holland, his sonne, was attainted when King *Edward* the Fourth reigned, and was drowned on *Calice Sands*.

Henry Courtney, Earle of *Devonshire*, was by King *Henry* the Eighth created Marquesse of *Exeter*, and lost his head.

H.8.

Thomas Cecil, Lord *Burleigh*, was by King *James* the First created Earle of *Exeter*, and yet liueth.

K. James.

Glocester.

Villiam Fitz-*Enslace*, being by the Conquerour created Earle of *Glocester*, dyed without issue.

Conq.

Robert Fitz-Hamon, Lord of *Astrenile* in *Normandie*, was by the Conquerour created Earle of *Glocester*.

Conq.

William Fitz-Hamon, his sonne was Earle of *Glocester*.

Robert de Millent, base sonne to King *Henry* the First, was by him created Earle of *Glocester*. He died without issue.

H.1.

John Plantagenet, the sonne of king *Henry* the Second, was by his father created Duke of *Glocester*. But hee was afterwards King of *England*.

H.1.

Geoffrey Mandenile, the last of that name, Earle of *Essex*, was by King *John* created Earle of *Glocester*, and died without issue.

K. John.

Almerichu, Earle of *Eureux*, was by king *John* created Earle of *Glocester*, and died without issue.

K. John.

Gilbert de Clare, being Earle of *Hartford*, was created Earle of *Glocester* by king *Henry* the Third.

H.3.

Richard, his sonne, was Earle of *Clare*, and *Glocester*, and *Hartford*.

Gilbert de Clare, his sonne, had those three Earledomes.

Gilbert de Clare, his sonne, was Earle of *Hartford*, *Clare*, and *Glocester*, and died without issue male.

The successions of the Dukes

E.1.

Ralph Mounthermer, who married *Ione of Acres*, one of the daughters of king *Edward the First*, and who was widow to the last *Gilbert de Clare*, was by the same king created Earle of *Hartford* and *Glocester*, and dyed without issue.

E.2.

Pierce Ganefton, a *Gascoigne* borne, was by King *Edward the Second* created Lord of *Wallingford*, Earle of *Cornwall* and *Glocester*, and died without issue being executed by the Barons.

Hugh Spencer, the younger, was by King *Edward the Second* created Earle of *Glocester*, and was executed at *London*.

E.3.

Hugh Audley, Lord *Audley of Helie Castle*, was by King *Edward the Third* created Earle of *Glocester*, and dyed without issue.

R.2.

Thomas Plantagenet, surnamed *Thomas of Woodstocke*, the sixth sonne of King *Edward the Third*, was by his father created Earle of *Essex*, *Buckingham*, and *Northampton*, and by King *Richard the Second*, his nephew, he was created Duke of *Glocester*; murdered at *Calice* in prison for reproving the King his faults.

R.2.

Thomas Lord Spencer, the grand-childe of the afore-
Spencer, was by King *Richard the Second* created Earle of *Gloucester*, and died without issue Male.

H.4.

Humfrey Plantagenet, the fourth sonne of king *Henry the Fourth*, being Earle of *Pembroke*, was by his father created Duke of *Glocester*, and died without issue.

E.4.

Richard Plantagenet, the sonne of *Richard Plantagenet* Duke of *York*, and brother to King *Edward the Fourth*, was by King *Edward the Fourth* created Duke of *Glocester*. Hee was also King *Richard the Third*, and dyed without issue.

Hartford.

H.1.

Roger de Clare, Earle of *Clarence*, was by King *Henry the Second* created Earle of *Hartford*.

Richard de Clare, his sonne, enioied both those Earledomes.

Gilbert de Clare, his sonne, was Earle of *Clare*, *Hartford*, and of *Glocester*.

Richard de Clare, his sonne, enioied those three Earledomes.

Gilbert de Clare, his sonne, succeeded in those honours.

Gilbert de Clare, his sonne, succeeded, and died without issue Male.

Ralph de Mounthermer, who married *Ione of Acres*, one of the daughters

and Earles of this Kingdome.

daughters of king *Edward* the First, was by him created Earle of *Glocester*, and of *Hartford*, he dyed without issue.

E. 1.

Edward Saint-Maure, alias *Seymour*, was by king *Henry* the Eight made Viscount *Beauchamp*, and Earle of *Hartford*; hee was Vncle and Protector to king *Edward* the Sixt, by whom hee was created Duke of *Somerset*, and lost his head.

H. 8.

Edward Saint-Maure, alias *Seymour*, his sonne, was by *Queene Elizabeth* created Viscount *Beauchamp*, and Earle of *Hartford*, and he now liueth.

Q. Eliz.

Hereford.

William Fitz-Osborne, who first perswaded the Conqueror to vndertake that weightie businesse, was by him created Earle of *Hereford*, and Lord of the Isle of *Wight*; because he made the first Conquest thereof.

Conq.

Roger Fitz-Osborne, his sonne, who succeeded, was attainted of Treason, and dyed a prisoner without issue.

Miles Fitz-Water, was by King *Henry* the First, created Earle of *Hereford*.

H. 1.

Roger Fitz-Water, his sonne, succeeded, and dyed without issue.

Walter Fitz-Water, his brother, was Earle and dyed without issue.

Henric Fitz-Water, his brother, succeeded, and dyed without issue.

Humfrey Bohun, was by king *Henric* the Third, created Earle of *Hereford*, and of *Essex*.

H. 3.

Humfrey Bohun, succeeded his father in those Earledomes.

Humfrey Bohun, his sonne, was Earle after him.

Humfrey Bohun, his sonne, was his successour in those Dignities.

Iohn Bohun, his sonne, was Earle and dyed without issue.

Humfrey Bohun, his Nephew, viz. the sonne of *William*, brother to the said *Iohn*, was Earle of *Hereford*, *Essex*, and *Northampton*, and dyed without issue Male.

Thomas of Woodstocke, the sixt sonne of king *Edward* the Third, married *Eleanor*, the eldest sister of the said *Humfrey*, and was by his Father created Earle of *Hereford*, *Essex*, *Buckingham*, and *Northampton*: he was afterwards by his Nephew, king *Richard* the Second created Duke of *Glocester*, and was murdered in prison at *Calice*, because he informed the king friendly of his fautes.

E. 3.

Humfrey

The successions of the Dukes

Earle of *Essex*, she had by him two sonnes, *Geoffrey* and *William*, whom (at his wiues request) he named *Mandeviles*, according to the name of their Grand-father.

Geoffrey Mandevile, their sonne, was Earle, and dyed without issue.

William Mandevile, his brother, was Earle, and died without issue.

H.3.

Humphrey Bohun, was by King *Henrie* the Third, created Earle of *Essex*, and of *Hereford*.

Humphrey Bohun, his sonne, succeeded in those honors.

Humphrey Bohun, his sonne, was Earle after him.

Humphrey Bohun, his sonne, was Earle of *Essex* and of *Hereford*.

John Bohun, his sonne, was Earle and dyed without issue.

Humphrey Bohun, the sonne of *William Bohun*, who was the sonne of the last *Humphrey*, was Earle of *Essex*, *Hereford*, and *Northampton*, and died without issue Male. And *Eleanor*, his eldest sister, was married vnto *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, one of the sonnes of king *Edward* the Third.

E.3.

Thomas of *Woodstock*, the first sonne of king *Edward* the Third, was by his father created Earle of *Essex*, *Buckingham*, *Hereford*, and *Northampton*, and by his Nephew king *Richard* the Second, he was created Duke of *Glocester*, and murdered in prison at *Calice*, because he had warned the king friendly of his faults.

Humphrey Plantagenet, his sonne, succeeded in those Earledomes, and dyed without issue Male.

E.4.

Henrie de Burgo Care, otherwise *Bourchier*, being Earle of *Ewe* in *Normandie*, who was the sonne of *William Bourchier*, who by king *Henrie* the Fifth, was at *Maint* in *Normandie*, created Earle of *Ewe*, was by king *Edward* the Fourth, created Viscount *Bourchier*, and Earle of *Essex*, his sonne *William* had issue *Henrie*, and dyed whilest his father liued.

Henry Bourchier, was Viscount, and Earle, and died without issue.

H.8.

Thomas Cromwel, was by king *Henry* the eighth, made Lord *Cromwel*, and was by him created Earle of *Essex*, but lost his head.

H.8.

William Parre, was by king *Henry* the eighth, made Lord *Parre* of *Kendall*, and Earle of *Essex*, and by king *Edward* the Sixt, he was made Marquess of *Northampton*, and dyed without issue.

Q. Eliz.

Walter Deuereux, Lord *Ferrers* of *Chartly*, and Viscount *Hereford*, was by Queene *Elizabeth*, created Earle of *Essex*.

Robert Deuereux, his son, was Lord *Ferrers* of *Chartly*, Viscount *Hereford*, and Earle of *Essex*.

K.1a.

Robert Deuereux, his son, was restored to all his fathers honors, by king *James* the First, and now liueth.

Buster.

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Exeter.

Iohn Holland, halfe brother to king *Richard* the Second, was by him created Earle of *Huntington*, and Duke of *Exeter*. He was executed because he conspired against king *Henry* the Fourth.

R.2.

Thomas Beauford, one of the sonnes of *John of Gaunt*, by his third wife, *Katherine Swinsford*, was by his brother K. *Henry* the Fourth created Earle of *Dorset*, & Duke of *Exeter*. He died without issue.

H.4.

John Holland, the sonne of the forenamed *John*, was by King *Henrie* the Fifth restored to his Earledome of *Huntington*, and by King *Henrie* the Sixt to his Durtchie of *Exeter*.

H.6.

Henry Holland, his sonne, was attained when King *Edward* the Fourth reigned, and was drowned on *Calice Sands*.

Henry Courteney, Earle of *Devonshire*, was by King *Henry* the Eighth created Marquess of *Exeter*, and lost his head.

H.8.

Thomas Cecil, Lord *Burleigh*, was by King *James* the First created Earle of *Exeter*, and yet lineth.

K. James.

Glocester.

Villiam Fitz-Eustace, being by the Conquerour created Earle of *Glocester*, dyed without issue.

Conq.

Robert Fitz-Hamon, Lord of *Astrenile* in *Normandie*, was by the Conquerour created Earle of *Glocester*.

Conq.

William Fitz-Hamon, his sonne was Earle of *Glocester*.

Robert de Millens, base sonne to King *Henry* the First, was by him created Earle of *Glocester*. He died without issue.

H.1.

John Plantagenet, the sonne of king *Henry* the Second, was by his father created Duke of *Glocester*. But hee was afterwards King of *England*.

H.2.

Geoffrey Mandevile, the last of that name, Earle of *Essex*, was by King *John* created Earle of *Glocester*, and died without issue.

K. John.

Almericus, Earle of *Eureux*, was by king *John* created Earle of *Glocester*, and died without issue.

K. John.

Gilbert de Clare, being Earle of *Hartford*, was created Earle of *Glocester* by king *Henry* the Third.

H.3.

Richard, his sonne, was Earle of *Clare*, and *Glocester*, and *Hartford*. *Gilbert de Clare*, his sonne, had those three Earldomes.

Gilbert de Clare, his sonne, was Earle of *Hartford*, *Clare*, and *Glocester*, and died without issue male.

The successions of the Dukes

E.1.

Ralph Mounthermer, who married *Ione* of *Acres*, one of the daughters of king *Edward* the First, and who was widow to the last *Gilbert de Clare*, was by the same king created Earle of *Hartford* and *Glocester*, and dyed without issue.

E.2.

Pierce Gausston, a *Gascoigne* borne, was by King *Edward* the Second created Lord of *Wallingford*, Earle of *Cornwall* and *Glocester*, and died without issue being executed by the Barons.

Hugh Spencer, the younger, was by King *Edward* the Second created Earle of *Glocester*, and was executed at *London*.

E.3.

Hugh Audley, Lord *Audley* of *Helie Castle*, was by King *Edward* the Third created Earle of *Glocester*, and dyed without issue.

R.2.

Thomas Plantagenet, surnamed *Thomas of Woodstocke*, the sixth sonne of King *Edward* the Third, was by his father created Earle of *Essex*, *Buckingham*, and *Northampton*, and by King *Richard* the Second, his nephew, he was created Duke of *Glocester*: but was murdered at *Calice* in prison for reproving the King friendly of his faults.

R.2.

Thomas Lord *Spencer*, the grand-childe of the aforementioned *Hugh Spencer*, was by King *Richard* the Second created Earle of *Glocester*, and died without issue Male.

H.4.

Humfrey Plantagenet, the fourth sonne of king *Henry* the Fourth, being Earle of *Pembroke*, was by his father created Duke of *Glocester*, and died without issue.

E.4.

Richard Plantagenet, the sonne of *Richard Plantagenet* Duke of *Torke*, and brother to King *Edward* the Fourth, was by the same King created Duke of *Glocester*. Hee was also King *Richard* the Third, and dyed without issue.

Hartford.

H.1.

Roger de *Clare*, Earle of *Clarence*, was by King *Henry* the Second created Earle of *Hartford*.

Richard de Clare, his sonne, enioied both those Earledomes.

Gilbert de Clare, his sonne, was Earle of *Clare*, *Hartford*, and of *Glocester*.

Richard de Clare, his sonne, enioied those three Earledomes.

Gilbert de Clare, his sonne, succeeded in those honours.

Gilbert de Clare, his sonne, succeeded, and died without issue Male.

Ralph de Mounthermer, who married *Ione* of *Acres*, one of the daughters

and Earles of this Kingdome.

daughters of king *Edward* the First, was by him created Earle of *Glocester*, and of *Hartford*, he dyed without issue.

E.1.

Edward Saint-Maure, alias *Seymour*, was by king *Henry* the Eight made Viscount *Beauchamp*, and Earle of *Hartford*; hee was Vncle and Protector to king *Edward* the Sixt, by whom hee was created Duke of *Somerset*, and lost his head.

H.8.

Edward Saint-Maure, alias *Seymour*, his sonne, was by *Queene Elizabeth* created Viscount *Beauchamp*, and Earle of *Hartford*, and he now liueth.

Q. Eliz.

Hereford.

William *Fitz-Osborne*, who first perswaded the Conqueror to vndertake that weightie businesse, was by him created Earle of *Hereford*, and Lord of the Isle of *Waight*; because he made the first Conquest thereof.

Conq.

Roger Fitz-Osborne, his sonne, who succeeded, was attainted of Treason, and dyed a prisoner without issue.

Miles Fitz-Water, was by King *Henry* the First, created Earle of *Hereford*.

H.1.

Roger Fitz-Water, his sonne, succeeded, and dyed without issue.

Walter Fitz-Water, his brother, was Earle and dyed without issue.

Henrie Fitz-Water, his brother, succeeded, and dyed without issue.

Humfrey Bohun, was by king *Henrie* the Third, created Earle of *Hereford*, and of *Essex*.

H.3.

Humfrey Bohun, succeeded his father in those Earledomes.

Humfrey Bohun, his sonne, was Earle after him.

Humfrey Bohun, his sonne, was his successour in those Dignities.

Iohn Bohun, his sonne, was Earle and dyed without issue.

Humfrey Bohun, his Nephew, viz, the sonne of *William*, brother to the said *Iohn*, was Earle of *Hereford*, *Essex*, and *Northampton*, and dyed without issue Male.

Thomas of Woodstocke, the sixt sonne of king *Edward* the Third, married *Eleanor*, the eldest sister of the said *Humfrey*, and was by his Father created Earle of *Hereford*, *Essex*, *Buckingham*, and *Northampton*: he was afterwards by his Nephew, king *Richard* the Second created Duke of *Glocester*, and was murdered in prison at *Calice*, because he informed the king friendly of his fautes.

E.3.

Humfrey

The successions of the Dukes

Humphrey Plantagenet, his sonne, was Earle, and dyed without issue Male.

R. 2.

Henry Plantagenet, surnamed *Bullingbroke*, the sonne and heire apparant of *John of Gaunt*, Duke of *Lincolne*, being Earle of *Darby*, was by his Cousin, king *Richard the Second*, created Duke of *Hereford* and was afterwards king *Henry the Fourth*.

Humphrey Stafford, was Earle of *Stafford*, *Northampton*, and *Hereford*, and was by king *Henry the Sixth*, created Duke of *Buckingham*, but he lost his head.

Huntington.

Conq.

Waldolf a Saxon, married *Indis*, the Conquerors Neece, and was by him created Earle of *Huntington*, hee dyed without issue Male.

Rufm.

Simon de S. Lize, otherwise *Saint-Leger*, married *Maud*, one of the daughters of *Waldolf*, and was by *William Rufus*, created Earle of *Huntington*, and *Northampton*: and (having issue *Simon*) he dyed.

Steph.

David, Prince of *Scotland*, and son to *Malcolme the Third*, being Earle of *Northumberland*, and *Cumberland*, was by King *Stephen* made Earle of *Huntington*: for *Simon* was but a child, and unjustly kept from his Inheritance.

Henric, Prince of *Wales* (as soone as *David* his father was king of *Scotland*) enjoyed the Earldomes of *Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, and *Huntington*.

After the death of King *Stephen*, the said *Simon* (being sonne to the said *Simon*) entred into his Earldomes of *Huntington*, and *Northampton*, and enjoyed the same in peace, during his life.

H. 2.

Malcolme, Prince of *Scotland*, and sonne to the before named *Henric* (because the rightful Earle of *Huntington* was in his minority) was by King *Henry the Second*, made Earle of *Huntington*, as he was Earle of *Northumberland*, and of *Cumberland*.

William, his brother, being Prince of *Scotland*, and Earle of *Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, and of *Huntington*, made wars vpon King *Henry the Second*, after he was king of the Scots, and was taken prisoner in the field, ransomed, and lost those honors.

Simon de S. Lize, otherwise *Saint-Leger*, the third of that name, was by king *Henry the Second*, restored to his Earldome of *Huntington*, and was also Earle of *Northampton*, and died without issue.

David

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Dauid, the brother of the aforementioned *William*, was by the fauour of king *Richard* the Second restored to the Earledome of *Huntington*.

R.1.

John, his sonne, succeeded, and was Earle of *Huntington*, and died without issue male. He was surnamed *Scot*.

William Clinton was by king *Edward* the Third created Earle of *Huntington*, and died without issue.

E.3.

Guisehard, a *Gascoigne* borne in *Anglesme*, was by king *Richard* the second created Earle of *Huntington*, and dyed without issue.

R.2.

John Holland, halfe-brother to King *Richard* the Second, was by him created Earle of *Huntington*, and Duke of *Exeter*, and lost his head for conspiring against King *Henrie* the Fourth.

R.2.

John Holland, his sonne, was restored to his Earledome by King *Henrie* the Fifth, and by King *Henrie* the Sixth to his Duchie of *Exeter*.

H.5.

Henry Holland, his sonne, was attainted when king *Edward* the Fourth reigned, and was drowned on the coast of *Calice*.

Thomas Grey, sonne in Law to King *Edward* the Fourth, was by him created Marquesse *Dorset*, and Earle of *Huntington*.

Thomas Grey, his sonne, succeeded in those honours.

William Herbert, the eldest sonne of *William Herbert*, whom king *Edward* the Fourth had made Earle of *Pembroke*, was by the same King made Earle of *Huntington*.

E.4.

George Hastings, Lord *Hastings*, *Botreaux*, and *Adelines*, was by king *Henrie* the Eighth created Earle of *Huntington*.

H.8.

Francis Hastings, his sonne, succeeded in those honours.

Henry Hastings, his son, being Lord *Hastings*, *Hungerford*, *Botreaux*, *Molines*, and *Moeles*, was also Earle of *Huntington*.

George Hastings, his brother, succeeded, and dyed without issue.

Henrie Hastings, the sonne of *Francis Hastings*, who was the son of the said *George*, now liueth, and doth enioy the said Lordships, and Earledome of *Huntington*.

Kendall.

Gascoigne de Poys, a *Gascoigne* borne, was at *Maunt* in *Normandie* created by king *Henry* the Fifth Earle of *Longuile* and *Kendall*. He reuolted, and became *French*.

H.5.

John de Poys, his sonne, married the Neece of *William de la Poole*, Duke

The successions of the Dukes

- H.6. Duke of *Suffolke*, by whose meditaion he was by King *Henrie* the Sixt restored. But he became *French*.
H.6. *Capdew de Beuffs* was by King *Henry* the Sixt created Earle of *Kendoll*. But he revolted to the *French* King.

Kent.

- W**ilhelmus (at the Conquest being brother to King *Harold*) was Earle of *Kent*. But (for feare) he fled into *Denmarke*, and died without issue.
Conq. *Odo*, Bishop of *Bayon*, and halfe-brother to the Conquerour was by him created Earle of *Kent*, and he dyed without issue.
K. Steph. *William de Ippe*, Earle of *Flanders*, was by King *Stephen* created Earle of *Kent*, and dyed without issue.
H.3. *Hubert de Burgh*, being Lord chiefe Iustice of *England*, was by King *Henrie* the Third created Earle of *Kent*, and died without issue male.
E.3. *Edmund Plantagenet*, surnamed *Edmund of Woodstocke*, being son to King *Edward* the first, and brother to King *Edward* the Second, was by his brother created Earle of *Kent*, but lost his head in the raigne of his nephew King *Edward* the Third.
R.2. *Thomas Holland*, halfe brother to king *Richard* the Second, was by him created Earle of *Kent*, and Duke of *Surrey*.
Thomas Holland, his sonne, was Earle of *Kent*, and Duke of *Surrey*, and died without issue.
E.4. *Edmund Holland*, brother to the said *Thomas*, was Earle of *Kent*, and Duke of *Surrey*, and died without issue.
E.4. *William Neuil*, Lord *Pawconbridge*, a younger brother to *Ralph Neuil*, the first of that Familie, Earle of *Westmorland*, was by king *Edward* the Fourth created Earle of *Kent*, and died without issue male.
E.4. *Edmund Grey*, Lord *Grey*, of *Ruthen*, was by king *Edward* the Fourth created Earle of *Kent*.
Q. Eliz. *Richard Grey*, his sonne, succeeded, and died without issue.
Reynold Grey, who was descended lineally from the said *Edmund*, was restored to the Earledome of *Kent* by Queen *Elizabeth* and dyed without issue.
Henry Grey, his brother, is now Earle of *Kent*.

Lancaster,

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Lancaster.

Iohn Plantagenet, brother to king Richard the First, was by him created Earle of Lancaster, Lecester, and Darbie. He was afterwards king of England.

R.1.

Edmund Plantagenet, surnamed Crouch-backe, the second son of king Henry the Third, was by his father created Earle of Lancaster, Lecester and Darbie. He married Blanch the Queene of Navarre, and had issue by her, Thomas and Henrie.

H.3.

Thomas Plantagenet, his sonne, was Earle of Lancaster, Lecester, Lancashire, Saluburie, and Dorset, and dyed without issue.

Henry Plantagenet, his brother, was dignified with all those honours.

Henry Plantagenet his sonne, enioying all those Earledomes, together with the Earledomes of Albemarle and Haldermes, was by king Edward the Third created Duke of Lancaster. His daughter and heire, named Blanch, married John of Gaunt, the fourth sonne of king Edward the Third.

E.3.

John Plantagenet, surnamed John of Gaunt, enioyed all those Earledomes, and was Duke of Lancaster.

Henry Plantagenet, his sonne, surnamed Bolingbroke, held all those Earledomes, and was Duke of Lancaster and Hereford, and was king Henry the Fourth, by deposing of king Richard the Second.

Lecester.

Leofrick was Earle of Lecester when Edward the Confessor liued.

Algarus his sonne, succeeded in that Earledome.

Edwin, his sonne, was Earle at the Conquest.

Robert de Beaumont was created Earle of Lecester by king Henrie the first.

H.1.

Robert de Beaumont, his sonne was Earle after him.

Robert, his sonne surnamed Blanch-Maynes, was his successor.

Robert, his sonne, was Earle, and died without issue.

Simon de Mountfort was by king Iohn created Earle of Lecester, and was slaine at the siege of Tholouze.

K.Iohn.

Simon de Mountfort was Earle of Lecester. He tooke king Henrie the Third prisoner in the Barons warres. But the young Prince Edward

The successions of the Dukes

Edward, set his Father at libertie, and gave this *Simon*, with many more, at the battaile of *Evesham*, and his possessions were confiscated to the King.

Edmund Plantagenet, surnamed *Crouchback*, second son to King *Henrie* the Third, was by his Father created Earle of *Leicester*, *Lancaster*, &c.

Thomas Plantagenet, his sonne, succeeded, and died without issue.

Henrie Plantagenet, his brother, possessed all those honors.

E. 3.

Henrie Plantagenet, his sonne, was Earle of *Leicester*, &c. and was by King *Edward* the Third, created Duke of *Lancaster*, his daughter and heire, named *Blanch*, was married to *John* of *Gaunt*.

John Plantagenet, surnamed *John* of *Gaunt*, the fourth sonne of King *Edward* the Third, married *Blanch*, and was Earle of *Leicester* &c. and Duke of *Lancaster*.

Henrie of *Bullingbrooke*, his sonne, was Earle of *Leicester* &c. and Duke of *Lancaster*, and of *Hereford*, & was afterwards King *Henry* the Fourth.

Robert Sutton, otherwise *Dudley*, a younger son to *John* Duke of *Northumberland*, was by Queene *Elizabeth*, created Earle of *Leicester*, and dyed without any lawfull issue.

Lincolne.

M*arcus*, being Earle of *Lincolne*, and *Northumberland*, at the time of the Conquest, rebelled, and dyed in prison without issue.

Rosm.

William de Ros, was by King *William* *Ros*, created Earle of *Lincolne*, and died without issue.

Steph.

Gilbert de Gaunt, was in the right of *Avia*, his wife, created Earle of *Lincolne*, and died without issue Male.

Lewis.

Gilbert de Gaunt in the troublesome times of King *John*, was created Earle of *Lincolne*, by the Dolphin *Lewis*, son to the French King.

H. 3.

Ralph de Meschines, surnamed *Blundevile*, being the sixth Earle of *Chester*, was by King *Henrie* the Third, created Earle of *Lincolne*, and of *Richmond*, because he took his part against the Barons: he dyed without issue.

John *Lacy*, Baron of *Hauton*, was by King *Henry* the Third, created Earle of *Lincolne*.

Henrie

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Henry Lacy, the sonne of *Edmund Lacy*, sonne to the said *John*, succeeded, and was Earle of *Lincolne*.

Thomas Plantagenet, the son of *Edmund Cromwell*, was Earle of *Leicester*, *Leicester*, *Darby*, and *Salisbury*: Hee married *Alice* the daughter and heire of *Henry Lacy*, and was (in her right) Earle of *Lincolne*, and dyed without issue.

John de la Poole, the sonne of *John de la Poole*, the second of that name, Duke of *Suffolke*, was created Earle of *Lincolne*, by king *Edward the Fourth*, and dyed without issue.

E. 4.

Henry Brandon, the son and heire apparant of *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolke*, was by his Vncle king *Henry the Eighth*, created Earle of *Lincolne*, he dyed a child without issue.

H. 8.

Edward Fines, Lord *Clinton*, was by *Queene Elizabeth*, created Earle of *Lincolne*.

Q. Elizabeth.

Henry Fines, Lord *Clinton*, the son of the said *Edward*, was Earle of *Lincolne* after his father, and yet liueth.

March.

*E*dmund a Saxon, at the time of the Conquest, was Earle of *March*; hee with *Marcarus* and *Swardus*, kept the Isle of *Waigh* against the Conqueror, and was banished.

Roger Mortimer, Lord *Mortimer* of *Wigmore*, was by king *Edward the Third* created Earle of *March*, and was executed for Treason.

E. 3.

Roger Mortimer, the sonne of *Edmund Mortimer*, who was the sonne of the said Earle *Roger*, was by the same king restored to the Baronie of *Wigmore*, and to the Earldome of *March*.

E. 3.

Edmund Mortimer, his sonne, married *Philip*, the daughter and heire of *Lionel*, Duke of *Clarence*, the third sonne of king *Edward the Third*, and was Earle of *March*, and from them two, did descend the heires of the Family of *York*.

Roger Mortimer their sonne, was Earle of *March*, and of *Visser* in *Ireland*, and by king *Richard the Second*, was proclaimed heire apparant to the Crowne of *England*, and was slaine long after in *Ireland*.

Edmund Mortimer, his sonne, was Earle of *March*, and after one and twenty yeares imprisonment in *Wales*, and elsewhere: he dyed without issue.

Richard Plantagenet, Earle of *Cambridge*, was the sonne of *Ed-*

The successions of the Dukes

Edward of Langley, Duke of Yorke (the first sonne of king *Edward* the Third) he married *Anne* the sister and heire of the said *Edward*, and daughter to the said last Earle *Roger*, and in her right, hee was Earle of *March*, and they two had issue, *Richard* Duke of *Yorke*, who was father to king *Edward* the Fourth.

Richard Plantagenet, sonne to *Richard* Earle of *Cambridge*, was Earle of *March*, and Duke of *Yorke*, and had issue *Edward* the Fourth.

Edward his sonne was first Earle of *March*, then by his Fathers death, he was Duke of *Yorke*, and by his victory at *Barnet* field hee attained the Kingdome of *England*, and was king *Edward* the Fourth.

Mountgomery.

K. James.

Sir Philip Herbert Knight, the second sonne of *Henry* late Earle of *Pembroke*, and younger brother to *William* Lord *Herbert* now Earle of *Pembroke*, was by *K. James* created Earle of *Mountgomery*.

Northfolke.

Ralph *Waer*, at the time of the Conquest, was Earle of *Northfolke* and *Suffolke*, and fled for treason.

Conq.

Ralph *Bygot*, President of the *East Angles*, was by the Conqueror created Earle of *Northfolke*, but hee was disinherited for conspiring against him.

H. 1.

Hugh *Bygot*, was by king *Henry* the First, created Earle of *Northfolke*.

Roger *Bygot*, his son, was Earle after him.

Hugh *Bygot*, his son, was Earle of *Northfolke*.

Roger *Bygot*, his son, succeeded in that Earledome.

Roger *Bygot* (his Nephew, viz. the sonne of his brother *Robert*) was Earle of *Northfolke*, and dyed without issue.

E. 2.

Thomas Plantagenet, surnamed *Brotherton*, who was a younger son to king *Edward* the First, and brother to king *Edward* the Second, was by his brother created Earle of *Northfolk*, he had one daughter and heire, who was named *Margaret*.

John

and Charles of this Kingdom

John Lord Segrave married the said Margaret, & they two had issue Margaret, which Margaret was by R. Richard the Second created Duchesse of Northfolke after her husbands death, and then she married John de Mowbray.

THOMAS DORSET, second son by King Henry the Second created Earl of Northfolke; MARRIAGE OF EDWARD, and Duke of Northfolke, hee dyed without issue. He complained of Henry VI being brought to King Richard the Second, and thought him ready for a combat with him, but died at Tewkesbury before the battle.

Thomas Lord *Mowbray*, his father, was better Duke of *Northfolk*, but was in his fathers life made only Earle of *Northfolk*, and was executed for treason with his son Archibishop *York*, by king *Henry* the Fourth, and his brother who succeeded their father, and was Marshall of *England*, Duke of *Northfolke*, and Duke of *Northfolke*.

John Lord Mansfield, his son, was Earl of Mansfield, Warren,
and Surrey, High Marshall of England, and Duke of Norfolk.

From Lord Mansfield, his Son, succeeded his father in all those honourable Dignities, he lived and died a Monk.

ANNE PLANTAGENET, Daughter of **John** and **Isabel** Countess of **Gloucester** and **King Edward the Fourth**, was married in his childhood to the said **John** and was in her right possession of all those honors. But he was murdered by his Uncle king **Richard the Third**, and died without issue. The said **John** also died without issue, whereby all the Lordships of the **Manor**, by course of inheritance was devolved to **John Lord of Arundel**, and to William Lord of **Hereford**.

John Lord Howard, who by his mothers side, was descended from the before named *Richard*, was by King *Richard* the Third created Duke of *Norfolk*, and lost his life in the last kings battle at *Bosworth* field.

THOMAS HOWARD, his sonne, who by King Edward the Third was made Earle of Surrey, was created Duke of Norfolk, by King Henry the Eighth.

Thomas Howard, his son, succeeded and was Duke of Northfolk. Thomas Howard (the fons of Henry), who was the son of the 1st Thomas Duke of Northfolk) was Duke of Northfolk, and Earle Marshall of England. He was also (in the right of his wife Mary the eldest daughter of Henry Fitz-Alan Earle of Arundell.

and Earles of this Kingdome.

the King, And was created Marquesse Mountacute.

Henry Percy, was by king *Edward the Fourth*, restored to the Earledome of *Northumberland*, and was slaine by the Common People there, because he leuied a Taxe for the King which much displeased them.

E.4.

Henry Percy, Lord *Percy*, *Crockermonth*, *Petworth*, *Poynings*, *Fitz-Payne*, and *Brian*, his sonne succeeded and was Earle of *Northumberland*.

Henry Percy, his sonne, enioyed all those honourable titles and possessions, and died without issue.

John Dudley, Earle of *Warwick*, and Viscount *Lisle*, Lord *Basset & Tyes*, was created Duke of *Northumberland* by king *Edward the Sixth*, and lost his head in the reigne of *Queene Mary*.

Thomas Percy, being the heire Male of the house of the Earles *Percies* was restored by *Queene Marie*, to the Earledome of *Northumberland*, and for default of issue Male of his body, it was entayled to his Brother *Henry Percy*, and to the heires Males of his body. And whilest *Queene Elizabeth* reigned, the said *Thomas* died without issue Male.

Q. Mary.

Henry Percy, his brother (according to the aforesaid entailment) was Earle of *Northumberland* and died.

Henry Percy, his sonne, is now Lord of *Petworth*, *Crockermonth*, *Poynings*, *Fitz-Paine*, and *Brian*, and Earle of *Northumberland*.

Nottingham.

William *Pencerel*, base sonne to the Conquerour, was by him created Earle of *Nottingham*, and of *Darby*.

Conq.

William Pencerel, his son, was Earle of *Nottingham* and *Darby*.

Robert, Earle of *Ferrers* in *Normandie*, and Lord of *Tedbery* in *Staffordshire*, was by king *Stephen* created Earle of *Nottingham*.

K. Steph.

William, his sonne, was Earle of *Nottingham*, and by king *John*, he was also created Earle of *Darby*.

John de Mowbray, was by king *Richard the Second*, created Earle of *Nottingham*, and died without issue.

R.2.

Thomas de Mowbray, his brother, was by K. *Richard the Second*, first created Earle of *Nottingham*, and then Duke of *Norfolk*: he was challenged by *Henry of Bullingbroke*, Duke of *Hereford*, to a single combate, for his false reports to the King, and was banished, and died in his exile.

R.2.

The successions of the Dukes

- | | |
|-------|---|
| H. 6. | <p><i>Thomas Mowbray</i>, his sonne, was Earle of <i>Nottingham</i>, and executed for treason with <i>Richard Scroop</i>, Archbishop of <i>Yorke</i>, in the Reigne of king <i>Henry</i> the Fourth.</p> <p><i>John Mowbray</i>, his brother, was by king <i>Henry</i> the Sixth, created Earle of <i>Nottingham</i>, and Duke of <i>Northfolke</i>.</p> <p><i>John Mowbray</i>, his sonne, was Earle of <i>Nottingham</i>, <i>Warren</i>, and <i>Surrey</i>, and Duke of <i>Northfolke</i>.</p> <p><i>John Mowbray</i>, his sonne, enioyed all those honours, and died without issue Male.</p> |
| R. 3. | <p><i>William</i>, Lord <i>Barkley</i>, being one of his generall heires, was by king <i>Edward</i> the Fourth, made Viscount <i>Barkley</i>, and by king <i>Richard</i> the Third, he was created Earle of <i>Nottingham</i>, and by king <i>Henry</i> the Seuenth, Marquess <i>Barkley</i>.</p> |
| H. 8. | <p><i>Henry Fitz-Roy</i>, the base sonne of king <i>Henry</i> the Eighth, and of <i>Elizabeth Blount</i>, was by the same king created Earle of <i>Nottingham</i>, and Duke of <i>Richmond</i>, and died without issue.</p> <p><i>Charles Lord Howard</i>, of <i>Effingham</i>, was by king <i>Iames</i>, created Earle of <i>Nottingham</i>.</p> |

Oxford.

- | | |
|--------|---|
| Mauld. | <p>Edgar <i>Asheling</i>, (the sonne of <i>Edward</i> the Out-law, who was the son of <i>Edmund Ironside</i>) was at the Conquest Earle of <i>Oxford</i>, and was by the Conqueror depriued of that honour.</p> <p><i>Ambrey de Vere</i>, was by <i>Mauld</i> the Empreffe created, and by her sonne king <i>Henry</i> the Second, confirmed Lord High Chamberlaine of <i>England</i> in fee, and Earle of <i>Oxford</i>.</p> <p><i>Ambrey de Vere</i>, his sonne, enioyed those honours, and died in the daies of king <i>John</i>, without issue.</p> <p><i>Robert de Vere</i>, his brother, was High Chamberlaine of <i>England</i>, and Earle of <i>Oxford</i>, and sided with the Barons in their warres, against king <i>John</i>, when they tooke part with the <i>Dolphin</i> of <i>France</i>, by reason of the Popes Curse.</p> <p><i>Hugh de Vere</i>, his sonne, was high Chamberlain of <i>England</i>, and Earle of <i>Oxford</i>, he was Viscount <i>Bolbeck</i>, and Lord <i>Samsford</i>.</p> <p><i>Robert de Vere</i>, his son, succeeded in those Honours.</p> <p><i>Robert de Vere</i>, his sonne, enioyed the same, and dyed without issue.</p> <p><i>John de Vere</i>, the sonne of <i>Alphonfus de Vere</i>, brother to the last <i>Robert</i>,</p> |
|--------|---|

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Robert, was Lord *Samsford*, Vicount *Bolbecke*, High Chamberlaine of *England*, and Earle of *Oxford*.

Thomas de Vere, his son, held all those honourable dignities.

Robert de Vere, his sonne, being Lord *Samsford*, Viscount *Bolbeck*, Earle of *Oxford*, and High Chamberlaine of *England*, was by king *Richard* the Second, created Marquess of *Dublin*, and Duke of *Ireland*: he died without issue.

Ambrey de Vere, his Vncle, was Lord *Samsford*, Viscount *Bolbeck*, and Earle of *Oxford*: But the inheritance of his high Chamberlainship of *England*, he voluntarily surrendred to king *Richard* the Second, who gaue it to his halfe brother, *John Holland*, Duke of *Exeter*.

Richard de Vere, his sonne, was Lord *Samsford*, Viscount *Bolbeck*, and Earle of *Oxford*.

John de Vere, his sonne, enioyed those Honors: He and his eldest sonne *Ambrey de Vere*, were attainted, and executed in the time of king *Edward* the Fourth.

John de Vere, his sonne, was by king *Henry* the Seuenth, restored to the honors of *Bolbeck*, *Samsford*, & *Scales*, was made high Chamberlaine of *England*, and Earle of *Oxford*. H.7.

John de Vere, his Nephew, by *George* his brother, succeeded him in all those Honors: and dyed without issue.

John de Vere, the sonne of *John de Vere*, who was the sonne of *Robert de Vere*, who was brother to *John de Vere*, the twelfth Earle of *Oxford*, of that name, who was Father to the before named *George* enioyed all those dignities.

John de Vere, being the heire Male of that Familie, was the sixth Earle of that Christian name: He was also Lord *Samsford*, and *Badilsmere*, Viscount *Bolbeck*, and high Chamberlaine of *England*.

Edward de Vere, his son, enioyed all those Honors.

Henry de Vere, his sonne, is Lord *Samsford*, and *Badilsmere*, Viscount *Bolbecke*, High Chamberlaine of *England*, and Earle of *Oxford*.

Pembroke.

Walser Gifford, was by the Conquerour, created Earle of *Pembroke* and *Buckingham*.

Walser Gifford, his son, succeeded and died without issue.

Gilbert

Conq.

The successions of the Dukes

- | | |
|----------|--|
| K. John. | <p><i>Gilbert de Clare</i> was by king <i>Stephen</i> created Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>.
 <i>Richard de Clare</i>, surnamed <i>Strangbow</i>, being his son, was Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>, and dyed without issue Male.</p> <p><i>William Marshall</i>, Earle <i>Marshall</i> of <i>England</i>, was by king <i>John</i> created Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>.
 <i>William Marshall</i>, his sonne, enioyed all those honours, and died without issue.</p> <p><i>Richard Marshall</i>, his brother, succeeded him, and was slaine, and dyed in <i>Ireland</i> without issue.</p> <p><i>Gilbert Marshall</i>, his brother, was Earle <i>Marshall</i>, and of <i>Pembroke</i>, and died without issue.</p> <p><i>Walter Marshall</i>, his brother, was Earle <i>Marshall</i>, and of <i>Pembroke</i>, and dyed without issue.</p> |
| H. 3. | <p><i>William de Valentia</i>, the son of king <i>John</i>'s wife <i>Isabel</i>, and of her second husband <i>Hugh de Brun</i>, was by his halfe-brother king <i>Henrie the Third</i> created Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>.</p> <p><i>Amyer de Valentia</i>, his sonne, was Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>, and was by king <i>Edward the First</i> made Vice-roy of <i>Scotland</i>, and dyed without issue.</p> <p><i>Laurence</i>, Lord <i>Hastings</i>, was by king <i>Edward the Third</i> created Lord of <i>Aberganenny</i> and Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>.</p> <p><i>John</i>, Lord <i>Hastings</i> and <i>Aberganenny</i>, was Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>.
 <i>John</i> his sonne succeeded, and died without issue.</p> |
| H. 5. | <p><i>Hunfrey Plantagenet</i>, the youngest sonne of king <i>Henry the Fourth</i>, and brother to king <i>Henry the Fifth</i>, was by his brother created Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>, and Duke of <i>Glocester</i>. He was also Protector to his Nephew king <i>Henry the Sixth</i>, and dyed without issue.</p> |
| H. 6. | <p><i>William de la Poole</i> was by king <i>Henry the Sixth</i> created Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>, Earle, <i>Marquess</i>, and Duke of <i>Suffolke</i>.</p> |
| H. 6. | <p><i>Jasper of Hatfield</i>, the second son of <i>Owen Tudor</i>, and of <i>Queene Katherine</i> his wife (widow to king <i>Henry the Fifth</i>) and being halfe-brother to king <i>Henry the Sixth</i>, was by him created Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>, and by king <i>Henry the Seventh</i> Duke of <i>Bedford</i>. He died without issue.</p> |
| E. 4. | <p><i>William Herbert</i> was by king <i>Edward the Fourth</i> made Lord of <i>Cardiffe</i>, and Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>, and was slaine at <i>Banbury field</i>.
 <i>William Herbert</i> his sonne succeeded, and resigned the said Earldome to king <i>Edward the Fourth</i>.</p> |
| E. 4. | <p><i>Edward the Prince</i>, being sonne and heire apparant to king <i>Edward the Fourth</i>, was by his father created Earle of <i>Pembroke</i>, <i>Flint</i>, and <i>March</i>. He was king <i>Edward the Fifth</i>.</p> |

and Earles of this Kingdome.

William de Warenne, who was firstward married to king Henry the Eighth, was by him created Earl of Surrey and lost her head.

Richard de Warenne, first Earl of Surrey, was brother to the last Earl William, was by king Edward the Sixth created Earl of Surrey.

Henry de Warenne, his son, succeeded in the said Countie.

William Lord Herbert, his sonne, is Lord of Cardiffe, Fion-Hugh, Monmouth, and is, also, Lord of Glamorgan.

Richmond. The said Earl of Richmond was by king Henry the Sixth created Earl of Richmond.

Edward was by the Conqueror made Lord of Middlesex and Earl of Hereford.

Allen Fergant, surnamed The Red, being his sonne, was Lord of Middlesex and Earl of Hereford, and of Arundell. He died without issue.

Allen, his son, being his brother, succeeded him, and died without issue.

Stephen his brother, being his son, succeeded him, and died without issue.

Allen, his son, by descent enjoyed the said dignities.

Constance, his son, succeeded him, and had issue, Constance.

Geoffrey Plantagenet, the third sonne of king Henry the Second, married the said Constance, and was in her right Earl of Richmond.

Arthur Plantagenet, his sonne, was Earl of Richmond, and died without issue.

John de Dreux, being Count Palatine of Flanders, was by king Henry the Second created Earl of Richmond.

John de Dreux, his son, was Earl of Richmond, and died without issue.

John de Dreux, his son, was Earl of Richmond, and died without issue.

John de Dreux, his son, was Earl of Richmond, and died without issue.

John de Dreux, his son, was Earl of Richmond, and died without issue.

John de Dreux, his son, was Earl of Richmond, and died without issue.

John de Dreux, his son, was Earl of Richmond, and died without issue.

John de Dreux, his son, was Earl of Richmond, and died without issue.

John de Dreux, his son, was Earl of Richmond, and died without issue.

H.8.

E.6.

E.6.

Conq.

K. John.

H.3.

E.1.

E.3.

E.3.

Henry

The Succession of the Duke

H.4. **H.4.** **H.6.** **H.3.** **R.2.** **H.3.**

Henry of Grosmont, his son, was Duke of Lancaster and Hereford, and Earl of Richmond, until he was king Henry the Fourth.
 Ralph Lord Nevil of Raby Castle, the first Earle of Westmerland, was by king Henry the Fourth created Earle of Pembroke for his life only.
 John Plantagenet, Duke of Bedford, and brother to king Henry the Fifth, was by his father created Earle of Richmond. He died without issue.
 Edmund of Huddon, called Edmund Tucher, the eldest sonne of Owen Tucher, and of Queen Katherine his wife, the widow of King Henry the Fifth, and daughter to Charles the Sixth of France, and halfe-brother to king Henry the Sixth, was by him created Earle of Richmond. He married Marguerite the daughter and heire of John Beauford, Marquess Dorset, and Duke of Somerset, who was the sonne of John Beauford, who was the sonne of John of Gannaby Katherine Swinsford his third wife, and had issue Henry, who was king Henry the Seventh, and his sonne, who was Earle of Richmond, until he obtained the Crowne, and was king Henry the Seventh.
 Henry the Eighth, was by him created Earle of Nottingham, and Duke of Richmond, and died without issue in the fourth year of his age.
R.2. **H.3.** **R.2.** **H.3.**

Edward Plantagenet, the sonne of Edmund of Langley, the fifth sonne of king Edward the Third, and Duke of York, was by his father king Richard the Second created Earle of Arundell, and Duke of Albemarle. After his fathers death he was Duke of York, and was slain at Tewkesfield.
 Edward Plantagenet, brother to Edward, who was afterward king Edward the Fourth, was Earle of Arundell, and died in his childhood, without issue being slain.
 Henry Manners, his son, succeeded his father as Duke of York, and was created Earle of Arundell by king Henry the Eighth.
 Henry Manners, his son, succeeded his father as Duke of York, and was created Earle of Arundell by king Henry the Eighth.
 John Manners, his brother, succeeded him.
 Roger

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Roger Mannors, his sonne, enioyed those honours, and dyed without issue.

Sir Francis Mannors, his brother, is now Lord Roos, Hamlake, and Trimbore, and Earle of Rutland.

Ryuers.

Richard Wooduile of Grafton, Knight, married *Jaquet* the widow of *John Duke of Bedford*, Regent of France, & daughter to *Peter of Iuxenburgh*, Earle of *S. Paul*. He was by king *Henry the Sixth* made Lord *Ryuers*. Afterwards king *Edward the Fourth* married his daughter, the Ladie *Elizabeth Grey*, the widow of *Sir John Grey* deceased, by whom he was made Lord Treasurer of England, and Earle *Ryuers*. He and his sonne *John* were slaine by the Commons in an vp-roare.

Anthony Wooduile, his sonne, being Lord *Scales*, and Earle *Ryuers*, was by king *Richard the Third* beheaded vniustly at *Pomfret Castle*, and died without issue.

Richard Wooduile, his brother, succeeded him in that Earledome, and dyed without issue.

Salisburie.

Stephen Patrick of *Eureux* was by the Conquerour created Earle of *Salisbury*. Conq.

William, his sonne, was Earle of *Salisburie*, and dyed without issue Male.

William Longspee, the base sonne of king *Henry the Second*, by the faire *Rosamond Clifford* his Concubine, was by king *Richard the First*, his halfe-brother, created Earle of *Salisbury*. R. 1.

William Longspee, his sonne, was Earle of *Salisburie* after his father, and was slaine in the warres in the *Holy Land*.

Henry Lacy was by king *Henry the Third* created Earle of *Salisburie*, and dyed without issue. H. 3.

Thomas Plantagenet, the sonne of *Edmond Crouch-backe*, being Earle of *Lancaster*, was also Earle of *Salisbury*, *Leicester*, and *Lincoln*, and dyed without issue.

Henry

The successions of the Dukes

Henry Plantagenet, his brother, was Earle of *Salisbury*, *Leicester*, *Lincolne*, and *Lancaster*.

Henry Plantagenet, his sonne, was created Duke of *Lancaster*. He was also inheritor to all those Earledomes. His daughter and heire, called *Blanch*, was married to *John of Gaunt*: and from them descended the House of the *Lancastrians*.

E.4.

William Mountague, Lord of the Ile of *Man*, was by king *Edward the Fourth* created Earle of *Salisbury*.

William Mountague, his sonne, being Lord of the Ile of *Man*, and Lord *Mounthermer*, was also Earle of *Salisbury*, and died without issue.

John Mountague, sonne to Sir *John Mountague*, brother to the said *William*, was Lord *Mounthermer*, and Earle of *Salisbury*. Hee with others conspired the death of king *Edward the Fourth* at *Oxford*, and was slaine.

Thomas Mountague, his sonne, was Lord *Mounthermer*, and Earle of *Salisbury*.

H.6.

Richard Neuil, the second sonne of *Ralph Neuil*, who was the first Earle of *Westmorland*, married *Alice* the eldest daughter and co-heire of the said *Thomas*, and was by king *Henry the Sixth* created Earle of *Salisbury*. He was taken prisoner in the battaile of *Wakefield*, by *Queene Margaret*, wife to king *Henry the Sixth*, and lost his head.

Richard Neuil, his sonne, was Earle of *Salisbury*, and of *Warwicke*, also in the right of *Anne* his wife, who was the daughter and heire of *William Beauchampe* Earle of *Warwicke*. This was that great Earle of *Warwicke*, who deposed and raised king *Henry the Sixth*, and was slaine at *Barnet Field* by king *Edward the Fourth*.

H.8.

Richard Poole, a Knight of *Wales*, married *Margaret Plantagenet*, the daughter of *George Duke of Clarence*, brother to king *Edward the Fourth*, which the said *George* begot on *Isabel* the eldest daughter and co-heire of the last *Richard* Earle of *Warwick* & *Salisbury*. She was by Parliament in the fifth year of king *Henry the Eighth* restored to those Earledomes: but in Parliament in the one and thirtieth year of king *Henry the Eighth*, shee with *Gertrude* the widow of *Henry Courtney*, Marquess of *Exeter*, *Reynold Poole* Cardinall, being her sonne, and others, were attainted of Treason, and shee lost her head. Shee was the last of the name and royall stocke of the Familie of the *Plantagenets*, out of which had issued successively fourteen Kings of England.

Roberts Cecil, the second sonne of *William Cecil*, Lord *Burleigh*, and Treasurer of England, was by King *James* created Lord *Cecil*

of

and Earles of this Kingdome.

of *Effenden*, in *Rutlandshire*, Viscount *Cramborne*, in *Dorsetshire*, and Earle of *Salisbury*.

William Cecil, his son, is now Lord of *Effenden*, Viscount *Cramborne*, and Earle of *Salisbury*.

Shrewesburie.

E*drick*, a *Saxon*, surnamed *The wilde*, being Earle of *Shrewsbury*, was by the Conqueror dis-inherited.

Roger de Mountgomery, Earle of *Belesme* in *Normandy*, was by the Conqueror made Earle of *Arundell*, and of *Shrewsbury*. Cong.

Hugh de Mountgomery, his sonne, succeeded, and died without issue.

Roberts Mountgomery, his brother, being Earle of *Shrewsbury*, and of *Arundel*, was taken by king *Henry the First*, and deprived of his eyes.

John, Lord *Talbot*, *Strange*, *Blackmore*, *Furnivall*, and *Verdon*, was by *Henry the Sixth*, created Earle of *Shrewsbury*. H.6.

John Talbot, his son, succeeded in those honors.

John Talbot, his son, was Lord, &c. and Earle of *Shrewsbury*.

George Talbot, his son, was Lord, &c. and Earle of *Shrewsbury*.

Francis Talbot, his son was Lord, &c. and Earle of *Shrewsbury*.

George, Lord *Talbot*, his son, succeeded in those honors.

Gilbert, Lord *Talbot*, his son, is Lord *Talbot*, *Strange*, *Blackmore*, *Furnival*, and *Verdon*, and Earle of *Shrewsbury*.

Somerſet.

O*smund*, Bishop of *Salisbury*, was by the Conquerour, made Earle of *Somerſet*. Cong.

William de Mohun, was by king *Henry the First*, created Earle of *Somerſet*. H.1.

Reynold de Mohun, in king *Johns* time; received the inheritance of his Grand-father Earle *William*, and was created Earle of *Somerſet*, he was dis-inherited by king *Henry the Third*, because he took part against him with the Barons in their wars. K. John.

John Beauford, the sonne of *John of Gaunt*, by *Katherine Swinford*

The successions of the Dukes

for d his third wife, was by king *Richard* the Second, created Earle of *Somerset*, and Marquess *Dorset*, but the latter of those two, hee voluntarily did renounce.

Henry Beauford, his son, was Earle after him.

H.5. *John Beauford*, his brother, was created Earle of *Somerset* by king *Henry* the Fifth.

H.6. *Edmund Beauford*, his brother, was Earle of *Somerset*, and by king *Henry* the Sixt, was created Marquess *Dorset*, and Duke of *Somerset*, and was slaine at *S. Albons* by *Richard* Duke of *York*.

Henry Beauford, his son, was Duke of *Somerset*, he revolted from king *Henry* the Sixt, to king *Edward* the Fourth, and afterward from king *Edward* the Fourth, to K. *Henry* the Sixt, & was by the *Torkish* faction, taken Prisoner at *Hexhamfield*, and lost his head.

Edmund Beauford, his brother, was Duke of *Somerset*, and being taken prisoner at *Tewkesbury-field* by king *Edward* the Fourth, hee lost his head, and had no issue.

H.7. *Edmund Tuthar*, a younger son to king *Henry* the Seventh, was at five yeares of his age, created Duke of *Somerset*, and died without issue at that age.

Henry Fitz-Roy, base son to king *Henry* the Eighth, was created Earle of *Nottingham*, and Duke of *Somerset*, and *Richmond*, and dyed without issue.

Edward Seymour, Earle of *Hartford*, was by his Nephew king *Edward* the Sixt, created Duke of *Somerset*, and lost his head.

Sir *Robert Carr*, was by king *James* created Viscount *Rochester*, and Earle of *Somerset*.

Southampton.

E.1. **B**evoys, was (at the Conquest) Earle of *Southampton*.
William Gobian, was by king *Edward* the First, created Earle of *Southampton*, and died without issue Male.

H.3. *William Fitz-william*, was by king *Henry* the Eight, created Earle of *Southampton*, and died without issue Male.

E.6. *Thomas Wriothesley*, Lord Chancellor of *England*, was by king *Henry* the Eighth, created Baron of *Titchfield* in *Hampshire*, and by king *Edward* the Sixt, he was created Earle of *Southampton*.

Henry Wriothesley, his sonne, was Lord *Titchfield*, and Earle of *Southampton*.

Henry

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Henry Wriothesley, his sonne, is Lord *Titchfield*, and Earle of *Southampton*.

Stafford.

Ralph *Stafford*, was by king *Edward* the Third, created Earle of *Stafford*. E. 3.

Hugh Stafford, his son, succeeded in that Earledome.

Thomas Stafford, his Grandchild, by *Ralph* his son, was Earle of *Stafford*.

William Stafford, his brother, was Earle of *Stafford* after him.

Edmund Stafford, his brother, was Earle and died without issue.

Humfrey Stafford, his son, was Earle, and by king *Henry* the Sixt, he was created Duke of *Buckingham*, and was slaine in *Yorkefbire*, in the said kings quarrell.

Humfrey Stafford, his son, was dignified with those honors.

Humfrey Stafford, his son, succeeded and was beheaded by king *Richard* the Third.

Edward Stafford, his son, was restored by king *Henry* the Seuenth, and lost his head in the reigne of king *Henry* the Eighth. H. 7.

Suffolke.

Ralph *Glandvile*, Lord of *Brombelme*, was by king *Henry* the Second, created Earle of *Suffolke*. H. 2.

William Glandvile, his son, being Lord of *Brombelme* was Earle of *Suffolke*.

Gilbert Glandvile, his son, enioyed those Honors.

Ralph Glandvile, his son, was Lord *Brombelme*, and Earle of *Suffolke*, and dyed without issue.

William de Vessy, who married *Mauld* his Daughter and Heire, was by king *Edward* the Second, created Earle of *Suffolke*. E. 2.

Roberts de Vfford, who married *Sarah* daughter and heire of the said *William*, was by king *Edward* the Third, created Earle of *Suffolke*. E. 3.

William de Vfford, his son, being Lord of *Eay*, and *Framlingham*, was Earle of *Suffolke*.

Michael de la Poole, a man more rich than honorably descended, R. 2.

The successions of the Dukes

R.2.

was Chancellor to king *Richard* the Second, and by him created Earle of *Suffolke*, and was banished as a corrupter of him, by his lewd counsell, he died with griefe at *Paris*.

Michael de la Poole, his son, was Lord *Wingfield*, and Earle of *Suffolke*, and dyed at the siege of *Harslew*.

Michael de la Poole, his son, succeeded his father, but died within one moneth after.

H.6.

VVilliam de la Poole, his brother, was Lord *Wingfield*, and Earle of *Suffolke*, he was by king *Henry* the Sixt created Earle of *Pembroke*, then *Marquesse* of *Suffolke*, and last of all Duke of *Suffolke*, hee was banished, taken at Sea, and lost his head on a boars side.

Iohn de la Poole, his son, was Lord *Wingfield*, Earle of *Pembroke*, and Duke of *Suffolke*.

Edmund de la Poole, his sonne, was of a turbulent disposition, & in the fifth yeare of *Henry* the Eighth, he was executed for treason.

H.7.

Charles Brandon, the son of Sir *VVilliam Brandon*, Knight (who was Standard-bearer to the Earle of *Richmond* in *Bosworth* field, & was slaine by king *Richard* the Third) was by *Henry* the Seuenth, made Viscount *Lisle*, and hauing married king *Henry* the Eight his second sister *Mary* Queene Dowager of *France*, hee was by *Henry* the Eight created Duke of *Suffolke*.

H.8.

Henry Brandon, his sonne, was Earle of *Lincolne*, and Duke of *Suffolke*, and died without issue.

E.6.

Henry Grey, Lord *Ferrers* of *Groby*, Lord of *Asley*, *Harington*, & *Bonville*, being also Marques *Dorset*, & hauing married *Francis* who was one of the daughters and co-heires of *Charles Brandon*, was by king *Edward* the Sixth, created Duke of *Suffolk*, and was attainted of treason whilest Queene *Mary* reigned: their daughter was the Lady *Iane*, who married *Guilford Dudley* the fourth son of the Earle of *Northumberland*, who lost her head.

K. James.

Thomas Lord *Howard* of *Walden*, second sonne to *Thomas* the last Duke of *Northfolke*, was by king *James* created Earle of *Suffolke*.

Surrey.

Rufus.

William Warren, Earle of Warren in *Normandy*, married one of the Conquerours daughters named *Gouardred*, and was by king *VVilliam Rufus*, created Earle of *Surrey*.

VVilliam Warren, his sonne, succeeded and was Earle of *Surrey*.

William

and Earles of this Kingdome.

William Warren, his sonne, was Earle, and dyed without issue Male.

William de Blois, son to king *Stephen*, being Earle of *Mortaigne*, *Buhoigne*, and *Eagle*, and being Lord of *Lancaster*, married *Isabel* the daughter and heire of the last Earle *William*, and was in her right Earle of *Surrey*, and died without issue.

Hamlyn Plantagenet, brother to king *Henry* the Second, married the said Lady *Isabel*, and was in her right Earle of *Surrey*, and king *Henry* the Second created him Earle of *Warwicke*.

William Plantagenet, their son, was Earle of *Surrey*, and of *Warwicke*.

John Plantagenet, his son, was Earle of *Surrey*, *Warren*, and *Sussex*, and dyed without issue Male.

John Plantagenet, his brother, succeeded him in those Earldomes, and dyed without issue.

Edmund Fitz-Allen, Earle of *Arundell*, married *Alise* the daughter of the aforesaid *William*, and was in her right Earle of *Surrey*, and of *Warren*.

Richard Fitz-Allen, their sonne, was Earle of *Arundel*, *Surrey*, and *Sussex*.

Richard Fitz-Allen, his sonne, was Earle of *Arundell*, *Surrey*, and *Sussex*.

Thomas Fitz-Allen, his son, was Earle of *Surrey*, *Arundel*, and *Sussex*, and died without issue.

Thomas Holland, halfe-brother to king *Richard* the Second, was by him created Earle of *Kent*, and Duke of *Surrey*. R. 2.

Edmund Holland, his son, was Earle and Duke.

John, Lord *Mowbray*, sonne to the Duke of *Northfolke*, was descended from the Earles of *Warren & Surrey*, and was by king *Henry* the Sixth, dignified with those honors, and also after his fathers death, he was Duke of *Northfolke*. H. 6.

Thomas Howard, the sonne of *John Howard*, whom king *Richard* the Third had created Duke of *Northfolke*, was by the same king created Earle of *Surrey*, and by king *Henry* the Eighth, Duke of *Northfolke*. R. 3.

Thomas Howard, his sonne, by *Anne* daughter to king *Edward* the Fourth, was by the same king created Earle Marshall of *England*, and Earle of *Surrey*. E. 4.

Henry Howard, Earle of *Surrey*, was in his fathers life time, attainted and executed, and had issue *Thomas*.

Thomas Howard, his sonne, was Duke of *Northfolk*, and Earle of *Surrey*, after his Grandfathers death, being restored by *Q. Mary*. Q. Mary.

The successions of the Dukes

Philip Howard, his son, was Earle of *Surrey*, and of *Arundell*.
Thomas Howard, his son, is Earle of *Arundell*, and of *Surrey*.

Suffex.

H.2.

William de Albany, was Earle of *Suffex*, and of *Arundel*, by his marriage with *Queene Adeliza*, the widow of *K. Henry the First*, which Earledomes were her ioynture, and those honors were given to him by king *Henry the Second*.

William de Albany, their son, succeeded and was Earle.

William de Albany, his sonne, was Earle of *Suffex*, and of *Arundell*.

William de Albany, his son, succeeded his father.

Hugh de Albany, his brother, enioyed those Earledomes, and died without issue.

John Plantagenet, the seventh Earle of *Surrey*, was Earle of *Suffex*, and died without issue Male.

John Plantagenet, his brother, enioyed those honours, and dyed without issue.

H.8.

Robert Ratcliffe Lord *Fitz-water*, *Egremount* and *Burnel*, was by king *Henry the Eighth*, created Viscount *Fitz-water*, and Earle of *Suffex*.

Henry Ratcliffe, his son, enioyed all those honors.

Thomas Ratcliffe, his son, was Lord, Viscount, and Earle, and died without issue.

Henry Ratcliffe, his brother, succeeded in those dignities.

Robert Ratcliffe, his son, is Lord *Egremount* and *Burnel*, Viscount *Fitz-water*, and Earle of *Suffex*.

Warwicke.

Conq.

Tarquinus, a *Saxon*, was Earle of *Warwicke* at the Conquest, he was banished and died without issue.

Henry Beaumont, alias *Newburgh* (brother to *Robert* Earle of *Mil-lent*, and of *Leicester*) was by the Conquerour created Earle of *Warwicke*.

Roger Beaumont, alias *Newburgh*, his son, was Earle of *Warwick*.

William Beaumont, alias *Newburgh*, his son, was Earle of *Warwick*.

Walteran

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Walteran Beaumont, alias *Newburgh*, his brother, was Earle of *Warwicke* after him.

Henry Beaumont, alias *Newburgh*, his son, was Earle of *Warwick*.

Thomas Beaumont, alias *Newburgh*, his sonne, succeeded his father.

John Marshall married *Margerie* the sister & heire of the said *Thomas*, and was Earle of *Warwick* in her right, but died without issue.

John de Pleffetis, the second husband of the said *Margerie*, was in her right Earle of *Warwicke*.

Hugh de Pleffetu, their son, succeeded, and died without issue.

William Maledotus, otherwise *Minduyt*, Lord of *Hanslop*, cohen and heire to the said *Margery*, Countesse of *Warwicke*, was Earle of *Warwicke*, and died without issue.

William de Beauchampe married *Isabel*, sister and heire to the said *William*, and had issue, *William*.

William Beauchampe, their son, was Earle of *Warwicke*.

Guido de Beauchampe, his son, succeeded his father.

Thomas de Beauchampe, his son, was Earle of *Warwicke*.

Thomas de Beauchampe, his son, was Earle of *Warwicke*.

Richard de Beauchampe, his sonne, was Earle of *Warwicke*. He was Lieu-tenant of *Munster* in *Ireland*, and a great Warriour in *France* in the daies of king *Henry* the Fifth, and king *Henry* the Sixth.

Henry Beauchampe, his sonne, was Earle of *Warwicke*, and by king *Henry* the Sixth he was created Duke of *Warwicke*. Hee died without issue Male.

H.6.

Richard Neuil, the eldest sonne of *Richard Neuil* Earle of *Salisbury*, married *Anne* the daughter and heire of *Richard Beauchampe*, and was (in her right) Earle of *Warwicke*. Hee is termed, *The Great Earle of Warwicke*: for he was so powerfull, that he aduanced king *Edward* the Fourth, deposed king *Henry* the Sixth, and made him king againe; but was at last slaine by king *Edward* the Fourth at *Barnet* field.

George Plantagenet, Duke of *Clarence*, and brother to K. *Edward* the Fourth, married *Isabel*, the eldest daughter of the said Earle *Richard*, and was (in her right) Earle of *Warwicke*. They had issue, *Edward*, who was beheaded by king *Henry* the Seuenth, and *Margaret* married to Sir *Richard Poole*. She lost her head in the one and thirtieth yeare of the reigne of king *Henry* the Eighth.

Edward Plantagenet, their sonne, was Earle of *Warwick*. He liued a prisoner from his infancie, and was beheaded by king *Henry* the Seuenth, because he sought to escape with *Perkin Warbeck* out of the Tower: and died without issue.

John

The successions of the Dukes

E.6.

John Dudley, Lord *Somery*, *Basset*, and *Tays*, and Viscount *Lisle* was by king *Edward* the Sixth created Earle of *Warwicke*, and Duke of *Northumberland*. But in *Queene Maries* daies he lost his head.

John Dudley, his son, dyed in his fathers life time, but was Earle of *Warwicke*, and had issue, *Ambrose*.

Ambrose Dudley, his sonne, was Lord *Somery*, *Basset*, and *Tays* and Earle of *Warwicke*, and dyed without issue.

Westmerland.

Ralph *Neuil*, Lord *Neuil* of *Rabie Castle*, *Standrop*, and *Branspeth*, was by king *Richard* the Second created Earle of *Westmerland*.

Ralph Neuil, his grand-childe, viz. the sonne of Sir *John Neuil*, was Lord *Neuil* of *Rabie*, *Standrop*, *Branspeth*, *Warkworth*, and *Sherrie-buston*, and was Earle of *Warwicke*.

Ralph Neuil, his Nephew, by Sir *John Neuil* his brother, succeeded his Vncle in all those honours.

Ralph Neuil, his grand-childe, by *Ralph* Lord *Neuil* his son, enjoyed those Lordships, and was the fourth Earle of *Westmerland*.

Henry Neuil, his sonne, was Lord *Neuil* of *Rabie*, *Standrop*, *Branspeth*, *Warkley*, *Sherrie-buston*, and *Middleham*, and Earle of *Westmerland*.

Charles Neuil, his sonne, succeeded in all those honours, and was in the reigne of *Queen Elizabeth* attainted of Treason (by Parliament) with others.

Wilshire.

R.2.

William le *Scroope* was an euill Counsellor to king *Richard* the Second, and was by him created Earle of *Wilshire*. But hee lost his head.

H.6.

Aymer Butler, the sonne and heire apparant of *James Butler*, the fourth Earle of *Ormond* in *Ireland*, was by king *Henry* the Sixth created Earle of *Wilshire*. He dyed without issue.

John Stafford, the younger sonne of *Humphrey* the first Duke of *Buckingham*,

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Buckingham, was by *K. Edward* the fourth created Earle of *Wilsbire*. E. 4.

Edward Stafford, his sonne, was Earle after him, and died without issue.

Henry Stafford, of the house of *Buckingham*, was by king *Henry* the Eighth created Earle of *Wilsbire*. H. 8.

Thomas Bullen was by king *Henrie* the Eighth made Viscount *Bullen*, and Earle of *Wilsbire*. Hee was father to *Queene Anne Bullen*, and grand-father to *Queene Elizabeth*. H. 8.

William Pawlet was by king *Henry* the Eighth made Lord *S. Iohn* of *Basing*, and by king *Edward* the Sixth he was created Earle of *Wilsbire*, and Marquesse of *Winchester*. E. 6.

John Lord *S. Iohn*, his son, enioyed all those honours.

William Pawlet, his sonne, succeeded his father, and was Lord *S. Iohn* of *Basing*, Earle of *Wilsbire*, and Marquesse of *Winchester*.

William Pawlet, his sonne, is Lord *S. Iohn* of *Basing*, Earle of *Wilsbire*, and Marquesse of *Winchester*.

Winchester.

C*Lyton*, a Saxon, was at the Conquest Earle of *Winchester*, and was banished, and died without issue.

Saer de Quincy, Lord *Quincy* of *Graby*, was by king *Iohn* created Earle of *Winchester*. K. Iohn.

Ralph Quincy, his sonne, was Earle after him, and died without issue Male.

Hugh, Lord *le Despencer*, was by king *Edward* the Second created Earle of *Winchester*, and died without issue, being beheaded. E. 2.

Lewis de Burgh, a *Burgundian*, and Lord of *Granthouse*, was by king *Edward* the Fourth in Parliament created Earle of *Winchester*, because he had highly fauoured and relieued king *Edward* when he fled from the great Earle of *Warwicke*, and from king *Henry* the Sixth. This Earledome he afterwards surrendered to king *Henrie* the Seuenth. E. 4.

William Pawlet was by king *Henry* the Eighth made Lord *S. Iohn* of *Basing*, and by king *Edward* the Sixth Earle of *Wilsbire*, and Marquesse of *Winchester*. E. 6.

John Pawlet, his son, succeeded in those honours.

William Pawlet succeeded, and was Lord, Earle, and Marquesse.

William Pawlet, his sonne, is Lord *S. Iohn* of *Basing*, Earle of *Wilsbire*, and Marquesse of *Winchester*.

Worcester

The successions of the Dukes

Worcester.

- Rufus.* **V** *Rufus de Abbot* was by king *William Rufus* created Earle of Worcester.
- K. Steph.* *Walteran de Beaumont*, Earle of *Millent* in *Normandy*, was by king *Stephen* created Earle of Worcester.
- R. 2.* *Thomas Percie*, brother to *Henry*, the first Earle of *Northumberland*, was by king *Richard* the Second created Earle of Worcester. He conspired with his Nephew, *Henry Hotspurre*, against king *Henry* the Fourth, and lost his head.
- H. 5.* *Richard Beauchampe* was by king *Henry* the Fifth created Earle of Worcester, and died without issue Male.
- H. 6.* *John*, Lord *Tiptoft*, was by king *Henry* the Sixth created first Viscount, and then Earle of Worcester, but was beheaded for taking part against the said king, with *Edward* Earle of *March*, who was afterwards king *Edward* the Fourth.
- E. 4.* *Edward Tiptoft*, his sonne, was by king *Edward* the Fourth restored to his Viscountship, and to the Earledome of Worcester, and died without issue.
- H. 8.* *Charles Somerset*, Lord *Herbert* and *Gower*, was by king *Henric* the Eighth created Earle of Worcester.
- Henry Somerset*, his sonne, was Lord *Herbert*, *Chepflow*, *Ragland*, and *Gower*, and was also Earle of Worcester.
- William Somerset*, his son, succeeded in those honours.
- Edward Somerset*, his sonne, is Lord *Herbert*, *Chepflow*, *Gower*, and *Ragland*, and Earle of Worcester.

Yorke.

- E***Drick*, a *Saxon*, was Earle of *Yorke* at the Conquest. He lost his eyes, and died a prisoner.
- H. 1.* *Robert Esconyle* was by king *Henry* the First created Viscount of *Yorke*.
- Robert Esconyle*, his son, was Viscount of *Yorke*.
- Edmund Plantagenet*, otherwise *Edmund* of *Langley*, the fifth sonne of king *Edward* the Third, was by his father created Earle of *Cambridge*: and by his Nephew, king *Richard* the Second, hee was made Duke of *Yorke*.

Edward

and Earles of this Kingdome.

Edward Plantagenet, his son, was Earle of *Rutland*, and Duke of *Albemarle*, and of *Yorke*, and was slaine at *Agincourt* Field.

Richard Plantagenet, his brother, another of the sons of the said *Edmund*, was Earle of *Cambridge*, *March*, and *Glouc.*

Richard Plantagenet, his brother, was Duke of *Yorke*, &c. and was father to king *Edward* the Fourth, and was slaine in the warres against king *Henry* the Sixth.

Edward, his sonne, was Earle of *March* and *Wylster*, and Duke of *Yorke*. He deposed king *Henry* the Sixth, and was himselfe king *Edward* the Fourth.

Richard Plantagenet, his younger sonne, was Duke of *Yorke*, and was with his brother king *Edward* the Fifth murdered in the Tower by king *Richard* the Third.

Henry Tuthar, the second sonne of king *Henry* the Seventh, was by his father created Duke of *Yorke*, and himselfe was king *Henry* the Eighth.

Charles Stewart, the onely son and heire apparant of the illustrious Prince, King *James* the First, being the last Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, *Yorke*, and *Rossay*, and Earle Palatine of *Chesster*.

E. 4.

H. 7.

The Nobilitie of ENGLAND, ranked according to their degrees and creations.

THE Marquesse of *Winchester*.

EARLES.

- 1 Earle of *Arundell*.
- 2 Earle of *Oxford*.
- 3 Earle of *Northumberland*.
- 4 Earle of *Shrewsbury*.
- 5 Earle of *Kent*.
- 6 Earle of *Darbie*.
- 7 Earle of *Worcester*.
- 8 Earle of *Rutland*.
- 9 Earle of *Cumberland*.

- 10 Earle of *Suffex*.
- 11 Earle of *Huntingdon*.
- 12 Earle of *Bath*.
- 13 Earle of *Southampton*.
- 14 Earle of *Bulford*.
- 15 Earle of *Devon*.
- 16 Earle of *Hartford*.
- 17 Earle of *Essex*.
- 18 Earle of *Lincolne*.
- 19 Earle of *Nottingham*.
- 20 Earle of *Suffolke*.
- 21 Earle of *Northampton*.
- 22 Earle of *Dorset*.
- 23 Earle of *Salisbury*.
- 24 Earle of *Exeter*.
- 25 Earle of *Montgomery*.

VICI.

The Nobilitie of England ranked.

VICECOUNTS.

- 1 Vicecount Montague.
- 2 Vicecount Lisle.
- 3 Vicecount Richesley.
- 4 Vicecount Cramborne.

24 Lord Villoughbie of Parham.

25 Lord Sheffield.

26 Lord Pages.

27 Lord Darcy of Chiche.

28 Lord Howard of Effingham.

29 Lord North.

30 Lord Chandos.

31 Lord Hunsdon.

32 Lord S. John of Bletso.

33 Lord Burleigh.

34 Lord Compton.

35 Lord Norris.

36 Lord Howard of Walden.

37 Lord Knowles.

38 Lord Wotton.

39 Lord Elsmere, Lord Chancellor of England.

40 Lord Russell.

41 Lord Grey of Groby.

42 Lord Peter.

43 Lord Harrington.

44 Lord Danvers.

45 Lord Gerard.

46 Lord Spencer.

47 Lord Say and Sele.

48 Lord Denny.

49 Lord Stanhope.

50 Lord Carew.

51 Lord Arundell of VVarden.

52 Lord Cauendish.

53 Lord Kynnet.

54 Lord Clifton.

BARONS.

1 Lord Abington.

2 Lord Andeley.

3 Lord Zouch.

4 Lord Villoughbie of Eresbie.

5 Lord Lonsdale.

6 Lord Barkley.

7 Lord Morley.

8 Lord Stafford.

9 Lord Scroope.

10 Lord Dudley.

11 Lord Starston.

12 Lord Herbert of Chesham.

13 Lord Darcy of the North.

14 Lord Mounteagle.

15 Lord Sands.

16 Lord Vaux.

17 Lord Wyndesore.

18 Lord Wentworth.

19 Lord Mordaunt.

20 Lord Cromwell.

21 Lord Evers.

22 Lord Wharston.

23 Lord Rich.



A List of such *Dukes, Marquesses, Earles,*
Viscounts and Barons, as haue beene made since the
twelfth yeare of King *James,* to this present.

Dukes.

L *Odowick* Earle of Richmond, and Duke of Lenox in Scot-
land, created Duke of Richmond, May 17. 1623.
George, Marquess of Buckingham, created Duke of Buc-
kingham, May 18. 1623.

Marquesses.

G *George Villiers,* Earle of Buckingham, created Marquess of
Buckingham, Iannuarie 1. 1617.

Earles.

R *Obert Carre,* Viscount Rochester, created Earle of Somerset,
October 6. 1613.

George Viscount Villiers, created Earle of Buckingham, Fe-
bruarie 5. 1616.

John Viscount Brankley, created Earle of Bridgewater, May
27. 1617.

Robert Viscount Lisle, created Earle of Leicester, August 2.
1618.

William Lord Compton, created Earle of Northampton, August 2.
1618.

Robert Lord Rich, created Earle of Warwick, August 6. 1618.

William Lord Canendish, created Earle of Denonshire, August 7.
1618.

James Marquess Hamilton of Scotland, created Baron of En-
nerdale,

Earles.

nerdale, and Earle of Cambridge, June 16. 1619.

Esme Stuart, Lord Awbigney, created Baron of Leighton Bromswold, and Earle of March, June 17. 1619.

John Ramsay, Viscount Haddington of Scotland, created Baron of Kingston vpon Thames, & Earle of Holdernes, Januar. 22. 1620.

Francis Lord Norreis, created Viscount Tame, and Earle of Berkshire, January 28. 1620.

James Viscount Doucafter, created Earle of Carlisle, September 13. 1622.

William Viscount Feilding, created Earle of Denbeigh, Septemb. 14. 1622.

John Lord Digby, created Earle of Bristol, September 15. 1622.

Lionell Lord Cranfield, created Earle of Middlesex, September 16. 1622.

Christopher Villiers created Baron of Dauntrey, and Earle of Anglesey. ——— 1623.

Henry Lord Kensington, created Earle of Holland, September 24. 1624.

John Lord Haughton, created Earle of Clare, Nouemb. 2. 1624.

Oliuer Lord St. Iohn, created Earle of Bollingbrook, December 28. 1624.

Sir Francis Fane, created Baron Burgherth, and Earle of Westmorland, December 29. 1624.

K. Charles.

Henry Viscount Maudenille, created Earle of Manchester, Februarie 7. 1625.

Thomas Viscount Andener, created Earle of Berkshire, the same day.

Thomas Lord Wentworth, created Earle of Clueland, the same day.

Edmund Lord Sheffield, created Earle of Mulgraue, the same day.

Henry Lord Danners, created Earle of Danby, the same day.

George Lord Carew, created Earle of Totnes, the same day.

Roberts Lord Carie, created Earle of Monmouth, the same day.

James Lord Ley, created Earle of Marleburgh, the same day.

William Viscount Wallingford, created Earle of Banbury, August 28. 1626. But with a clause in his Patent, to haue precedency before the last eight.

Edward Lord Denny, created Earle of Norwich, October 24. 1626.

Thomas

Viscounts.

Thomas Lord *Darcy* of Chich. created Earle Rivers, November 6. 1626. The same for want of issue of the Lord *Darcy*, intayled vpon Sir *Thomas Sauage*.

Emanuel Lord *Scroope*, created Earle of Sunderland, June 19. 1627.

Viscounts.

Sir *George Villiers*, created Baron Whaddon, and Viscount *Villiers*, August 27. 1616.

Thomas Lord *Elismere*, created Viscount Brackley, November 7. 1616.

William Lord *Knollis*, created Viscount Wallingford, November 7. 1616.

James Lord *Hay*, created Viscount Doncaster, July 25. 1618.

Sir *John Villiers*, created Baron of Stoke and Viscount Purbeck, June 19. 1619.

Sir *William Cavendish* of Welbeck, created Viscount Mansfield, November 3. 1620.

Sir *William Feilding*, created Baron of Newnham Paddox, and Viscount Feilding, December 13. 1620.

Sir *Henry Mountagu*, created Baron Kymbolton and Viscount Mandeuile, December 19. 1620.

Francis Lord *Vernham*, created Viscount St. Alban, January 28. 1620.

Thomas Lord *Darcy*, created Viscount Colchester, July 5. 1621.

Henry Lord *Hunsdon*, created Viscount Rochford, July 6. 1621.

Sir *Thomas Howard*, created Baron of Charleton, and Viscount Andeuer, January 23. 1621.

Elizabeth Finch widow, created Viscountesse Maidston. Intailed vpon the heires Males of her body, July 8. 1623.

Richard de Burgo, Earle of Clanricard in Ireland, created Baron of Somerhill, and Viscount Tunbridge, Aprill 3. 1624.

William Lord *Say and Sele*, created Viscount Say and Sele, July 7. 1624.

Sir *Edward Cecill*, created Baron Cecill of Putney, and Viscount Wimbledon, November 9. 1625.

Sir *Thomas Sauage*, created Viscount Sauage, November 6. 1626.

K. Charles.

Barons.

Edward Lord Conway, created Viscount Conway, June 26. 1627.
Robert Pierrepont Esquire, created Baron of Holme Pierrepont,
 and Viscount Newark, June 29. 1627.

Barons.

Sir *James Hay*, created Baron Hay of Sawley, July 29. 1615.
 Sir *Robert Dormer*, created Baron Dormer of Wing, June 30.
 1615.

Sir *John Hellis*, created Bar. Haughton of Haughton, July 9. 1626.
 Sir *John Cooper*, created Baron Teynham of Teynham, July 9.
 1616.

Sir *Philip Stanhope*, created Baron Stanhope of Shelford, No-
 vember 7. 1616.

Sir *Francis Bacon*, created Baron of Verulam, July 12. 1618.

Sir *Edward Noel*, created Baron Noel of Ridlington, March 23.
 1616.

Sir *John Digby*, created Baron Digby of Sherburne, November
 25. 1618.

Sir *Fulke Grenil*, created Baron Brooke of Beauchamps Court,
 intayled vpon *Robert Grenil* and *William Grenil*, his kinsmen, and
 the heires Males of their bodies successuely.

Sir *Edward Mountagu*, created Baron Mountagu of Boughton,
 June 29. 1621.

Sir *Lionell Cranfield*, created Baron Cranfield of Cranfield,
 July 9. 1621.

Sir *Robert Cary*, created Baron Cary of Lepington, Febr. 6. 1621.

Sir *Henry Rich*, created Baron Kensington of Kensington,
 March 5. 1622.

Sir *William Grey*, created Bar. Grey of Warke, February 11. 1623.

Sir *Francis Leake*, created Baron Demcourt of Sutton, October
 26. 1624.

Sir *James Ley*, created Baron Ley of Ley, December 31. 1624.

Sir *Richard Roberts*, created Baron Roberts of Truro, January
 26. 1624.

Sir *Edward Conway*, created Baron Conway of Ragley, March
 24. 1624.

K. Charles.

Sir *Horace Vere*, created Baron Vere of Tilbury, July 27. 1625.

Sir *Olinier S. John*, Viscount Grandison in Ireland, created Baron
 Tregoze of Highworth, May 21. 1626.

Sir *Dudley Carleton*, created Baron Carleton of Imbercourt,
 May 22. 1626.

Sir *Nicholas*

Barons.

Sir Nicholas Tuston, created Baron Tuston of Tuston, November 6. 1626.

Sir William Crauch, created Baron Crauch of Hampsted Marshal, March 18. 1626.

Mountioy Blunt, Baron Mountioy in Ireland, created Baron Mountioy of Thursteston, June 5. 1627. He is to take place of the two next Barons following, though his Patent beare date after, by a speciall clause in his Patent.

Sir Thomas Bellasis, created Baron Falconberge of Yarom, May 25. 1627.

Sir Richard Louelace, created Baron Louelace of Hurley, May 31. 1627.

John Pawlet Esquire, created Baron Pawlet of Hinton, June 23. 1627.

William Baron Hernie of Rosse in Ireland, created Baron Hernie of Kidbrooke in Kent, February 7. 1627.

*The names of Baronets made by King James and
King Charles, at severall times,
as followeth.*

*Sir Nicholas Bacon of Redgrave, in the county of Suffolk, knight.
Sir Richard Mollens of Sefton, in the county of Lancaster,
knight.
Sir Thomas Mansell of Margan, in the county of Glamorgan,
knight.
George Shirley of Stamford, in the county of Leicester, Esquire.
Sir John Stradling of Saint Donats, in the county of Glamorgan,
knight.
Sir Francis Leake of Surton, in the county of Darby, knight.
Thomas Popkyn of Loughton, in the county of Suffex, Esquire.
Sir Thomas Houghton of Houghton Tower in the county of Lan-
caster, knight.
Sir Henry Habart of Intwod in the county of Northfolke, knight.
Sir George Booth of Dunham Massie, in the county of Chester,
knight.
Sir John Payton of Iselham, in the County of Cambridge, knight.
Lyonel Talmach of Helmingham, in the county of Suffolke,
Esquire.
Sir Gervase Clifton of Clifton, in the county of Nottingham,
knight.
Sir Thomas Gerard of Bryn, in the county of Lancaster, knight.
Sir Walter Aston of Tyxhal, in the county of Stafford, knight.
Philip Knevis of Buckingham, in the county of Northfolke, Esquire.
Sir John S. John of Lydeard Tregose, in the county of Wiltshire,
knight.
John Shelley of Michelgroue, in the county of Suffex, Esquire.
Sir John Sauage of Rock-Sauage, in the county of Chester, knight.
Sir Francis Barrington of Barrington Hall in Essex, knight.
Henry Barkley of Wymondham, in the countie of Leicester,
Esquire.
William Wentworth of Wentworth Woodhouse, in the countie of
Yorke, Esquire.
Sir Richard Musgrave of Hartley Castle, in the county of West-
merland, knight.
Edward Seymour of Bury Castle, in the county of Devonsh. Esquire.
Sir Moyle Fince of Eastwell, in the county of Kent, knight.
Sir Anthony Coap of Hanwell, in the county of Oxford, knight.*

George

Baronets.

George Grey of Drakelow, in the county of Darby, Esquire.
Paul Tracy, of Stanway, in the county of Gloster, Esquire.
Sir John of Gosfield, in the county of Essex, knight.
Sir Henry of Newborough, in the county of York, knight.
William of Hamborough, in the county of York, Esquire.
Sir Thomas of Stoneby, in the county of Warwick, knight.
Sir Edward of Brooks, in the county of Rutland, knight.
Sir Robert of Cunnington, in the county of Huntingdon, knight.
Robert Cholmondeley of Cholmondeley, in the county of Chester, Esquire.
John Molleneux of Tenershall, in the county of Nottingham, Esq.
Sir Francis Wortley of Wortley in the county of York, knight.
Sir George Saule, the elder of Thornhill, in the County of York, knight.
William of Myrcaston, in the county of Darby, Esquire.
Sir Philip of Kemberley Hall, in the county of Northfolke, knight.
Sir William Pope of Wilcot, in the county of Oxford, knight.
Sir James Harington of Ridlington, in the county of Rutl. knight.
Sir Henry Saule of Merheley, in the county of York, knight.
Henry Willoughby of Ryseley, in the countie of Darby, Esquire.
Lewis Trubham of Rushon, in the county of Northampton, Esq.
Thomas Brudenell of Denie, in the county of Northampt. Esquire.
Sir George Saint Paul of Snaresford, in the countie of Lincolne, knight.
Sir Philip Tirrhire of Stamesfield, in the county of Linc. knight.
Sir Roger Dallison of Lawghton, in the county of Lincolne, knight.
Sir Edward Carre of Slefford, in the county of Lincolne, knight.
Sir Edward Hufsey of Honyngton, in the county of Linc. knight.
Le Strange Mordant, of Maffingham parva, in the Countie of Northfolke, Esquire.
Thomas Baudish of Steeple Bamfied, in the county of Essex, Esq.
Sir John Winne of Guider, in the county of Carnarvon, knight.
Sir William Throgmorton of Tortworth, in the county of Gloucester, knight.
Sir Richard Worsley of Appledorcombe, in the county of Southampton, knight.
Richard Fleetwood of Calwisth in the countie of Stafford, Esquire.
Thomas Spencer of Yardington, in the countie of Oxford, Esquire.
Sir John Tuffton of Hothfield, in the county of Kent, knight.
Sir Samuel Payton of Knowleton, in the county of Kent, knight.

Sir Charles

Baronets.

Sir *Charles Mordaunt* of Colhiobury, in the county of Hertford, knight.
 Sir *Henry Baker* of Sissinghurst, in the county of Kent, knight.
 Sir *John Jekyll* of Southbemflete, in the county of Essex, Esquire.
 Sir *William Sidley* of Alisford, in the county of Kent, knight.
 Sir *William Twisden* of East Peckham, in the county of Kent, knight.
 Sir *Edward Hales* of Woodchurch, in the county of Kent, knight.
William Mowings of Walwarchen, in the county of Kent, Esquire.
Thomas Mildmay of Moulsham, in the county of Essex, Esquire.
 Sir *William Mainard* of Easton parva, in the county of Essex, knight.
Henry Lee of Quarrendam, in the county of Buckingham, Esquire.
John Portman of Orchard in the county of Somerset, Esquire.
 Sir *Nicholas Saunderson* of Saxby, in the county of Lincoln, knight.
 Sir *Miles Sands* of Willerton, in the Ile of Elie.
William Gofwick of Willington, in the county of Bedford, knight.
Thomas Puckering of Weston, in the county of Hartford, Esquire.
John Wray of Glentworth, in the county of Lincoln, Esquire.
 Sir *William Ayloffe*, of Braxstead magna, in the county of Essex, knight.
 Sir *Marmaduke Wrayell* of Constable Burton, in the county of York, knight.
John Fell of Horley, in the county of Stafford, Esquire.
Francis Inglefield of Wolton Bassett, in the county of Wiltshire, Esquire.
 Sir *Thomas Ridgway* of Torre, in the county of Devonsh, knight.
William Essex of Beancot, in the county of Berkshire, Esquire.
 Sir *Edward Gergin* of Langford, in the county of Wiltsh, knight.
Edward Devereux of Castle Bramwich, in the county of Warwick, Esquire.
 Sir *Reynold Mober* of Buckconock, in the county of Cornwall, knight.
 Sir *Thomas Holte* of Aston, near Brimingham, in the county of Warwick, knight.
 Sir *Harbottle Grimston* of Bradfield, in the county of Essex, knight.
 Sir *Robert Napar*, alias *Sandy*, of Lowton How, in the county of Bedford, knight.
Paul Bayning of Bentley parva, in the county of Essex, Esquire.
 Sir *Thomas Temple* of Stow, in the county of Buckingham, knight.
Thomas Pennyston of Leigh, in the county of Sussex, Esquire.
Thomas Blackston of Blackston, in the county of Durham, Esquire.
 Sir *Robert Dormer* of Wing, in the county of Buckingham, knight.

Sir

Baronets.

Sir Rowland Egerton of Egerton, in the county of Chester, knight.
Roger Townesbend of Rayneham, in the county of Norfolk, Esq.
Simon Clarke of Salford, in the county of Warwick, Esquire.
Edward Fitton of Howseworth, in the countie of Chester, Esquire.
Richard Lucy of Broxborne, in the countie of Hertford, Esquire.
Sir Matthew Boynton of Barmston, in the county of Yorke, knight.
Thomas Littleton of Franckley, in the county of Worcester, Esq.
Sir Francis Leigh of Newnham Regis, in the county of Warwick, knight.
Thomas Burdet of Bramcor, in the county of Warwick, Esquire.
George Mooreton of S. Andrewes Milborne, in the county of Dorset, Esquire.
Sir William Hume of the Parish of S. Martins in the Fields, in the county of Middlesex, knight.
Thomas Mackworth of Normanton, in the county of Rutland, Esq.
William Grey Esquire, the son of *Sir Ralph Grey* of Chillingham, in the countie of Northumberland, knight.
William Villiers of Brookesby, in the county of Leicester, Esquire.
Sir James Ley of Wesbury, in the county of Wiltshire, knight.
William Hickes of Beuerston, in the county of Gloucester, Esquire.
Sir Thomas Beaumont of Colcouerton, in the countie of Leicester, knight.
Henry Salusbury of Lleweny, in the county of Denbiegh, Esquire.
Erasmus Dryden of Canons Ashbie, in the county of Northumb. Esquire.
William Armys Esquire, the son and heire of *Sir William Armys* of Osgodby, in the county of Lincoln, knight.
Sir William Bamburgh of Howton, in the Countie of York, knight.
Edward Hartop of Freathby, in the county of Leicester, Esquire.
John Myll of Camois Court, in the county of Sussex, Esquire.
Francis Radcliffe of Darentwater, in the county of Cumberland, Esquire.
Sir David Foulis of Ingleby, in the county of York, knight.
Thomas Philips of Barington, in the county of Somerset, Esquire.
Sir Claudius Forster of Bambrough Castle, in the county of Northumberland, knight.
Anthony Chester of Chicheley, in the county of Buckingham, Esquire.
Sir Samuel Tryon of Layre Marney, in the county of Essex, knight.
Adam Newton of Charleton, in the county of Kent, Esquire.
Sir John Boteler of Hatfield Woodhall, in the county of Hertford, knight.

Gilbert

Baronets.

Gilbert Gerard of Harrow vpon the Hill, in the countie of Middlesex, Esquire.

Humfrey Lee of Langley, in the countie of Shropshire, Esquire.

Richard Berney of Parkhall in Redham, in the countie of Norfolk, Esquire.

Thomas Biggs of Lenchwick, in the countie of Worcester, Esquire.

Humfrey Forster of Aldermaston, in the Countie of Berkehire, Esquire.

Henry Bellingham of Hellington, in the countie of Westmerl. Esq.

William Teluerton of Rougham, in the countie of Norfolk, Esquire.

John Sendamore of Honelacy, in the countie of Hereford, Esquire.

Sir Thomas Gore of Stitnam, in the countie of Yorke, knight.

John Pakington of Aylesbury, in the countie of Buckingham, Esq.

Ralph Ashton of Leuer, in the countie of Lancaster, Esquire.

Sir Baptiste Hicks of Campden, in the countie of Glocester, knight.

Sir Thomas Roberts of Glassenbury, in the countie of Kent, knight.

John Hammer of Hanmer, in the countie of Flintshire, Esquire.

Edward Osborne of Keeton, in the countie of Yorke, Esquire.

Henry Felton of Playford, in the countie of Suffolke, Esquire.

William Chaloner of Guisborough, in the countie of York, Esquire.

Edward Fryer of water Eyton, in the countie of Oxford, Esquire.

Sir Thomas Bishop of Parham, in the countie of Suffex, knight.

Sir Francis Vincent of Stoke Dawbernon, in the countie of Surrey, knight.

Henry Clere of Ormesby, in the countie of Norfolk, Esquire.

Sir Benjamin Tichburne of Tichburne, in the countie of Southampton, knight.

Sir Richard Wilbrham of Woodhey, in the count. of Chest. knight.

Sir Thomas Delues of Duddington, in the countie of Chest. knight.

Sir Lewis Wasfon of Rockingham Castle, in the countie of Northampton, knight.

Sir Thomas Palmer of Wingham, in the countie of Kent, knight.

Sir Richard Roberts of Trewro, in the countie of Cornwall, knight.

John Riners of Chafford, in the countie of Kent, Esquire.

Henry Iernegan of Cosley, alias Cossele, in the countie of Norfolk, Esquire.

Thomas Darnell of Heyling, in the countie of Lincolne, Esquire.

Sir Isaac Sidley (*de magna Charte*) in the Countie of Kent, knight.

Robert Browne of Walcot, in the countie of Northamp. Esquire.

John Hewet of Headley hall, in the countie of Yorke, Esquire.

Sir Nicholas Hide of Albury, in the countie of Hertford, knight.

John

Baronets.

John Philips of Picton, in the county of Pembroke, Esquire.
Sir John Steepney of Pendergaste, in the county of Pembr. knight.
Baldwin Wake of Clevedon, in the county of Somerset, Esquire.
William Masbam of high Lauer, in the county of Essex, Esquire.
John Colbourn of Borham, in the county of Sussex, Esquire.
Sir John Hotham of Scarborough, in the county of Yorke, knight.
Francis Mansell of Mudlescombe, in the county of Caermarthen, Esquire.
Edward Powell of Penkelly, in the county of Hereford, Esquire.
Sir John Garrard of Lamer, in the county of Hertford, knight.
Sir Richard Grosvenor of Eaton, in the county of Chester, knight.
Sir Henry Mody of Garesdon, in the county of Wiltshire, knight.
Sir William Button of Alton, in the county of Wiltshire, knight.
John Barker of Grimston hall in Trymley, in the county of Suffolke, Esquire.
John Gage of Farle, in the county of Sussex, Esquire.
William Goring of Burton, in the county of Sussex, Esquire.
Peter Courten of Aldington, alias Alton, in the county of Worcester, Esquire.
Sir Richard Norton of Rotherfield, in the county of Southampton, knight.
Sir John Leventhorp of Shinglehall, in the county of Hertf. knight.
Capell Bedell of Hamerton, in the county of Huntingdon, Esquire.
John Darell of Westwoodhey, in the county of Berkshire, Esquire.
William Williams of Veynoll, in the county of Caernarvon, Esq.
Sir Francis Asbye of Harfield, in the county of Middlesex, knight.
Sir Anthony Asbley of S. Giles Wimborn, in the county of Dorset, knight.
John Couper of Rockborn, in the county of Southampton, Esquire.
Edmund Prideaux of Netherton, in the county of Devonshire, Esquire.
Sir Thomas Heflridge of Noseley, in the county of Leicest. knight.
Sir Thomas Burton of Stockerston, in the county of Leicester, knight.
Francis Foliambe of Walton, in the county of Derby, Esquire.
Edward Tate of Buckland, in the county of Berkshire, Esquire.
George Chudleigh of Ashton, in the county of Devonshire, Esquire.
Francis Drake of Buckland, in the County of Devonshire, Esquire.
William Meredith of Stanstie, in the county of Denbeigh, Esquire.
Hugh Middleton of Ruthen, in the county of Denbeigh, Esquire.

Gifford

Baronets.

Gifford Thornhurst of Ague Court, in the county of Kent, Esq.
Percy Herbert of Red Castle, in the county of Mountgomery, Esq.
Sir Robert Fisher of Packington, in the county of Warwick, knight.
Hardolph Wastemys of Hendon, in the county of Nottingham, Esq.
Sir Henry Skipwith of Prestwold, in the county of Leicest. knight.
Thomas Harrys of Boreaton, in the county of Shropshire, Esquire.
Nicholas Tempest of Stella, in the county of Durham, Esquire.
Francis Cottingham in the county of Middlesex, Esquire.
Thomas Harrys of Tonge Castle (*Serviens ad Legem*) in the county of Shropshire.
Edward Barkham of Southacre, in the county of Northfolk, Esq.
John Carbet of Sprowston, in the county of Norfolk, Esquire.
Sir Thomas Playters of Sotterly, in the county of Suffolk, knight.
Sir John Lashfield of Netherhall, in the county of Suffolk, knight.
Henry Harper of Calke, in the county of Derby, Esquire.
Edward Seabright of Belford, in the county of Worcester, Esquire.
John Beaumont of Gracedieu, in the county of Leicester, Esquire.
Sir Edward Dering of Surrenden, in the county of Kent, knight.
George Kempe of Pentlowe, in the county of Essex, Esquire.
William Brereton of Hanford, in the county of Chester, Esquire.
Patrick Curwen of Workington, in the county of Cumberland, Esquire.
William Russell of Witley, in the county of Worcester, Esquire.
John Spencer of Offley, in the county of Hertford, Esquire.
Sir Giles Escaut of Newton, in the county of Wiltshire, knight.
Thomas Alibury Esquire. *Magr. Regius*.
Thomas Style of Warringbury, in the county of Kent, Esquire.
Frederick Cornwallis of Broomehall, in the county of Suffolk, Esq.
Drugo Drury of — in the county of Northfolke, Esquire.
William Skeffington of Fisherwick, in the county of Stafford, Esq.
Sir Robert Crane of Chilton, in the county of Suffolke, knight.
Anthony Wingfield of Goodwyns, in the county of Suffolk, Esquire.
William Culpeper of Preston hall, in the county of Kent, Esquire.
Giles Bridges of Wilton, in the county of Hereford, Esquire.
John Kyrle of Much Marcle, in the county of Hereford, Esquire.
Sir Humphrey Styles of Becknam, in the county of Kent, knight.
Henry Moore of Falley, in the county of Berkshire, Esquire.
Thomas Heale of Fleet, in the county of Devonshire, Esquire.
John Carleton of Holcum, in the county of Oxford, Esquire.
Thomas Maples of Stow, in the county of Huntington, Esquire.
Sir John Isbam of Lamport, in the county of Northampe. knight.
Hernie Bagot of Blithfield, in the county of Stafford, Esquire.

Francis

Baronets.

Henry Bagot of Blichfield, in the countie of Stafford, Esquire.
Francis Mannock of Giffords hall, in the county of Suffolke, Esq.
Lewis Pollard of Nympton Regis, in the county of Devonsh. Esq.
Henry Griffith of Barton, in the county of Yorke, Esquire.
Lewis Deyer of Staughton, in the countie of Huntingdon, Esquire.
Hugh Stewkeley of Hinton, in the county of Southampr. Esquire.
Edward Stanley of Biggerstaffe, in the county of Lancashire, Esq.
Edward Littleton of Pyleton, in the county of Stafford, Esquire.
Ambrose Browne of Betworth Castle, in the county of Surrey, Esq.
Sackville Crome of Llanherne, in the county of Caermarthen, Esq.
Michael Linesey of East Church, in the county of Kent, Esquire.
Simon Bennet of Beauchampton, in the counry of Buckingham, Esquire.
Sir Thomas Fisher of St. Giles, in the county of Middlesex, knight.
Thomas Bowyer of Leighthorne, in the county of Suffex, Esquire.
Butts Bacon of Mildenhall, in the county of Suffolke, Esquire.
John Corbet of Stoke, in the county of Shropshire, Esquire.
Sir Edward Tirrell of Thorneaton, in the county of Buckingham, knight.
Basill Dixwell of Terlingham, alias Gerelingham, in the county of Kent, Esquire.

Aaa

Bishopricks and Parishes.

John Speed,
5.

Bishopricks.

Counties subject to
their severall In-
visditioms.

Parishes in each
severall Bi-
shoprick.

Canterbury Arch.Bish.
Rochester.

Kent.

257
98

London.

Essex,
Middlesex,
Hertfordshire part.

623

Lincolne.

Lincolneshire,
Leicestershire,
Huntington.
Bedfordshire.
Buckinghamshire,
Hertfordshire part.

1255

Chichester.

Hertfordshire part.
Suffex.

250

Winchester.

Hampshire,
Surrey,
Weight Isle,
Gernsey Isle,
Jersey Isle.

362

Salisbury.

Wiltshire,
Berkshire.

248

Exeter.

Devon,
Cornwall,
Exeter Citie.

623

Bath and Wells.

(Somerset.

) (388

Glocester.

(Glocestershire.

) (267

Worcester.

Worcestershire,
Warwickshire part.

241

Lichfield and Con-
trey.

Warwickshire part
Staffordshire,
Darbyshire,
Shropshire part.

557

Hereford.

Bishopricks and Parishes.

Bishopricks.	Counties subject to their severall In- visditioms.	Parishes in each severall Bi- shoprick.
Hereford.	{ Shropshire part. Herefordshire.	} 313
Ely.	{ Cambridgeshire, Ely Isle.	} 141
Norwich.	{ Northfolke, Suffolke.	} 1121
Oxford.	{ (Oxfordshire.)	} (195
Peterborough	{ Northamptonshire Rutlandshire.	} 293
Bristol.	{ Dorsetshire, Bristol.	} 236
Landaff.	{ Glamorganshire, Monmouthshire, Brecknockshire, Radnorshire.	} 177
S. David.	{ Pembrokehire, Caermardenshire.	} 308
Bangor.	{ Caernernonshire, Anglesey Isle, Merioneth and Denbighshire part.	} 107
S. Asaph.	{ Denbighshire part, Flintshire part.	} 121

Bishopricks and Parishes.

Bishopricks.	Counties subiect to their severall Ju- risdictions.	Parishes in each severall Bi- shoprick.
--------------	---	---

Yorke Prouince.

Yorke Archbispe.	Yorkshire, Nottinghamshire,	} 581
------------------	--------------------------------	-------

Chester.	Cheshire, Richmondshire, Cumberland part, Lancashire, Flintshire part.	} 356
----------	--	-------

Carlisle.	Cumberlandshire part, Westmorland.	} 93
-----------	--	------

Durham.	Durham, Northumberland, Man Isle.	} 135
---------	---	-------

Bishopricks in Eng- land and Wales.	Shires in England and in Wales.	} Parishes in England and in Wales. 8083.
--	------------------------------------	---

*At the time of the first dissolving of Religious houses.
in England there were*

John Speed,
801.

Archbishopricks and Bishopricks,	21.
Deanries,	11.
Arch-deaconries,	60.
Dignities and Prebends in Cathed. Churches,	364.
Benefices,	8803.
Religious Houses,	65.
Hospitals,	110.
Colleges,	96.
Chauntries and free-Chappels,	2374.
Their Rates were per annum,	320180.

A

**A Table containing the provisions of the Spanish Armada,
against England, in Anno Domini 1588. & Anno
1602.**

Leaders	Provi- ces & ding	Gallies and galleons	Ships and Hulls	Pinaces and Caracks	Great Ordi- nance	Sailors	South ditto	Galley hauc.
D. Medina Sidonia,	Portu- gal.	10	8	2	300	1300	3300	
Diego de Mandana,	Portu- gal.	4			20	360		888
Job. Martines de Richalides.	Biscay.	10		4	250	700	2000	
Michael de Oquendo.	Guipus- coa.	10		4	310	700	2000	
Pedro de Valdez.	Audo- lozia.	10		1	280	800	2400	
Martin de Fortendona.	Italy.	10			310	800	2000	
Diego Floris de Valdez.	Castile	14		2	380	1700	2400	
John Lopez de Medina.	Medi- na.		23		400	700	3300	
Hugo de Moncado.	Naples	4			200	200	460	1100
Antonso Bue- cado.	Adri- atic.		22		193	574	488	

John Speed,
858.
Richard
Hakluyt.

**Shires in
England.**

Barke-shire.
Bedfordshire.
Buckinghamshire.
Cambridgeshire.
Chester.
Cornwall.
Cumberlandshire.
Derbyshire.
Devonshire.
Dorsetshire.
Durham B.
Essex.
Gloucester.
Hampshire.
Hertfordshire.
Huntingdonshire.

Huntingdonshire.
Kent.
Lancashire.
Leicestershire.
Lincolnshire.
Middlesex.
Northamptonshire.
Northfolke.
Northumberland.
Nottinghamshire.
Oxfordshire.
Rutlandshire.
Shropshire.
Somersetshire.
Staffordshire.
Suffolke.
Surrey.
Sussex.
Warwick.
Westmerland.

Wiltshire.
Worcestershire.
Yorkshire.

Shires in Wales.

Anglesey.
Brecknock.
Cardigan.
Carmarthen.
Carmarthen.
Ceredigion.
Denbigh.
Flint.
Glamorgan.
Merioneth.
Monsiey.
Montgomery.
Pembrokeshire.
Radnor.

Battailes.

1. *Cong.*

The bataille betwixt the Conquerour, and King *Harold*, was stricken the 14. of October 1066 in which were slaine about 68000.

Englishmen. Speed, 415. and almost about 6000. Slow. 128.

48 H.3.	Lewis.	1263
49 H.3.	Enertham,	1264
25 Edw.1.	Barwick.	1296
7 Edw.2.	Estriuelin.	1313
13 Edw.2.	Burgh-bridge.	1320
27 Edw.2.	Fanrike.	1298
20 Edw.3.	Cressley.	1345
30 Edw.3.	Poyters.	1355
3 H.4.	Shrewesbury.	1401
3 H.5.	Agencourt.	1414
9 H.5.	Blangy.	1420
3 H.6.	Vernoyle.	1423
6 H.6.	Herings.	1427
34 H.6.	Saint Albons.	1456
37 H.6.	Bloar-heath.	1459
38 H.6.	Northampton.	1460
39 H.6.	Wakefield.	1460
39 H.6.	Saint Albons.	1460
39 H.6.	Townton.	1460
in which were 109000. Englishmen, and of them were slaine 37000. men.		
2 Edw.4.	Exham.	1462
8 Edw.4.	Banbery.	1468
8 Edw.4.	Looscotes.	1468
in it 10000. men were slaine.		
10 Edw.4.	Barnet.	1470
in it were slaine 10000. men.		
10 Edw.4.	Tewksbury.	1470
3 Rich.3.	Bosworth.	1485
3 H.7.	Stoke.	1487
5 H.7.	Fongiers.	1488
12 H.7.	Black-heath.	1496
5 H.8.	Flodden.	1513
34 H.8.	Solemne Masse.	1542

Especiall



*Especiall notes worthie of ob-
seruation.*

13	H.1. The first Parliament was in	Anno 1112
19	H.2. Ireland was conquered in	Anno 1172
4	Iohannis. Normandy was lost by king Iohn	1202
43	H.3. and the title thereto released	1258
11	E.1. Wales was subdued	Anno 1283
25	E.1. { Scotland surrendred to king E. the third } { as to the supreme Lord thereof. }	1296
19	E.3. The order of the Garter deuised.	1344
14	E.3. England first quartred the Armes of France.	1339
21	E.3. Callice was wonne in	Anno 1346
5	Maria. Callice was lost in	Anno 1557
34	E.3. { The French title on Composition was } { released. }	1359
5	H.5. Normandy was wonne in	Anno 1416
8	H.5. { King H. the fifth was proclaimed heire } { apparant and Regent of France in }	Anno 1419
10	H.6. { Henry the sixth was crowned K. of France } { in the Citie of Paris. }	1431
27	H.6. France was lost in	Anno 1449
28	H.6. Normandy was lost in	Anno 1449
31	H.6. Aquitaine, &c. were lost in	Anno 1453
4	R.2. War Tylors Rebellion.	1380
29	H.6. Iack Cades Rebellion.	1450
4	H.8. Nauarre surprized by the Spaniards.	1512



Special note: history of
the nation

- 1. W. S. ... was in
- 2. W. S. ... was in
- 3. ... was in
- 4. ... was in
- 5. ... was in
- 6. ... was in
- 7. ... was in
- 8. ... was in
- 9. ... was in
- 10. ... was in
- 11. ... was in
- 12. ... was in
- 13. ... was in
- 14. ... was in
- 15. ... was in
- 16. ... was in
- 17. ... was in
- 18. ... was in
- 19. ... was in
- 20. ... was in
- 21. ... was in
- 22. ... was in
- 23. ... was in
- 24. ... was in
- 25. ... was in
- 26. ... was in
- 27. ... was in
- 28. ... was in
- 29. ... was in
- 30. ... was in
- 31. ... was in
- 32. ... was in
- 33. ... was in
- 34. ... was in
- 35. ... was in
- 36. ... was in
- 37. ... was in
- 38. ... was in
- 39. ... was in
- 40. ... was in
- 41. ... was in
- 42. ... was in
- 43. ... was in
- 44. ... was in
- 45. ... was in
- 46. ... was in
- 47. ... was in
- 48. ... was in
- 49. ... was in
- 50. ... was in
- 51. ... was in
- 52. ... was in
- 53. ... was in
- 54. ... was in
- 55. ... was in
- 56. ... was in
- 57. ... was in
- 58. ... was in
- 59. ... was in
- 60. ... was in
- 61. ... was in
- 62. ... was in
- 63. ... was in
- 64. ... was in
- 65. ... was in
- 66. ... was in
- 67. ... was in
- 68. ... was in
- 69. ... was in
- 70. ... was in
- 71. ... was in
- 72. ... was in
- 73. ... was in
- 74. ... was in
- 75. ... was in
- 76. ... was in
- 77. ... was in
- 78. ... was in
- 79. ... was in
- 80. ... was in
- 81. ... was in
- 82. ... was in
- 83. ... was in
- 84. ... was in
- 85. ... was in
- 86. ... was in
- 87. ... was in
- 88. ... was in
- 89. ... was in
- 90. ... was in
- 91. ... was in
- 92. ... was in
- 93. ... was in
- 94. ... was in
- 95. ... was in
- 96. ... was in
- 97. ... was in
- 98. ... was in
- 99. ... was in
- 100. ... was in

A TABLE FOR THE READY

finding of all the materiall things which are contained in the *Histories of the before named*
 TWENTIE KINGS.

A Dela.	8
Affability.	297
Agencourt.	182
Aidpurfile warrior.	23
Albany Duke forsakes Scotland.	398
Alexander King of Scots.	81
Ambush.	184
Anne Bullen.	389-493
Anne of Cleve.	408
Anselmus.	14, 15, 20
Appeales to Rome.	14, 54
Appleyard.	362
Archb. Strive.	7
Archers.	184
Armes of France.	109
Armes of London.	149
Armies great.	182, 235
	260, 145
Armies 3 in France.	361
Armies afflicted.	98
Armies two in France.	416
Arthur Plantagenet.	51
He is drowned.	53

Articles of peace.	129
	207, 286, 335
Articles against King Richard the Second.	156
Articles against K. Henry the Fourth.	169
Articles against the Duke of Somerset.	244
Articles against the Clergie.	381, 404
Articles against Walsley.	383
Arundell beheaded.	100
Arundell Archb.	144
Aske, Robert.	406
Asises.	34
Auricular confession.	58
Awdley.	254

B

B Agot.	135
Barthol.	82, 33
Bansbment.	86, 91, 95
	152, 150, 154, 157, 246
Bardolph.	173, 365

Barkley.	362, 365, 396
Barons wars.	66. Distressed, 58. Ouerthrowne, 72, 74, 96. Executed, 97
Barnes, Lord.	365
Basset.	69
Battailes of	
The Conqueror, in which were slaine of the English.	67, 974. and of the Normans 6013. John Stow, pag. 128.
Nise.	23
Lewis.	72, 74
Eurysham.	74
Faurike.	85
Estryulin.	93
Cressy.	119
Poyters.	126
Shrewesbury.	191
Agencourt.	182
Blangy.	206
Vernoyle.	215
Herings.	221
S. Albons.	250
Bloar-heath.	254
Wakefield.	259
Northampton.	

THE TABLE.

Norhampton.	257	Brandon, Henry Earle of	368	Carre.	368
Exham.	264	Lincolne.	400	Cardinal of Winchester.	317, 218
Banbury.	271	Breſt yeelded up.	151	Cardinal Wolfey.	365
Loofe-coates.	273	Brearton.	363	Gr.	
Barnes.	280	Brembere.	147, 149	Cardinal Poole.	406, 407
Tewkesbury.	283	Bribery.	99	Carew, Sir Iohn.	358
Boſworth.	324	Briſtow.	100	Carew, Sir Nich.	400
Stoke.	331	Britaine.	Ibid.	Carew, Sir George.	418
Blackbeath.	344	Brooke, Lo. Cobham.	248	Caſtles builded.	28, 178
Flodden.	363	256. Lo. Brooke.	392	Caſtles razed.	35
Beauchampe.	231, 233	Buckingham Duke.	257	Challenges.	173, 223
Beauchamp Duke of War-		Buckingham Duke behe-		Charles is Emperour.	391
wicke.	237	ded.	393	Charters.	208
Beaumont.	183, 257	Buildings of Forts.	4, 28	Chayre of Scotland.	86
Becket, and his doings.		Bulles from Rome.	68, 69	Cheſter Palatine.	64
37. &c.			387	Children diſobedient.	36
Belafme.	20	Bull, Sir Stephen.	362	Cholmley.	363
Benevolence.	284, 335	Bulmer.	362, 406	Churches robbed, and	
374, 417		Burbon ransomed.	227	wronged.	4, 14, 49, 80
Betrayed.	301	Burgh, Lord.	62		138
Biſhop made an Earle.	10	Burgoyne.	285, is angry,	Circuits.	34
Blant.	254		286	Clare, Gilbert.	76
Body of King Edward the		Buriall denied.	8	Clarence.	268, 275, 290
Fourth.	178	Buriall maligned.	228	Clarnys.	363
Bold.	363	Burnell, Lord.	181	Clergie articulated.	381
Bollev.	336, taken.	Burning.	358	Clergie ſeare the Premu-	
Bollev.	Anne. 389, 403	Buſter.	324, 363	nire.	388, and are libe-
Bollev.	Sir Tho.	Bygot, Sir Fran.	406	rall.	388
Bollev.	Lord Rochford.			Clifford.	138, 260, 281
	400				339, 340
Bollingbrooke in Armes.				Clifford Earle of Camber-	
	155			land.	400
Boothe.	363			Clifton, Sir Gernaſe.	233
Booty, rich.	396				282
Borrowing.	109			Colledges, of Wolfey.	386
Bounty.	45, 18, 121, 128			Combatt.	125, 154
	186, 288			Commiſſion de les dou-	
Bourchier.	198, 282, 233			pyers.	67, &c.
	363, 344, 392			Commiſſioners Traitors.	
Brandon.	325, 365				145, 368
Is valiant in France.				Commiſſioners.	114, 152
396					

THE TABLE.

32 Commissioners. 403	Heu subdued. 19. and	Drakenesse. 22
Compassion. 44	dis-eyed. 20	Drowned. 22, 30, 53, 359
Complaint of the Parlia- ment. 133	Cyprus. 46. 47	H. 8. almost drowned. 400. Mary Rose. 118
Coniers. 270	D	Dudly. 351. 356
Constable. 262, 406	D Acres acquitted. 402	Duglas. 171
Constable of London. 71	D Acres. 412	Duke of Guyan. 68
Constance. 279	Damnation. 58	Duke of Ireland. 149
Contention with the Scots. 411	Danes. 6	Durant. 55
Coo. 396	Dane gets. 18, 28	Darham burnt. 111
Copland. 122	Dacres. 260	Dyes moderate. 18, 28
Cornwall. 89	Darcie. 262	Dymock. 273
Cornish Rebels. 345	Dartmouth. 136, 276	Dynham. 256
Cour le fiev. 4	Dartwell. 110, 114, 115	Dynham executed. 410
Counsel received. 91, 391	Dawncy. 363	
Counterfeits, Poydras. 93	Defensor fidei. 357, 393	
Magdalen. 165. Lam- bert. 234. Warbrooke. 333. &c.	Degrading. 265	E Arneilly. 84
Courtney, E. of Deu. 392	Delaware, Lord. 392	E Echinham. 363
Courtesie. 297	Delues. 283	Egremount. 257
Cowardize. 84	Demands. 235, 411	Eleanor Queene. 43
Courage. 171, 223, 233	Depopulation. 5	Emperor debased. 59. and excommunicated. 14
234	Deposed. 101, 160	Emperor Charles. 391
Crofts. 289	Derby E. 392	Rampson. 351. 356
Crowne. 164, 225, 258	Descriptions. 8, 59, 239	England given to the Pope. 56
277, 328, 402	297, 298, 420	England is admired. 225
Crowned twice. 49	Denorce. 389	Englishmen oppressed. 6
Crowne resigned. 156	Disarming. 3	10. 14
Crown on the pillow. 174	Discipline warlike. 35	Enclosures. 364
Cornwall. 406, 407, 409	Discord. 73, 132	Enlargement. 73, 85, 128
Cruelty. 138, 31, 343	Disdained. 413	277
Cuer de Lyon. 44	Disobedient children. 36	Enterview. 200, 227, 273
Culpeper. 410	Disobedience punished. 36	Escape. 272
Cumberland Scottish. 28	49	Escape of Morton. 317
Curse. 41, 55, 57, 62, 67	Dissention. 89, 128, 189	Escape of King Edward the fourth. pag. 271
107	191, 229	Escape of warbeck. 350
Cuthose rebelleth. 7 in- madeth and compoun- deth. 9. He rebelleth & compoundeth. 12. 19	Distrust. 64	Escape of Edward Earle of Warwick. 350
	Dolphin scoffeth. 179	Estrenelin. 85
	Donn. 363	Eueringham.
	Dorset Marquesse. 393	
	Douglas marriage. 430	
	Douz Pyers. 66, 69	

THE TABLE.

Bueringham, 362
Excommunication, 14, 58
Execution of, 11
Lincoln, 81
Arundel, 100, 152
Spencers, 100
Caneston, 100
Poydras, 100
Warbeck, 100, 350
Edward Earle of Warwick, 350
Two & twenty Barons, 93
Markley, Earle of Carlisle, 98
Stapleton, D. of Exeter, 99
Earle of Kent, 104
Mortimer, 104, 108
Fifteen hundred Rebels, 141
Browne, 149
Trefilian, 149
Greene, 153
Dust, 155
Scroop, Earle of Wilts, 155
shire, 155
Earle of Worcester, 171
Scroop, Archbishop of York, 173
Mowbrey D. of Norfolk, 173
Percy Earle of Northumb, 171, 174
Hastings Lord, 173
Fawconbridge, 173
Bardolf, 174
Richard Earle of Cambridge, 180
Henry Lord Scroop, 180
Sir Thomas Grey, 18
Inhabitants of Came, 191

At Monsz, 219
For Perjury, 232
Michael de la Poole, 246
Lord Scales, 258
Rich. Neuil, Earle of Salisbury, 259
Omch Father, 260
Courtney, Earle of Devon, 260
Suffolke, 264
Earle of Oxford, 263
Sir Ambrey de Vere, 263
Hen. D. of Somerset, 263
Taylour, 263
Ross, 263
Molines, 263
Hungerford, 263
Henry Neuil, 263
Wentworth, 263
Tunstall, 263
Sir Ralph Grey, 263
Earle Rivers, 271
Humfray Lord Stafford, 271
Lord wels, 273
Sir Thomas Dymock, 273
Sir Robert wels, 274
Sir Henry Stafford, 329
L. Hastings in the Tower, 307
Earle Rivers, 307
Richard Lord Grey, 307
Sir Thomas Vaughan, 307
Duke of Buckingham, 317
Sir William Stanley, 341
Humfrey Stafford, 329
Empson, 356
Dudley, 356
Sir Thomas Moore, 402
Fisher Bishop of Rochester, 402

Queen Anne Bullen, 403
and Queens Katherine Howard, 410
Lord Howard for his marriage, 403
Execution of Rebels, 406
Marques of Exeter, 406
Lord Dacres, 406
Lord Haffey, 406
Fryer Forest, 406
Carew, Sir Nich, 406
Margaret Countesse of Salisbury, 407
Gertrude Marchionnes of Exeter, 407
Leonard Lord Grey, 410
Cromwel, 410
Francis Dyrham, & Thomas Calpeper, 410
Lady Rochford, 410
Thomas Earle of Surrey, 420
Exeter, 349, 347
Exeter Marquess, 400
Exton, Sir Nich, 142
Extortion, 86

F

Also friend, 153
Famine, 172, 24, 193
Fanhope, 183
Fastolfe, 183
Fawconbridge, 165, 173
Feast soleme, 113
Ferdinando, 357
Fisher wrongs the Parliament, 1382
Fisheues denied, 142

Fisfe enes

THE TABLE.

Efficacies conditionall.

Fitz-William. 161. 196

Fitz-Warren. 192

Fitz-Water. 112. 206

Flattowers. 18

Flattery. 151

Flight. 277

Fladden Field. 161

Forgas. 206

French title. 105. 178

Frenchmen in Wales. 167

French saints harted. 181

French unthankfull. 14

Prier Forest. 406

Funerals. 178

G

Gard, Teomen. 327

Gascoine rescued. 63

Gascoine, Sir William. 362

Gamelkind. 3

Ganslon. 86. 89. 90. 91

Glendor. 166. 172

Glocesters practices. 299

Glocester murdered. 240

Gloster. 18

Gouernement changed. 290

Gough. 242

Greene. 155

Grey, degraded. 265

Grey, Sir Thomas. 180

Grey, Lord Richard. 307

Grey, Lo. Leonard. 407

Grey, Lo. Leonard. 410

Griffith. 324. 362

Graby of Grace. 118

H

Hall, Sir Philip. 215

Hall, Sir Danid. 243

Hampton Court. 375

Hartlew. 241

Harkley. 98

Harold. 1.2

Hartford E. 406. 415

Hastings. 173. 307

Hastings, Lord. 305

Hastings Earles of Hun-

tington. 385

Henals reuolteth. 156

Henry Hotspur. 167

Henry Fitz-Roy. 400

Herbert, Earle of Pem-

broke. 270

Herbert, Lord. 391

Herings. 221

Holland, Sir Thom. 117

Holland, Sir John. 153. 164. 181

Holland, Sir John. 1bid.

Holy Land. 45. 77. 108

Holy Pilgrims. 405

Hongersford. 222. 265

Hostages. 3. 73. 130. 390

Howard, Sir Edw. 358

Howard, Sir Tho. Earle

of Surrey. 360. 361

Howard, Lord executed

for marrying, &c. 403

B 66

Hunters. 5. 6. 16

Hunting. 5

I

Icke Cade. 247

Iane, Countesse of He-

nalt. 109. 111

Iaques Dartbell. 110

Iermingham. 396. 397

Ierusalem. 17. 47

Iet. 284

Jewels. 90

Images defaced. 406

John of Gaunt. 321. 350

Ingratitude. 14. 44

Ipsam Parliament. 66

Interdiction. 55. 98

Innefture of Bishop. 22. 23

Ireland conquered. 36. 37

Ireland, King of

judges followed the

Court. 3

Judges and Justices. 355

Judges banished. 150

K

Kentishmen. 403

Kentishmaid of Kent. 402

King Henry the Eighth

flour. 404

Keryell. 292. 242

King Knighted. 217

King Richard the Second

called

THE TABLE.

called to a reckoning. 143
 King of Castile entertained.
 med. 352
 King of Ireland. 410
 Knights Fees. 6
 Knowles. I 132. 166
 Knyvet, Sir Thomas. 358

L Ambert. 324
 Landoy. 289, 317
 Langton. 34
 Lanfrank. 9
 Latranc. 58
 Lawes severe. 4
 Lawes mitigated. 18
 Lawes restored. 18, 63
 Lawes against robbers. 88
 Lawes refined. 34
 Lawrence. 363
 League broken. 64, 213
 Legates. 38, 41, 55
 Lewknor. 283
 Liberality. 18, 45, 121
 128, 186, 288
 Little John. 30
 Lluelon. 80
 Lomley. 406
 London against Maund
 the Emperesse. 29
 London with the Barons.
 70, 149
 Londoners submit them-
 selves. 75
 London should have been
 burnt. 74
 A rebellion in London.
 71, 76

London's liberties resto-
 red. 89
 London pleaseth the Re-
 bels. 138
 London's Armes. 140
 Constables of London. 71
 London rectifies king Ed-
 ward the Fourth. 189
 London. 84, 140, 148
 180
 Londoners graced by king
 Edward the Fourth. 297
 London's Maior. 39
 London bridge. 39
 Longchamp. 46, 47, 48
 Lonell, Lord. 329, 331
 Luther. 393
 Lion Richard. 138

M

M Agistrates ouer
 Priests. 28, 38
 Magna Charta. 63
 Malcolm's line. 11
 Mannery Earle of Rat-
 land. 400
 Mannys. 5
 Manny, Sir Walter. 124
 Merchants. 353, vexed.
 401, 414
 Merchant strangers. 34
 251, 389, 489
 Marquesse Dorset. 337
 Mariages of Wards. 63
 Mariage of K. Henry the
 Senesch. 327
 Mariage of king Edward
 the Fourth. 267

Mariage of Prince Ar-
 thur. 350
 King Henry the Eighth
 his widow. 355
 Mariage with Scotland.
 351
 Mariage with Anna of
 Cleue. 404
 Mariage with Lewis the
 12. of France. 364
 Mariage with Scotland
 broken off. 415
 Mars in Flanders. 325
 340, 346
 Marrow, Sir Henry.
 392
 Martiall feats. 103
 Martin Sward. 331
 Mary Rose drowned. 418
 Maund marieth Planta-
 genet. 24
 Maund the Emperesse. 19
 23, 24, 29
 Measures. 18
 Mercie. 44
 Merham. 362
 Miracle. 405
 Michael de la Poole. 142
 144
 Molynes. 141, 265
 Moncy scarce. 108
 Moncy borrowed. 109
 Morbeck. 127
 Morgan. 324
 Morley, Lord. 392
 Morleys taken & burnt.
 393
 Morton. 333, 331, 315
 317, 331
 Mortimer, Sir Roger. 71
 109
 Mortimer beheaded. 105
 Mortimer

THE TABLE.

Mortimer proclaimed.

141

Mortmaine.

82

Mountaine, or Mounta-

cate, 216, 220, 236

265, 266

Mountford.

72

Mountjoy.

398

Murders of

Becket.

41

Edward the second. pag.

101, 105

Jaques Dartnell.

114

Richard the second. pag.

160

Howard Duke of Gloucester

240, 158

Lord Scales.

258

Archbishop of Canterbu-

rie.

139

John Duke of Burgoine,

199

Henry the sixth. pag.

283

George Duke of Clarence.

290, 295

Lord Wenlock.

295

Prince Edward.

293

Edward the fifth, and Ri-

chard Duke of Torke,

312

Rutland.

281

Murder by the Lord Dar-

re.

406

Murder revenged.

307

Musgrave William.

412

N

N Anar taken.

357

Neck broken.

8, 81

Nequill, Sir John.

260

New Forrest.

5

Nobles created.

152

240, 363, 267, 327

385, 400, 406

Nobility despised.

142

Nobility wasted

497

Mowbray.

242

Normandy.

53, 68, 117

Normandy lost.

53, 168, 169

Normanile.

363

Northfolke Duke High

Steward

392

Notes especiall.

293

Niceneffe banished.

18

O

Oath to the succession,

and of fidelity.

24

56, 69

Oath to observe, &c.

24

Oath broken.

27, 145, 279

34

Oath of the Scots.

86

Oath touching Gameston,

89

Obstinacie.

41

Obs.

10

Officers examined in Par-

liament.

144

Officers enill.

133

Officers displaced.

144

170

Opinion of the Univer-

sities.

386, 389

Ouerthrowes of

Harold.

2

Rebels.

6, 7, 273

Scots.

11, 83, 171

Welshmen.

11, 12, 13

Robert Mowbray.

13

Barons.

20, 96

Prince Edward.

71

King Stephen.

29

Fifteen thousand Geno-

ways.

119

French.

58, 371, 120

187

King Edward the second.

93, 94

Percies.

171

English.

206, 222, 242

Miraculous.

216

K. Henry the sixth.

250

257, 266, 280

Duke of Torke.

259

James the fourth king of

Scots.

362

Frenchmen.

418

Owen Glendor.

166, fami-

shed.

172

Owen Tushar.

260

Earle of Oxford.

133

Duke of Burgundy thrice

ouer-

THE TABLE.

overthrowne in one
years. 289
Iohn Earle of Oxford,
144
Oxford Earle,

P

P Agents, 376
Pandulphus, 55.56
Partialitie, 71
Pardon craftie, 153
Parents honored, 43
Paris is English, 204. and
reueltes, 229
Parliament and the King
strive, 142.143
Parliament the first, 23
Parliament once a yeare,
142
Parliament complains,
133
Parliament threatened
143
Parliament makes a king
160
Parliamentum insanum,
60
Parliament breakes up
suddenly, 256
Parliament wronged by
Bishop Fisher, 382
Pavalet made Lord Saint
Iohn, 406
Peace, 52.64.285.333.
336.364.392
Penall lawes, 290.351
Penance, 42
People wasted, 14
Percies, 171.362.363

Princes will not deliner
Scottish prisoners, 67
Percies doe ransom
Edmund Mortimer,
169
Paye Sir Thomas, 406
Perjury, 232
Perkin Warbeck, 337.338
Peter Landoy, 289.315
Petition of the Rebels,
404
Pickering, 363
Pilgrims holy, 405
Piracie, 96
Risie, 44
Plantagenet Geoffry, 24
Plantagenet Arthur, 51
Plymouth, 136
Poydras, 93
Policies, 34.56.7.12.18.
23.29.35.82.117.140.
212.215.333.246.250.
299.331.339.340.
408.
Policies touching War-
beck, 339.340.341
Policies touching Lam-
bert, 331
Policies touching Cade,
247
policies by fire, 347
pompres, 301
Pontlarsh, 241
Popham, Sir Iohn, 113
Pope, 14.15.18.53.150
curbed, 401
popish blindness, 57
popish pride, 54
poyntings, 341.361
poysoned, 59
poyters, 63
practises of Richard Duke

of Gloucester, 299.300.
Prenunire, 380. feared by
the Clergy, 388
prerogative crossed, 388
presumption, 140
prey rich, 395
pride, 395
pride of Longchamp, 46
4748
primacie, 7
prince of Chester.
prince imprisoned, 136
177
prince of Wales, 114
prince reclaimed, 177
Prior Iohn, 364

Prisoners.

Marcus,
Edmund,
Egelwinus, 7
Mowbray, 113
Cuthose, 20
Belesme, 20
King Stephen, 29
Queene Elianor, 43
King Richard the first, 48
Bayliot, 64
The prince, 36.177
Queene Isabel, 105
King David, 122
King Iohn of France, 127
Earle of Pembroke, 131
King Richard the second
Edmund Mortimer, 166
French Pris. flaine, 185
Lord Talbot, 222
Lord Scales, 222
Lord

THE TABLE.

Lord Hungerford, 222
 Duke of Suffolke, 222
 King Henry the Sixth, 257. 266. 281
 King Edward the fourth, 271
 Duke of Burbon, 277
 Duke of Orleance, 235
 Scottish prisoners, 413
 Mordeck Earle of Fife, 167
 Archibald Douglas, 167
 Earle Murray, 167
 Prinie Seales, 397. 398
 Proclamations, 192. 276
 Proclaimed heire of Fra. 387
 141. 200. 204
 Proscribed, 248. 319
 Protector, 61. 251
 Protector displaced, 240

Q
 Quartered, 345
 Queene Anne beheaded, 403
 Queene Katherine beheaded, 410

R
 Raman, 104
 Ransome, 26
 King Richard the First ransomed, 48
 Douglas ransomed, 171

King of Scots ransomed, 214
 Duke of Burbon ransomed, 227
 Duke of Orleance ransomed, 235
 Edmund Mortimer ransomed, 164
 Queene Margaret ransomed, 283
 Raine, 405
 Rebellions, 6. 7. 10. 11. 12. 13. 20. 22. In London, 71. 76. Lincullen, 80
 Wat Tilar, 137. In Kent, 277. Owen Glendower, 166. Percies, 170
 171. In Ireland, 243
 Jacke Cade, 247. 264
 273. 328. 334. Cornishmen, 345. 347.
 349. In Yorkeshire, 269. In Lincolnshire, 404. In the North, 405. In Ireland, 407
 Rebels flee, 405. quietly departs, 405
 Reconcilement, 64. 279
 Reformation, 66. 69. 64
 153
 Regents, 42. 201
 Regent deith, 228
 Regent drowned, 358
 Religion houses, 178. 374
 403. 493
 Repayment, 327
 Repeales, 4. 263. 328
 Repentance, 8. 353
 Repose, 167
 Resefore, 35. 34
 Resolution, 15. 34. 95
 Restitution, 18

Returue unlicensed, 358
 Revenge, 359
 Renolt, 214. 242. 244
 Renulph, 81
 Ribamont, 124
 Rice ap Thomas, 344
 King Richard the First valiant, 46. 47
 Rich Souldiers, 191
 King Henry the Second Rich, 37
 Richmond Earle in danger, 289. 317. sweager, 320. Landeth, 323
 and is victorious, 325
 Rifling, 389
 Roan, 192. 193. 197. 241
 Robberies, 14. 18. 33
 Robin Hood, 50
 Robinet of Bonuile, 187
 Rochford, 400. 410. 411
 Bollaigne, Viscount Rochford, 385
 Rokebie, 174
 Rosamond Clifford, 37
 Rosbrough, 112. 139
 Rowclif, 363
 Rufus flaine, 16
 Russell, Lord, 406
 Rutland murdered, 281
 Rutland Earle, 400
 Ryers, 256

S
 Sanctuarie, 302. 303
 304
 Saluo honore Dei, 41
 Sands, 365. 396. 397
 Sarum

THE TABLE.

Sarum secundum vium.	7	Scroope, 155, 173, 180	Vere, Duke of Ireland.
Sanadge.	324	265	149
Scales. 218, 222, 257, 258		Sea victories. 62, 110	Prisoners, French. 185
Scat, Earle of Chester. 64		125, 188, 189	Thirty six slaine by King
Scottish homage. 11, 214		Seales Prinie. 394	Henry the Fourth. 171
Scots. 25000. slaine. 83		Secrecie. 107	Edward Duke of Torke.
Scots swear obedience. 86		Secundum vium Sa-	187
Scots ouerthrowne in Ire-		rum. 7	Richard Duke of Torke.
land. 97		Security. 221, 270	259
Scots ouerthrow king Ed.		Schire. 3, 35	Duke of Suffolke. 187
the second. 93, 94		Seymour, Earle of Hart-	John Earle of Shrewsbury
Scots invade England. 11		ford. 406, 415	249
28, 111, 122, 167, 171		Seymour, Sir John, and La-	Earle of Salisbury. 220
251, 291, 361. their		die lane. 403	Clarence. 206
crueltie. 343. They in-		Shawes Sermon. 408	Earle of Warwick. 281
made, 345. and are		Shepard lacke. 137	Arundell. 226
slaine. 346, 412		Sherborne, Sir Henry,	Marquesse Montacute.
Scots mis-use the French.		361	281
147		Ships, 300. taken. 56	Courtney, Earle of Deuon.
Scots aide was becke. 342		+ 500. Ships. 188	283
345		1205. Ships. 146	Woodville. 333
Scottish king slaine. 363		Ships in Sandwich. 256	James the Fourth, King of
Scotland surrendered. 81		Sheepe. 263	Scots. 362
82, 84		Sheriffe of Northumber-	Stafford. 329
Scotland governed by		land. 174	Humfrey Duke of Buc-
England. 84		Shores wife. 309	kingham. 257
Scotland wasted. 346		Shrewsbury Earle. 392	Thomas Lo. Egremount.
Scotland invaded. 97, 103		Shrinestie destroyed. 406	257
306, 111, 147, 174		Sicknesse. 181	John, Viscount Beaumont.
412, 415, 416, 419		Slaine.	337
Scotland disposed by king		king William Rufus. 5, 26	Northumberland. 260
Edward the Third.		Malcolme. 11	Westmerland. 260
106		king Edward the second.	Lord Dacres. 260
Scotland claimed by the		101	Lord Wells. 260
Pope. 86		king Richard the first. 59	Lord Clifford. 260
Scottish king, ransomed.		king Richard the second.	Sir Charles Somerset.
214		160	360
Scottish tenure released.		Simon Montfort. 74	Spencers. 92, 94, 96, 97
106		Lord Beaumont. 113	Northumberland. 334
Scottish chayre. 86		Peter of Castile. 131	Spencer chief Justice.
Scottish prisoners. 413		Wat Tyler. 140	68, 74
			Spencers. 194, 197, 209
			Spencers

THE TABLE

Spencers executed. 108
 Soldiers untimely re-
 turne. 358.397
 Sons disobedient. 36
 Southampton Earle. 406
 Stafford Earle. 181
 Stakes. 183
 Stanley. 341.344
 Stapleton B. of Exeter. 99
 Stapleton. 363
 Stoutnesse of R. H. B. 404
 Strangers Merchants. 34
 251.138
 Subjects dutie. 35
 Submission of K. 10.56.66
 Submission of the Barons. 58
 Submission of King Rich.
 the Second. 155
 Submission of Londoners. 75
 Submission of Lluellen. 80
 Supremacie. 403
 Duke of Suffolke. 237
 238.244.392.418
 Duke of Suffolke marshall
 valiantly in France. 396
 Surfeit. 24
 Surrey beheaded. 420
 Surprisall. 173
 Suffex, Earle. 385
 Swans. 6
 Swimming. 48.149
 Sword given to Exeter. 349
 Sydney. 362

T

Tale-bearers. 227
 Talbots name terri-
 ble. 226

Talbot. 106.324
 Talbot slaine. 220
 Talbot, Gilbert. 192
 Talbot, Lord George. 360
 Taxes. 5.10.97.109
 Taxes causing rebellions. 6.7.136.333.335.345
 Taxes lost Aquitaine, &c. 130
 Taxes pleasing. 12.52
 189
 Taxes released. 18.28
 Taxes not demanded. 37
 45
 Taxe on Wools & Hides. 83
 Tempest, Nicholas. 406
 Temporalities. 20.21
 Terryll. 312
 Terwyn. 360.361
 Thankfulnesse. 24.297
 Thanksgiving. 171.186
 190.282.325
 Theenes. 50.93
 Thorp. 258
 Thwaits. 396
 Title to France. 105.107
 relinquished. 129
 Title, king of Ireland. 410
 Title, Defensor Fidei. 357.393
 Tournay taken. 361. re-
 delivered. 380
 Trade restored. 346
 Translation. 7
 Transubstantiation. 58
 Traitor, Archb. of Cant. 151
 Treasons 64.164.180.
 226

Treason to speake, &c. 409
 Treason at Oxford. 164
 Traitors. 145.173
 Treachery. 152.213.252
 Tremchard. 352
 Treports. 364
 Tresham. 283
 Tresilian. 147.149
 Troyl Baston. 86
 Tuthar. 260.249
 Tylar, Wat. 137
 Tylney. 362
 Tyron, Earle. 410
 Tyrwyn taken and burnt. 361

V

Vallow. 33.46.47
 124
 Vaughan. 283.307
 Vere. 142.149.242
 Vernoyle. 205
 Vicar general. 107
 Victory in Castile. 130
 King Edward the Fourth
 victorious. 281
 Victorie without blowes. 168
 Victory miraculous. 216
 Victory over the Percies. 171
 Victories at Sea. 62.110
 125.188.189
 Vicagerent Cromwel. 406
 Victuals cheape. 108
 Visited by three kings. 130
 Vmsfrenyle. 192.206
 Vniuersitie

THE TABLE

Vniversitie opinions, 386
Vnbankfulnesse, 14. 44.
Vnbankfull Frenchmen,
 414
Vniversities,
Rufus, 9
Henricus Primus, 17
Stephanus, 27
Edwardus Tertius, 101
Henricus Quartus, 160
Henricus Quintus, 177
Henricus Sextus, 211
Richardus Tertius, 311

W
Wights, 18
Wales, 86. Prince,
 114

Wallop, 364. 396
warres in the Holy Land,
 45. &c. 77
Wars with Arthur Plantagenet, 51
Hee is drowned, 53
Wars incommadious, 273
Wars with Charles the Emperor, 401
Ward, Sir Christopher,
 363
wardships, 63
warbes, 337. &c.
warlike discipline, 35
warwicke Protector, 251
warwicke slaine, 281
warrens, 18
watermen, 258
welshes, 260. 273

welshmen rebell, 11. 12
 13. 22. 80. 81. 82. 84.
 85
 166
Wenlocke, 283
Wharton, Lord, 412
whipped, 42
wife, a good one, 43
Willoughbie, 363. 183.
 392
Witchcraft, 236
wines paid for, 24
Woodvile, 231. 333
woods in Wales burnt, 81
woolsey, 365. &c. untill
 pag. 388
wounding, 77
Worcester Earle, 392
Wyothefley, 417



C 17529 Fol.
20895 REF.

SL

REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE
HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION